





LIBRARY  
OF THE  
UNIVERSITY  
OF ILLINOIS

294.1

M89o

1868

v.3

Return this book on or before the  
**Latest Date** stamped below.

Theft, mutilation, and underlining of books  
are reasons for disciplinary action and may  
result in dismissal from the University.

University of Illinois Library

DEC 21 1966

MAY 30 1968

MAR 27 1973  
MAR 21 1974

AUG 9 1975

JUL 24 1975

APR 4 1977

MAR 7 1977

JUL 18 1980

L161—O-1096



# ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS

ON THE

ORIGIN AND HISTORY

OF

THE PEOPLE OF INDIA,

THEIR RELIGION AND INSTITUTIONS,

COLLECTED, TRANSLATED, AND ILLUSTRATED,

BY

J. MUIR, D.C.L., LL.D., PH.D.

---

VOLUME THIRD.

THE VEDAS: OPINIONS OF THEIR AUTHORS AND OF LATER INDIAN WRITERS  
ON THEIR ORIGIN, INSPIRATION, AND AUTHORITY.

SECOND EDITION,  
REVISED AND ENLARGED.



LONDON:

TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

1868.

*(All Rights Reserved.)*

*Arthepsavaḥ ṛishayo devatās chhandobhir abhyadhāvan |*  
Anukramanikā.

“Rishis, seeking to obtain the various objects of their desire,  
hastened to the deities with metrical compositions.”

(See p. 211 of this volume.)

294.1

M 89 5

1868

V. 3

## PREFACE.

---

THE object which I have had in view in the series of treatises which this volume forms a part, has been to investigate critically the most important points in the civil and religious history of the Hindus. Having shown in the First Volume that the mythical and legendary accounts given in the Purānas, etc., regarding the origin of the caste system which has long prevailed in India, are mutually contradictory and insufficient to establish the early existence of the popular belief regarding the distinct creation of four separate tribes, as an original and essential article of the Brahmanical creed; and having endeavoured to prove, in the Second Volume, by a variety of arguments, drawn chiefly from comparative philology and from the contents of the Rigveda, that the Hindus are descended from a branch of the Indo-European stock, which dwelt originally along with the other cognate races in Central Asia, and subsequently migrated into Northern Hindustan, where the Brahmanical religion and institutions were developed and matured;—I now come, in this Third Volume, to consider more particularly the history of the Vedas, regarded as the sacred Scriptures of the Hindus, and the inspired source from which their religious and philosophical systems (though,

to a great extent, founded also on reasoning and speculation) profess to be mainly derived; or with which, at least, they all claim to be in harmony.

When I speak, however, of the history of the Veda, I am reminded that I am employing a term which will suggest to the philosophical reader the idea of a minute and systematic account of the various opinions which the Indians have held in regard to their sacred books from the commencement, through all the successive stages of their theological development, down to the present time. To do anything like this, however, would be a task demanding an extent of research far exceeding any to which I can pretend. At some future time, indeed, we may hope that a history of the theological and speculative ideas of the Indians, which shall treat this branch also of the subject, may be written by some competent scholar. My own design is much more modest. I only attempt to show what are the opinions, on the subject of the Veda, which have been entertained by certain distinct sets of writers whom I may broadly divide into three classes—(1) the mythological, (2) the scholastic, and (3) the Vedic.

The first, or mythological class, embraces the writers of the different Purāṇas and Itihāsas, and partially those of the Brāhmaṇas and Upanishads, who, like the compilers of the Purāṇas, frequently combine the mythological with the theosophic element.

The second, or scholastic class, includes the authors of the different philosophical schools, or Darśanas, with their scholiasts and expositors, and the commentators



on the Vedas. The whole of these writers belong to the class of systematic or philosophical theologians; but as their speculative principles differ, it is the object of each particular school to explain and establish the origin and authority of the Vedas on grounds conformable to its own fundamental dogmas, as well as to expound the doctrines of the sacred books in such a way as to harmonize with its own special tenets.

The third class of writers, whose opinions in regard to the Vedas I have attempted to exhibit, is composed (1) of the rishis themselves, the authors of the Vedic hymns, and (2) of the authors of the Upanishads, which, though works of a much more recent date, and for the most part of a different character from the hymns, are yet regarded by later Indian writers as forming, equally with the latter, a part of the Veda. As the authors of the hymns, the earliest of them at least, lived in an age of simple conceptions and of spontaneous and childlike devotion, we shall find that, though some of them appear, in conformity with the spirit of their times, to have regarded their compositions as in a certain degree the result of divine inspiration, their primitive and elementary ideas on this subject form a strong contrast to the artificial and systematic definitions of the later scholastic writers. And even the authors of the Upanishads, though they, in a more distinct manner, claim a superhuman authority for their own productions, are very far from recognizing the rigid classification which, at a subsequent period, divided the Vedic writings from all other religious works, by a broad line of demarcation.

It may conduce to the convenience of the reader, if I furnish here a brief survey of the opinions of the three classes of writers above described, in regard to the Vedas, as these opinions are shown in the passages which are collected in the present volume.

The first chapter (pp. 1-217) contains texts exhibiting the opinions on the origin, division, inspiration, and authority of the Vedas, which have been held by Indian authors shortly before, or subsequent to, the collection of the Vedic hymns, and consequently embraces the views of the first two of the classes of writers above specified, viz. (1) the mythological and (2) the scholastic. In the first Section (pp. 3-10), I adduce texts from the Purusha Sūkta, the Atharva-veda, the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, the Chhāndogya Upanishad, the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, and the Institutes of Manu, which variously represent the Vedas (*a*) as springing from the mystical sacrifice of Purusha; (*b*) as resting on (or inhering in) Skambha; (*c*) as cut or scraped off from him, as being his hair, and his mouth; (*d*) as springing from Indra; (*e*) as produced from time; (*f*) as produced from Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya; (*g*) as springing from Prajāpati, and the waters; (*h*) as being the breathing of the Great Being; (*i*) as being dug by the gods out of the mind-ocean; (*j*) as being the hair of Prajāpati's beard, and (*k*) as being the offspring of Vāch.

In page 287 of the Appendix a further verse of the Atharva-veda is cited, in which the Vedas are declared to have sprung from the leavings of the sacrifice (*uchchhishta*).

In the second Section (pp. 10–14) are quoted passages from the Vishṇu, Bhāgavata, and Mārkaṇḍeya Purānas, which represent the four Vedas as having issued from the mouth of Brahmā at the creation; several from the Harivaṁśa, which speak of the Vedas as created by Brahmā, or as produced from the Gāyatrī; another from the Mahābhārata, which describes them as created by Vishṇu, or as having Sarasvatī for their mother; with one from Manu, which declares the Vedas, along with certain other objects, to be the second manifestation of the Sattva-guna, or pure principle, while Brahmā is one of its first manifestations.

The third Section (pp. 14–18) contains passages from the Brāhmaṇas, the Vishṇu Purāna, and the Mahābhārata, in which the Vedas are celebrated as comprehending all beings, as being the soul of metres, hymns, breaths, and gods, as imperishable, as the source of form, motion, and heat, of the names, forms, and functions of all creatures, as infinite in extent, as infinite in their essence (*brahma*), though limited in their forms as Rich, Yajush, and Sāman verses, as eternal, and as forming the essence of Vishṇu.

The fourth Section (pp. 18–36) contains passages from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa and Manu, in which the great benefits resulting from the study of the Vedas, and the dignity, power, authority, and efficacy of these works are celebrated, together with two other texts from the latter author and the Vishṇu Purāna, in which a certain impurity is predicated of the Sāma-veda (compare the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna, as quoted in p. 12, where the four

Vedas are described as respectively partaking differently of the character of the three *Guṇas*, or Qualities); and some others from the *Vāyu*, *Padma*, *Matsya*, and *Brahma-vaivartta Purānas*, and the *Mahābhārata*, and *Rāmāyana*, which derogate greatly from the consideration of the Vedas, by claiming for the *Purānas* and *Itihāsas* an equality with, if not a superiority to, the older scriptures. A passage is next quoted from the *Muṇḍaka Upanishad*, in which the Vedas and their appendages are designated as the “inferior science,” in contrast to the “superior science,” the knowledge of Soul; and is followed by others from the *Bhagavad Gītā*, the *Chhāndogya Upanishad* and the *Bhāgavata Purāna*, in which the ceremonial and polytheistic portions of the Veda are depreciated in comparison with the knowledge of the supreme Spirit.

The fifth Section (pp. 36–49) describes the division of the Vedas in the third or *Dvāpara* age, by *Vedavyāsa* and his four pupils, according to texts of the *Vishṇu*, *Vāyu*, and *Bhāgavata Purānas*; and then adduces a different account, asserting their division in the second or *Tretā* age, by the King *Purūravas*, according to another passage of the same *Bhāgavata Purāna*, and a text of the *Mahābhārata* (though the latter is silent regarding *Purūravas*).

Section vi. (pp. 49–57) contains passages from the *Vishṇu* and *Vāyu Purānas* and the *Satapātha Brāhmaṇa*, regarding the schism between the adherents of the *Yajurveda*, as represented by the different schools of *Vaiśampāyana* and *Yājñavalkya*, and quotes certain remarks of

Prof. Weber on the same subject, and on the relation of the Rig and Sāma Vedas to each other, together with some other texts, adduced and illustrated by that scholar, on the hostility of the Ātharvānas towards the other Vedas, and of the Chandogas towards the Rig-veda.

Section vii. (pp. 57-70) contains extracts from the works of Sāyana and Mād̥hava, the commentators on the Rig and Taittirīya Yajur Vedas, in which they both define the characteristics of the Veda, and state certain arguments in support of its authority. Sāyana (pp. 58-66), after noticing the objections urged against his views by persons of a different school, and defining the Veda as a work consisting of Mantra and Brāhmaṇa, asserts that it is not derived from any personal, or at least not from any human, author (compare the further extract from him in p. 105); and rests its authority on its own declarations, on its self-proving power, on the Smṛiti (*i.e.* non-vedic writings of eminent saints), and on common notoriety. He then encounters some other objections raised against the Veda on the score of its containing passages which are unintelligible, dubious, absurd, contradictory, or superfluous. Mād̥hava (pp. 66-70) defines the Veda as the work which alone reveals the supernatural means of attaining future felicity; explains that males only, belonging to the three superior castes, are competent to study its contents; and asserts that, inasmuch as it is eternal, it is a primary and infallible authority. This eternity of the Veda, however, he appears to interpret as not being absolute, but as dating from the first creation, when it was produced from Brahmā,

though, as he is free from defects, the Veda, as his work, is self-proved.

Section viii. (pp. 70-108) contains the views of Jaimini and Bādarāyana, the (alleged) authors of the Mīmāṃsā and Brahma (or Vedānta) Sūtras on the eternity of the Veda. Jaimini asserts that sound, or words, are eternal, that the connection between words and the objects they represent also, is not arbitrary or conventional, but eternal, and that consequently the Vedas convey unerring information in regard to unseen objects. This view he defends against the Naiyāyikas, answering their other objections, and insisting that the names, derived from those of certain sages, by which particular parts of the Vedas are designated, do not prove those sages to have been their authors, but merely the teachers who studied and handed them down; while none of the names occurring in the Veda are those of temporal beings, but all denote some objects which have existed eternally. Two quotations in support of the supernatural origin of the Veda are next introduced from the Nyāya-mālā-vistara (a condensed account of the Mīmāṃsā system) and from the Vedārtha-prakāśa (the commentary on the Taittirīya Yajur-veda). The arguments in both passages (pp. 86-89) are to the same effect, and contain nothing that has not been already in substance anticipated in preceding summaries of the Mīmāṃsā doctrine. In reference to their argument that no author of the Veda is remembered, I have noticed here that the supposition which an objector might urge, that the *ṛishis*, the acknowledged utterers of the hymns,

might also have been their authors, is guarded against by the tenet, elsewhere maintained by Indian writers, that the *rishis* were merely seers of the pre-existing sacred texts. Some of the opinions quoted from the *Sūtras* of *Jaimini*, are further enforced in a passage from the summary of the *Mīmāṃsā* doctrine, which I have quoted from the *Sarva-darśana-saṅgraha*. The writer first notices the *Naiyāyika* objections to the *Mīmāṃsaka* tenet that the *Veda* had no personal author, viz. (1) that any tradition to this effect must have been interrupted at the past dissolution of the universe; (2) that it would be impossible to prove that no one had ever recollected any such author; (3) that the sentences of the *Veda* have the same character as all other sentences; (4) that the inference,—drawn from the present mode of transmitting the *Vedas* from teacher to pupil,—that the same mode of transmission must have gone on from eternity, breaks down by being equally applicable to any other book; (5) that the *Veda* is in fact ascribed to a personal author in a passage of the book itself; (6) that sound is not eternal, and that when we recognize letters as the same we have heard before, this does not prove their identity or eternity, but is merely a recognition of them as belonging to the same species as other letters we have heard before; (7) that though *Parameśvara* (God) is naturally incorporeal, he may have assumed a body in order to reveal the *Veda*, etc. The writer then states the *Mīmāṃsaka* answers to these arguments thus: What does this alleged 'production by a personal author' (*pauruṣheyatva*) mean? The *Veda*, if supposed to be so 'pro-

duced, cannot derive its authority (a) from inference (or reasoning), as fallible books employ the same process. Nor will it suffice to say (b) that it derives its authority from its truth: for the Veda is defined to be a book which proves that which can be proved in no other way. And even if Parameśvara (God) were to assume a body, he would not, in that state of limitation, have any access to supernatural knowledge. Further, the fact that different śākhās or recensions of the Vedas are called after the names of particular sages, proves no more than that these recensions were studied by those sages, and affords no ground for questioning the eternity of the Vedas,—an eternity which is proved by the fact of our recognizing letters when we meet with them. These letters are the very identical letters we had heard before, for there is no evidence to show either that letters of the same sort (G's, for instance,) are numerically different from each other, or that they are generic terms, denoting a species. The apparent differences which are observable in the same letter, result merely from the particular characteristics of the persons who utter it, and do not affect its identity. This is followed by further reasoning in support of the same general view; and the writer then arrives at the conclusion, which he seems to himself to have triumphantly established, that the Veda is underrived and authoritative.

The question of the effect produced on the Vedas by the dissolutions of the world is noticed in some extracts from Patanjali's Mahābhāshya and its commentators, which have been adduced by Prof. Goldstücker



in the Preface to his Mānava-kalpa Sūtra, and which I have partly reprinted in pp. 95 ff. It is admitted by Patanjali, that, though the sense of the Vedas is permanent, the order of their letters has not always remained the same, and that this difference is exhibited in the different recensions of the Kāthakas and other schools. Patanjali himself does not say what is the cause of this alteration in the order of the letters; but his commentator, Kaiyyāṭa, states that the order was disturbed during the great mundane dissolutions, etc., and had to be restored (though with variations) by the eminent science of the rishis. Kullūka, the commentator on Manu (see p. 6), maintains that the Veda was preserved in the memory of Brahmā during the period of dissolution; and promulgated again at the beginning of the Kalpa, but whether in an altered form, or not, he does not tell us. The latter point is also left unsolved in Sankara's commentary on Brahma Sūtra i. 3, 30, which I quote in the Appendix, pp. 300 ff. Pages 93 ff. contain some remarks (by way of parenthesis) on the question whether or not the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā admits the existence of a Deity.

In the extract given in pp. 98-105 from his commentary on the Brahma Sūtras,<sup>1</sup> Sankara, who follows the author of those Sūtras, and Jaimini, in basing the authority of the Vedas on the eternity of sound, finds it necessary to meet an objection that, as the gods mentioned in the Veda had confessedly an origin in time, the

<sup>1</sup> My attention was originally drawn to this passage by a treatise, then unpublished, by the Rev. Prof. Banerjea, formerly of Bishop's College, Calcutta.

words which designate those gods cannot be eternal, but must have originated co-entially with the created objects which they denote, since eternal words could not have an eternal connection with non-eternal objects. This difficulty he tries to overcome (ignoring the ground taken by Jaimini, that the Veda contains no references to non-eternal objects) by asserting that the eternal connection of words is not with individual objects, but with the species to which these objects belong, and that Indra and the other gods are proved by the Veda to belong to species. Sankara then goes on to assert, on the authority of Brahma Sūtra, i. 3, 28, fortified by various texts from the Vedas and the Smritis, that the gods and the world generally are produced (though not in the sense of evolution out of a material cause) from the word of the Vedas (see pp. 6 and 16) in the form of *sphoṭa*. This last term will be explained below. This subject above referred to, of the eternal connection of the words of the Veda with the objects they represent, is further pursued in a passage which I have quoted in the Appendix, p. 300, where an answer is given to the objection that the objects denoted by the words of the Veda cannot be eternal, as a total destruction of everything takes place (not, indeed, at the intermediate, but) at the great mundane dissolutions. The solution given is that, by the favour of the supreme Lord, the inferior lords Brahmā, etc., retain a recollection of the previous mundane conditions; and that in each successive creation everything is produced exactly the same as it had previously been. I then proceed in p. 105 to adduce a passage from Sāyana, the

commentator on the Rig-veda, who refers to another of the Brahma Sūtras, i. J, 3 (quoted in p. 106), declaring that Brahma was the source of the Veda, which Sankara interprets as containing a proof of the omniscience of Brahma. Śāyana understands this text as establishing the superhuman origin of the Veda, though not its eternity in the proper sense, it being only meant, according to him (as well as to Mādhava; see p. xi.), that the Veda is eternal in the same sense as the æther is eternal, *i.e.* during the period between each creation and dissolution of the universe.

In opposition to the tenets of the Mīmāṃsakas, who hold the eternity (or the eternal self-existence) of the Veda, and to the dogmas of the Vedānta, as just expounded, Gotama, the author of the Nyāya aphorisms, denies (Section ix. pp. 108-118) the eternity of sound; and after vindicating the Veda from the charges of falsehood, self-contradiction, and tautology, deduces its authority from the authority of the wise, or competent, person or persons who were its authors, as proved by the efficacy of such of the Vedic prescriptions as relate to mundane matters, and can be tested by experience. It does not distinctly result from Gotama's aphorism that God is the competent person whom he regards as the maker of the Veda. If he did not refer to God, he must have regarded the rishis as its authors. The authors of the Vaiśeshika Sūtras, and of the Tarka Sangraha; as well as the writer of the Kusumāñjali, however, clearly refer the Veda to Īśvara (God) as its framer (pp. 118-133). Udayana, the author of the latter

work (pp. 128-133), controverts the opinion that the existence of the Veda from eternity can be proved by a continuous tradition, as such a tradition must, he says, have been interrupted at the dissolution of the world, which preceded the existing creation. He, therefore (as explained by his commentator), infers an eternal (and omniscient author of the Veda; asserting that the Veda is *paurusheya*, or derived from a personal author; that many of its own texts establish this; and that the appellations given to its particular *śākhās* or recensions, are derived from the names of those sages whose persons were assumed by Īśvara, when he uttered them at the creation. In pp. 125 ff. I have quoted one of the Vaiśeṣhika Sūtras, with some passages from the commentator, to show the conceptions the writers entertained of the nature of the supernatural knowledge, or intuition, of the rishis.

Kapila, the author of the Sāṅkhya Aphorisms (pp. 133-138), agrees with the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣhika aphorists in denying the eternity of the Veda, but, in conformity with his own principles, differs from Gotama and Kaṇāda in denying its derivation from a personal (*i.e.* here, a divine) author, because there was no person (*i.e.* as his commentator explains, no God) to make it. Viṣṇu, the chief of the liberated beings, though omniscient, could not, he argues, have made the Veda, owing to his impassiveness, and no other person could have done so from want of omniscience. And even if the Veda have been uttered by the primeval Puruṣa, it cannot be called his work, as it was breathed forth by him unconsciously. Kapila agrees

with Jaimini in ascribing a self-demonstrating power to the Veda, and differs from the Vaiśeshikas in not deriving its authority from correct knowledge possessed by a conscious utterer. He proceeds to controvert the existence of such a thing as *spṛoṭa* (a modification of sound which is assumed by the Mīmāṃsakas, and described as single, indivisible, distinct from individual letters, existing in the form of words, and constituting a whole), and to deny the eternity of sound.

In the tenth Section (pp. 138–179) I shew (*a*) by quotations from the aphorisms of the Vedānta and their commentator (pp. 140–145), that the author and expounder of the Uttara Mīmāṃsā (the Vedānta) frequently differ from Jaimini the author of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā in the interpretation of the same texts of the Upanishads. A similar diversity is next (*b*) proved at greater length (pp. 145–173), by quotations from the aphorisms and commentaries of the Vedānta and the Sāṅkhya, to characterize the expositions proposed by the adherents of those two systems respectively. One quotation is given in pp. 175 ff. to shew (*c*) that the same is true in regard to the followers of the Vaiśeshika philosophy, who distinctly reject the Vedāntic explanations; and last of all (*d*) I have made some extracts (pp. 177 ff.) from the Bhākti Sūtras of Sāṅdilya to exhibit the wide divergence of that writer from the orthodox views of the Vedānta regarding the sense of the Vedas. In pp. 173–175 I quote some remarks of Dr. E. Roer, and Prof. Max Müller, regarding the doctrines of the Upanishads, and their relations to the different philosophical schools.

In the facts brought forward in this section we find another illustration (1) of the tendency common to all dogmatic theologians to interpret in strict conformity with their own opinions the unsystematic and not always consistent texts of an earlier age which have been handed down by tradition as sacred and infallible, and to represent them as containing, or as necessarily implying, fixed and consistent systems of doctrine; as well as (2) of the diversity of view which so generally prevails in regard to the sense of such texts among writers of different schools, who adduce them with equal positiveness of assertion as establishing tenets and principles which are mutually contradictory or inconsistent.

In the eleventh Section (pp. 179–207) some passages are adduced from the Nyāya-mālā-vistara, and from Kullūka's commentary on Manu, to show that a distinct line of demarcation is drawn by the scholastic writers between the Vedas on the one hand, and all other classes of Indian scriptures, embraced under the designation of Smṛiti (including the Darśanas, the Institutes of Manu, the Purānas, and Itihāsas, etc.), on the other, the first being regarded as independent and infallible guides, while the others are (in theory) held to be authoritative only in so far as they are founded on, and coincide with, the Veda. The practical effect of this distinction is, however, much lessened by the fact that the ancient sages, the authors of the Smritis, such of them, I mean, as, like Manu, are recognized as orthodox, are looked upon by Mādḥava and Śankara as having had access to Vedic texts now no longer extant, as having held communion with the gods,

and as having enjoyed a clearness of intuition into divine mysteries which is denied to later mortals (pp. 181–185). Sankara, however (as shewn in pp. 184–192), does not regard all the ancients as having possessed this infallible insight into truth, but exerts all his ingenuity to explain away the claims (though clearly sanctioned by an Upanishad) of Kapila, who was not orthodox according to his Vedāntic standard, to rank as an authority. In his depreciation of Kapila, however, Sankara is opposed to the Bhāgavata Purāna (p. 192). I then proceed to observe (pp. 194–196) that although in ancient times the authors of the different philosophical systems (*Darśanas*) no doubt put forward their respective opinions as true, in opposition to all the antagonistic systems, yet in modern times the superior orthodoxy of the Vedānta appears to be generally recognized; while the authors of the other systems are regarded, *e.g.* by Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, as, amid all their diversities, having in view, as their ultimate scope, the support of the Vedāntic theory. The same view, in substance, is taken by Vijnāna Bhikshu, the commentator on the Sāṅkhya Sūtras, who (pp. 196–203) maintains that Kapila's system, though atheistic, is not irreconcilable with the Vedānta and other theistic schools, as its denial of an Īśvara (God) is only practical, or regulative, and merely enforced in order to withdraw men from the too earnest contemplation of an eternal and perfect Deity, which would impede their study of the distinction between matter and spirit. To teach men this discrimination, as the great means of attaining final liberation, is one of the two main objects, and strong

points, of the Sāṅkhya philosophy, and here it is authoritative; while its atheism is admitted to be its weak side, and on this subject it has no authority. Vijnāna Bhikshu goes on to say that it is even supposable that theistic systems, in order to prevent sinners from attaining knowledge, may lay down doctrines partially opposed to the Vedas; and that though in these portions they are erroneous, they will still possess authority in the portions conformable to the Sruti and Smṛiti. He then quotes a passage from the Padma Purāna, in which the god Siva tells his consort Pārvatī that the Vaiśeshika, the Nyāya, the Sāṅkhya, the Purva-mīmāṃsā Darśanas, and the Vedāntic theory of illusion, are all systems infected by the dark (or *tāmasa*) principle, and consequently more or less unauthoritative. All orthodox (*āstika*) theories, however, are, as Vijnāna Bhikshu considers, authoritative, and free from error on their own special subject. And as respects the discrepancy between the Sāṅkhya and the Vedānta, regarding the unity of Soul, he concludes that the former is not devoid of authority, as the apparent diversity of souls is acknowledged by the Vedānta, and the discriminative knowledge which the Sāṅkhya teaches is an instrument of liberation to the embodied soul; and thus the two varying doctrines, if regarded as, the one practical (or regulative), and the other real (or transcendental), will not be contradictory. At the close of Section eleventh (pp. 204–207) it is shewn that the distinction drawn by the Indian commentators between the superhuman Veda and its human appendages, the Kalpa Sūtras, etc., as well as the Smṛitis, is not borne out by



certain texts which I had previously cited. The Brihad Āraṇyaka and Muṇḍaka Upanishads (pp. 8, 31) seem to place all the different sorts of Sāstras or scriptures (including the four Vedas) in one and the same class, the former speaking of them all promiscuously as being the breathing of Brahma, while the latter describes them all (except the Upanishads) as being parts of the "inferior science," in opposition to the "superior science," or knowledge of Brahma. In the same spirit as the Muṇḍaka, the Chhāndogya Upanishad also (quoted in p. 32 f.) includes the four Vedas in the same list with a variety of miscellaneous Sāstras (which Nārada has studied without getting beyond the confines of exoteric knowledge), and never intimates (unless it be by placing them at the head of the list) that the former can claim any superiority over the other works with which they are associated. As, however, Sankara could not, in consistency with the current scholastic theory regarding the wide difference between the Vedas and all other Sāstras, admit that the latter could have had a common origin with the former, he endeavours in his comment on the passage of the Brihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad to which I have adverted, to shew that the other works, which are there said to have been breathed out by the great Being along with the Vedas, were in reality portions of the Brāhmanas. This explanation can scarcely apply to all the works enumerated, and its force is weakened by the tenor of the other passages from the Muṇḍaka and Chhāndogya Upanishads, while any such distinction is repudiated in the statements of the Itihāsas and Purānas quoted in pp. 27-30 and 105.

In the twelfth Section (pp. 207-217) the arguments in support of the Veda, adduced in the philosophical systems, and by the various commentators, as above summarised, are recapitulated, and some remarks are made on these reasonings. My observations are intended to shew that the arguments in question are inconclusive, or assume the points to be established; that the rishis are proved by the contents of the hymns to have been their real authors; and that numerous events which have occurred in time, are undoubtedly mentioned in the Vedas. This as we have seen (above, p. xvi.) is admitted by Sankara.

The Second Chapter (pp. 217-286) exhibits the opinions of the rishis in regard to the origin of the Vedic hymns. Its object is to shew in detail that, though some at least of the rishis appear to have imagined themselves to be inspired by the gods in the expression of their religious emotions and ideas, they at the same time regarded the hymns as their own compositions, or as (presumably) the compositions of their forefathers, distinguishing between them as new and old, and describing their own authorship in terms which could only have been dictated by a consciousness of its reality. The first, second, and third Sections (pp. 218-244) contain a collection of passages from the Rig-veda in which a distinction is drawn (1) between the rishis as ancient and modern, and (2) between the hymns as older and more recent; and in which (3) the rishis describe themselves as the makers, fabricators, or generators of the hymns; with some additional texts in which such authorship appears

to be implied, though it is not expressed. Section fourth (pp. 245-283) contains a variety of passages from the same Veda, in which (1) a superhuman character or supernatural faculties are ascribed to the earlier rishis; and (2), the idea is expressed that the praises and ceremonies of the rishis were suggested and directed by the gods in general, or, in particular, by the goddess of speech, or by some other or others of the different deities of the Vedic pantheon. To illustrate, and render more intelligible and probable, the opinions which I have ascribed to the old Indian rishis regarding their own inspiration, I have quoted in the same Section (pp. 267 - 273) a number of passages from Hesiod and Homer to shew that the early Greek bards entertained a similar belief. I then advert (pp. 273 - 274) to the remarkable divergence between the later religious histories of Greece and of India. I next enquire briefly (in pp. 274 - 275) in what way we can reconcile the apparently conflicting ideas of the rishis on the subject of the hymns, considered, on the one hand, as their own productions, and, on the other, as inspired by the gods. Then follow (pp. 275 - 279) some further texts from the Rig-veda, in which a mystical, magical, or supernatural efficacy is ascribed to the hymns. These are succeeded (pp. 279 - 283) by a few quotations from the same Veda, in which the authors complain of their own ignorance; and by a reference to the contrast between these humble confessions and the proud pretensions set up by later theologians in behalf of the Veda, and its capability of imparting universal knowledge. The ideas of the rishis regarding their own inspiration differ widely from the conceptions

of later theorists; for while the former looked upon the gods, who were confessedly mere created beings, as the sources of supernal illumination, the latter either regard the Veda as eternal, or refer it to the eternal Brahma, or Īśvara, as its author. The fifth and last Section (pp. 283-286) adduces some texts from the Śvetāśvatara, Muṇḍaka and Chhāndogya Upaniṣhadś, which show the opinions of the writers regarding the inspiration, of their predecessors; and refers to the similar claims set up on their own behalf by the writers of the Itihāsas and Purānas, as shewn in the passages quoted in pp. 27-30.

With all its imperfections this volume may perhaps possess a certain interest, not only for the student of Indian history, but also for the divine and the philosopher, as furnishing a few documents to illustrate the course of theological opinion in a sphere far removed from the ordinary observation of the European student,—a course which, quite independently of the merits of the different tenets involved in the enquiry, will, I think, be found to present a remarkable parallel in various respects to that which is traceable in the history of those religious systems with which we are most familiar. In both cases we find that a primitive age of ardent emotion, of simple faith, and of unarticulated beliefs, was succeeded by a period of criticism and speculation, when the floating materials handed down by preceding generations were compared, classified, reconciled, developed into their consequences, and elaborated into a variety of scholastic systems.

In the Preface to the first edition I stated as follows: "In regard to the texts quoted from the Rig-veda, I

have derived the same sort of assistance from the French version of M. Langlois, which has been acknowledged in the Preface to the Second Volume, p. vi. I am also indebted for some of the Vedic texts to Boehtlingk and Roth's 'Lexicon.'

A comparison of the former edition with the present will shew that considerable alterations and additions have been made in the latter. The texts which formerly stood in the Appendix have now been transferred to their proper places in the body of the work; and various other passages have been transposed. The principal additions will be found in the first four sections, in the ninth (pp. 115-127), tenth (which is altogether new), eleventh (pp. 185 ff.), and in the Appendix.

I am indebted to various learned friends for assistance in different parts of the work, which I have acknowledged in the notes. My thanks are especially due to Professors Goldstücker and Cowell for various important corrections which they have suggested in my translations of passages of a scholastic and philosophical character, quoted either in the body of the volume or in the Appendix,—corrections which are incorporated in the text,—as well as for some further remarks and suggestions which will be found in the notes or Appendix. I am also under obligations to Professor Aufrecht for some emendations of my renderings in the early part of the work, as well as for his explanations of many of the texts of the Rig-veda cited in the Second Chapter.



# CONTENTS.

PAGES.

v.—xxviii. PREFACE.

- 1—217. CHAPTER I. OPINIONS REGARDING THE ORIGIN, DIVISION, INSPIRATION, AND AUTHORITY OF THE VEDAS, HELD BY INDIAN AUTHORS SHORTLY BEFORE, OR SUBSEQUENT TO, THE COLLECTION OF THE HYMNS OF THE RIG-VEDA.
- 3—10. SECT. I. Origin of the Vedas according to the Purusha-sūkta, the Atharva-veda, the Brāhmaṇas, Upanishads, and Institutes of Manu.
- 10—14. SECT. II. Origin of the Vedas according to the Viṣṇu, Bhāgavata, and Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇas, the Harivaṁśa, the Mahābhārata; eternity of the Veda; miscellaneous statements regarding it.
- 14—18. SECT. III. Passages of the Brāhmaṇas and other works in which the Vedas are spoken of as being the sources of all things, and as infinite and eternal.
- 18—36. SECT. IV. Passages from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa and Manu eulogistic of the Veda, with some statements of a different tenor from Manu and other writers.
- 36—49. SECT. V. Division of the Vedas, according to the Viṣṇu, Vāyu, and Bhāgavata Purāṇas, and the Mahābhārata.
- 49—57. SECT. VI. Accounts in the Viṣṇu and Vāyu Purāṇas of the schisms between the adherents of the Yajur-veda, Vaiśampāyana, and Yājñavalkya; hostility of the Ātharyanas towards the other Vedas; and of the Chhandogas towards the Rig-veda.

## PAGES.

- 57—70. SECT. VII. Reasonings of the Commentators on the Vedas, in support of the authority of the Vedas.
- 70—108. SECT. VIII. Arguments of the Mīmāṃsākas and Vedāntins in support of the eternity and authority of the Vedas.
- 108—138. SECT. IX. Arguments of the followers of the Nyāya, Vaiśeshika, and Sāṅkhya systems in support of the authority of the Vedas, but against eternity of sound, and of the Vedas; Vaiśeshika conception of the intuitive knowledge of the rishis.
- 138—179. SECT. X. Extracts from the Vedānta, Sāṅkhya, Vaiśeshika, and Bhakti aphorisms, and their commentators, illustrative of the use which the authors of the different Darśanas make of Vedic texts, and the different modes of interpretation which they adopt.
- 179—207. SECT. XI. Distinction in point of authority between the Veda and the Smṛitis or non-Vedic Sāstras, as stated in the Nyāya-mālā-vistara, and by the commentators on Manu, and the Vedānta; Vijnāna Bhikshu's view of the Sāṅkhya; opinion of Sankara regarding the authority of the orthodox rishis; difference of view between him and Madhusūdana regarding the orthodoxy of Kapila and Kaṇāda, etc. : the distinction between the Vedas and other Sāstras, drawn by later writers, not borne out by the Upanishads.
- 207—217. SECT. XII. Recapitulation of the arguments urged in the Darśanas, and by commentators, in support of the authority of the Vedas, with some remarks on these reasonings.
- 217—286. CHAPTER II. THE RISHIS, AND THEIR OPINIONS IN REGARD TO THE ORIGIN OF THE VEDIC HYMNS.
- 218—224. SECT. I. Passages from the Hymns of the Veda which distinguish between the Rishis as Ancient and Modern.
- 224—232. SECT. II. Passages from the Veda in which a distinction is drawn between the older and the more recent hymns.



## PAGES.

- 232—244. SECT. III. Passages of the Rig-veda in which the Rishis describe themselves as the composers of the Hymns, or intimate nothing to the contrary.
- 245—283. SECT. IV. Passages of the Rig-veda in which a supernatural character is ascribed to the Rishis or the Hymns; similar conceptions of inspiration entertained by the Greeks of the Homeric age; limitations of this opinion in the case of the Vedic Rishis.
- 283—286. SECT. V. Texts from the Upanishads, showing the opinions of the authors regarding the inspiration of their predecessors.
- 287—312. APPENDIX.
287. Quotation from the Atharva-veda xi. 7, 24.
- 287—288. Amended translations by Professor Aufrecht.
- 288—289. Quotations from Manu and the Mahābhārata on Vedic and other study.
- 289—290. Various illustrative quotations and references.
290. Amended translation by Professor Cowell.
290. Note by Professor Cowell on the phrase *Kālātyayāpadishṭa*.
291. Amended translation by Professor Cowell.
- 292—300. Quotation of Brahma Sūtras, i. 3, 34—38, with Sankara's comments, shewing the incompetence of Sūdras to acquire the highest divine knowledge, with a short passage of a contrary tenor from the Bhāgavat Gītā.
- 300—308. Quotation from Brahma Sūtras, i. 3, 30, with Sankara's comment, in continuation of the reasoning in pp. 101—105 in support of the eternity of the words of the Veda, and in refutation of the objections derived from the alleged non-eternity of creation; with Brahma Sūtra, ii. 1, 36, and part of Sankara's comment.
- 308—309. Quotation from Manu, ii. 14 f.; and from Kullūka in explanation of the term *samayādhyushita*.

## PAGES.

- 309—10. Corrections by Professors Cowell and Goldstücker.
310. Quotation from Commentary on Vishṇu Purāṇa, i. 17, 54.
310. Quotation from Vājasaneyi Sāmhita, xiii. 45, and Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 5, 2, 21.
311. Additional texts (i. 67, 4; i. 109, 1, 2; and x. 66, 5) from the Rig-veda, regarding the composition of the hymns.
312. Supplementary note by Prof. Goldstücker, on *Kālātya-yāpadishṭa*.

## ERRATA ET CORRIGENDA.

- Page 24, line 11. For Brahmā read Brahmā.
- „ 45, „ 15. For *Yayush* read *Yajush*.
- „ 53, „ 8. For theologicans read theologians.
- „ 62, „ 2 from foot: For its author read their authors.
- „ 85, „ 4 „ Before *Prajāpatir* insert xi. 243.
- „ 95, „ 2 „ For *dhvanitvam* read *dhvanitam*.
- „ 96, „ 16. The same correction.
- „ 101, „ 22. For *Vanap.* read *S'āntip.*
- „ 149, „ 6. For *śabdādīkshiter* read *śabdād īkshīteś*.
- „ 159, „ 16. For *chāindri-* read *chā indri-*.
- „ 159, „ 31. For *paratvou-* read *paratvo-*.
- „ 160, „ 18. For *punar-utpattir* read *punar-anutpattir*.
- „ 213, „ 16. For p. 120 read p. 118.
- „ 221, „ 24. For vi. 21, 1 read vi. 21, 8.
- „ 224, „ 7 from foot. Omit *dhishanā*.
- „ 261, „ 12. For vi. 62, 3 read vi. 26, 3.

# ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS.

---

## VOLUME THIRD.

---

### CHAPTER I.

OPINIONS REGARDING THE ORIGIN, DIVISION, INSPIRATION, AND AUTHORITY OF THE VEDAS, HELD BY INDIAN AUTHORS SHORTLY BEFORE, OR SUBSEQUENT TO, THE COLLECTION OF THE HYMNS OF THE RIG-VEDA.

IN the preceding volumes of this work<sup>1</sup> I have furnished a general account of the ancient Indian writings, which are comprehended under the designation of Veda or S'ruti. These works, which, as we have seen, constitute the earliest literature of the Hindus, are broadly divisible into two classes: (1) The Mantras or hymns, in which the praises of the gods are celebrated and their blessing is invoked; (2) the Brāhmaṇas, which embrace (a) the liturgical institutes in which the ceremonial application of these hymns is declared, the various rites of sacrifice are prescribed, and the origin and hidden import of the different forms are explained, and (b) the Āraṇyakas,<sup>2</sup> and Upanishads (called also Vedāntas, *i.e.* concluding portions of the Vedas), which in part possess the same character as some of the earlier portions of the Brāhmaṇas, and are in part theological treatises in which the spiritual aspirations which

<sup>1</sup> See Vol. I. pp. 2 ff. and Vol. II. pp. 169 ff. See also Professor Max Müller's History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature.

<sup>2</sup> For more precise information see Müller's Anc. Sansk. Lit. pp. 313 ff. from which it will be perceived that only some of the Āraṇyakas form part of the Brāhmaṇas, and that two of the Upanishads are included in a Sanhitā.

were gradually developed in the minds of "the more devout of the Indian sages are preserved. It is, therefore, clear that the hymns constitute the original and, in some respects, the most essential portion of the Veda; that the Brāhmaṇas arose out of the hymns, and are subservient to their employment for the purposes of worship; while the Upanishads give expression to ideas of a speculative and mystical character which, though to some extent discoverable in the hymns and in the older portion of the Brāhmaṇas, are much further matured, and assume a more exclusive importance, in these later treatises.

I content myself here with referring the reader who desires to obtain a fuller idea of the nature of the hymns, and of the mythology which they embody, to the late Professor H. H. Wilson's translation of the earlier portion of the Rig-veda, to his prefaces to the several volumes, to Professor Max Müller's History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature, and to two papers of my own in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, entitled Contributions to a knowledge of the Cosmogony and Mythology of the Rig-veda. In the fourth volume of this work I return to the latter branch of the subject, and compare the conceptions which the rishis entertained of the different objects of their worship, with those representations of the deities who bore the same names, which occur in Indian writings of a later date, whether mythological or theological.

The task to which I propose in the meantime to devote myself, is to supply some account of the opinions entertained by Hindu writers, ancient and modern, in regard to the origin and authority of the Vedas. With this view I have collected from some of the later hymns, from the Indian writings of the middle and later Vedic era (the Brāhmaṇas and Upanishads) as well as from the books, whether popular or scientific, of the post-vedic period (the Purāṇas, the Itihāsas, the Institutes of Manu, the aphorisms of the Darśanas, or systems of philosophy, and their commentators, and the commentaries on the Vedas) such passages as I have discovered which have reference to these subjects, and propose to compare the opinions there set forth with the ideas entertained on some of these points by the writers of the more ancient hymns, as deducible from numerous passages in their own compositions.

The mythical accounts which are given of the origin of the Vedas

are mutually conflicting.<sup>3</sup> In some passages they are said to have been created by Prajāpati from fire, air, and the sun, or by some other process. In other texts they are said to have been produced by Brahmā from his different mouths, or by the intervention of the Gāyatrī, or to have sprung from the goddess Sarasvatī, or to have otherwise arisen. I proceed to adduce these several passages.

SECT. I.—*Origin of the Vedas according to the Purusha-sūkta, the Atharva-veda, the Brāhmanas, Upanishads, and Institutes of Manu.*

*Purusha-sūkta.*—In the ninth verse of this hymn (Rig-veda, x. 90, already quoted in Vol. I. pp. 8 and 9) the three Vedas are said to have been produced from the mystical victim Purusha: *Tasmād yajñāt sarva-hutaḥ ṛichaḥ sāmāni jajñire | chhandāṃsi jajñire tasmād yajus tasmād ajāyata* | “From that universal sacrifice sprang the ṛich and sāmān verses: the metres sprang from it: from it the yajush arose.”<sup>3</sup>

This is the only passage in the hymns of the Rig-veda in which the creation of the Vedas is described.

In the Atharva-veda the following texts refer to that subject:

x. 7, 14. *Yattra ṛishayaḥ prathamajāḥ ṛichaḥ sāmā yajur mahī, | ekarshir yasminn ārpitaḥ Skambhaṃ tam brūhi katamaḥ svid eva saḥ |*  
 . . . . 20. *Yasmād ṛicho apātakshan yajur yasmād apākashan | sāmāni yasya lomāni atharvāngiraso mykham | Skambham tam brūhi katamaḥ svid eva saḥ |*

“Declare who that Skambha (supporting-principle) is in whom the primeval rishis, the ṛich, sāmān, and yajush, the earth, and the one rishi, are sustained. . . . 20. Declare who is that Skambha from whom they cut off the ṛich verses, from whom they scraped off the yajush, of whom the sāmān verses are the hairs, and the verses of Atharvan and Angiras the mouth.”

<sup>3</sup> The word *veda*, in whatever sense we are to understand it, occurs in R.V. viii. 19, 5: *Yāḥ samīdhā yaḥ āhūtī yo vedena dadāsa martyo agnaye | yo namasū svadhvarah |* 6. *Tasya jī arvanto rāmhayante āśavas tasya dyumnitamaṃ yaśaḥ | na tam aṃho deva-kṛitān kutaś chana na martya-kṛitam naśat |* “The horses of that mortal who, devoted to sacrifice, does homage to Agni with fuel, with an oblation, with ritual knowledge (?), with reverence,—(6) speed forward impetuously; and his renown is most glorious. No calamity, caused either by god or by man, can assail him from any quarter.”

xiii. 4, 38. *Sa vai rigbhyo ajāyata tasmād ṛichō ajāyanta |*

“He (apparently Indra, see verse 44) sprang from the ṛich verses : the ṛich verses sprang from him.”

xix. 54, 3. *Kālād ṛichah samabhavan yajuh kālād ajāyatā |*

“From Time the ṛich verses sprang : the yajush sprang from Time.”<sup>4</sup>

The following texts from the same Veda may also be introduced here :

iv. 35, 6. *Yasmāt pakvād amṛitañ sambhūva yo vjāyatriyūḥ adhipatir babhūva | yasmīn vedāḥ nihitāḥ viśvarūpās tenaudanenatīr tarāmi mṛityum |*

“I overpass death by means of that oblation (*odāna*), from which, when cooked, ambrosia (*amṛita*) was produced, which became the lord of the Gāyatrī, and in which the omniform Vedās are comprehended.”

vii. 54, 1. *Ṛichañ sāma yajāmahe yābhyāñ karmāñi kurvate | ete sadasi rājato yajnañ deveshu yachhataḥ | 2. Ṛichañ sāma yad aprāksham havir ojo yajur balam | esha mā tasmād mā himsīd vedāḥ priṣṭhāḥ śachīpate |*

“We worship the Ṛich and the Sāman, wherewith men celebrate religious rites, which shine in the assembly, and convey sacrifices to the gods. 2. Inasmuch as I have asked the Ṛich and the Sāman for butter and for vigour, and the Yajush for strength,—let not the Veda, so asked, destroy me, o lord of strength (Indra).”

The next passage is from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 5, 8, 1 ff. :

*Prajāpatir vai idam agre āsīd ekaḥ eva | so 'kāmayata syām prajāyeya iti | So 'śrāmyat sa tapo'tapyata | tasmāch chrāntāt tepānāt trayo lokāḥ asṛjyanta pṛithivy antarikshāñ dyauḥ | sa imāñs trīñ lokāñ abhitatāpa | tebhyas taptebhyas trīñi jyotīṃshy ajāyanta agnir yo 'yam pavate sūryaḥ | sa imāñi trīñi jyotīṃshy abhitatāpa | tebhyas taptebhyas trayo vedāḥ ajāyanta agner ṛigvedo vāyur yajurvedaḥ sūryūt sāmavedaḥ | sa imāñs trīñ vedāñ abhitatāpa | tebhyas taptebhyas trīñi śukrāñy ajāyanta bhūr ity ṛigvedād bhuvāḥ iti yajurvedāt svar iti sāmavedāt | Tad ṛigvedenaiva hotram akurvata yajurvedena ādhvaryaṇāñ sāmavedena udgītham | yad eva trayyai vidyāyai śukrañ tena brahmatvāñ ucheḥakrāma.*

“Prajāpati was formerly this universe [*i.e.* the sole existence], one only. He desired, ‘may I become, may I be propagated.’ He toiled

<sup>4</sup> See my translation of the entire hymn in the Journal of the Roy. As. Soc. for 1865, p. 381. The Vishṇu Purāṇa, i. 2, 13, says: *Tad eva sarvam evaitad vyaktū-vyakta-svarūpavat | tathā puruṣa-rūpeṇa kāla-rūpeṇa cha sthitam |* “This (Brahma) is all this universe, existing both as the perceptible and the imperceptible; existing also in the forms of Puruṣa and of Kāla (Time).”

in devotion, he performed austerity. From him, when he had so toiled, and performed austerity, three worlds were created,—earth, air, and sky. He infused warmth into these three worlds. From them, thus heated, three lights were produced,—Agni (fire), this which purifies (*i.e.* Pavana, or Vāyu, the wind),<sup>5</sup> and Sūrya (the sun). He infused heat into these three lights. From them so heated the three Vedas were produced,—the Rig-veda from Agni (fire), the Yajur-veda from Vāyu (wind), and the Sāma-veda from Sūrya (the sun). He infused warmth into these three Vedas. From them so heated three luminous essences were produced,—bhūh from the Rig-veda, bhuvah from the Yajur-veda, and svar from the Sāma-veda. Hence, with the Rig-veda they performed the function of the hotṛi; with the Yajur-veda, the office of the adhvaryu; with the Sāma-veda, the duty of the udgātṛi; while the function of the brahman arose through the luminous essence of the triple science [*i.e.* the three Vedas combined].”

*Chhândogya Upanishad.*—A similar passage (already quoted in Volume Second, p. 200) occurs in the Chhândogya Upanishad (p. 288 of Dr. Rœr’s ed.):

*Prajāpatir lokān abhyatapat | teshāṃ tapyamānānām rasān prābrīhad  
agnim pṛithivyāḥ vāyum antarikshād ādityāṃ divaḥ | sa etās tisro devatāḥ  
abhyatapat | tāsāṃ tapyamānānām rasān prābrīhad agner ṛicho vāyor  
yajūṃshi sāma ādityāt | sa etāṃ trayiṃ vidyām abhyatapat | tasyās  
tapyamānāyāḥ rasān prābrīhad bhūr iti ṛigbhyo bhuvār iti yajurbhyaḥ  
svar iti sāmabhyaḥ |*

“Prajāpati infused warmth into the worlds, and from them so heated he drew forth their essences, viz. Agni (fire) from the earth, Vāyu (wind) from the air, and Sūrya (the sun) from the sky. He infused warmth into these three deities, and from them so heated he drew forth their essences,—from Agni the ṛich verses, from Vāyu the yajush verses, and from Sūrya the sāman verses. He then infused heat into this triple science, and from it so heated he drew forth its essences,—from ṛich verses the syllable bhūh, from yajush verses bhuvah, and from sāman verses svar.”<sup>6</sup>

<sup>5</sup> See S’atapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 2, 19: . . . *ayam eva sa Vāyur yo ’yam pavate* . . . “This is that Vāyu, he who purifies.”

<sup>6</sup> Passages to the same effect occur also in the Aitareya (v. 32–34) and Kaushītakī Brāhmaṇas. That in the former will be found in Dr. Haug’s translation of the

*Manu.*—The same origin is assigned to the three Vedas in the following verses from the account of the creation in *Manu*, i. 21–23, where the idea is no doubt borrowed from the *Brahmaṇas*:

*Sarveshāṃ tu sa nāmānt karmāni cha prithak prithak | Vedaśabdebhya evādau prithak saṁsthās cha nirmame | Karmātmaxāṃ cha devānāṃ so 'srijat prāṇinām prabhūḥ | sādhyānām cha garām sūkshmaṃ yajñāṃ chaiva sanātanam | Agni-vāyu-ravibhyas tu trayam brāhma sanātanam | dudoha yajna-siddhyartham ṛig-yajuh-sāma-lakshunam |*

“He [Brahmā] in the beginning fashioned from the words of the Veda the several names, functions, and separate conditions of all [creatures]. That Lord also created the subtle host of active and living deities, and of Sādhyas, and eternal sacrifice. And in order to the performance of sacrifice, he drew forth from Agni, from Vāyu, and from Sūrya, the triple eternal Veda, distinguished as Rich, Yajush, and Sāman.”

Kullūka Bhaṭṭa, the commentator, annotates thus on this passage:

*Sanātanaṃ nityam | vedāpaurusheyatva - paksho Manor abhimataḥ | pūrva-kalpe ye vedās te eva Paramātma-mūrttēr Brahmaṇaḥ sarvajnasya smṛity-ārūdhāḥ | tān eva kalpādāv agni-vāyu-ravibhyaḥ āchakarsha | śrautaś cha ayam artho na śaṅkanīyaḥ | tathācha śrutīḥ | “agner ṛigvedo vāyor yajurvedaḥ ādityāt sāmavedaḥ” iti |*

“The word *sanātana* means ‘eternally pre-existing.’ The doctrine of the superhuman origin of the Vedas is maintained by *Manu*. The same Vedas which [existed] in the previous mundane era (*Kalpa*) were preserved in the memory of the omniscient *Brahmā*, who was one with the supreme Spirit. It was those same Vedas that, in the beginning of the [present] *Kalpa*, he drew forth from Agni, Vāyu, and Sūrya: and this dogma, which is founded upon the Veda, is not to be questioned, for the Veda says, ‘the *Rig-veda* comes from Agni, the *Yajur-veda* from Vāyu, and the *Sāma-veda* from Sūrya.’”

Another commentator on *Manu*, *Medhātithi*, explains this passage in a more rationalistic fashion, “by remarking that the *Rig-veda* opens with a hymn to fire, and the *Yajur-veda* with one in which air is mentioned.”—*Colebr. Misc. Ess. i. p. 11, note.*

*Brahmaṇa*; and the one in the latter is rendered into German by Weber in his *Ind. Stud. ii. 363 ff.*

† Kullūka explains this to mean, “Having understood them from the words of the Veda” (*Vedaśabdebhyaḥ eva avagamyā*).



To the verses from Manu (i. 21-23) just cited, the following from the second book may be added, partly for the purpose of completing the parallel with the passages previously adduced from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa and the Chhāndogya Upanishad :

Manu, ii. 76 ff. *Akāraṃ chāpy ukāraṃ cha makāraṃ cha Prajāpatiḥ | Vēda-trayād niraduhad bhūr bhuvaḥ svar itīti cha | 77. Tribhyaḥ eva tu vedebhyaḥ pādām pādām adūduhat | "tat" ity ṛicho'syāḥ sāvitryāḥ parameshṭhī prajāpatiḥ | . . . 81. Omkāra-pūrvikās tisro mahāvyaḥ-ritayō vyayāḥ | Tripadā chāiva gāyatrī vijnēyaṅ Brahmano mukham.*

76. "Prajāpati also milked out of the three Vedas the letters *a*, *u*, and *m*, together with the words *bhūḥ*, *bhuvaḥ*, and *sva*. 77. The same supreme Prajāpati also milked from each of the three Vedas one of the [three] portions of the text called *sāvitrī* [or *gāyatrī*], beginning with the word *tat*.<sup>8</sup> . . . 81. The three great imperishable particles (*bhūḥ*, *bhuvaḥ*, *sva*) preceded by *om*, and the *gāyatrī* of three lines, are to be regarded as the mouth of Brahṃā."

The next passage, from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vi. 1, 1, 8, first speaks generally of Prajāpati creating the three Vedas, and then afterwards, with some inconsistency, describes their production from the waters :<sup>9</sup>

*So'yam puruṣaḥ Prajāpatir akāmayata "bhūyān syāṃ prajāyeya" iti | so'srāmyat sa tapo'tapyata | sa śrāntas tepāno brahma eva prathamam asṛijata trayīm eva vidyām | sū eva asmai pratishṭhā bhavat | tasmād āhur "brahma asya sarvasya pratishṭhā" iti | tasmād anūchya pratishṭhati | pratishṭhā hy eshā yad brahma | tasyām pratishṭhāyām pratishṭhito'tapyata | 9. So'po'srīyata vāchaḥ eva lokāt | vāg eva asya sū'srīyata | sū idam sarvam āpnod yad idam kincha | yad āpnod tasmād āpaḥ | yad avṛinot tasmād vāḥ | 10. So'kāmayatā "abhyo'dbhyo'dhi prajāyeya" iti | so'nayā trayyā vidyayā saha āpaḥ prāvīsat | tataḥ āndaṃ samavarttata | tad abhyamṛīsat | "astv" ity "astu bhūyo'stv" ity eva tad abravīt | tato brahma eva prathamam asṛīyata trayy eva vidyā | tasmād āhur "brahma asya sarvasya prathamajata" iti | api hi tasmāt puruṣhād brahma eva pūrvam asṛīyata tad asya tad mukham eva asṛīyata | tasmād anūchānam āhur "agni-kalpaḥ" iti | mukham hy etad agner yad brahma |*

<sup>8</sup> This text, Rig-veda, iii. 62, 10, will be quoted in the sequel.

<sup>9</sup> This passage with the preceding context is given in the Fourth Volume of this work, pp. 18 f.

“This Male, Prajāpati, desired, ‘May I multiply, may I be propagated.’ He toiled in devotion; he practised austere-fervour. Having done so he first of all created sacred knowledge, the triple Vedic science. This became a basis for him. Wherefore men say, ‘sacred knowledge is the basis of this universe.’ Hence after studying the Veda a man has a standing ground; for sacred knowledge is his foundation. Resting on this basis he (Prajāpati) practised austere-fervour. 9. He created the waters from Vāch (speech), as their world. Vāch was his: she was created. She pervaded all this ‘whatever exists. As she pervaded (*āpnot*), waters were called ‘āpāḥ.’ As she covered (*avrinot*) all, water was called ‘vār.’ 10. He desired, ‘May I be propagated from these waters.’ Along with this triple Vedic science he entered the waters. Thence sprang an egg. He gave it an impulse; and said, ‘Let there be, let there be, let there be again.’ Thence was first created sacred knowledge, the triple Vedic science. Wherefore men say, ‘Sacred knowledge is the first-born thing in this universe. Moreover, it was sacred knowledge which was created from that Male in front, wherefore it was created as his mouth. Hence they say of a man learned in the Veda, ‘He is like Agni; for sacred knowledge is Agni’s mouth.’”

The next passage from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, ii. 3, 10, 1, briefly states that the Vedas were created after Soma :

*‘Prajāpatiḥ Somaṁ rājānam asṛijata | taṁ trayo vedāḥ anv asṛijyanta |*

“Prajāpati created king Soma. After him the three Vedas were created.”

The same Brāhmaṇa in other places, as iii. 3, 2, 1, speaks of the Veda as derived from Prajāpati (*Prājāpatyo vedāḥ*).

*Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*.—According to the following passage of the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, xiv. 5, 4, 10 (= *Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad*, p. 455 of Röer’s ed. and p. 179 of trans.) the Vedas, as well as other Sāstras, are the breath of Brahma :

*Sa yathā ārdredhāgner abhyāhitāt pṛithag dhūmāḥ viniścharanti evaṁ vai are ’sya mahato bhūtataya niśvasitam ēvad yad ṛigvedo yajurvedaḥ sāmavedo tharvāṅgirasah itihāsaḥ purāṇaṁ vidyā upanishadaḥ ślokāḥ sūtrāṇy anuvyākhyānāni vyākhyānāni asyaiva etāni sarvāni niśvasitāni |*

“As from a fire made of moist wood various modifications of smoke proceed, so is the breathing of this great Being the Rig-veda, the

Yajur-veda, the Sāma-veda, the Atharvāngirases, the Itihāsas, Purāṇas, science, the Upanishads, verses (*ślokas*), aphorisms, comments of different kinds—all these are his 'breathings.'

It is curious that in this passage the Vedas appear to be classed in the same category with various other works, such as the Sūtras, from some at least of which (as we shall see further on), they are broadly distinguished by later writers, who regard the former (including the Brāhmaṇas and Upanishads) as of superhuman origin, and infallible correctness, while this character is expressly denied to the latter, which are represented as *paurusheya*, or merely human compositions, possessed of no independent authority.

In the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad (pp. 50-53 of Dr. Röer's ed.) Prajāpati [identified with Death, or the Devourer] is said to have produced *Vāc* (speech), and through her, together with soul, to have created all things, including the Vedas :

*Sa tayā vācā tena ātmanā idaṁ sarvam asṛijata yad idaṁ kincha riho yajūṁshi sāmāni chhandāṁsi yajnān prajāḥ paśūn |*

"By that speech and that soul he created all things whatsoever, rich, yajush, and sāmān texts, metres, sacrifices, creatures, and animals."

And in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiv. 4, 3, 12 (p. 290 of the same Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad) it is said :

*Trayo vedāḥ ete eva | vāg eva ṛig-vedo manō yajur-vedāḥ prāṇaḥ sāmavedāḥ |*

"The three Vedas are [identifiable with] these three things [speech, mind, and breath]. Speech is the Rig-veda, mind the Yajur-veda, and breath the Sāma-veda."

The following text, from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 5, 2, 52, gives a singular account of the production of the Vedas :

*"Samudraḥ tvā sadane sādāyāmi" iti | Mano vai samudraḥ | manaso vai samudrād vācā bhryā devās trayīṁ vidyāṁ nirakhanan | tad esha śloko bhryuktāḥ "ye (yat?) samudrād nirakhanan devās tīkshnābhir abhribhiḥ | sudevo adya tad vidyād yatra nirvapanāṁ audhur." iti | manaḥ samudro vāk tīkshnā bhriḥ trayī vidyā nirvapanam | etad esha śloko bhryuktāḥ | manasi tāñ sādāyati |*

"I settle thee in the ocean as thy seat."<sup>10</sup> Mind is the ocean.

<sup>10</sup> I am indebted to Professor Aufrecht for the following explanation of this formula, which is taken from the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, xiii. 53. The words are addressed to a

From the mind-ocean with speech for a shovel the gods dug out the triple Vedic science. Hence this verse has been uttered: 'May the brilliant deity to-day know where they placed that offering which the gods dug out with sharp shovels.' Mind is the ocean; speech is the sharp shovel; the triple Vedic science is the offering. In reference to this the verse has been uttered. He settles it in Mind."

The next passage from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, iii: 39, 1, speaks of the Veda as being "the hair of Prajāpati's beard" (*Prajāpater vai etāni śmaśrūṇi yad vedāḥ*). The process of its germination is left to the imagination of the reader.

In another text of the same Brāhmaṇa, Vāch (speech) is called the mother of the Vedas :

ii. 8, 8, 5. *Vāg aksharam prathamajā ṛitasya vedānām mātā amṛitasya nābhiḥ | sā no jushānā ūpa yajnam āgād avantī devī suhavā me astu | yām ṛishayo mantra-kṛito manīshinaḥ anvaiçkhan devās tapasā śramena |*

"Vāch (speech) is an imperishable thing, and the first-born of the ceremonial, the mother of the Vedas, and the centre-point of immortality. Delighting in us, she came to the sacrifice. May the protecting goddess be ready to listen to my invocation,—she whom the wise rishis, the composers of hymns, the gods, sought by austere-fervour, and by laborious devotion."

SECT. II.—*Origin of the Vedas according to the Vishṇu, Bhāgavata, and Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇas, the Harivaṁśa, the Mahābhārata; eternity of the Veda; miscellaneous statements regarding it.*

In the Vishṇu and Bhāgavata Purāṇas we find a quite different tradition regarding the origin of the Vedas, which in these works are said to have been created by the four-faced Brahmā from his several mouths. Thus the Vishṇu Purāṇa says, i. 5, 48 ff. :

*Gāyatraṁ cha ṛichaś chaiva trivṛit-sāma-rathantaram | Agnishṭomaṁ cha yajnānām nirmame prathamād mukhāt | yajṛṁshi traiṣṭubhaṁ chhandāḥ stomaṁ panchadaśaṁ tathā | Vṛihat sāma tathokthyaṁ cha dakshinād asṛijad mukhāt | sāmāni jagatī-chhandāḥ stomaṁ saptadaśaṁ*

brick at the time when the hearth (*chityā*) for the reception of the sacred fires is being constructed. As the bricks are severally called *apasya* (properly 'efficacious,' but erroneously derived from *ap*) they are addressed as if placed in various parts of water

*tathā | vairūpam atirātrām cha paśchimād asṛijad mukhāt | ekaviṁśam atharvānam āptoryāmānam eva cha | Anuṣṭubhaṁ sa vairājam uttarād asṛijad mukhāt |*

“From his eastern mouth Brāhmā formed the gāyatra, the rich verses, the trivṛit, the sāma-rathantara, and of sacrifices, the agnishtoma. From his southern mouth he created the yajush verses, the trishtubh metre, the pancadaśa-stoma, the vṛihat-sāman, and the ukthya. From his western mouth he formed the sāman verses, the jagatī metre, the saptadaśa-stoma, the vairūpa, and the atirātra. From his northern mouth he framed the ekaviṁśa, the atharvan, the āptoryāman, with the anuṣṭubh and virāj metres.”<sup>11</sup>

In like manner it is said but with variations, in the Bhāgavata Purāna, iii. 12, 34, and 37 ff. :

*Kadāchid dhyāyataḥ srashtur vedāḥ āsaṁś chaturmukhāt | kathaṁ sarakshyāmy ahaṁ lokān samavetān yathā purā | . . . Rīg-yajuh-sāmā-tharvākhyān vedān pūrvādibhir mukhaiḥ | śastram iḡyāṁ stuti-stomam prāyaśchittaṁ vyadhāt kramāt |*

“Once the Vedas sprang from the four-faced creator, as he was meditating ‘how shall I create the aggregate worlds as before?’ . . . He formed from his eastern and other mouths the Vedas called rich, yajush, sāman, and atharvan, together with praise, sacrifice, hymns, and expiation.”

And in verse 45 it is stated that the ushṇih metre issued from his hairs, the gāyatṛī from his skin, the trishtubh from his flesh, the anuṣṭubh from his tendons, the jagatī from his bones (*Tasyoṣṇig āsīl lomebhyo gāyatrī cha tvacho vibhoḥ | trishtub māmāsūt snuto ’nushtub jagaty asthnaḥ Prajāpateḥ*).

The Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna says on the same subject, 102, 1 :

*Tasmād āṇḍād vibhinnāt tu Brahmano ’vyakta-janmanaḥ | riḥo babhūvaḥ prathamam prathamād vadanād mune | 2. Javā-pushpa-nibhāḥ sadyas tejo-rūpānta-saṁhatāḥ | pṛithak pṛithag vibhinnās cha rajo-rūpa-vahās tataḥ | 3. Yajūṁś dakṣiṇād vaktrād anirūddhāvi kanchanam | yādṛig-varṇāṁ tathā-varṇāny asaṁhati-dharāṇi cha | 4. Paśchimaṁ yad vibhor vaktram Brāhmaṇaḥ parameshthinaḥ | āvirbhūtāni sāmāni tatas chhandāṁsi tāny atha | 5. Ātharvaṇam aśeṣhaṁ cha bhṛiṅgūnjana-chaya-prābham | ghorāghora-svarūpaṁ tad ābhichārīka-śāntikam | 6. Uttarat pra-*

<sup>11</sup> See Wilson's Transl. vol. i. p. 84.

*kaṭībhūtaṁ vadanāt tasya vedhasaḥ | sukha-sattva-tamaḥ-prāyaṁ saumyā-saumya-svarūpavat | 7. Richo rajo-guṇāḥ sattvaṁ yajushāṁ cha guṇo mune | tamo-guṇāni sāmāni tamaḥ-sattvām atharvaṣu |*

1. "From the eastern mouth of Brahmā, who sprang by an imperceptible birth from that divided egg (Manu, i. 9, 12), there suddenly issued first of all the rich verses, (2) resembling China<sup>s</sup> roses, brilliant in appearance, internally united, though separated from each other, and characterized by the quality of passion (*rajas*). 3. From his southern mouth came, unrestrained, the yajush verses of the colour of gold, and disunited. 4. From the western mouth of the supreme Brahmā appeared the sāmān verses and the metres. 5 and 6. From the northern mouth of Vedhas (Brahmā) was manifested the entire Ātharvaṇa of the colour of black bees and collyrium, having a character at once terrible and not terrible,<sup>12</sup> capable of neutralizing the arts of enchanters, pleasant, characterized by the qualities both of purity and darkness, and both beautiful and the contrary. 7. The verses of the rich are distinguished by the quality of passion (*rajas*), those of the yajush by purity (*sattva*), those of the sāmān by darkness (*tamas*), and those of the atharvan by both darkness and purity."

*Harivaṁśa*.—In the first section of the *Harivaṁśa*, verse 47, the creation of the Vedas by Brahmā is thus briefly alluded to :

*Richo yajūṁshi sāmāni nirmame yajna-siddhaye | sādhyās tair ayajan devān ity evam anuśūruma |*

"In order to the accomplishment of sacrifice, he formed the rich, yajush, and sāmān verses: with these the Sādhyās worshipped the gods, as we have heard."

The following is the account of the same event given in another part of the same work; *Harivaṁśa*, verse 11,516 :

*Tato s'ṛjad vai tripadām gāyatrīṁ veda-mātaram | Akaroch chaiva chaturō vedān gāyatri-sambhavān |*

After framing the world, Brahmā "next created the gāyatrī of three lines, mother of the Vedas, and also the four Vedas which sprang from the gāyatrī."<sup>13</sup>

<sup>12</sup> *Ghorāghora* is the correct MS. reading, as I learn from Dr. Hall, and not *yāvadhōra*, as given in Professor Banerjea's printed text.

<sup>13</sup> The same words *gāyatrīṁ veda-mātaram* also occur in the M.Bh. Vanaparvan, verse 13,432; and the same title is applied to Vāch in the Taitt. Br. as quoted above, p 10.

A little further on we find this expanded into the following piece of mysticism, verse 11,665 ff. :

*Samāhita-manū Brahmā mokṣhā-prāptena hetunā | chandra-maṇḍala-  
saṁsthānāḥ jyotis-ṭejo mahat tadā | Praviśya hṛdayaṁ kṣhipraṁ gāyatrīyāḥ  
nayanāntare | Garbhāsyā sambhavo yaś cha chaturdhā puruṣhātmaḥ |  
Brahma-tejomāyo 'vyaktā śāstato 'tha dhruvo 'vyayaḥ | na chendriya-  
gunair yukto yuktas tejo-guṇena cha | chandrāṁśu-vimala-prakhyo bhrā-  
jishnur varṇa-saṁsthitaḥ | Netrābhyāṁ janayad devaḥ rig-vedaṁ yajushā  
saha | sāmavedaṁ cha jihvāgrād atharvāṇaṁ cha mūrddhataḥ | Jāta-mātrāḥ  
tu te vedāḥ kṣhetraṁ vindanti tattvataḥ | Tena vedatvam āpannā yasmād  
vindanti tat padam | Te srijanti tadā vedāḥ brahma pūrvaṁ sanātanam |  
Puruṣhaṁ divya-rūpābhaṁ svaiḥ svair bhāvair mano-bhaviḥ |*

“For the emancipation of the world, Brahmā, sunk in contem-  
plation, issuing in a luminous form from the region of the moon,  
penetrated into the heart of Gāyatrī, entering between her eyes.  
From her there was then produced a quadruple being in the form  
of a Male, lustrous as Brahmā, undefined, eternal, undecaying, de-  
void of bodily senses or qualities, distinguished by the attribute of  
brilliancy, pure as the rays of the moon, radiant, and embodied in  
letters. The god fashioned the Rig-veda, with the Yajush from his  
eyes, the Sāma-veda from the tip of his tongue, and the Atharvan  
from his head. These Vedas, as soon as they are born, find a body  
(*kshetra*). Hence they obtain their character of Vedas, because they  
find (*vindanti*) that abode. These Vedas then create the pre-existent  
eternal brahma (sacred science), a Male of celestial form, with their  
own mind-born qualities.”

I extract another passage on the same subject from a later section of  
the same work, verses 12,425 ff. When the Supreme Being was intent  
on creating the universe, Hiraṇyagarbha, or Prajāpati, issued from his  
mouth, and was desired to divide himself,—a process which he was in  
great doubt how he should effect. The text then proceeds :

*Iti chintayatas tasya “om” ity evotthitāḥ svaraḥ | sa bhūmāv antarīkṣhe  
cha nāke cha kṛitavān svanam | Taṁ chaivābhyasatas tasya manāḥ-sāra-  
mayam punāḥ | hṛdayād deva-devasya vashaṭkāraḥ samutthitāḥ | bhūmy-  
antarīkṣha-nākānām bhūyāḥ svarātmakāḥ parāḥ | mahāsmṛitimayāḥ  
punyāḥ mahāvyaḥṛitayo 'bhavan | chhandasāṁ pravaraḥ devī chaturvīṁśā-  
kṣharā 'bhavat | Tat-padaṁ saṁsmaran divyaṁ sāvitṛim akarot prabhuḥ |*

*rik-sāmātharva-yajushāś chaturo bhagavān pṛcbhuḥ | chakāra nikhilān vedān brahma-yuktena karmanā |*

“While he was thus reflecting, the sound “om” issued from him, and resounded through the earth, air, and sky. While the god of gods was again and again repeating this, the essence of mind, the vashaṭkāra proceeded from his heart. Next, the sacred and transcendent vyāhritis, (bhūh, bhuvah, svar), formed of the great smṛiti, in the form of sound, were produced from earth, air, and sky. Then appeared the goddess, the most excellent of metres, with twenty-four syllables [the gāyatrī]. Reflecting on the divine text [beginning with] “tat,” the Lord formed the sāvitṛī. He then produced all the Vedas, the Ṛich, Sāman, Atharvan, and Yajush, with their prayers and rites.” (See also the passage from the Bhāg. Pur. xii. 6, 37 ff, which will be quoted in a following section.)

*Mahābhārata*.—The Mahābhārata in one passage speaks of Sarasvatī and the Vedas as being both created by Achyuta (Vishnu) from his mind (Bhīshma-parvan, verse 3019: *Sarasvatīm cha vedāṃś cha manasāḥ sasrije 'chyutah*). In another place, Sānti-parvan, verse 12,920, Sarasvatī is said, in conformity with the texts quoted above, pp. 10 and 12, from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, the Vana-parvan, and the Harivaṃśa, to be the mother of the Vedas:

*Vedānām mātaraṃ paśya mat-sthām devīm Sarasvatīm |*

“Behold Sarasvatī, mother of the Vedas, abiding in me.”

*Manu*.—According to the verses in Manu, xii. 49, 50, quoted in the First Volume of this work, p. 41, the Vedas, with the other beings and objects named along with them, constitute the second manifestation of the sattva guṇa, or pure principle; while Brahmā is placed in a higher rank, as one of the first manifestations of the same principle. The word Veda in this passage is explained by Kullūka of those “embodied deities, celebrated in the Itihāsas, who preside over the Vedas” (*Vedābhīmāninyāś cha devatāḥ vighrahavatyaḥ itihāsa-prasiddhāḥ*).

SECT. III.—*Passages of the Brāhmaṇas and other works in which the Vedas are spoken of as being the sources of all things, and as infinite and eternal.*

The first text of this sort which I shall cite is from the Sātapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 4, 2, 21:



*Atha sarvāni bhūtāni yaryaikshat | sa trayyām eva vidyāyām sarvāni bhūtāny apaśyat | atra hi sarveshām chhandasām ātmā sarveshām stomānām sarveshām prānāpānām sarveshām devānām | etad vai asti | etad hy amṛitam | yad hy amṛitam tad hy asti | etad y tad yad martyam | 22. Sa aikshata Prajāpatiḥ “trayyām vāva vidyāyām sarvāni bhūtāni | hanta trayīm eva vidyām ātmāyām abhisamkaravaḥ” iti | 23. Sa richo vyauhat | dvādaśa bṛihatī-sahasrāny etāvatyō ha richo yāḥ Prajāpati-srishṭās tās triṁśattame vyūhe panktishv atishṭhanta | tāḥ yat triṁśattame vyūhe tishṭhanta tasmāt triṁśad nāsasya rātrayaḥ |,atha yat panktishu tasmāt panktaḥ Prajāpatiḥ | tāḥ ashtāśataṁ śatāni panktayo bhavan |*

21. “Then he looked around upon all beings. He beheld all beings in this triple Vedic science. For in it is the soul of all metres, of all hymns of praise, of all breaths, of all the gods. This, indeed, exists.<sup>14</sup> It is an undying thing. For that which is undying (really) exists. This is that which is mortal.<sup>15</sup> Prajāpati reflected, ‘All beings are comprehended in the triple Vedic science: come let me dispose myself in the shape of the triple Vedic science.<sup>16</sup> He arranged the verses of the Rigveda. Twelve thousand Bṛihatīs, and as many Rich-verses which were created by Prajāpati, stood in rows in the thirtieth class. Since they stood in the thirtieth class there are thirty nights in the month. Since they stood in rows (*pankti*) Prajāpati is called Pankta. They formed eighteen hundreds of rows.”

The next text, from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, iii. 12, 9, 1, speaks of the three Vedas as being respectively the sources of form, motion, and heat, or brilliancy:

*Rigbhyo jātām sarvaśo mūrṭtim āhuḥ sarvā gatir yājushī haiva śāśvat | sarvaṁ tejaḥ sāmā-rūpyam ha śāśvat |*

“They say that form universally proceeds from rich verses; that motion is always connected with the yajush, and that all heat has the nature of the sāman.”

We have already seen, p. 6, that Manu (i. 21) speaks of the names,

<sup>14</sup> “Always exists” (*sarvadā vidyate*).—Comm.

<sup>15</sup> On this the commentator remarks: *Yach cha martyam maraṇa-dharmakam manushyādī tād apy etat trayī-bhūtam eva | ato martyāmṛitūtmakam sarvaṁ jagad attrāntarbhūtam* | “And that which is mortal, subject to death, the human race, etc., is also one with the triple Vedic science. Hence the latter includes all the world both mortal and immortal.”

<sup>16</sup> I owe this interpretation of this clause to Prof. Aufrecht.

functions, and conditions of all things as fashioned from the words of the Veda. It is similarly said in the Viṣṇu Purāṇa, i. 5, 58 :

*Nāma rūpañ cha bhūtānāñ kṛityānāñ cha pravarttanañ | Veda-śabdebhya evādau devādīnāñ chakāra saḥ | rishināñ nāmadheyāni yathā veda-śrutāni vai | yathā-niyoga-yogyāni sarveśhām api so 'karot |*

“In the beginning he created from the words of the Veda the names, forms, and functions of the gods and other beings. He also assigned the names of all the rishis as indicated in the Vedas, and as appropriate to their respective offices.”

The same idea is repeated in the Mahābhārata, Śāntiparvan, 8533 :

*Rishayas tapasā vedān adhyaishanta divānīsam | An-ādi-nidhanā vidyā vāg utsrīṣṭā Svayambhuvā | ādau vedamañyī divyā yataḥ sarvāḥ pravṛittayaḥ | rishinām nāmadheyāni yās cha vedeshu sṛiṣṭayaḥ | nānā-rūpañ cha bhūtānām karmanāñ cha pravarttayan (pravarttanam?) | veda-śabdebhya evādau nirmimite sa īśvaraḥ |*

“Through austere-fervour (*tapas*) the rishis studied the Vedas, both day and night. In the beginning knowledge (*vidyā*)<sup>17</sup> without beginning or end, divine speech, formed of the Vedas, was sent forth by Svayambhū (= Brahmā, the self-existent): from her all activities are derived. It is from the words of the Veda that the lord in the beginning frames the names of the rishis, the creations which (exist) in the Vedas, the various forms of beings, and the activity manifested in works.”

The Mangalācharaṇa, or prayer prefixed to their commentaries on the Rik Sanhitā and Taittirīya Sanhitā, by both Sāyaṇa and Mādḥava, is as follows :

*Yasya niśvasitañ vedāḥ yo vedebhyo 'khīlañ jagat | nirmame tam ahañ vande vidyā-tīrtham maheśvaram |*

“I reverence Maheśvara the hallowed abode of sacred knowledge, of whom the Vedas are the breathings, and who from the Vedas formed the whole universe.”

The following passage from the Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, iii. 10, 11, 3, asserts that the Vedas are infinite in extent :

*Bharadvājo ha tribhir āyurbhir brahmacharyyam uvāsa | tañ ha jīrṇiñ*

<sup>17</sup> In quoting this line in a passage of his Vedārtha-prakāśa, or commentary on the Taittirīya Sanhitā, which I shall adduce further on, Mādḥava Āchāryya gives the reading *nityā*, ‘eternal,’ instead of *vidyā*, ‘knowledge.’ It is possible that the line may be taken from some other book.

*sthavirañ śayānam Indrañ upavrajya uvācha* | “*Bharadvāja yat te chaturtham āyur dadyāñ kim etena kuryyāḥ*” *iti* | “*brahmacharyyam eva enena chareyam*” *iti ha uvācha* | 4. *Taṁ ha trīn giri-rūpān avijnātān iva darsayānchakāra* | *teshāñ ha ekāikasmād muṣṭim ādade* | *sa ha uvācha* “*Bharadvāja*” *ity āmantrya* | “*vedāḥ vai ete | anantāḥ vai vedāḥ | etad vai eṭais tribhiḥ āyurbhiḥ anvāochathāḥ* | *atha te itarad ananūktam eva | ehi imañ viddhi | aytūñ vai, sarva-vidyā*” *iti* | 5. *Tasmai ha etam agniṁ sāvitraṁ uvācha* | *tañ sa viditvā amṛito bhūtvā svargañ lokam iyāya ādityasya sāyujyam* | *amṛito ha eva bhūtvā svargañ lokam ety ādityasya sāyujyañ yaḥ evaṁ veda* | *eshā u eva trayī vidyā* | 6. *Yāvantañ ha vai trayyā vidyayā lokañ jayati tāvantam lokañ jayati yaḥ evaṁ veda* |

“Bharadvāja lived through three lives<sup>18</sup> in the state of a religious student (*brahmacharyya*). Indra approached him when he was lying old and decrepit, and said to him: ‘Bharadvāja, if I give thee a fourth life, how wilt thou employ it?’ ‘I will lead the life of a religious student,’ he replied. 4. He (Indra) showed him three mountain-like objects, as it were unknown. From each of them he took a handful: and, calling to him, ‘Bharadvāja,’ said, ‘These are the Vedas. The Vedas are infinite. This is what thou hast studied during these three lives. Now there is another thing which thou hast not studied, come and learn it. This is the universal science.’ 5. He declared to him this Agni Sāvitra. Having known it he (Bharadvāja) became immortal, and ascended to the heavenly world, to union with the sun. He who knows this ascends to heaven, to union with the sun. This is the triple Vedic science. He who knows this conquers a world as great as he would gain by the triple Vedic science.”

Another text from the Taittirīya Saṁhitā, vii. 3, 1, 4, puts the matter somewhat differently:

*Atha brahmā (brahma-vādino?) vadanti parimitāḥ vai ṛichaḥ parimitāni sāmāni parimitāni yajūmshi atha tasya eva anto nāsti yad brahma* |

“The expounders of sacred science say, ‘Rich verses are limited, sāmāṇ verses are limited, yajush verses are limited; but there is no end of sacred knowledge.’”

*Vishnu Pūrāna*.—At the end of Section 6 of the third book of the

<sup>18</sup> This does not appear to mean, three lives in three different births, but a life of thrice the usual length, or already twice renewed.

Vishnu Purāna we have the following assertion of the eternity of the Veda :

*Iti śākhāḥ prasankhyātāḥ śākhā-bhedās tathaiva cha | karttāras chaiva śākhānām bheda-hetus tathāditah | sarva-manvantarashch eva śākhā-bhedāḥ samāḥ smritāḥ | Prajāpatyā śrutir nityā tad-vikalpās tv ime dvija |*

“Thus the Śākhās, their divisions, their authors, and the cause of the division have been declared. In all the manvantaras the divisions of the Śākhās are recorded to be the same. The śruti (Veda) derived from Prajāpati (Brahmā) is eternal : these, o Brāhman, are only its modifications.”

In another passage of the same book, Vishnu is identified with the Vedas : Vishnu Purāna, iii. 3, 19 ff. :

*Sa riñ-mayaḥ sa sāmamayaḥ sa chātmā sa yajurmayaḥ | rig-yajuh-sāma-sārātmā sa evātmā śarīrinām | sa bhidyate vedamayaḥ sa vedān karoti bhedair bahubhiḥ saśūkhā | śākhā-pranētā sa samasta-śākhāḥ jñāna-svarūpo bhagavān anantaḥ |*

“He is composed of the Rich, of the Sāman, of the Yajush ; he is the soul. Consisting of the essence of the Rich, Yajush, and Sāman, he is the soul of embodied spirits. Formed of the Veda, he is divided ; he forms the Veda and its branches (śākhās) into many divisions. Former of the Śākhās, he is also their entirety, the infinite lord, whose essence is knowledge.”

SECT. IV.—*Passages from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa and Manu, eulogistic of the Veda, with some statements of a different tenor from Manu and other writers.*

The following panegyric on Vedic study is taken from the Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 5, 6, 1 :

*Pancha eva mahāyajnaḥ | tāny eva mahāsattrāṇi bhūta-yajno manushya-yajnaḥ pitri-yajno deva-yajno brahmā-yajnaḥ, iti | 2. Ahar ahar bhūtebhyo balim haret | tathā etam bhūta-yajnaṁ samāpnoti | ahar ahar dadyād ā uda-pātrāt tathā etam manushya-yajnaṁ samāpnoti | ahar ahar svadhākuryād ā uda-pātrāt tathā etam pitri-yajnaṁ samāpnoti | ahar ahar svadhākuryād ā kashthāt tathā etam deva-yajnaṁ samāpnoti | 3. Atha brahma-yajnaḥ | svādhyāyo vai brahma-yajnaḥ | tasya vai etasya brahma-*

*yajnasya vāg eva juhūr mānaḥ upabhrich chakshur dhruvā medhā sruvaḥ  
 satyam avabhrithaḥ svargo lokaḥ udayanam | yāvantañ ha vai imām pṛi-  
 thivīm vittena pūrṇāñ dadañ lokañ jayati tris tāvantañ jayati bhūyāñ-  
 sañ cha akshayyāñ yaḥ evañ vidvān ahar ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte |  
 tasmāt svādhyāyo 'dhetavyaḥ | 4. Paya-āhutayo ha vai etāḥ devānām yad  
 richaḥ | sa yaḥ evañ vidvān 'richo 'har ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte paya-  
 āhutibhir eva tad devāñs tarpayati | te enañ triptās tarpayanti yoga-  
 kshemenā prāneṇa retasā sarvātmanā sarvābhiḥ punyābhiḥ sampadbhiḥ |  
 ghṛita-kulyāḥ madhu-kulyāḥ pitṛīn svadhā abhivṛahanti | 5. Ājyāhutayo  
 ha vai etāḥ devānām yad yajūmshi | sa yaḥ evañ vidvān yajūmshy ahar  
 ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte ājyāhutibhir eva tad devāñs tarpayati te enam  
 triptās tarpayanti yoga-kshemenā ityādi | 6. Somāhutayo ha vai etāḥ  
 devānām yat sāmāni | sa yaḥ evañ vidvān sāmāny ahar ahaḥ svādhyāyam  
 adhīte somāhutibhir eva tad devāñs tarpayati ityādi | 7. Meda-āhutayo  
 ha vai etāḥ devānām yad atharvāngirasaḥ | sa yaḥ evañ vidvān atharvān-  
 giraso 'har ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte meda-āhutibhir eva tad devāñs tar-  
 payati ityādi | 8. Madhv-āhutayo ha vai etāḥ devānām yad anusāsanāni  
 vidyā vākovākyam itihāsa-purānañ gāthāḥ nārūsañsyaḥ | sa yaḥ evañ vid-  
 vān ityādi | 9. Tasya vai etasya brahma-yajnasya chatvāro vashaṭkārāḥ  
 yad vāto vāti yad vidyotate yat stanayati yad avasphūrjati | tasmād evañ  
 vidvān vāte vāti vidyotamāne stanayaty avasphūrjaty adhyāta eva vashṭ-  
 kārānām achhaṭbaṭkārāya | ati ha vai punar mṛityum muchyate gachhati  
 Brahmaṇaḥ sātmatām | sa ched api prabalam iva na śaknuyād apy ekañ  
 deva-padam adhyāta eva tathā Mūtebhyo na hīyate | xi. 5, 7, 1 : Atha  
 ataḥ svādhyāya-praśaṁsā | priye svādhyāya-pravachane bhavataḥ | yukta-  
 mānāḥ bhavaty aparādhīno 'har ahar arthān sādhyate sukhañ svapiti  
 parama-chikitsakaḥ ātmano bhavati | indriya-sāmyamaś cha ekārāmatā  
 cha prajñā-vriddhir yaśo loka-paktiḥ | prajñā varddhamānā chaturō dhar-  
 mān brāhmaṇaḥ abhinishpādayati brāhmaṇyam pratirūpa-charyyāñ yaśo  
 loka-paktim | lokaḥ pachyamānaś chaturbhir dharmair brāhmaṇam bhun-  
 akty archayā cha dāneṇa cha ajyeyatayā cha abadhyatayā cha | 2. Ye ha vai  
 ke cha śraṇāḥ ime dyāvā-pṛithivī antareṇa svādhyāyo ha eva teshām para-  
 matā kashṭhā yaḥ evañ vidvān svādhyāyam adhīte | tasmāt svādhyāyo  
 'dhetavyaḥ | 3. Yad yad ha vai ayañ chhandasaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte tena  
 tena ha eva asya yajna-kratunā ishṭam bhavati yaḥ evañ vidvān svādhyā-  
 yam adhīte | tasmāt svādhyāyo 'dhetavyaḥ | 4. Yadi ha vai apy abhyak-  
 taḥ alankṛitaḥ suhitaḥ sukhe śayane śayānaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte ū ha*

*eva sa nakhāgrebhyas tapyate yaḥ evaṁ vidvāḥ svādhyāyam adhīte | tasmāt svādhyāyo 'dhetavyaḥ | 5. Madhu ha vai riḥho ghrītaṁ ha sāmāny amṛitaṁ yajūṁshi | yad ha vai ayaṁ vākovākyaṁ adhīte kshīraudana-māṁsaudanau ha eva tau | 6. Madhunā ha vai eṣha devāṁs tarpayati yaḥ evaṁ vidvān riḥho 'har ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte | te enaṁ triptās tarpayanti sārvaīḥ kāmāīḥ sarvair bhogaīḥ | 7. Ghrītena ha vai eṣhā devāṁs tarpayati yaḥ evaṁ vidvān sāmāny ahar ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte | te enaṁ triptāḥ ityādi | 8. Aprītena ha vai eṣha devāṁs tarpayati yaḥ evaṁ vidvān yajūṁshy ahar ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte | te enaṁ triptāḥ ityādi | 9. Kshīraudana-māṁsaudanābhyāṁ ha vai eṣha devāṁs tarpayati yaḥ evaṁ vidvān vākovākyaṁ itihāsa-purānam ity ahar ahaḥ svādhyāyam adhīte | te enaṁ triptāḥ ityādi | 10. Yanti vai āpaḥ | ety ādityaḥ | eti chandramāḥ | yanti nakshatrāṇi | yathā ha vai na iyur na kuryur evaṁ ha eva tad ahar brāhmaṇo bhavati yad ahaḥ svādhyāyaṁ na adhīte | tasmāt svādhyāyo 'dhetavyaḥ | tasmād apy riḥhaṁ vā yajur vā sāmā vā gāthāṁ vā kuṁvyāṁ vā abhivyāhared vratasya avyavachhedāya |*

“There are only five great sacrifices, which are the great ceremonies, viz., the offering to living creatures,<sup>19</sup> the offering to men, the offering to the fathers, the offering to the gods, and the Veda-offering (*brahmayajna*). 2. Let an oblation be daily presented to living creatures. Thus the offering to them is fulfilled. Let (hospitality) be daily bestowed even down to the bowl of water. Thus is the offering to men fulfilled. Let the oblation to the fathers be daily presented,<sup>20</sup> down to the bowl of water with the *svadhā* formula. Thus is the offering to the fathers fulfilled. Let the oblation to the gods be daily presented as far as the faggot of wood. Thus is the offering to the gods fulfilled. 3. Next is the Veda-offering. This means private study<sup>21</sup> (of the sacred books). In this Veda-sacrifice speech is the *juhū*, the soul the *upabṛit*, the eye the *dhruvā*, intelligence the *sruva*,<sup>22</sup> truth the ablution, and paradise

<sup>19</sup> This sacrifice, as I learn from Prof. Aufrecht, consists in scattering grain for the benefit of birds, etc. See Böhtlingk and Roth's *Lexicon*, s.v. *bali*. In regard to the other sacrifices see Colbrooke's *Misc. Essays*, i. pp. 150, 152, 182 ff., 203 ff.

<sup>20</sup> In explanation of this Professor Aufrecht refers to *Kātyāyana's Śrauta Sūtras*, iv. 1, 10, and *Manu*, iii. 210, 214, 218.

<sup>21</sup> *Svādhyāyaḥ sva-sākhādhyānam* | “Reading of the Veda in one's own *sākhā*.”—Comm.

<sup>22</sup> These words denote sacrificial spoons or ladles of different kinds of wood. See the drawings of them in Prof. Müller's article on the funeral rites of the *Brāhmins*, *Journ. of the Germ. Or. Soc.* vol. ix. pp. lxxviii. and lxxx.

the conclusion. He who, knowing this, daily studies the Veda, conquers an undecaying world more than thrice as great as that which he acquires, who bestows, this whole earth filled with riches. Wherefore the Veda should be studied. 4. Verses of the Rig-veda are milk-oblations to the gods. He who, knowing this, daily reads these verses, satisfies the gods with milk-oblations; and they being satisfied, satisfy him with property, with breath, with generative power, with complete bodily soundness, with all excellent blessings. Streams of butter, streams of honey flow as svadhā-oblations to the fathers. 5. Yajush-verses are offerings of butter to the gods. He who, knowing this, daily reads these verses, satisfies the gods with offerings of butter; and they, being satisfied, satisfy him, etc. (as in the preceding paragraph). 6. Sāman-verses are soma-libations to the gods. He who, knowing this, daily reads these verses, satisfies the gods with soma-libations; and they being satisfied, satisfy him, etc. (as above). 7. Verses of Atharvan and Angiras (*atharvāngirasaḥ*<sup>23</sup>) are oblations of fat to the gods. He who, knowing this, daily reads these verses, satisfies the gods with oblations of fat; and they etc. (as above). 8. Prescriptive and scientific treatises, dialogues, traditions, tales, verses, and eulogistic texts are oblations of honey to the gods. He who, knowing this, daily reads these, satisfies the gods with oblations of honey; and they etc. (as above). 9. Of this Veda-sacrifice there are four Vashaṭkāras, when the wind blows, when it lightens, when it thunders, when it crashes; wherefore when it blows, lightens, thunders, or crashes, let the man, who knows this, read, in order that these Vashaṭkāras may not be interrupted.<sup>24</sup> He who does so is freed from dying a second time, and attains to an union with Brahma. Even if he cannot read vigorously, let him read one text relating to the gods. Thus he is not deprived of his living creatures."

xi. 5, 7, 1: "Now comes an encomium upon Vedic study. Study and teaching are loved. He (who practises them) becomes composed in mind. Independent of others, he daily attains his objects, sleeps pleasantly, becomes his own best physician. Control of his senses, concentration of mind, increase of intelligence, renown, capacity to educate mankind [are the results of study]. Increasing intelligence secures for

<sup>23</sup> The Atharva Sanhitā is so called.

<sup>24</sup> See Böthlingk and Roth's Lexicon, s.v. *chhambat*.

the Brāhman the four attributes of saintliness, suitable conduct, renown, and capacity for educating mankind. When so educated, men guarantee to the Brāhman the enjoyment of the four prerogatives which are his due, reverence, the receipt of gifts, freedom from oppression, and from death by violence. 2. Of all the modes of exertion, which are known between heaven and earth, study of the Veda occupies the highest rank, (in the case of him) who, knowing this, studies it. Wherefore this study is to be practised. 3. On every occasion when a man studies the Vedic hymns he (in fact) performs a complete ceremonial of sacrifice, *i.e.* whosoever, knowing this, so studies. Wherefore this study, etc., etc. 4. And even when a man, perfumed with unguents, adorned with jewels, satiated with food, and reposing on a comfortable couch, studies the Veda he (has all the merit of one who) performs penance (felt) to the very tips of his nails:<sup>25</sup> (such is the case with him) who, knowing this, studies. Wherefore etc. 5. Rig-veda-verses are honey, Sāma-verses butter, yajus-verses nectar (*amṛita*). When a man reads dialogues (*vākovākya*) [and legends], these two sorts of composition are respectively oblations of cooked milk and cooked flesh. 6. He who, knowing this, daily reads Rig-veda-verses, satisfies the gods with honey; and they, when satisfied, satisfy him with all objects of desire, and with all enjoyments. 7. He who, knowing this, daily reads Sāma-verses, satisfies the gods with butter; and they, when satisfied, etc. (as before). 8. He who, knowing this, daily reads Yajus-verses, satisfies the gods with nectar; and they, etc. (as before). 9. He who, knowing this, daily studies dialogues and the different classes of ancient stories, satisfies the gods with milk- and flesh-oblations; and they, etc. (as before). 10. The waters move. The sun moves. The moon moves. The constellations move. The Brāhman who on any day does not study the Veda, is on that day like what these moving bodies would be if they ceased to move or act. Wherefore such study is to be practised. Let

<sup>25</sup> This sentence is differently rendered by Professor Weber, Ind. Stud. x. p. 112, as follows: "He burns (with sacred fire) to the very tips of his nail." In a later page of the same Essay we are told that according to the doctrine of a teacher called Nāka Maudgalya as stated in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, the study and teaching of the Veda are the real *tapas* (*svādhyāya-pravachane eva tad hi tapaḥ*). In the text of the Āraṇyaka itself, vii. 8, it is declared that study and teaching should always accompany such spiritual or ritual acts as *ritam, satyam, tapas, dama, śama*, the *agnihotra* sacrifice, etc. See Indische Studien, ii. 214, and x. 113.



a man therefore present as his offering a verse of the Rig-veda, or the Sāman, or the Yajush, or a Gāthā, or a Kumīvyā, in order that the course of his observances may not be interrupted."

Manu employs the following honorific expressions in reference to the Vedas (xii. 94 ff.) :

*Pītri-deva-manushyūnām vedāś chakshuh sanātanam | asakyam chāprameyam cha vedaśśāstram iti sthitiḥ | Yā veda-vāhyāḥ smṛitayo yās cha kāścha kuḍrishṭayāḥ |<sup>26</sup> sarvās tā niṣphalāḥ pretya tamo-niṣṭhāḥ hi tāḥ smṛitāḥ | Utpadyante chyavante cha yāny ato 'nyāni kānichit | Tāny arvāk-kālikatayā<sup>27</sup> niṣphalāny anṛitāni cha | Chāturvarṇyam trayo lokās chatvāras chāśramāḥ pṛithak | Bhūtam bhavad bhavishyam cha sarvaṁ vedāt prasiddhyati | Śabdāḥ sparśās cha rūpaṁ cha raso gandhās cha panchamāḥ | vedād eva prasiddhyanti prasūti-guṇa-karmataḥ | Bibhartti<sup>28</sup> sarva-bhūtāni veda-śāstraṁ sanātanam | Tasmād etat param manye yaj jantor asya sādhanam | Saināpatyam cha rājyam cha danḍa-netritvam eva cha | sarva-lokādhipatyam cha veda-śāstra-vid arhati | Yathā jātābalo vahnir dahaty ārdṛān api drumān | tathā dahati veda-jnaḥ karma-jam dosham ātmanāḥ | veda-śāstrārtha-tattva-jno yatra tatrāśrame vasan | ihaiva loka tishṭhan sa brahmabhūyāya kalpate |*

"The Veda is the eternal eye of the fathers, of gods, and of men ; it is beyond human power and comprehension ; this is a certain conclusion. Whatever traditions are apart from the Veda, and all heretical views, are fruitless in the next world, for they are declared to be founded on darkness. All other [books] external to the Veda, which arise and pass away, are worthless and false from their recentness of date. The system of the four castes, the three worlds, the four states of life, all that has been, now is, or shall be, is made manifest by the

<sup>26</sup> *Drishṭārtha-vākyaṇi* " chaitya-vandanūt svargo bhavati " ity ādīni yāni cha asatarka-mūlāni devatā-pūrvādi-nirākaraṇātmaḥkāni veda-viruddhāni chārvāka-darśānāni | " That is, deductions from experience of the visible world ; such doctrines as that ' heaven is attained by obeisance to a chaitya,' and similar Chārvāka tenets founded on false reasonings, contradicting the existence of the gods, and the efficacy of religious rites, and contrary to the Vedas."—Kullūka.

<sup>27</sup> *Idānāntanatvāt* | " From their modernness."—Kullūka.

<sup>28</sup> " *Haviḥ agnau hūyate | so'gnir ādityam upasapati | tat sūryo raśmibhir varshati | tenānam bhavati | atha iha bhūtānām utpatti-sthitiś cheti havir jāyate* " iti brāhmaṇam | " ' The oblation is cast into the fire ; fire reaches the sun ; the sun causes rain by his rays ; thence food is produced ; thus the oblation becomes the cause of the generation and maintenance of creatures on this earth ; ' so says a Brāhmaṇa."—Kullūka.

Veda. The objects of touch and taste, sound, form, and odour, as the fifth, are made known by the Veda, together with their products, qualities, and the character of their action. The eternal Veda supports all beings: hence I regard it as the principal instrument of well-being to this creature, man. Command of armies, royal authority, the administration of criminal justice, and the sovereignty of all worlds, he alone deserves who knows the Veda. As fire, when it has acquired force, burns up even green trees, so he who knows the Veda consumes the taint of his soul which has been contracted from works. He who comprehends the essential meaning of the Veda, in whatever order of life he may be, is prepared for absorption into Brahmā, even while abiding in this lower world."

The following are some further miscellaneous passages of the same tenor, scattered throughout the Institutes (Manu, ii. 10 ff.):

*Śrutis tū vedo vijneyo dharmasāstraṁ tu vai smṛitiḥ | te sarvārtheshv  
amīmāṁsyē tābhyāṁ dharmo hi nirbabhau | 11. Yo 'vamanyeta te māle  
hetu-sāstrāśrayād dvijaḥ | sa sādhubhir vahishkāryyo nāstiko veda-ninda-  
kaḥ | . . . . 13. Dharmāṁ jñāsamānānām pramāṇam paramāṁ śrutīḥ |*

"By śruti is meant the Veda, and by smṛiti the institutes of law: the contents of these are not to be questioned by reason, since from them [a knowledge of] duty has shone forth. The Brāhman who, relying on rationalistic treatises,<sup>29</sup> shall contemn these two primary sources of knowledge, must be excommunicated by the virtuous as a sceptic and reviler of the Vedas. . . . 10. To those who are seeking a knowledge of duty, the śruti is the supreme authority."

In the following passage, the necessity of a knowledge of Brahma is asserted, though the practice of ritual observances is also inculcated (vi. 82 ff.):

*Dhyānikaṁ sarvam evaitad yad etad abhisabdhitam | na hy ānādhyātma-  
vit kaśchit kriyā-phalam upāśnute | adhiyajnam brahma japed ādhidai-  
vikam eva cha | ādhyatmikaṁ cha satatāṁ vedāntābhikṛitāṁ cha yat | Idāṁ  
śaraṇam ajnānām idam eva vijānatām | idam anvichchhatām svargam idam  
ānantyam ichchhatām |*

<sup>29</sup> This, however, must be read in conjunction with the precept in xii. 106, which declares: *ārṣhāṁ dharmopadeśāṁ cha veda-sāstrāvirodhiṅ | yas tarkenānusandhatte sa dharmāṁ veda nāparaḥ |* "He, and he only is acquainted with duty, who investigates the injunctions of the rishis, and the precepts of the smṛiti, by reasonings which do not contradict the Veda."

“All this which has been now declared is dependant on devout meditation : no one who is ignorant of the supreme Spirit can reap the fruit of ceremonial acts. Let a man repeat texts relating to sacrifice, texts relating to deities, texts relating to the Supreme Spirit, and whatever is declared in the concluding portions of the Veda (the Upanishads). This [Veda] is the refuge of the ignorant, as well as of the understanding ; it is the refuge of those who are seeking after paradise, as well as of those who are desiring infinity ;”

The following text breathes a moral spirit, by representing purity of life as essential to the reception of benefit from religious observances (ii. 97) :

*Vedās tyāgās cha yajñās cha niyamās cha tapāmsi cha | na vipradushtā-bhāvasya siddhiṃ gachhanti karchichit |*

“The Vedas, almsgiving, sacrifices, observances, austerities, are ineffectual to a man of depraved disposition.”

The doctrine which may be drawn from the following lines does not seem so favourable to morality (xi. 261 ff.) :

*Itatvā lokān apīmāms trīn āsnann api yatastataḥ | Rīgvedaṃ dhārayan vipro nainaḥ prāpnoti kinchana | Rīksaṃhitāṃ trir abhyasya yajushāṃ va samāhitaḥ | sūmnāṃ vā sa-rahasyānāṃ sarva-pāpaiḥ pramuchyate | yathā mahā-hradam prāpya kshiptam loṣṭāṃ vinaśyati | tathā duṣcharitāṃ sarvaṃ vede trivṛiti majjati |*

“A Brāhman who should destroy these three worlds, and eat food received from any quarter whatever, would incur no guilt if he retained in his memory the Rīg-veda. Repeating thrice with intent mind the Sanhitā of the Rik, or the Yajush, or the Sāman, with the Upanishads, he is freed from all his sins. Just as a clod thrown into a great lake is dissolved when it touches the water, so does all sin sink in the triple Veda.”

Considering the sacredness ascribed in the preceding passages to all the Vedas, the characteristics assigned to three of them in the passage quoted above (p. 12) from the Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa, as well as the epithet applied to the Sāma-veda in the second of the following verses are certainly remarkable ; (Manu, iv. 123 ff.) :

*Sāma-dhvanāv rīg-yajushī nādhīyīta kadāchana | vedasyādhitīya vā py antam āraṇyakam adhitīya cha | Rīgvedo deva-daiṇatyo yajurvedas tu mānushaḥ | Sāmavedaḥ smṛitaḥ pitryas tasmāt śasyāśuchir dhvaniḥ |*

“Let no one read the Rich or the Yajush while the Sāman is sounding in his ears, or after he has read the conclusion of the Veda (*i.e.* the Upanishads) or an Āraṇyaka. The Rig-veda has the gods for its deities; the Yajur-veda has men for its objects; the Sāma-veda has the pitris for its divinities, wherefore its sound is impure.”

The scholiast Kullūka, however, will not allow that the sound of the Sāma-veda can be really “impure.” “It has,” he says, “only a semblance of impurity” (*tasmāt tasya aśuchir iva dhvaniḥ | na tv aśuchir eva*). In this remark he evinces the tendency, incident to so many systematic theologians, to ignore all those features of the sacred text on which they are commenting which are at variance with their theories regarding its absolute perfection. As it was the opinion of his age that the Veda was eternal and divine, it was, he considered, impossible that impurity or any species of defect could be predicated of any of its parts; and every expression, even of the highest authorities, which contradicted this opinion, had to be explained away. I am not in a position to state how this notion of impurity came to be attached to the Sāma-veda. The passage perhaps proceeded from the adherents of some particular Vedic school adverse to the Sāma-veda; but its substance being found recorded in some earlier work, it was deemed of sufficient authority to find a place in the miscellaneous collection of precepts,—gathered no doubt from different quarters, and perhaps not always strictly consistent with each other,—which make up the Mānava-dharma-śāstra.

*Vishṇu Purāna*.—The following passage from the *Vishṇu Purāna*, at the close, ascribes the same character of impurity to the Sāma-veda, though on different grounds, *Vish. Pur. ii. 11, 5* :

*Yā tu śaktiḥ parā Vishṇor ṛig-yajuh-sāma-sanjñitā | saishā trayī tapaty aṁho jagataś cha hinasti yat | saiva Vishṇuḥ sthītaḥ sthityām jagataḥ pālānodyataḥ | ṛig-yajuh-sāma-bhūto 'ntaḥ savitur dvija tishṭhati | māsi māsi ravir yo yas tatra tatra hi sā parā | trayīmāyī Vishṇu-śaktir avasthānam karoṭi vai | Richas tapanti pūrṭhne madhyāhne 'tha yajñishy atha | vṛihadrathantarādīni sāmāny ahnaḥ kshaye rāvaṁ | angam eshā trayī Vishṇor ṛig-yajuh-sāma-sanjñitā | Vishṇu-śaktir avasthānam māśāditye karoti sā | na kevalam ravaṁ śaktir vaishṇavī sā trayīmāyī | Brahmā 'tha Pūruṣho Rudras trayam etat trayīmāyam | sargādāv ṛiṇmayo Brahmā sthītau Vishṇur yajurmāyah | Rudraḥ sāmāmāyo 'ntāya tasmāt tasyāśuchir dhvaniḥ |*

“The supreme energy of Vishṇu, called the Rich, Yajush, and Sāman—this triad burns up sin and all things injurious to the world. During the continuance of the world, this triad exists as Vishṇu, who is occupied in the preservation of the universe, and who in the form of the Rich, Yajush, and Sāman, abides within the sun. That supreme energy of Vishṇu, consisting of the triple Veda, dwells in the particular form of the sun, which presides over each month. The Rich verses shine in the morning sun, the Yajush verses in the meridian beams, and the Vṛihad-rathantara and other Sāma verses in his declining rays. This triple Veda is the body of Vishṇu, and this his energy abides in the monthly sun. But not only does this energy of Vishṇu, formed of the triple Veda, reside in the sun: Brahmā, Purusha (Vishṇu), and Rudra also constitute a triad formed of the triple Veda. Acting in creation, Brahmā is formed of the Rig-veda; presiding over the continuance of the universe, Vishṇu is composed of the Yajur-veda; and for the destruction of the worlds, Rudra is made up of the Sāma-veda; hence the sound of this Veda is impure.”

*Vāyu Purāna*.—Other passages also may be found in works which are far from being reputed as heretical, in which the Vedas, or particular parts of them, are not spoken of with the same degree of respect as they are by Manu. Thus the *Vāyu Purāna* gives precedence to the *Purānas* over the Vedas in the order of creation (i. 56<sup>30</sup>):

*Prathamam sarva-sāstrāṇām Purāṇam Brahmaṇā smṛitam | anantaraṁ cha vaktrebhyo vedāḥ tasya vimśṛitāḥ |*

“First of all the *Sāstras*, the *Purāna* was uttered by Brahmā. Subsequently the Vedas issued from his mouths.”

Similarly the *Padma Purāna* says:

*Purāṇam sarva-sāstrāṇām prathamam Brahmaṇā smṛitam | tri-varga-sādhanam puṇyam śata-koṭi-pravistaram | nirdagdheshu cha lokeshu vājirūpeṇa Keśavaḥ | Brahmaṇas tu samddeśād vedān ahṛitavān asau | angāni chaturo vedān purāna-nyāyā-vistarā[n?] | mīmāṃsā[m?] dharma-sāstraṁ cha parigrihyātha śampratam | matsya-rūpeṇa cha punaḥ kalpādāv udakāntare | aśesham etat kathitam ityādi |*<sup>31</sup>

“The *Purāna*, which is an instrument for effecting the three objects

<sup>30</sup> Page 48 of Prof. Aufrecht's Catalogue of Sanskrit MSS. in the Bodleian Library at Oxford.

<sup>31</sup> See the same Catalogue p. 12, col. i.

of life, which is pure, and extends to the length of a hundred crores of verses, was the first of all the Sāstras which Brahmā uttered. When the worlds had been burnt up, Keśava (Kṛishṇa), in the form of a horse, and obeying Brahmā's command, rescued the Vedas. Having taken them with their appendages, the Purānas, the Nyāya, the Mīmāṃsā, and the Institutes of Law, he now at the beginning of the Kalpa promulgated them all again in the form of a Fish from the midst of the waters."

In the Matsya Purāṇa, iii. 2 ff., not only is priority of creation claimed for the Purānas, but also the qualities of eternity and identity with sound, which are generally predicated of the Vedas alone :

*Rūpaṁ dadhāra*<sup>32</sup> *prathamam amarānam Pitāmahaḥ | āvirbhūtās tato vedāḥ sāngopānga-pada-kramāḥ | 3. Purānaṁ sarva-śāstrāṇām prathamam Brahmanā smṛitam | nityaṁ śabdamayam punyam śata-koṭi-pravistaram | 4. Anantaraṁ cha vaktrebhyo vedās tasya vinissṛitāḥ | mīmāṃsā nyāya-vidyā cha pramāṇāśṭaka-saṁyutā | 5. Vedābhyāsa-rata-syāsya prajā-kāmasya mānasāḥ | manasā pūrva-sṛiṣṭāḥ vai jātāḥ ye tena mānasāḥ |*

2. "Pitāmaha (Brahmā), first of all the immortals, took shape: then the Vedas with their Angas and Upāngas (appendages and minor appendages), and the various modes of their textual arrangement, were manifested. 3. The Purāna, eternal, formed of sound, pure, extending to the length of a hundred crores of verses, was the first of the Sāstras which Brahmā uttered: and afterwards the Vedas, issued from his mouth; and also the Mīmāṃsā and the Nyāya with its eightfold system of proofs. 5. From him (Brahmā), who was devoted to the study of the Vedas, and desirous of offspring, sprang mind-born sons, so called because they were at first created by his mind."

The Vāyu Purāṇa says further on in the same section from which I have already quoted:<sup>33</sup>

*Yo vidyāch chaturo vedān sāngopanishado dvijuh | na chet purānaṁ saṁvidyād naiva sa śyād vichakshanaḥ | Itihāsa-purānābhyāṁ vedān samupavṛiṁhayet | vibhety alpa-śrutād vedo mām ayaṁ praharishyati |*

<sup>32</sup> This quotation is made from the Taylor MS. No. 1918 of the India Office Library. The Guikowar MS. No. 3032 of the same collection, reads here *tapas chachāra*, "practised austerity," instead of *rūpaṁ dadhāra*, "took shape," and has besides a number of other various readings in these few lines.

<sup>33</sup> See p. 50 of Dr. Aufrecht's Catalogue.

“He who knows the four Vedas, with their supplements and Upanishads is not really learned, unless he know also the Purānas. Let a man, therefore, complete the Vedas by adding the Itihāsas and Purānas. The Veda is afraid of a man of little learning, lest he should treat it injuriously.”

The first of these verses is repeated in the Mahābhārata, Ādiparvan verse 645, with a variation in the first half of the second line *na chākhyānam idaṃ vidyāt*, “unless he know also this narrative” (i.e. the Mahābhārata). The second of the verses of the Vāyu Purāna also is to be found in the same book of the Mahābhārata verse 260, and is followed by these lines :

261. *Kārshnam vedam imaṃ vidvān śrāvayitvā'nnam aśnute | . . . .*  
 264. *Ekataś chaturo vedāṅ Bhārataṃ chaitad ekataḥ | purā kila suraiḥ sarvaiḥ sametya tulayā dhṛitam | chaturbhyaḥ sa-rahasyebhyo vedebhyo hy adhikam yadā | tadā-prabhṛiti loke'smīn mahābhāratam uchyate |*

“The man who knows this Veda relating to Kṛishṇa (the Mahābhārata), and repeats it to others, obtains food. . . . 264. All the collected gods formerly weighed in a balance the four Vedas which they placed in the one scale, and this Bhārata which they put into the other. When the latter was found to exceed (in weight) the four Vedas with the Upanishads, it was thenceforward called in this world the Mahābhārata.”

Here there is a play upon the word Bhārata, as in part identical with *bhāra*, “weight.”

The following verses of the same Ādiparvan and many others are also eulogistic of the great epic poem :

2298. *Idaṃ hi vedaiḥ sammitam pavitram api chottanam { śrāvyaṇām uttamaṃ chedam purānam ṛishi-saṃstutaṃ |*

“This (Mahābhārata) is on an equality with the Veda, pure, most excellent, the best of all works that are to be recited, ancient, and praised by rishis.”

2314. *Vijneyaḥ sa cha vedānām pārago Bhāratam paṭhan |*

The reader of the Bhārata is to be regarded as having gone through the Vedas.”

The benefits derivable from a perusal of the same poem are also set forth in the Svargārohaṇika-parvan, verses 200 ff.

In the same way the Rāmāyaṇa, i. 1, 94, speaks of itself, as “this

pure and holy narrative, which is on an equality with the Vedas” (*idam pavitram ākhyānam puṇyaṁ vedaiś cha sammitam*).

And in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, ii. 8, 28, it is said: *Prāha bhāgavataṁ nāma purāṇam brahma-sammitam | Brahmaṇe Bhagavat-proktaṁ Brahma-kalpe upāgate |*

“(Brahmarāta) declared the Purāṇa ‘called the Bhāgavata,’ which stands on an equality with the Veda (*brahma*), and was declared by Bhagavat to Brahmā when the Brahma-kalpa had arrived.”

*Brahma-vaivartta Purāṇa*.—The Brahmā-vaivartta Purāṇa asserts in a most audacious manner its own superiority to the Veda (i. 48 ff.):

*Bhavanā yā tvayā priṣṭhāṁ jñātāṁ sarvam abhīpsitam | sāra-bhūtaṁ purāṇeṣu Brahma-vaivarttam uttamam | Purāṇoḥ purāṇānāṁ vedānāṁ bhrama-bhāṅjanāṁ |*

“That about which, venerable sage, you have inquired, and which you desire, is all known to me, the essence of the Purāṇas, the pre-eminent Brahma-vaivartta, which refutes the errors of the Purāṇas and Upapurāṇas, and of the Vedas.” (Professor Aufrecht’s Cat. p. 21.)

In the following passage also, from the commencement of the Muṇḍaka Upanishad, the Vedic hymns (though a divine origin would no doubt be allowed to them<sup>34</sup>) are at all events depreciated, by being classed among other works as part of the inferior science, in contrast to the Brahma-vidyā or knowledge of Brahma, the highest of all knowledge, which is expressly ascribed to Brahmā as its author:

1. *Brahmā devānāṁ prathamakṣ sambakṣūva viśvasya karttū bhuvanasya goptā | sa brahma-vidyāṁ sarva-vidyā-pratishṭhām Atharvāya jyeshṭhā-putrāya prāha |* 2. *Atharvane yām pravadata Brahmā Atharvā tām purovāchāṅgīre brahma-vidyām | sa Bhāradvājāya Satyavāhāya prāha Bhāradvājo ’ngirase parāvarāṇi |* 3. *S’aunako ha vai Mahāśālo ’ngirasāṁ*

<sup>34</sup> In fact the following verses (4 and 6) occur in the second chapter of the same Mund. Up.: *Agnir mūrddhā cakshushī chandra-sūryau dīśaḥ śrotre vāg vivṛitāś cha vedāḥ | vāyuḥ prāṇo hṛidayāṁ viśvam asya padbhyāṁ pṛithivī hy eśa sarva-bhūtāntarātmā | . . . 6. Tasmād richaḥ sāma yājūṁśhi dīkṣhā yajñāś cha sarve kratavo dakṣhiṇāś cha | sāmvasaraṁ cha yajamānāś cha lokāḥ somo yatra pṛvate yatra sūryaḥ |* “Agni is his [Brahma’s] head, the sun and moon are his eyes, the four points of the compass are his ears, the uttered Vedas are his voice, the wind is his breath, the universe is his heart, the earth issued from his feet: he is the inner soul of all creatures. . . . 6. From him came the Rich verses, the Sāman verses, the Yajush verses, initiatory rites, all oblations, sacrifices, and gifts, the year, the sacrificer, and the worlds where the moon and sun purify.”



*vidhivad upapannah prapūchchha | kasmin nu bhagavo vijnāte sarvam idam vijnātam bhavātīti | 4. Tasmai sa hovācha | dve vidye veditavye iti ha smayad brahma-vido vadanti parā chaivāparā cha | 5. Tatrāparā "ṛigvedo yajurvedaḥ, sāmavedo 'tharvavedaḥ śikshā kalpo vyākaraṇam niruktaṁ chhando jyotisham" iti | atha parā yayū tad aksharam adhigamyate |*

“Brāhmā was produced the first among the gods, maker of the universe, preserver of the world. He revealed to his eldest son Atharva, the science of Brāhma, the basis of all knowledge. 2. Atharvan of old declared to Angis this science, which Brāhmā had unfolded to him; and Angis, in turn, explained it to Satyavāha, descendant of Bharadvāja, who delivered this traditional lore, in succession, to Angiras. 3. Mahāsāla S'aunaka, approaching Angiras with the proper formalities, inquired, ‘What is that, o venerable sage, through the knowledge of which all this [universe] becomes known?’ 4. [Angiras] answered, ‘Two sciences are to be known—this is what the sages versed in sacred knowledge declare—the superior and the inferior. 5. The inferior [consists of] the Rig-veda, the Yajur-veda, the Sāma-veda, the Atharva-veda, accentuation, ritual, grammar, commentary, prosody, and astronomy. The superior science is that by which the imperishable is apprehended.’<sup>35</sup>

I adduce some further passages which depreciate the ceremonial, or exoteric parts of the Vedas, in comparison with the esoteric knowledge of Brahma.

My attention was drawn to the following passage of the Bhagavad Gītā, ii. 42 ff., by its quotation in the Rev. Professor K. M. Banerjea's Dialogues on Hindu Philosophy :

*Yām imām pushpitām vācham pravadanty avipaśchitāḥ | veda-vāda-ratāḥ pārtha nānyad astīti vādinaḥ | kāmātmāneḥ svarga-pārāḥ janma-karmaphala-pradān | kriyā-viśeṣa-bahulām bhogaiśvarya-gatim prati | bhogaiśvarya-prasaktānām tayā 'pahṛita - chetasām | vyavasāyātmikā buddhiḥ samādhan na vidhīyate | traiguṇya-vishayāḥ vedāḥ nistraiguṇyo bhavār-*

<sup>35</sup> Compare the Mahābhārata, Ādip. verse 258, which speaks of the Āraṇyakas as superior to (the other parts of) the Vedas, and amṛita as the best of medicines (*āraṇyakam cha vedebhyaś chaushadhībhyo 'mṛitaṁ yathā*). Similarly the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, x. 3, 5, 12 (quoted in Müller's Anc. Sansk. Lit. p. 315, note), speaks of the Upanishads as being the essence of the Yajush: *Tasyā vai etasya yajusho rasaḥ evu upanishat |*

*juna* | . . . . *yāvān arthaḥ udapāne sarvataḥ samplutodake | tāvān sarveshu vedeshu brāhmaṇasya vijānataḥ |*

“A flowery doctrine, promising the reward of works performed in this embodied state, prescribing numerous ceremonies, with a view to future gratification and glory, is preached by unlearned men, devoted to the injunctions of the Veda, assertors of its exclusive importance, lovers of enjoyment, and seekers after paradise. The restless minds of the men who, through this flowery doctrine, have become bereft of wisdom, and are ardent in the pursuit of future gratification and glory, are not applied to contemplation. The Vedas have for their objects the three qualities (*sattva*, *rajas*, *tamas*, or ‘goodness,’ ‘passion,’ and ‘darkness’); but be thou, Arjuna, free from these three qualities . . . . As great as is the use of a well which is surrounded on every side by overflowing waters, so great [and no greater] is the use of the Vedas to a Brāhman endowed with true knowledge.”

Chhāndogya Upanishad, vii. 1, 1, p. 473 (Colebrooke’s Essays, i. 12):

“*Adhīhi bhagavaḥ*” *iti ha upasasāda Sanatkumāraṁ Nāradaḥ | taṁ ha uvācha “yad vettha tena mā upasīda tatas te ūrdhvaṁ vakshyāmi” iti |* 2. *Sa ha uvācha “ṛigvedam bhagavo ’dhyemi yajurvedaṁ sāmavedam ātharvaṇaṁ chaturtham itihāsa-purānam panchamaṁ vedānāṁ vedam pitryaṁ rāsiṁ daivaṁ nidhiṁ vākovākyaṁ ekāyanaṁ deva-vidyāṁ brahma-vidyāṁ bhūta-vidyāṁ kshatra-vidyāṁ nakshatra-vidyāṁ sarpa-deva-jana-vidyāṁ etad bhagavo ’dhyemi |* 3. *So ’ham bhagavo mantra-vid evāsmi na ātma-vid | śrutaṁ hy eva me bhagavadḍṛṣṭeḥbyas ‘tarati śokam ātma-vid’ iti so ’ham bhagavaḥ śochāmi tam mā bhagavān śokasya pāraṁ tārayatv” iti | taṁ ha uvācha “yad vai kincha etad adhyagīshthāḥ nāma evaitat |* 4. *Nāma vai ṛigvedo yajurvedaḥ sāmavedaḥ ātharvaṇaḥ chaturthaḥ itihāsa-purānaḥ panchamaṁ vedānāṁ vedāḥ pitryo rāsir daivo nidhir vākovākyaṁ ekāyanaṁ deva-vidyā brahma-vidyā bhūta-vidyā kshatra-vidyā nakshatra-vidyā sarpa-deva-jana-vidyā nāma evaitad nāma upāsva” iti |* 5. *“Sa yo nāma brahma ity upāste yāvad nāmno gataṁ tatra asya yathā kāmachāro bhavati yo nāma brahma ity upāste” | “asti bhagavo nāmno bhūyaḥ” iti | “nāmno vāva bhūyo ’sti” iti | “tan me bhagavān bravīt” iti |*

1. “Nārada approached Sanatkumāra, saying, ‘Instruct me, venerable sage.’ He received for answer, ‘Approach me with [*i.e.* tell me] that which thou knowest; and I will declare to thee whatever more is to be learnt.’ 2. Nārada replied, ‘I am instructed, venerable sage, in the

Rig-veda, the Yajur-veda, the Sāma-veda, the Ātharvaṇa, [which is] the fourth, the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, [which are] the fifth Veda of the Vedas, the rites of the pitṛis, arithmetic, the knowledge of portents, and of great periods, the art of reasoning,<sup>36</sup> ethics, the science of the gods, the knowledge of Scripture, demonology, the science of war, the knowledge of the stars, the sciences of serpents and deities; this is what I have studied. 3. I, venerable man, know only the hymns (*mantras*); while I am ignorant of soul. 'But I have heard from reverend sages like thyself that 'the man who is acquainted with soul overpasses grief.' Now I, venerable man, am afflicted; but do thou transport me over my grief.' Sanatkumāra answered, 'That which thou hast studied is nothing but name. 4. The Rig-veda is name; and so are the Yajur-veda, the Sāma-veda, the Ātharvaṇa, which is the fourth, and the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, the fifth Veda of the Vedas, etc. [all the other branches of knowledge are here enumerated just as above],—all these are but name: worship name. 5. He who worships name (with the persuasion that it is) Brahma, ranges as it were at will over all which that name comprehends;—such is the prerogative of him who worships name (with the persuasion that it is) Brahma.' 'Is there anything, venerable man,' asked Nārada, 'which is more than name?' 'There is,' he replied, 'something which is more than name.' 'Tell it to me,' rejoined Nārada.'

(Sankara interprets the words *panchamaṁ vedānāṁ vedam* differently from what I have done. He separates the words *vedānāṁ vedam* from *panchamaṁ* and makes them to mean "the means of knowing the Vedas," i.e. grammar. See, however, the Bhāg. Pur. i. 4, 20, below, p. 42, and iii. 12, 39, to be quoted further on.

Satapatha Brāhmaṇa, xiv. 7, 1, 22 (= Bṛihadāranyaka Upanishad, iv. 3, 22, p. 792 ff., p. 228–9 of Dr. Rōer's English): *Atra pitā apitā bhavati mātā amātā lokāḥ alokāḥ devāḥ adevāḥ vedāḥ avedāḥ yajnāḥ aya- jnāḥ | atra steno 'steno bhavati bhrūṇa-hā abhrūṇa-hā paulkaso 'paulkasoś chāṇḍālo 'chāṇḍālah śramaṇo 'śramaṇas tāpaso 'tāpaso nanvāgatam pun- yena ananvāgatam pāpena<sup>37</sup> tīrṇo hi tadā sarvān śokān hṛidayasya bhavati |*

<sup>36</sup> *Vākovākyaṁ* = *tarka-śāstram* — Sāyana. The word is elsewhere explained as meaning "dialogues" (*ukti-pratyukti-rūpam prakaraṇam*—Comm. on S' P. Br. xi. 5, 6, 8). The sense of some of the terms in this list of sciences is obscure; but exactness is not of any great importance to the general drift of the passage.

<sup>37</sup> I give here the reading of the Br. Ār. Up. The S' P. Br. in Professor Weber's

“In that [condition of profound slumber, *sushupti*,] a father is no father, a mother is no mother, the worlds are no worlds, the gods are no gods, and the Vedas are no Vedas, sacrifices are no sacrifices. In that condition a thief is no thief, a murderer of embryos is no murderer of embryos, a Paulkasa no Paulkasa, a Chāṇḍāla no Chāṇḍāla, a Śramaṇa no Śramaṇa, a devotee no devotee; the saint has then no relation, either of advantage or disadvantage, to merit or to sin; for he then crosses over all griefs of the heart.”

(I quote from the commentary on the Br. Ār. Ūp. Sankara's explanation of the unusual words *nanvāgata* and *ananvāgata*: *Nanvāgataṁ na anvāgatam ananvāgatam asambaddham ity etat punyena śāstra-vihitena karmaṇā tathā pūpena vihitākaraṇa-pratishiddha-kriyā-lakṣaṇena* | “*Nanvāgata*=*na* (not) *anvāgata*, and *ananvāgata*=*asambaddha*, unconnected. This condition is unconnected either with merit, *i.e.* action enjoined by the śāstra, or with sin, *i.e.* action defined as the neglect of what is enjoined, or the doing of what is forbidden.”

To the same effect the great sage Nārada is made to speak in the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, iv. 29, 42 ff. :

*Prajāpati-patiḥ sākshād bhagavān Giriśo Manuḥ | Dakṣhādayaḥ prajādhyaśhāḥ naiśṭhikāḥ Sanakādayaḥ | Marīchir Atry-angirasau Pulastyaḥ Pulahaḥ Kratuḥ | Bhṛiguḥ Vasiṣṭhaḥ ity ete mad-antāḥ brahmavādīnaḥ | adyāpi vāchaspatayas tapo-vidyā-samādhibhiḥ | paśyanto 'py na paśyanti paśyantam Paramēśvaram | śabda-brahmaṇi duṣpāre charantaḥ uruvistare | mantra-lingair vyavachehinnam bhajanto na viduḥ param | yadā yasyānuḡriḥṇāti bhagavān ātma-bhāvītāḥ | sa jahāti matiṁ loke vede cha pariniṣṭhitāṁ | tasmāt karmasu varḥishmann ajnānād artha-kāśishu | mā 'rtha-dṛiṣṭiṁ kṛithāḥ śrotra-sparśishv aśpriṣṭa-vasutshu | sva-lokaṁ na vidus te vai yatra devo Janūrdanaḥ | āhur dhūmra-dhīyo vedaṁ sa-karmakam a-tad-vidāḥ | āstīrya darbhaiḥ pṛūg-agraiḥ kārtsnyena kṣhiti-maṇḍalam | stabdho vṛihad-vadhād mānī karma nāvaiṣhi yat param | tat karma Hari-toshāṁ yat sāvīdyā tan-matir yayā |*

“Brahmā himself, the divine Giriśa (Śivā), Manu, Daksha and the other Prajāpatis, Sanaka and other devotees, Marīchi, Atri, Āngiras, Pulastya, Pulaha, Kratu, Bhṛigu, Vasiṣṭha—all these expounders of sacred knowledge, and masters of speech, including myself (Nārada) as text gives *ananvāgataḥ punyena ananvāgataḥ pūpena*. And yet the commentary alludes to the word *ananvāgata* being in the neuter.

the last, though seeing, are yet, to this day, unable, by austerity, by science, by contemplation, to see Parameśvara (the supreme God), who sees all things. Wandering in the vast field of the verbal brahma (the Veda), which is difficult to traverse, men do not recognise the Supreme, while they worship him as he is circumscribed by the attributes specified in the hymns (*mantras*). When the Divine Being regards any man with favour, that man, sunk in the contemplation of soul, abandons all thoughts which are set upon the world and the Veda. Cease, therefore, Varhishmat, through ignorance, to look upon works which merely seem to promote the chief good, as if they truly effected that object, (works) which only touch the ear, but do not touch the reality. The misty-minded men, who, ignorant of the Veda, declare that works are its object, do not know [his] own world, where the divine Janār-dana abides. Thou who, obstinate man that thou art, strewest the whole earth with sacrificial grass, with its ends turned to the east, and art proud of thy numerous immolations,—thou knowest not what is the highest work of all. That by which Hari (Vishnu) is pleased, is work; that by which the thoughts are fixed on him, is science.”

I copy the comment on a part of this passage, viz. on verses 45 and 46:

*S'abda-brahmani vede urur vistāro yasya arthato 'pi pāra-sūnye tasmin varttamānāḥ mantrāṇām lingair vajra-hastatvādi-guṇa-yukta-vividha-devatā-'bhīdhāna-sāmarthyaiḥ parichchinnam eva Indrādi-rūpam tat-tat-karmāgrahena bhajantaḥ param Parameśvaraṁ na viduḥ | Tarhy anyah ko nāma | karmādy-āgrahaṁ jñtvā parameśvaram eva bhajed ity ata āha "yadā yam anugrḥṇāti" | anugrahe hetuḥ | ātmani bhāvitaḥ san sa tadā loke loka-vyavahāre vede cha karma-mārge parinishthitām matiṁ tyajati |*

“Men, conversant with the verbal brahma, the Veda, of which the extent is vast, and which, in fact, is boundless, worshipping Parameśvara [the supreme God] under the form of Indra, etc., circumscribed by the marks specified in the hymns, *i.e.* limited to various particular energies denominated deities, who are characterised by such attributes as ‘wielder of the thunderbolt,’ etc.; worshipping Him, I say, thus, with an addiction to particular rites, men do not know the supreme God. What other [god], then, [is there]? He therefore, in the words, ‘When he regards any one with favour,’ etc., says, let a man, abandoning all addiction to works, etc., worship the supreme God alone. The reason for this favour [is supplied in the following words]:

‘Sunk in the contemplation of soul, he then relinquishes his regard directed to the business of the world and to the Veda, *i.e.* to the method of works.’”

The following passage from the Kaṭha Upaniṣad (ii. 23) is of a somewhat similar tendency (p. 107 of Roër’s ed. and p. 106 of Eng. trans.):

*Nāyam ātmā pravachanena labhyo na medhayā na bahunā śruteṇā |  
yam evaiṣha vṛiṇute tena labhyas tasyaiṣha ātmā vṛiṇute tanūṃ svām |*

“This Soul is not to be attained by instruction, nor by understanding, nor by much scripture. He is attainable by him whom he chooses. The Soul chooses that man’s body as his own abode.”

The scholiast interprets thus the first part of this text:

*Yadyapi durvijneyo ’yam ātmā tathāpy upāyena suvijneyaḥ eva ity  
āha nāyam ātmā pravachanena aneka-veda-svīkaraṇena labhyo jneyo nāpi  
medhayā granthārtha-dhāraṇā-śaktyā na bahunā śruteṇa kevalena | kena  
tarhi labhyaḥ ity uchyate |*

“Although this soul is difficult to know, still it may easily be known by the use of proper means. This is what [the author] proceeds to say. This soul is not to be attained, known, by instruction, by the acknowledgement of many Vedas; nor by understanding, by the power of recollecting the contents of books; nor by much scripture alone. By what, then, is it to be attained? This he declares.”

It is not necessary to follow the scholiast into the Vedantic explanation of the rest of the passage.<sup>38</sup>

The preceding passages, emanating from two different classes of writers, both distinguished by the spirituality of their aspirations, manifest a depreciation, more or less distinct and emphatic, of the polytheism of the Vedic hymns, as obstructive rather than promotive, of divine knowledge, and express disregard, if not contempt, of the ceremonies founded on that polytheism, and performed with a view to the enjoyments of paradise.

SECT. V.—*Division of the Vedas, according to the Viṣṇu, Vāyu, and  
Bhāgavata Purāṇas, and the Mahābhārata.*

Some of the Purāṇas, as we have seen above, represent the four Vedas as having issued from Brahmā’s different mouths. If they had

<sup>38</sup> See Prof. Müller’s Anc. Sansk. Lit. 1st ed. p. 320, and p. 109.

each a separate origin of this kind, it would seem that they must have had from the time of their production a distinct existence also. And yet it is elsewhere said that there was originally but one Veda, which was subsequently divided into four portions.

Thus the Vishṇu Purāṇa gives the following account of the division of the Veda, described as having been originally but one, into four parts, iii. 2, 18:

*Kṛite yuge paraṁ jñānaṁ Kapilādi-svarūpa-dhṛik | dadāti sarva-bhū-tānām sarva-bhūta-hite rataḥ | chakravartti-svarūpeṇa tretāyām api sa prabhuh | Dushṭānām nīgrahaṁ kurvan paripāti jagattrayam | Vedam ekaṁ chatur-bhedaṁ kṛtvā śākhā-satair vibhuḥ | karoti bahulam bhūyo Vedavyāsa-svarūpa-dhṛik |, vedāṁs tu dvāpare vyasya, etc.*

“In the Kṛita age, Vishṇu, devoted to the welfare of all creatures, assumes the form of Kapila and others to confer upon them the highest knowledge. In the Tretā age the Supreme Lord, in the form of a universal potentate, represses the violence of the wicked, and protects the three worlds. Assuming the form of Vedavyāsa, the all-pervading Being repeatedly divides the single Veda into four parts, and multiplies it by distributing it into hundreds of śākhās. Having thus divided the Vedas in the Dvāpara age,” etc.<sup>39</sup>

This is repeated more at length in the following section (Vish. Pur. iii. 3, 4 ff.):

*Veda-drumasya Maitreya śākhā-bhedaiḥ sahasraśaḥ | na śakyo vistaro vaktuṁ sankshepenc śṛiṇushva tam | Dvāpare dvāpare Vishṇur Vyāsa-rūpī mahāmune | Vedam ekam sa bahudhā kurute jagato hitaḥ | vīryaṁ tejo balaṁ chālpam manushyānām avekshya vai hitāya sarva-bhūtānām veda-bhedān karoti saḥ | yayā sa kurute tanvā vedam ekaṁ prithak prabhuh | Vedavyāsābhīdhanū tu sā mūrttir Madhuvidvishaḥ | . . . . Asṭā-vīmśati-kṛitvo vai vedāḥ vyastāḥ maharshibhiḥ | Vaivasvate 'ntare tasmin dvāpareshu punaḥ punaḥ |*

“It is not possible, Maitreya, to describe in detail the tree of the Vedas with its thousand branches (śākhās); but listen to a summary. A friend to the world, Vishṇu, in the form of Vyāsa, divides the single Veda into many parts. He does so for the good of all creatures, because he perceives the vigour, energy, and strength of men to have become

<sup>39</sup> Compare on this subject portions of the passage of the Mahābhārata quoted in the First Volume of this work, pp. 144-146.

decreased. Vedavyāsa, in whose person he performs this division, is an impersonation of the enemy of Madhu (Vishṇu). . . . Eight-and-twenty times in the Dvāpara ages of this Vaivasvata Manvantara<sup>40</sup> have the Vedas been divided by great sages." "These sages are then enumerated, and Kṛishṇa Dvaipāyana<sup>41</sup> is the twenty-eighth.

The subject is resumed at the beginning of the next section (Vish. Pur. iii. 4, 1 ff.) :

*Ādya vedāḥ chatuṣpādāḥ śata-sāhasra-saṃmitāḥ | Tato daśc-guṇāḥ  
kṛitsno yajno 'yaṃ sarva-kāmadhuk | Tato 'tra mat-suto Vyāso 'śhṭāvīm-  
śatitame 'ntare | vedam ekam chatuṣpādāṃ chaturdhā vyābhajat prabhuk |  
yathā tu tena vai vyastāḥ Vedavyāsena dhīmataḥ | Vedāḥ tathā samastais  
tair vyastāḥ Vyāsais tathā mayā | tad aneṇaiva vedānāṃ sākābhedaṃ  
dvijottama | chaturyugesu rachitān samasteshv avadhāraya | Kṛishṇa-  
dvaipāyanaṃ Vyāsam viddhi Nārāyaṇam prabhum | ko 'nyo hi bhūvi  
Maitreya Mahābhārata-kṛid bhavet | Tena vyastāḥ yathā Vedāḥ mat-pu-  
treṇa mahātmanā | Dvāpare hy atra Maitreya tad me śṛiṇu yathārthataḥ |  
Brahmaṇā chodito Vyāso vedān vyastum prachakrame | Atha śishyān sa  
jagrāha chaturo veda-pāra-gūn | Rīgveda-śrāvakaṃ Pailāṃ jagrāha sa  
mahāmuniḥ | Vaiśampāyana-nāmānaṃ Yajurvedasya chāgrahit | Jaimi-  
niṃ Sāma-vedasya tathavātharvaveda-vit | Sumantus tasya śishyo 'bhūd  
Vedavyāsasya dhīmataḥ | Romaharshaṇa-nāmānam mahābuddhim mahā-  
munim | Sūtaṃ jagrāha śishyaṃ sa itihāsa-purāṇayoḥ |*

"The original Veda, consisting of four quarters, contained a hundred thousand verses. From it arose the entire system of sacrifice, tenfold (compared with the present) and yielding all the objects of desire. Subsequently, in the twenty-eighth manvantara my son, [Parāśara is the speaker] the mighty Vyāsa, divided into four parts the Veda which was one, with four quarters. In the same way as the Vedas were divided

<sup>40</sup> For an account of the Manvantaras, see the First Part of this work, pp. 39, 43 ff.

<sup>41</sup> Lassen (Ind. Ant. 2nd ed. i. 777, note) remarks: "Vyāsa signifies arrangement, and this signification had still retained its place in the recollection of the ancient recorders of the legend, who have formed from his name an irregular perfect, viz. *vivyāsa*." Lassen refers to two passages of the Mahābhārata in which the name is explained, viz. (i. 2417), *Vivyāsa vedān yasnāt sa tasmād Vyāsaḥ iti smṛitāḥ* | "He is called Vyāsa because he divided the Veda." And (i. 4236) *Yo vyasya vedāṃś chaturas tapasū bhagavān rīshih | loka vyāsatvam āpede kārshnyat kṛishnatvam eva cha* | "The divine sage (Kṛishṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa) who, through fervid devotion, divided the four Vedas, and so obtained in the world the title of Vyāsa, and from his blackness, the name of Kṛishṇa."



by the wise Vyāsa, so had they been divided by all the [preceding] Vyāsas, including myself. And know that the śākhā divisions [formed] by him [were the same as those] formed in all the periods of four yugas. Learn, too, that Kṛishṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa was the lord Nārāyaṇa; for who else on earth could have composed the Mahābhārata? Hear now correctly how the Vedas were divided by him, my great son, in this Dvāpara age. When, commanded by Brahmā, Vyāsa undertook to divide the Vedas, he took four disciples who had read through those books. The great muni took Paila as teacher of the Rich, Vaiśampāyana of the Yajush, and Jaimini of the Sāman, while Sumantu, skilled in the Atharva-veda, was also his disciple. He took, too, as his pupil for the Itihāsas and Purāṇas the great and intelligent muni, Sūta, called Romaharshaṇa."<sup>42</sup>

*Vāyu Purāṇa*.—In the same way, and partly in the same words, the Vāyu Purāṇa (section lx.) represents the Vedas to have been divided in the Dvāpara age. It first describes how this was done by Manu in the Svāyambhuva, or first manvantara, and then recounts how Vyāsa performed the same task in the existing seventh, or Vaivasvata manvantara; and, no doubt, also in the Dvāpara age, though this is not expressly stated in regard to Vyāsa.

The following is an extract from this passage (as given in Dr. Aufrecht's Catalogue of the Bodleian Sanskrit MSS. p. 54):

*Dvāpare tu purāvṛitte Manoh svāyambhuve 'ntare | Brahmā Manum  
uvāchedam vedāṃ vyasya mahāmata | Parivṛittāṃ yugaṃ tāta svalpa-  
vīryāḥ dvijātayāḥ saṃvṛittāḥ yuga-doshena sarvaṃ chaiva yathākramam |  
bhrashṭa-mānaṃ yuga-vaśād alpa-śiṣṭāṃ hi dṛiṣṭate | Daśa-sahasra-bhū-  
gena hy avāśiṣṭam kṛitād idam | vīryaṃ tejo balaṃ chālpaṃ sarvaṃ  
chaiva pranaśyati | vede vedāḥ hi kāryyāḥ syur mā bhūd veda-vināśanaṃ |  
vede nāsam anuprāpte yajno nāsaṃ gamishyati | yajne nashṭe deva-nāsas*

<sup>42</sup> Mahīdhara on the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā (Weber's ed. p. 1) says, in regard to the division of the Vedas: *Tatrūdaḥ Brahma-paramparayā praptāṃ Vedāṃ Vedavyāso manda-maṭṭin manushyān vichintya tat-kṛipayā chaturdhā vyasya Rīg-yajuh-sāmā-tharvākhyāṃs chaturō vedān Paila-Vaiśampāyana-Jaimini-Sumantubhyaḥ kramād upādīdeśa te cha sva-śiṣhebhyaḥ | Evam paramparayā sahasra-śākhō Vedo jātaḥ |* "Vedavyāsa, having regard to men of dull understanding, in kindness to them, divided into four parts the Veda which had been originally handed down by tradition from Brahmā, and taught the four Vedas, called Rich, Yajush, Sāman, and Atharvan, in order, to Paila, Vaiśampāyana, Jaimini, and Sumantu; and they again to their disciples. In this way, by tradition, the Veda of a thousand śākhās was produced."

*tataḥ sarvaṃ praṇāśyati | Ādya vedaś chatuṣ-pādo śata-sūhasra-sammitaḥ | Punar daśa-guṇaḥ kṛitsno yajno vai, sarva-kāma-dhuk | Evam uktas tathety uktvā Manur loka-hite rataḥ | vedam ekam aṣṭaṣ-pādaṃ chaturdhā vyabhajāt prabhuḥ | Brāhmaṇo vachanāt tāta lokānām hita-kāmyayā | tad aham varttamānena yuṣhmākaṃ veda-kalpanam | manvantareṇa vakshyāmi vyatītānām prakalpanam | pratyākshenā parokṣhām vai tad vibodhata sattamāḥ | Asmin yuge kṛito Vyāsaḥ Pārāśaryaḥ parantapaḥ | "Dvaipāyanaḥ" iti khyāto Viṣṇor aṃśaḥ prakīrtvītaḥ | Brāhmaṇā choditāḥ so 'smin vedaṃ vyastuṃ prachakrame | Atha śiṣhyān sa jagrāha chaturō veda-kāranāt | Jaiminiṃ cha Sumantuṃ cha Vaiśampāyanam eva cha | Pailāṃ teshām chaturthaṃ tu panchamaṃ Lomaḥarshaṇam |*

“In the former Dvāpara of the Svāyambhuva manvantara, Brahmā said to Manu, ‘Divide the Veda, o sage. The age is changed; through its baneful influence the Brāhmins have become feeble, and from the same cause the measure of everything has gradually declined, so that little is seen remaining. A part (of the Veda) consisting of only these ten thousand (verses) is now left to us from the Kṛita age; vigour, fire, and energy are diminished; and everything is on the road to destruction. A plurality of Vedas must be made out of the one Veda, lest the Veda be destroyed. The destruction of the Veda would involve the destruction of sacrifice; that again would occasion the annihilation of the gods, and then everything would go to ruin. The primeval Veda consisted of four quarters and extended to one hundred thousand verses, while sacrifice was tenfold, and yielded every object of desire.’” Being thus addressed, Manu, the lord, devoted to the good of the world, replied, ‘Be it so,’ and in conformity with the command of Brahmā, divided the one Veda, which consisted of four quarters, into four parts.<sup>43</sup> I shall, therefore, narrate to you the division of the Veda in the existing manvantara; from which visible division you, virtuous sages, can understand those invisible arrangements of the same kind which were made in past manvantaras. In this Yuga, the victorious son of Parāśara, who is called Dvaipāyana, and is celebrated as a portion of Viṣṇu, has been made the Vyāsa. In this Yuga, he, being commanded by Brahmā, began to divide the Vedas. For this purpose he took four pupils, Jaimini, Sumantu, Vaiśampāyana,

<sup>43</sup> The Mahābhārata, S’āntip. verse 13,678, says the Vedas were divided in the Svāyambhuva manvantara by Apāntaratamas, son of Sarasvatī (*Tena bhinnās tadā vedā manoḥ svāyambhuvo ’ntar*).

and Paila, and, as a fifth, Lomaharshana" [for the Purānas and Itihāsas, etc.]

*Bhāgavata Purāṇa*.—It is in its third book, where the different manvantaras are described, that the Vishṇu Purāṇa gives an account of the division of the Vedas. In the book of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa where the manvantaras are enumerated, there is no corresponding allusion to the division of the Vedas; but a passage to the same effect occurs in the fourth section of the first book, verses 14 ff. :

*Dvāpare samanuprāpte tṛtīya-yuga-paryaye* | .jūtaḥ Parāsarūd yogī .  
*Vāsavyāṁ kalayā Hareḥ* | 15. *Sa kadūchit Sarasvatyāḥ upasprīṣya jalāṁ*  
*śuchi* | *viviktaḥ ekaḥ āsīnaḥ udite ravi-maṇḍale* | 16. *Parāvara-jnaḥ sa*  
*rishiḥ kālenāvyakta-rañḥasā* | *yuga-dharma-vyatikaram prāptam bhūvi*  
*yuge yuge* | 17. *Bhautikānām cha bhāvānām śakti-hrāsām cha tat-kṛi-*  
*tam* | *āsraddhadhānān nissatrān durmedhān hrasitāyushaḥ* | 18. *Dur-*  
*bhagāṁs janān vīkshya munir divyena chakshushā* | *sarvā-varṇāśramānām*  
*yad dadhyau hitam amogha-dṛiḥ* | 19. *Chāturotraṁ karma śuddham pra-*  
*jānām vīkshya vaidikam* | *vyadadhād yajna-santatyai vedam ekaṁ chatur-*  
*vidham* | 20. *Rig-yajur-sāmātharvākyāḥ vedās chatvāra uddhṛitāḥ* |  
*itihāsa-purāṇāṁ cha panchamo veda uchyate* | 21. *Tatrrarg-veda-dharaḥ*  
*Pailaḥ sāmago Jaiminiḥ kavīḥ* | *Vaiśampāyana evaiko nishṇāto yajushām*  
*uta* | 22. *Atharvāngirasām āsīt Śumantur dāruṇo munīḥ* | *itihāsa-purāṇā-*  
*nām pitā me Romaharshaṇaḥ* | 23. *Te ete rishayo vedaṁ svaṁ svaṁ vyasyann*  
*anekadhā* | *śishyāḥ praśishyais tach-chhishyair vedās te sākhino bhavan* |  
 24. *Te eva vedāḥ durvedhair dhāryante purushair yathā* | *evaṁ chakāra*  
*bhāgavān Vyāsaḥ kṛīpaṇa-vatsalaḥ* | 25. *Strī-śūdra-dvijabandhūnām*  
*trayī na śruti-gocharā* | *karma-śreyasi mūdhānām śreyāḥ eva bhaved iha* |  
*iti Bhāratam ākhyānām kṛīpayā muninā kṛitam* |

14. "When the Dvāpara age had arrived, during the revolution of that third yuga, the Yogin (Vyāsa) was born, a portion of Hari, as the son of Parāśara and Vāsavyā. 15. As on one occasion he was sitting solitary at sunrise, after touching the pure waters of the Sarasvatī, (16) this rishi, who knew the past and the future, perceiving, with the eye of divine intelligence, that disorder had in each yuga been introduced into the duties proper to each, through the action of time, whose march is imperceptible, (17) that the strength of beings formed of the elements had in consequence declined, that men were destitute of faith, vigour, and intelligence, that their lives were shortened, (18) and that they

were miserable,—reflected with unerring insight on the means of benefitting the several castes and orders. 19. Discerning that the pure Vedic ceremonies ought to be performed for men by the agency of four classes of priests, he divided the one Veda into four parts, with a view to the performance of sacrifice. 20. Four Vedas, called the Rich, Yajush, Sāman, and Atharvan, were drawn forth from it; while the Itihāsas and Purānas are called the fifth Veda. 21. Of these the Rich was held by Paila, the sage Jaimini chanted the Sāman, Vaiśampāyana alone was versed in the Yajush, (22) the dreadful muni Sumantu in the verses of Atharvan and Angiras, and my father Romaharshana in the Itihāsas and Purānas. 23. Each of these rishis arranged his own Veda in many ways; and by the successive generations of their disciples the Vedas were separated into branches (*śākhās*). 24. The venerable Vyāsa, kind to the wretched, acted thus in order that the Vedas might be recollected by men of enfeebled understanding. 25. And as women, Sūdras, and the inferior members of the twice-born classes were unfitted for hearing the Veda, and were infatuated in desiring the blessings arising from ceremonies, the muni, with a view to their felicity, in his kindness composed the narrative called the Mahābhārata.”

But notwithstanding the magnitude of the great legendary and theological repertory which he had thus compiled, Vyāsa, we are told, was dissatisfied with his own contributions to sacred science until he had produced the Bhāgavata Purāna consecrated to the glory of Bhagavat (Kṛishna).<sup>44</sup> The completion of this design is thus narrated, Bhāg. Pur. i. 7, 6 :

*Anarthopaśamaṁ śikshād bhakti-yogam Adhokshaje | lokasyājānato vidvāṁś chakre Sātvata-saṁhitām | 7. Yasyāṁ vai śrūyamānāyām Kṛishne parama-pūrushe | bhaktir udpatyate puṁśaḥ śoka-moha-bhayāpahā | 8. Sa saṁhitām Bhāgavatīm kṛtvā 'nukramya chātmapam | Sukam adhyāpayāmāsa nivrītti-nīratam muniḥ |*

“Knowing that devotion to Adhokshaja (Kṛishna) was the evident means of putting an end to the folly of the world, which was ignorant of this, he composed the Sātvata-Saṁhitā (the Bhāgavata). 7. When a man listens to this work, devotion to Kṛishna, the supreme Purusha, arises in his mind, and frees him from grief, delusion, and fear. Having

<sup>44</sup> See Wilson's Vishnu Purāna, Preface, p. xlvi.

completed and arranged this Sanhitā, the muni taught it to his son Suka, who was indisposed to the pursuit of secular objects."

Towards the close of this Purāṇa also, in the sixth section of the twelfth book (verses 37 ff.), there is to be found what Professor Wilson (Vish. Pur. Pref.) calls "a rather awkwardly introduced description of the arrangement of the Vedas and Purāṇas by Vyāsa."

The passage (as given in the Bombay lithographed edition) is as follows:

*Sūta uvācha | samāhitātmano brahman Brahmaṇaḥ parameshṭhinaḥ |  
 hṛid-ākāśād abhūd'nādo vṛitti-rodhād vibhūvyate | yad-upāsanayā brah-  
 man yogino malam ātmanaḥ | dravya-kriyā-kāraḥ kākhyam dhūtvā yānti  
 apanurbhavam | Tato 'bhāt trivṛid oṃkāro yo 'vyakta-prabhavaḥ svarāt |  
 yat tal lingam Bhagavato Brāhmaṇaḥ paramātmanaḥ | sṛinoti yaḥ imaṃ  
 sphoṭam sūpta-śrotre cha sūnya-dṛik | yena vāg vyajyate yasya vyaktir  
 ākāśe ātmanaḥ | svadhāmano brahmaṇaḥ sākshād vāchakaḥ paramātmanaḥ |  
 sa-sarva-mantropanishad-veda-vijaṃ sanātanam | tasya hy āsaṃs trayo  
 varṇāḥ a-kārādyāḥ Bhṛigūdvaḥ | dhāryante yaiḥ trayo bhāvāḥ guṇāḥ  
 nāmārtha-vṛittayaḥ | tato 'kshara-samāmnāyam asṛijaḥ bhagavān ajaḥ |  
 Antassthosha-svara-sparśa-hrasva-dīrghādi-lakṣhaṇam | tenāsau chaturo  
 vedāṃs chaturbhir vadanair vibhuh | sa-vyāhṛitikan sōmkārāṃs chatur-  
 hotra-vivakshayā | putrān adhyāpayat tāṃs tu brahmarshiṃ brahma-  
 kovidān | te tu dharmopadeshtāraḥ sva-putrebhyaḥ samādiśan | te param-  
 parayā prāptās tat-tach-chhishyair dhṛita-vrataiḥ | chaturyugesv aṭha  
 vyastāḥ dvāparādau ṛaharshibhiḥ | kshīṇāyushaḥ kshīṇā-sattvān dur-  
 medhān vīkshya kālṭataḥ | vedān brahmarshayo vyasyan hṛidisthāch-  
 yuta-noditāḥ | Asminn apy antare brahman bhagvān loka-bhāvanaḥ |  
 brahmeśdyair lokapālair yāchito dharmā-guptage | Parāśarāt Satyavat-  
 yām aṃsāṃśa-kalayā vibhuh | avatīrno mahābhāga vedāṃ chakre chatur-  
 vidham | ṛig-ātharva-yajuh-sāmnāṃ rāśiṃ uddhṛitya vargaśaḥ | chatasraḥ  
 saṃhitās chakre mantrair maṇigāṇāḥ va | tāsāṃ sa chaturāḥ śishyān  
 upāhūya mahāmatīḥ | Ekaiḥkām saṃhitāṃ brahman ekaikasmai dadau  
 vibhuh | Pvilāya saṃhitāṃ ādyām bahvṛichākhyām uvācha ha | Vaiśam-  
 pāyana-sanjñāya nigadākhyāṃ yajur-gaṇam | sāmṇāṃ Jaiminaye prāha  
 tathā chhandoga-saṃhitāṃ | Atharvāṅgirasīm nāma sva-śishāya Su-  
 mantave |*

"Sūta speaks: 'From the æther of the supreme Brahma's heart, when he was plunged in meditation, there issued a sound, which is

perceived [by the devout] when they close their organs of sense. By adoring this sound, devotees destroy the soul's threefold taint, extrinsic, inherent, and superhuman,<sup>45</sup> and become exempt from future birth. From this sound sprang the *oṃkāra*, composed of three elements, self-resplendent, of imperceptible origin, that which is the emblem of the divine Brahma, the supreme spirit. He it is who hears this sound (*sphoṭa*), when the ears are insensible and the vision inactive, (this *sphoṭa* or *oṃkāra*) through which speech is revealed, and which is manifested in the æther, from the Soul.<sup>46</sup> This [*oṃkāra*] is the sensible exponent of Brahma, the self-sustained, the supreme spirit; and it is the eternal seed of the Vedas, including all the Mantras and Upanishads. In this [*oṃkāra*] there were, o descendant of Bhṛigu, three letters, *Ṃ* and the rest, by which the three conditions, the [three] qualities, the [three] names, the [three] significations, the [three] states<sup>47</sup> are maintained. From these [three letters] the divine and unborn being created the traditional system of the letters of the alphabet, distinguished as inner (*y, r, l, v*), *ushmas* (*ś, śh, s, h*), vowels, long and short, and consonants. With this [alphabet] the omnipresent Being, desiring to reveal the functions of the four classes of priests, [created] from his four mouths the four Vedas with the three sacred syllables (*vyāhṛitis*) and the *oṃkāra*.<sup>48</sup> These he taught to his sons, the brahmarshis, skilled in sacred lore; and these teachers of duty, in turn declared them to their sons. The Vedas were thus received by each succeeding generation of devout pupils from their

<sup>45</sup> *Dravya-kriyā-kāraka*, which the scholiast interprets as answering to *adhibhūta*, *adhyātma*, and *adhidaiva*. See the explanation of these terms in Wilson's *Sākhya-kārikā*, pp. 2 and 9.

<sup>46</sup> I quote the scholiast's explanation of this obscure verse: *Ko'sau paramātmā taṃ āha 'sṛiṇoti' iti | imam sphoṭam avyaktam oṃkāram | naṃ jīvaḥ evo taṃ sṛiṇoti | na ity āha | supta-śrotre kaṇa-pidhānādinā avṛittike 'pi śrotre sati | jīvas tu karaṇādīnatvād na tadā śrotū | tad-vpalabdhis tu tasya paramātmā-dvārikā eva iti bhāvah | Īśvaras tu naivam | yataḥ sūnya-dṛik sūnye 'pi indriya-varge dṛik jñānāni yasya | tathā hi supto yadā śabdaṃ śrutvā prabodhyate na tadā jīvaḥ śrotū līnendriyatvāt | ato yas tadā śabdaṃ śrutvā jīvam prabodhyat sa yathā paramātmā eva tadvat | ko 'sāv oṃkāras taṃ viśinashṭi sārddhena yena vāg bṛihatī vyajyate yasya cha hṛidayākāśe ātmanaḥ sakāśād vyaktir abhiviyaktiḥ*. The word *sphoṭa* will be explained below, in a future section.

<sup>47</sup> These the scholiast explains thus: *Guṇāḥ sattvōdayaḥ | nāmāni ṛig-yajuh-sāmāni | arthāḥ bhūr-bhuvah-svar-lokāḥ | vṛittayo jāgrad-ādyāḥ |*

<sup>48</sup> If I have translated this correctly, the *oṃkāra* is both the source of the alphabet, and the alphabet of the *oṃkāra*!

predecessors, and in each of the systems of four yugas were divided by great sages at the beginning of the Dvāpara.<sup>49</sup> The Brahmarshis, impelled by Achyuta, who resided in their hearts, divided the Vedas, because they perceived that men had declined in age; in power, and in understanding. In this manvantara also,<sup>50</sup> the divine and omnipresent Being, the author of the universe, being supplicated by Brahmā, Īśa (Śiva), and the other guardians of the world, to maintain righteousness, became partially incarnate as the son of Parāśara and Satyavatī, and divided the Veda into four parts. Selecting aggregates of R̥ch, Atharvan, Yajush, and Sāman verses, and arranging them in sections (*vargas*), he formed four *sanhitās* (collections) of the hymns, as gems [of the same description are gathered together in separate heaps]. Having summoned four disciples, the wise lord gave to each of them one of these *sanhitās*. To Paila he declared the first *sanhitā*, called that of the Bahvrichas; to Vaiśampāyana the assemblage of Yayush verses, called Nigada; to Jaimini the Chhandoga collection of Sāman verses; and to his pupil, Sumantu, the Atharvāngirasi."

The Bhāgavata Purāna, however, is not consistent in the account which it gives of the division of the Vedas. In a passage already quoted in the First Volume of this work, p. 158, it speaks of that division as having been the work of the monarch Purūravas, and as having taken place in the beginning of the Tretā age. From the importance of this text I will extract it here again at greater length.

The celestial nymph Urvaśī, the Purāna tells us, had been doomed, in consequence of a curse, to take up her abode upon earth. She there

<sup>49</sup> *Dvāparādau* can only mean the "beginning of the Dvāpara;" but the scholiast undertakes by the following process of reasoning to show that it means the end of that yuga: *Dvāparādau dvāparam ādir yasya tad-antyānsā-lakṣhaṇasya kūlasya | tasmin dvāparānte veda-vibhāga-prasiddheḥ S'antanu-sama-kāla-Vyāsvatāra-prasiddheḥ cha | vyastā vibhaktāḥ |* "Dvāparādau means the period of which the dvāpara was the beginning, i.e. the time distinguished as the concluding portion of that yuga; since it is notorious that the Vedas were divided at the end of the Dvāpara, and that the incarnation of Vyāsa was contemporaneous with S'antanu. *Vyastāḥ = vibhaktāḥ*, divided."

<sup>50</sup> From this it appears that hitherto the account had not referred to the present manvantara. The scholiast remarks: *Evaṁ sāmānyato veda-vibhāga-kramam uktvā vaivasvata-manvantare viśeshato nirūpayitum āha |* "Having thus [in the preceding verses] generally described the manner in which the Vedas are divided, [the author] now states [as follows], with the view of determining particularly [what was done] in the Vaivasvata manvantara."

fell in love with King Purūravas, the report of whose manly beauty had touched her heart, even before she had been banished from paradise. After spending many happy days in the society of her lover, she forsook him in consequence of his having infringed one of the conditions of their cohabitation, and Purūravas was in consequence rendered very miserable. He at length, however, obtained a renewal of their intercourse, and she finally recommended him to worship the Gandharvas, who would then re-unite him with her indissolubly.

The Purāna then proceeds (ix. 14, 43 ff.) :

*Tasya saṁstuvatas tushṭāḥ agniśthālīm dadur nṛipa | Urvaśim manya-*  
*mānas tāñ so 'budhyata charan vane | Sthālīm nyasya vane gatvā gṛihān*  
*ādhyāyato niśi | Tretāyāñ sampravṛittāyāñ manasi trayy avarttata |*  
*Sthālī-sthānañ gato 'śvatthañ śamī-garbhañ vilakshya saḥ | Tena dve*  
*araṇī kṛitvā Urvaśī-loka-kāmyayā | Urvaśim mantrato dhyāyann adharā-*  
*raṇim uttarām | Ātmānam ubhayor madhye yat tat prajananañ prabhuh |*  
*Tasya nirmathanāj jāto jātavedāḥ vibhāvasuḥ | Trayyā cha vidyayā rājñā*  
*putratve kalpitas trivṛit | Tenūyajata yajñesañ bhagavantam adhoksha-*  
*jam | Urvaśī-lokam anvichhan sarva-devamayañ Hariṁ | Ekaḥ eva purū*  
*vedāḥ pranavaḥ sarva-vāñmayah | Devo nārāyaṇo nānyaḥ eko 'gnir varnaḥ*  
*eva cha | Purūravasa evāsīt trayī tretā-mukhe nṛipa | Agniṇā prajayā*  
*rājā lokam gāndharvam eyivān |*

“The Gandharvas, gratified by his praises, gave him a platter containing fire. This he [at first] supposed to be Urvaśī, but became aware [of his mistake], as he wandered in the wood. Having placed the platter in the forest, Purūravas went home; and as he was meditating in the night, after the Tretā age had commenced, the triple Veda appeared before his mind.<sup>51</sup> Returning to the spot where he had placed the platter, he beheld an *śvattha* tree springing out of a *śamī* tree, and formed from it two pieces of wood. Longing to attain the world where Urvaśī dwelt, he imagined to himself, according to the sacred text, Urvaśī as the lower and himself as the upper piece of wood, and the place of generation as situated between the two.<sup>52</sup> Agni was produced from its

<sup>51</sup> *Karma-bodhakam veda-trayañ prādūrabhūt |* “The three Vedas, expounders of rites, were manifested to him,” as the scholiast explains.”

<sup>52</sup> Allusion is here made to a part of the ceremonial for kindling a particular sacrificial fire; one of the formulas employed at which, as given in the Vāj. Sanhitā, 5, 2, is, “thou art Urvaśī” (*Urvaśy asi*), and another, “thou art Purūravas” (*Purūravoḥ*



friction, and, according to the threefold science [Veda], was under his triple form, adopted by the king as his son. With this fire, seeking to attain the heaven of Uṛvaśī, he worshipped the divine Hari, the lord of sacrifice, Adhokshaja, formed of the substance of all the gods. There was formerly but one Veda, the sacred monosyllable *om*, the essence of all speech; one god, Nārāyaṇa; one Agni, and [one] caste. From Purūravas came the triple Veda in the beginning of the Tretā age. Through Agni, his son, the king attained the heaven of the Gandharvas.<sup>53</sup>

On the close of this passage the commentator remarks :

*Nanv anādir veda-traya-bodhito brāhmanādīnām Indrādy-aneka-deva-  
yajanena svarga-prāpti-hetuḥ karma-mārgaḥ kathaṁ sādīr iva varṇyate |  
Tatrāha "eka eva" iti dvābhyām | Purū kṛita-yuge sarva-vāñmayah  
sarvāsām vāchām vīja-bhūtaḥ pranavaḥ eka eva vedaḥ | Devaś cha Nārā-  
yaṇaḥ eka eva | Agniś cha eka eva laukikaḥ | Varṇaś cha eka eva haṁso  
nāma | Veda-trayī tu Purūravasaḥ sakāśād āsīt . . . Ayam bhūvaḥ |  
kṛita-yuge sattva-pradhānāḥ prāyasaḥ sarve 'pi dhyāna-niṣṭhāḥ | rajaḥ-  
pradhāne tu Tretā-yuge vedādi-vibhāgena karma-mārgaḥ prakāṣo babhūva  
ity arthaḥ |*

“How is it that the eternal method of works, which is pointed out by the three Vedas, and through which Brāhmins and others, by worshipping Indra and many other gods, attain to paradise, is spoken of [in the preceding verses] as if it had a beginning in time? He [the author of the Purāṇa] answers this in these two verses. Formerly, *i.e.* in the Kṛita age, there was only one Veda, the sacred monosyllable *om*, the essence of all words, *i.e.* that which is the seed of all words; and there was only one god, Nārāyaṇa; only one fire, that for common uses; and

*asi*), the former denoting the lower (*adharāraṇi*), and the latter the upper, piece of wood (*uttarāraṇi*), by the friction of which the fire was to be produced. See Weber's Indische Studien, i. 197, and note; Roth's Illustrations of the Nirukta, p. 154; the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, iii. 4, 1, 22, and Kātyāyana's Śrauta Sūtras, v. 1, 28 ff. The commentator on the Vājanaseyā Sanhitā explains the formula *Uṛvaśy asi* thus: *Yathā Uṛvaśī Purūravo-nīpasya bhogāya adhasṭāt śete tadvaḥ tvam adho 'vasthitā 'si* | “As Uṛvaśī lies under King Purūravas for sexual connection, so thou art placed underneath.”

<sup>53</sup> This story is also told in a prose passage in the Vish. Pur. iv. 6. It is there stated that Purūravas divided fire, which was originally one, in a threefold manner (*Eko 'gnir ādīv abhavad Ailena tu atra manvantare tritā pravartitū*). No mention, however, is there made of his having divided the Vedas, or partitioned society into castes.

only one caste, the Hansa. But the triple Veda came from Purūravas. . . . The meaning is this: in the Kṛita age the quality of goodness predominated in men, who were almost all absorbed in meditation. But in the Tretā age, when 'passion (*rajas*) prevailed, the method of works was manifested by the division of the Vedas." <sup>54</sup>

This last quoted passage of the Bhāgavata gives, as I have intimated, a different account of the division of the Vedas from that contained in the other two texts previously adduced from the same work, and in the citations from the Vishṇu and Vāyu Purāṇas. The one set of passages speak of the Veda as having been divided by Vyāsa into four parts in the Dvāpara age; while the text last cited speaks of the triple Veda as having originated with Purūravas in the Tretā age; and evidently belonged to a different tradition from the former three. The legend which speaks of three Vedas may possibly have a somewhat more ancient source than that which speaks of four, as it was not till a later date that the Atharva asserted its right to be ranked with the three others as a fourth Veda. The former tradition, however, would appear to have had its origin partly in etymological considerations. The word Tretā, though designating the second Yuga, means a triad, and seems to have been suggested to the writer's mind by the triple fire mentioned in the legend.

*Mahābhārata*.—The following passage from the Mahābhārata, Śānti-parvan (verses 13,088 ff.), agrees partially in tenor with the last passage from the Bhāgavata, but is silent regarding Purūravas:

*Idaṁ kṛita-yugaṁ nāma kālah śrośhṭhaḥ pravarttitaḥ | Ahimśyāḥ yajna-paśavo yuge 'smiṁ na tad anyathā | Chatusḥpāt sakalo dharmo bhavishyaty atra vai surāḥ | Tatas Tretā-yugaṁ nāma trayī yatra bhaviṣyati | Prokṣhitāḥ yajna-paśavo badhaṁ prāpsyanti vai makhe* <sup>55</sup> | *Yatra*

<sup>54</sup> This legend is borrowed from the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 5; 1, 1 ff. (pp. 855–858 Weber's ed.), where the motive for its introduction is to describe the process by which fire was generated by Purūravas in obedience to the command of the Gandharvas, as the means of his admission into their paradise. See Professor Müller's translation of this story in the Oxford Essays for 1856, pp. 62, 63, or the reprint in his Chips from a German Workshop; and the First Volume of this work, p. 226. The legend is founded on the 95th hymn of the tenth book of the Rig-veda.

<sup>55</sup> Manu (i. 85, 86) differs from this passage of the Mahābhārata in making the Dvāpara the age of sacrifice: *Anye kṛitayuge dharmās Tretāyām Dvāpare pare | Anye kaliyuge nṛinām yuga-hrāṣānurūpataḥ | Tapāḥ pareṁ Kṛitayuge Tretāyām jñānam uchyate | Dvāpare yajnam evāhur dānam ekaṁ kalau yuge* | "Different duties are practised by men in the Kṛita age, and different duties in the Tretā, Dvāpara, and

*pādaś chaturtho vai dharmasya na bhavishyati | Tato vai dvāparam nāma miśraḥ kālo bhavishyati |*

“This present Kṛita age is the best of all the yugas; in it it will be unlawful to slay any animals for sacrifice; in this age righteousness shall consist of all its four portions and be entire. Then shall follow the Tretā age, in which the triple Veda shall come into existence, and animals fit for sacrifice shall be slaughtered as oblations. In that age the fourth part of righteousness shall be wanting. Next shall succeed the Dvāpara, a mixed period.”

The M. Bh. (Sāntip. 13,475) relates that two Asuras, who beheld Brahmā creating the Vedas, suddenly snatched them up and ran off. Brahmā laments their loss, exclaiming:

*Vedo me paramāñ chakshūr vedo me paramam balam | . . . Vedān rite hi kiñ kuryāñ lokānāñ śrīstīm uttamām |*

“The Veda is my principal eye; the Veda is my principal strength. . . . What shall I do without the Vedas, the most excellent creation in the universe?” They were, however, recovered and restored to Brahmā (verses 13,506 ff.).

*Vishṇu Purāna*.—The following verse, Vish. Pur. iii. 2, 12, refers to the periodical disappearance of the Vedas:

*Chaturyugānte vedānāñ jāyate kali-viplavaḥ | pravarttayānti tān etya bhūvi saptarshayo divaḥ |*

“At the end of the four ages (*yugas*) the disappearance of the Vedas, incident to the Kali, takes place. The seven rishis come from heaven to earth, and again give them currency.” (Compare M. Bh. Sāntip. verse 7660, which will be quoted further on.)

SECT. VI.—*Accounts in the Vishṇu and Vāyu Purānas of the schisms between the adherents of the Yajur-veda, Vaiśampāyana and Yājñavalkya; hostility of the Ātharvānas towards the other Vedas; and of the Chhandogas towards the Rig-veda.*

The Vishṇu Purāna, iii. 5, 2 ff., gives the following legend regarding

Kali ages, in proportion to the decline in those yugas. Devotion is said to be supreme in the Kṛita, knowledge in the Tretā, sacrifice in the Dvāpara, and liberality alone in the Kali.” See also Mahābhārata, Sāntiparvan, verse 8505, which agrees with Manu. See also the First Volume of this work, pp. 39 ff.

the way in which the Yajur-veda came to be divided into two schools, the black and the white :

*Yājñavalkyas tu tasyābhūd Brahma-rāta-suto dvija | Śiṣhyaḥ parama-dharma-ṅno guru-vṛitti-paraḥ sadā | Rishir yo 'dya mahāmeruṁ samāje nāgamishyati | Tasya vai sapta-rātraṁ tu brahma-hatyā bhavishyati | Pūrvam eva muni-ganaiḥ samayo 'bhūt kṛito dvija | Vaiśampāyana ekas tu taṁ vyatikrāntavāms tadā | Śvaśrīyam ḥalakaṁ so 'tha padā sprish-tam aghātayat | Śiṣhyān āha, sa " bhoḥ śiṣhyāḥ brahma-hatyāpahaṁ vram-tam | Charadhvam mat-kṛite sarve na vicāryyam idam tathā " | Athāha Yājñavalkyas taṁ " kim ebhir bhagavan dvijaiḥ | Kleśitair alpatejobhir cha-rishye 'ham idam vratam " | Tataḥ kruddho guruḥ prāha Yājñavalkyam mahāmatih | " Muchyatāṁ yat tvayā 'dhītam matto viprāvamanyaka | Niste-jaso vadasy etān yas tvam brāhmaṇa-pungavān | Tena śiṣhyena nārtho 'sti mamājñā-bhanga-kāriṇā " | Yājñavalkyas tataḥ prāha bhaktau tat te mayo-ditam | Mamāpy alaṁ tvayā 'dhītam yad mayā tad idam dvija | Ity uktvā rudhirāktāni sarūpāni yajūṁshi saḥ | Chhardayitvā dadau tasmai yayau cha svechhayā munih | yajūṁshy atha visṛiṣṭāni Yājñavalkyena vai dvija | Jagrihus tittirībhūtvā Taittirīyās tu te tataḥ | Brahma-hatyā-vratam chīrṇam gurunā choditais tu yaiḥ | Charakādhvaryavas te tu charaṇād munisattamāḥ | Yājñavalkyo 'tha Maitreya prānyāyama-parāyanaḥ | tush-ṭāva prayātaḥ sūryam yajūṁshy abhīlashaṁs tataḥ | . . . Ity evam-ādibhis tena stūyamaṇaḥ stavaiḥ raviḥ | vāji-rūpa-dharaḥ prāha " vṛiya-tām " iti " vānchhitam " | Yājñavalkyas tadā prāha pranipatya divā-karam | yajūṁshi tāni me dehi yāni senti na me gurau | Evam ukto da-dau tasmai yajūṁshi bhagavān raviḥ | ayātayāma-sanjñāni yāni vetti na tad-guruḥ | Yajūṁshy yair adhītāni tāni viprair dvijottama | vājinas te samākhyātāḥ sūryo 'śvaḥ so 'bhavad yataḥ |*

“Yājñavalkya, son of Brahma-rāta, was his [Vaiśampāyana's] disciple, eminently versed in duty, and always attentive to his teacher. An agreement had formerly been made by the Munis that any one of their number who should fail to attend at an assembly on Mount Meru on a certain day should incur the guilt of Brahma-nicide during a period of seven nights. Vaiśampāyana was the only person who infringed this agreement, and he in consequence occasioned the death of his sister's child by touching it with his foot. He then desired all his disciples to perform on his behalf an expiation which should take away his guilt, and forbade any hesitation. Yājñavalkya then said to him,

‘Reverend sir, what is the necessity for these faint and feeble Brahmins? I will perform the expiation.’ The wise teacher, incensed, replied to Yājñavalkya, ‘Contemner of Brāhmins, give up all that thou hast learnt from me; I have no need of a disobedient disciple, who, like thee, stigmatizes these eminent Brāhmins as feeble.’ Yājñavalkya rejoined, ‘It was from devotion [to thee] that I said what I did; but I, too, have done with thee; here is all that I have learnt from thee.’ Having spoken, he vomited forth the identical Yajush texts tainted with blood, and giving them to his master, he departed at his will. [The other pupils] having then become transformed into partridges (*tittiri*), picked up the Yajush texts, which were given up by Yājñavalkya, and were thence called Taittirīyas. And those who by their teacher’s command had performed the expiation for Brahmanicide, were from this performance (*charana*) called Charakādhvaryus. Yājñavalkya then, who was habituated to the exercise of suppressing his breath, devoutly hymned the sun, desiring to obtain Yajush texts. . . . [I pass over the hymn.] Thus celebrated with these and other praises, the sun assumed the form of a horse, and said, ‘Ask whatever boon thou desirest.’ Yājñavalkya then, bowing down before the lord of day, replied, ‘Give me such Yajush texts as my teacher does not possess.’ Thus supplicated, the sun gave him the Yajush texts called Ayātayāma, which were not known to his master. Those by whom these texts were studied were called Vājins, because the sun (when he gave them) assumed the shape of a horse (*vājīn*).”

I quote also the parallel text from the Vāyu Purāṇa, as it exhibits some slight variations from the preceding (Aufr. Cat. p. 55):

*Kūryam āsīd rishīnām cha kinchid brāhmaṇa-sattamāḥ | Meru-prish-  
ṭhaṁ samāsādyā tais tadā “’stv” iti manīritam | Yo no ’tra sapta-  
rātrena nāgachhed dvija-sattamāḥ | sa kuryād brahma-badhyām vai  
samayo naḥ prakīrtitāḥ | Tatas te sa-yañāḥ sarve Vaiśampāyana-varji-  
tāḥ | Prayayuh saptarātrena yatra sandhiḥ kṛito ’bhavat | Brāhmaṇ-  
nām tu vachnād brahma-badhyām chakāra saḥ | Sishyān atha samānīya  
sa Vaiśampāyano ’bravīt | “Brahma-badhyām charadhvaṁ vai mat-kṛite  
dvijaḥ-sattamāḥ | sarve yūyām samāgamyā brūta me tad-hitaṁ vachāḥ” |  
Yājñavalkyaḥ wācha | Aham eva charishyāmi tishṭhantu munayas tv ime |  
bālāṁ chotthāpayishyāmi tāpasā svena bhāvītāḥ | Evam uktas tataḥ krud-  
dho Yājñavalkyam athābravīt | wācha “yat tvayā dhītāṁ sarvam praty-*

*arpayasva me*" | *Evam uktaḥ sarūpāṇi yajūṁshi pradadau guroḥ | ru-*  
*dhireṇa tathā 'ktāni chharditvā brahma-vittamaḥ | Tataḥ sa dhyānam*  
*āsthāya sūryam ārādhayad dvijaḥ.* | "sūrya brahma yad uchchhinnaṁ  
*khaṁ gatvā pratitishṭhati"* | *Tato yāni yatāny ūrddhṁ yajūṁshy*  
*āditya-maṇḍalam | Tāni tasmai dadau-tuṣṭaḥ sūryo vai Brāhmarātaye |*  
*Aśva-rūpaś cha mārtaṇḍo Yājñavalkyaḥ dhimate | Yajūṁshy adhiyate*  
*yāni brāhmanāḥ yena kenachit (yani kānichit?) | aśva-rūpāṇi (-rūpeṇa?)*  
*dattāni tatas te Vājino 'bhavaṇ<sup>56</sup> | brahma-hatyā tu yaś chīrnā charaṇāt*  
*charakāḥ smṛitāḥ | Vaiśampāyana-śishyās te charakāḥ samudāhṛitāḥ |*

"The rishis having a certain occasion, met on the summit of Mount Meru, when, after consultation, they resolved and agreed together that any one of their number who should fail to attend there for seven nights should become involved in the guilt of brahmanicide. They all in consequence resorted to the appointed place for seven nights along with their attendants. Vaiśampāyana alone was absent, and he, according to the word of the Brāhmins, committed brahmanicide. He then assembled his disciples, and desired them to perform, on his behalf, an expiation for his offence, and to meet and tell him what was salutary for the purpose. Yājñavalkya then said, 'I myself will perform the penance; let all these munis refrain: inspired by my own austere-fervour I shall raise up the boy (whom thou hast slain).' Incensed at this speech of Yājñavalkya [Vaiśampāyana] said to him, 'Restore all that thou hast learned (from me).' Thus addressed, the sage, deeply versed in sacred lore, vomited forth the identical Yajush texts stained with blood, and delivered them to his teacher. Plunged in meditation, the Brāhman (Yājñavalkya) then adored the sun, saying, 'Sun, every sacred text which disappears [from the earth] goes to the sky, and there abides.' The sun, gratified, and [appearing] in the form of a horse, bestowed on Yājñavalkya, son of Brahmarāta, all the Yajush texts which had ascended to the solar region. As all the Yajush texts which these Brāhmins study were given by him in the form of a horse, they in consequence became Vājins. And the disciples of Vaiśampāyana, by whom the expiatory rite was accomplished, were called *Charakas*, from its accomplishment (*charaṇa*).'<sup>57</sup>

<sup>56</sup> I am indebted to Dr. Hall for communicating to me the various readings of this verse in the India Office Library MSS., but some parts of it seem to be corrupt.

<sup>57</sup> In a note to p. 461 (4to. ed.) of his Translation of the Vishnu Purāna, Prof. Wilson

It is sufficiently evident from the preceding legend that the adherents of the two different divisions of the Yajurveda (the Taittirīya or black, and the Vājasaneyi or white), must in ancient times have regarded each other with feelings of the greatest hostility—feelings akin to those with which the followers of the rival deities, Vishnu and Sīva, look upon each other in modern days. On this subject I translate a passage from Professor Weber's History of Indian Literature, p. 84 :

“Whilst the theologians of the Rīch, are called Bahvrichas, and those of the Sāman Chhandogas, the old name for the divines of the Yajush is Adhvaryu : and these ancient appellations are to be found in the Sanhitā of the Black Yajush (the Taittirīya), and in the Brāhmaṇa of the White Yajush (the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa). The latter work applies the term Adhvaryus to its own adherents, whilst their opponents are denominated Charakādhvaryus, and are the objects of censure. This hostility is also exhibited in a passage of the Sanhitā of the White Yajush, where the Charakāchārya, as one of the human sacrifices to be offered at the Purushamedha, is devoted to Dushkrita or Sin.”<sup>58</sup>

In his Indische Studien (iii. 454) Professor Weber specifies the following passages in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa as those in which the Charakas, or Charakādhvaryus are censured, viz. iii. 8, 2, 24 ; iv. 1, 2, 19 ; iv. 2, 3, 15 ; iv. 2, 4, 1 ; vi. 2, 2, 1, 10 ; viii. 1, 3, 7 ; viii. 7, 1, 14, 24. Of these I quote one specimen (iv. 1, 2, 19) :

mentions the following legend illustrative of the effects of this schism. “The Vāyu and Matsya relate, rather obscurely, a dispute between Janamejaya and Vaisāmpāyana, in consequence of the former's patronage of the Brāhmins of the Vājasaneyi branch of the Yajur-veda, in opposition to the latter, who was the author of the Black or original Yajush. Janamejaya twice performed the Aśvamedha according to the Vājasaneyi ritual, and established the Trisarvī, or use of certain texts by Aśmaka and others, by the Brāhmins of Anga, and by those of the middle country. He perished, however, in consequence, being cursed by Vaisāmpāyana. Before their disagreement, Vaisāmpāyana related the Mahābhārata to Janamejaya.”

<sup>58</sup> Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, xxx. 18 (p. 846 of Weber's ed.): *Dushkritāya charakāchāryyam | (charakānām gurum—Scholiast). Prof. Müller also says (Anc. Sansk. Lit. p. 350), “This name Charaka is used in one of the Khilas (the passage just quoted) of the Vājasaneyi Sanhitā as a term of reproach. In the 30th Adhyāya a list of people is given who are to be sacrificed at the Purushamedha, and among them we find the Charakāchārya as the proper victim to be offered to Dushkrita or Sin. This passage, together with similar hostile expressions in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, were evidently dictated by a feeling of animosity against the ancient schools of the Adhvaryus, whose sacred texts we possess in the Taittirīya-veda, and from whom Yājñavalkya seceded in order to become himself the founder of the new Charaṇas of the Vājasaneyins.”*

*Tāḥ u ha Charakāḥ nānā eva mantrābhyām juhvati "prānodānau vai asya etau | nānā-vīryau prānodānau kurmaḥ" iti vadantaḥ | Tad u tathā na kuryāt | mohayanti ha te yajamānasya prānodānau | api id vai enam tūshṇīm juhuyāt |*

"These the Charakas offer respectively with two mantras, saying thus: 'These are his two breathings,' and 'we thus make these two breathings endowed with their respective powers.' But let no one adopt this procedure, for they confound the breathings of the worshipper. Wherefore, let this libation be offered in silence."

But these sectarian jealousies were not confined to the different schools of the Yajur-veda; the adherents of the Atharva-veda seem to have evinced a similar spirit of hostility towards the followers of the other Vedas. On this subject Professor Weber remarks as follows in his *Indische Studien*, i. 296: "A good deal of animosity is generally displayed in most of the writings connected with the Atharvan towards the other three Vedas; but the strongest expression is given to this feeling in the first of the Atharva Parīśiṣṭas (Chambers Coll. No. 112)."

He then proceeds to quote the following passage from that work:

*Bahvṛicho hanti vai rāshṭram adhvaryur nāsayet sutān | Chhandogo dhanam nāsayet tasmād Ātharvaṇo guruḥ | Ajnānād vā pramādād vā yasya syād bahvṛicho guruḥ | deśa-rāshṭra-purāmātya-nāśas tasya na saṁśayaḥ | yadi vā 'dhvaryavam rājā niyunakti purohitam | śastrena badhyate kshipram parikṣhṇārtha-vāhanaḥ | yathaiḥ pangur adhvānam apakṣhī chāṇḍa-bhojanam (chāṇḍa-jo nāvhaḥ?)<sup>59</sup> | evam chhandoga-gurunā rājā vṛiddhiṁ na gachhati | purodhā jalado yasya maudo vā syāt kathanchana | abdād daśabhyo māsebhyo rāshṭra-bhraṁśam sa gachhati |*

"A Bahvṛicha (Rig-veda priest) will destroy a kingdom; an Adhvaryu (Yajur-veda priest) will destroy offspring; and a Chhandoga (Sāma-veda priest) will destroy wealth;—hence an Ātharvaṇa priest is the [proper] spiritual adviser. (The king) who, through ignorance or mistake, takes a Bahvṛicha priest for his guide will, without doubt, lose his country, kingdom, cities, and ministers. Or if a king appoints an Adhvaryu priest to be his domestic chaplain, he forfeits his wealth and his chariots, and is speedily slain by the sword. As a lame man makes no progress on a road, and an egg-born creature which is without wings

<sup>59</sup> For the ingenious conjectural emendation in brackets, I am indebted to Professor Aufrecht. I adopt it in my translation.



cannot soar into the sky, so no king prospers who has a Chhandoga for his teacher. He who has a Jalāda or a Mauda for his priest, loses his kingdom after a year or ten months.”

“Thus,” continues Professor Weber, “the author of the *Parīśiṣṭa* attacks the adherents of certain *Sākhās* of the *Atharva-veda* itself, for such are the *Jalādas* and the *Maudas*, and admits only a *Bhārgava*, a *Paippalāda*, or a *Saunaka* to be a properly qualified teacher. He further declares that the *Atharva-veda* is intended only for the highest order of priest, the *brahman*, not for the three other inferior sorts.”

The following passage is then quoted :

*Atharvā srijate ghoram adbhutaṁ śamayet tathā | atharvā rakshate  
yajnam yajnasya patir Angirāḥ | Divyāntariksha-bhaumānām utpātānām  
anekadhā | śamayitā brahna-veda-jnas tasmād dakṣiṇato Bhriguḥ |  
Brahmā śamayet nādhvaryur na chhandogo na bahvrichaḥ | rakshāṁsi  
rakshati brahmā brahmā tasmād atharva-vit |*

“The *Atharva* priest creates horrors, and he also allays alarming occurrences; he protects the sacrifice, of which *Angiras* is the lord. He who is skilled in the *Brahma-veda* (the *Atharva*) can allay manifold portents, celestial, aerial, and terrestrial; wherefore the *Bhrigu* [is to be placed] on the right hand. It is the *brahman*, and not the *adhvaryu*, the *chhandoga*, or the *bahvricha*, who can allay [portents]; the *brahman* wards off *Rakshases*, wherefore the *brahman* is he who knows the *Atharvan*.”

I subjoin another extract from Professor Weber's *Indische Studien*, i. 63 ff., which illustrates the relation of the *Sāma-veda* to the *Rig-veda*,<sup>60</sup> as well as the mutual hostility of the different schools: “To understand the relation of the *Sāma-veda* to the *Rig-veda*, we have only to form to ourselves a clear and distinct idea of the manner in which these hymns in general arose, how they were then carried to a distance by those tribes which emigrated onward, and how they were by them regarded as sacred, whilst in their original home, they were either—as living in the immediate consciousness of the people—subjected to modifications corresponding to the lapse of time, or made way for new hymns by which they were pushed aside, and so became forgotten. It is a foreign country which first surrounds familiar things with a sacred charm; emigrants continue to occupy their ancient men-

<sup>60</sup> See the Second Volume of this work, pp. 202 f.

tal position, preserving what is old with painful exactness, while at home life opens out for itself new paths. New emigrants follow those who had first left their home, and unite with those who are already settlers in a new country. And now the old and the new hymns and usages are fused into one mass, and are faithfully, but uncritically, learned and imbibed by travelling pupils from different masters;—several stories in the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka are especially instructive on this point, see Ind. Stud. p. 83,—so that a varied intermixture arises. Others again, more learned, then strive to introduce arrangement, to bring together what is homogeneous, to separate what is distinct; and in this way theological intolerance springs up; without which the rigid formation of a text or a canon is impossible. The influence of courts on this process is not to be overlooked; as, for example, in the case of Janaka, King of Videha, who in Yājñavalkya had found his Homer. Anything approaching to a clear insight into the reciprocal relations of the different schools will in vain be sought either from the Purāṇas or the Charaṇavyūha, and can only be attained by comparing the teachers named in the different Brāhmanas and Sūtras, partly with each other and partly with the text of Pāṇini and the gaṇapāṭha and commentary connected therewith (for the correction of which a thorough examination of Patanjali would offer the only sufficient guarantee). For the rest, the relation between the S.V. and the R.V. is in a certain degree analogous to that between the White and the Black Yajush; and, as in the Brāhmana of the former (the Śatapatha Brāhmana), we often find those teachers who are the representatives of the latter, mentioned with contempt, it cannot surprise us, if in the Brāhmana of the Sāma-veda, the Paingins and Kaushitakins are similarly treated.”

It is sufficiently manifest from the preceding passages of the Purāṇas concerning the division and different Śākhās of the Vedas, that the traditions which they embody contain no information in regard to the composition of the hymns, and nothing tangible or authentic regarding the manner in which they were preserved, collected, or arranged. In fact, I have not adduced these passages for the purpose of elucidating those points, but to show the legendary character of the narratives, and their discrepancies in matters of detail. For an account of the Śākhās of the Vedas, the ancient schools of the Brāhmins, and other matters of a similar nature, I must refer to the excellent work of Professor Müller,

the "History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature," pp. 119-132 and 364-388 and elsewhere.

SECT. VIP.—*Reasonings of the Commentators on the Vedas, in support of the authority of the Vedas.*

I proceed now to adduce some extracts from the works of the more systematic authors who have treated of the origin and authority of the Vedas, I mean the commentators on these books themselves, and the authors and expositors of the aphorisms of several of the schools of Hindu philosophy.<sup>61</sup> Whatever we may think of the premises from which these writers set out, or of the conclusions at which they arrive,

<sup>61</sup> Although the authors of the different schools of Hindu philosophy (as we shall see) expressly defend (on grounds which vary according to the principles of the several systems) the authority of the Vedas, they do not consider themselves as at all bound to assert that the different portions of those works are all of equal value: nor do they treat their sacred scriptures as the exclusive sources out of which their own theology or philosophy are to be evolved. On the relation of Indian thinkers generally to the Vedas, I quote some remarks from an article of my own in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1862, pp. 310 f.: "It is evident from some of the hymns of the Veda (see Müller's Hist. of Anc. Sansk. Lit. p. 556 ff.) that theological speculation has been practised in India from a very early period. . . . As, therefore, the religious or mythological systems of India became developed, it was to be expected that they should exhibit numerous variations springing out of the particular genius of different writers; and more especially that, whenever the speculative element predominated in any author, he should give utterance to ideas on the origin of the world, and the nature and action of the Deity or deities, more or less opposed to those commonly received. In the stage here supposed, a fixed and authoritative system of belief or institutions had not yet been constructed, but was only in process of construction, and therefore considerable liberty of individual thought, expression, and action would be allowed; as is, indeed, also shown by the existence of different schools of Brāhmins, not merely attached to one or other of the particular Vedas, but even restricting their allegiance to some particular recension of one of the Vedas. Even after the Brahmanical system had been more firmly established, and its details more minutely prescribed, it is clear that the same strictness was not extended to speculation, but that if a Brāhman was only an observer of the established ceremonial, and an assertor of the privileges of his own order, he might entertain and even profess almost any philosophical opinion which he pleased (Colebrooke, Misc. Ess. i. 379; Müller, Anc. Sansk. Lit. 79). In this way the tradition of free thought was preserved, and speculative principles of every character continued to be maintained and taught without hindrance or scandal. Meanwhile the authority of the Vedas had come to be generally regarded as paramount and divine, but so long as this authority was nominally acknowledged, independent thinkers were permitted to propound a variety of speculative principles, at variance with their general tenor, though perhaps not inconsistent with some isolated

we cannot fail to be struck with the contrast which their speculations exhibit to the loose and mystical ideas of the Purānas and Upanishads, or to admire the acuteness of their reasoning, the logical precision with which their arguments are presented, and the occasional liveliness and ingenuity of their illustrations.

I.—The first passage which I shall adduce is from Sāyana's introduction to his commentary on the Rig-veda, the Vedārthaprakāśa, pp. 3 ff. (Sāyana, as we have seen in the Second Volume of this work, p. 172, lived in the 14th century, A.D.):

*Nanu Vedah eva tavad nāsti | kutas tad-avāntara-viśeṣaḥ ṛigvedaḥ | Tathā hi | ko'yaṁ vedo nāma | na hi tatra lakṣhaṇāṁ pramāṇāṁ vā 'sti | nacha tad-ubhaya-vyatirekeṇa kinchid vastu prasīdhyati | Lakṣhaṇa-pramāṇābhyāṁ hi vastu-siddhir iti nyāya-vidāṁ matam | "Pratyakṣhānumānāgameṣhu pramāṇa-viśeṣeṣu antimo Vedah iti tallakṣhaṇam" iti chet | na | Manv-ādi-smṛitishv ativyāpteḥ | Samaya-balena samyak parokṣhā-nubhava-sādhanam ity etasya āgama-lakṣhaṇasya tūsv api sabbhāvāt | "apaurusheyatve sati iti viśeṣaṇād adosaḥ" iti chet | na | Vedasyāpi parameśvara-nirmītatvena paurusheyatvāt | "S'arīra-dhāri-jīva-nirmītat-vābhāvād apaurusheyatvam" iti chet [na] | "Sahasra-śīrṣhā puruṣaḥ" ityādi-śrutiḥ iśvarasyāpi śarīritvāt | "Karma-phala-rūpa-śarīra-dhāri-jīva-nirmītatvābhāva-mātreṇa apaurusheyatvaṁ vivakṣitam" iti chet | na | Jīva-viśeṣhair Agni-Vāyav-Ādityair vedānām utpādītatvāt | "Rigvedaḥ eva Agner ajāyata Yajurvedo Vāyoḥ Sāmavedaḥ Ādityād" iti śruter iśvarasya agny-ādi-prerakatvāna nirmātritvaṁ drashtavyam | "mantra-brāhmaṇātmakeḥ śabda-rāsīr vedaḥ" iti chet | na | Īdriśo mantraḥ | īdriśam brāhmaṇam ity anayor adyāpi anirṇītatvāt | Tasmād nāsti kinchid vedasya lakṣhaṇam | Nāpi tat-sabbhāve pramāṇāṁ paśyāmaḥ | "Rigvedaṁ bhagavo dhyemi Yajurvedaṁ Sāmavedam Ātharvaṇam chaturtham" ityādi vākyaṁ pramāṇāṁ" iti chet | na | tasyāpi vākyaṣya vedāntahpātītvena ātmāśrayatva-prasangāt | Na khalu nipuṇo 'pi sva-skandham āroḍhuṁ prabhaved iti | "Vedaḥ eva dvijātīnāṁ niḥśreyasa-karaḥ paraḥ" iti ādi smṛiti-vākyaṁ pramāṇam" iti chet | na | tasyāpy ukta-śruti-mūlatvena nirākṛītatvāt | pratyakṣhādīkaṁ śankitum apy ayo-*

portions of their contents. It was only when the authority of the sacred books was not merely tacitly set aside or undermined, but openly-discarded and denied, and the institutions founded on them were abandoned and assailed by the Buddhists, that the orthodox party took the alarm."

gyam | *Veda-vishayā loka-prasiddhiḥ sārva-janīnā 'pi "nīlaṁ nabhaḥ"* ityādi-vad bhrāntā | *Tasmāl lakṣhaṇa-pramāna-rahitasya vedasya sadbhāvo na angikarttuṁ śakyate iti pūrva-pakṣaḥ* |

*Atra uc्यāte* | *mantrā-brāhmaṇātma-kaṁ tāvad aduṣṭāṁ lakṣhaṇam* | *ata eva Āpastambo yajna-paribhāshāyām evāha "mantra-brāhmaṇayor veda-nāmadheyām"* iti | *tayoḥ tu rūpam upariśiṭhād nirneśhyate* | *apauruṣheya-vākyatvaṁ itī idam, api yādriśam asmābhir vivakṣitaṁ tādriśam uttaratṛa spashṭībhaviśhyati* | *pramāṇāny api yathoktāni śruti-smṛitiloka-prāsiddhi-rūpāni veda-sadbhāve draśṭavyūni* | *Yathā ghaṭa-paṭādi-dravyāṇām sva-prakāśatvbhāve 'pi sūrya-chandrādīnām sva-prakāśatvam avirudham tathā manushyādīnām sva-skandhārohāsambhāve 'py akunṭhita-śakter vedasya itara-vastu-pratipādakatva-vat sva-pratipādakatvam apy astu* | *Ata eva sanpradāyā-vido 'kunṭhitāṁ śaktim vedasya darśayanti "chodanā hi bhūtam bhaviśhyantaṁ sūkṣmaṁ vyavahitaṁ viprakriśitam ity evanjātyam artham śaknoty avagamayitum"* iti | *Tathā sati vedamūlāyāḥ smṛites tad-ubhaya-mūlāyāḥ loka-prasiddhes cha prāmāṇyāṁ dūrvāram* | *Tasmāl lakṣhaṇa-pramāna-siddho vedo na kenāpi chārvākādīnā 'podhuṁ śakyate iti sthītam* |

*Nanv astu nāma Vedākhyāḥ kāśchit padārthaḥ* | *tathāpi nāsau vyākhyānam arhati apramānatvena anupayuktatvāt* | *Na hi Vedaḥ pramāṇaṁ tal-lakṣhaṇasya tatra duḥsampādatvāt* | *tathā hi "samyag anubhava-sādhanaṁ pramāṇam"* iti kechil lakṣhaṇam āhuḥ | *apare tu "anadhigatārtha-ganṭri pramāṇam"* ity āchakṣate | *na chaitad ubhayaṁ vede sambhavati* | *mantra-brāhmaṇātma-ko hi vedaḥ* | *tatra mantrāḥ kechid abodhakāḥ* | *"amyak sā te Indrā riśṭir"* (R.V. i. 169, 3) ity eko mantraḥ | *"Yādriśmīn dhāyi tam apasyayā vidad"* (R.V. v. 44, 8) ity anyāḥ | *"Sṛiṇyā iva jarbharī turpharītū"* (R.V. x. 106, 6) ity aparaḥ | *"Āpānta-manyus tṛipala-prabharmū"* (R.V. x. 89, 5) ity-ādāyāḥ udāhāryāḥ | *na hy etair mantraiḥ kāśchid apy artho 'vabudhyate* | *eteshv anubhavo eva yadā nāsti tadā tat-samyaktvaṁ tadīya-sādhanatvaṁ cha dūrāpetam* | *"Adhaḥ sviḍ āsīd"* (R.V. x. 129, 5) itī maṅtrasya bodhakatve 'pi *"sthānur vā puruṣo vā"* ityādi-vākya-vat sandigdhartha-bodhakatvād nāsti prāmāṇyam | *"Ośhadhe trāyasva enam"* (Taitt. Sanh. i. 2, 1, 1) itī manṭro darbhavishayāḥ | *"Svadhite mā enāṁ hiṁsīr"* (Taitt. Sanh. i. 2, 1, 1) itī kshuravishayāḥ | *"Sṛiṇota grāvānaḥ"* itī pāshāṇa-vishayāḥ | *Eteshv achetanānām darbhā-kshura-pāshāṇānām chetana-vat sambodhanaṁ śrūyate* | *tato "dvaṁ chandramasāv"* itī vākya-vad viparītārṭha-bodhakatvād aprāmāṇ-

yam | “*Ekah eva Rudro na dvitīyo ’vatasthe*” | “*sahasrāṇi sahasraśo ye Rudrāḥ adhi bhūmyām*”<sup>62</sup> *ity anayos tu mantrayor “yāvajjīvam aham maunī” ity vākya-vad vyāghāta-bodhakatvād apramāṇyam* | “*Āpaḥ undantu*” (Taitt. Sanh. i. 2, 1, 1) *iti māntro yajamānasya ’kṣhaura-kāle jalena śiraśaḥ kledanam brūte* | “*S’ubhike śiraḥ āroha śobhayanti mukham mama*” *iti manthro vivāha-kāle mangalāchāraṇārtham puṣṭpa-nirmitāyāḥ śubhikāyāḥ vara-badhvoḥ śirasya acasthānam brūte* | *tayś cha mantrayor loka-prasiddhārthānūvādītvād anadhigatārtha-ganṭhitvaṁ nāsti* | *tasmād mantra-bhāgo na pramāṇam* |

*Atra uchyate* | “*Amyag*”-ādi-mantrānām artho Yāskena nirukta-granthe ’vabodhitāḥ | *tat-parichaya-rahitānām anavabodho na mantrānām dosham āvahati* | *Ata eva atra loka-nyāyam udāharanti “na esha sthānor aparādho yad enam andho na paśyati | purushāparādho sambhavati” itī* | “*Adhaḥ svid āsīd*” *iti mantras cha na sandeha-prabodhanāya pravṛittāḥ kiṁtarhi jagat-kāraṇasya para-vastuno ’tigambhīratvaṁ niśchetum eva pravṛittāḥ* | *tad-artham eva hi guru-śāstra-sampradāya-rahitair durbodhyatvam “adhaḥ svid” ity anayā vacho-bhāngyā upanyasyati* | *Sa eva abhiprāyaḥ uparitaneshu “ko addhā veda” (R.V. x. 129, 6) ity ādi-mantreshu spashṭīkṛitāḥ* | “*Oshadhī*”-ādi mantreshv api chetanāḥ eva *tat-tād-abhimāni-devatās tena tena nāmnā sambodhyante* | *tās cha devatāḥ bhagavatā Būdarāyaṇena “abhimāni-vyapadeśas tu” itī sūtre sūtritāḥ* | *Ekasyāpi Rudrasya sca-mahimnā sahasra-mūrtti-svīkārād nāsti paras-param vyāghātaḥ* | *Jalādi-dravyena śiraḥ-kledanāder loka-siddhatve ’pi tad-abhimāni-devatānugrahasya aprasiddhatvāt tad-yishayatvena ajnātārtha-jnāpakatvam* | *tato lakṣhaṇa-sadbhāvād asti mantra-bhāgasya pramāṇyam* |

“But, some will say, there is no such thing as a Veda; how, then, can there be a Rig-veda, forming a particular part of it? For what is this Veda? It has no characteristic sign or evidence; and without these two conditions, nothing can be proved to exist. For logicians hold that ‘a thing is established by characteristic signs and by proof.’ If you answer that ‘of the three kinds of proof, perception, inference, and scripture, the Veda is the last, and that this is its sign;’ then the objectors rejoin that this is not true, for this sign extends too far, and includes also Manu’s and the other Smṛitis; since there exists in them

<sup>62</sup> The Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, xvi. 53, has, *asankhyātā sahasrāṇi ye Rudrāḥ adhi bhūmyām* |

also this characteristic of Scripture, viz. that in virtue of common consent it is a perfect instrument for the discovery of what is invisible.' If you proceed, 'the Veda is faultless, in consequence of its characteristic that it has no person (*purusha*) for its author;' <sup>63</sup> they again reply, 'Not so; for as the Veda likewise was formed by Parameśvara (God), it had a person (*purusha*) for its author.' If you rejoin, 'It had no person (*purusha*) for its author, for it was not made by any embodied living being;' [they refuse <sup>64</sup> to admit this] on the ground that, according to such Vedic texts as 'Purusha has a thousand heads,' it is clear that Īśvara (God) also has a body. If you urge that *apaurusheyatva* ('the having had no personal author') means that it was not composed by a living being endowed with a body which was the result of works;—the opponent denies this also, inasmuch as the Vedas were created by particular living beings—Agni (fire), Vāyu (wind), and Āditya (the sun); for from the text 'the Rig-veda sprang from Agni, the Yajur-veda from Vāyu, and the Sāma-veda from Sūrya,' etc., it will be seen that Īśvara was the maker, by inciting Agni and the others. If you next say that the Veda is a collection of words in the form of Mantras and Brāhmaṇas, the objectors rejoin, 'Not so, for it has never yet been defined that a Mantra is so and so, and a Brāhmaṇa so and so.' There exists, therefore, no characteristic mark of a Veda. Nor do we see any proof that a Veda exists. If you say that the text, 'I peruse, reverend sir, the Rig-veda, the Yajur-veda, the Sāma-veda, and the Ātharvaṇa as the fourth,' is a proof, the antagonist answers, 'No, for as that text is part of the Veda, the latter would be open to the objection of depending upon itself; for no one, be he ever so clever, can mount upon his own shoulders.' If you again urge that such texts of the Smṛiti as this, 'It is the Veda alone which is the source of blessedness to twice-born men, and transcendent,' are proofs, the objector rejoins, 'Not so; since these too must be rejected, as being founded on the same Veda.' The

<sup>63</sup> Or, the meaning of this may be, "If you urge that, as the Veda has no personal author, there is—in consequence of this peculiar characteristic—no flaw (in the proposed definition), etc."

<sup>64</sup> I have translated this, as if it there had been (which there is not) a negative particle *na* in the printed text, after the *iti chet*, as this seems to me to be necessary to the sense. I understand from Prof. Müller that the negative particle is found in some of the MSS. [I am, however, informed by Prof. Goldstücker that *na* is often omitted, though understood, after *iti chet*.]

evidence of the senses and other ordinary sources of knowledge ought not even to be doubted.<sup>65</sup> And common report in reference to the Veda, though universal, is erroneous, like such phrases as 'the blue sky,' etc. Wherefore, as the Veda is 'destitute of characteristic sign and proof, its existence cannot be admitted. Such is the first side of the question.

"To this we reply: The definition of the Veda, as a work composed of Mantra and Brāhmaṇa, is unobjectionable. Hence Āpastamba says in the Yajñaparibhāṣā, 'the name of Mantra and Brāhmaṇa is Veda.' The nature of these two things will be settled hereafter.<sup>66</sup> The sense we attach to the expression 'consisting of sentences which had no personal author' will also be declared further on. Let the proofs which have been specified of the existence of the Veda, viz. the Veda (itself), the Smṛiti, and common notoriety, be duly weighed. Although jars, cloth, and other such [dark] objects have no inherent property of making themselves visible, it is no absurdity to speak of the sun, moon, and other luminous bodies, as shining by their own light. Just in the same way, though it is impossible for men or any other beings to mount on their own shoulders, let the Veda through the keenness of its power be held to have the power of proving itself, as it has of proving other things.<sup>67</sup> Hence traditionists set forth this penetrating force of the Veda; thus, 'Scripture is able to make known the past, the future, the minute, the distant, the remote.' Such being the case, the authority of the Smṛiti, which is based on the Veda, and that of common notoriety, which is based on both, is irresistible. Wherefore it stands fast that the Veda, which is

<sup>65</sup> The drift of this sentence does not seem to me clear. From what immediately follows it would rather appear that the evidence of the senses may be doubted. Can the passage be corrupt?

<sup>66</sup> See the First Volume of this work, pp. 2 ff. and the Second Volume, p. 172.

<sup>67</sup> The same thing had been said before by S'ankāra Achāryya (who lived at the end of the 8th or beginning of the 9th century, A.D. See Colebrooke's Misc. Essays, i. 332), in his commentary on the Brahma Sūtras, ii. 1, 1: *Vedasya hi nirapeksham svārthe prāmānyaṁ raveriva rūpa-vishaye | puruṣa-vachasāṁ tu mūlāntd-āpekṣaṁ svārthe prāmānyaṁ vaktri-smṛiti-vyavahitaṁ cha iti viprakarṣaḥ* | "For the Veda has an independent authority in respect of its own sense, as the sun has of manifesting forms. The words of men on the other hand, have, as regards their own sense, an authority which is dependent upon another source [the Veda], and which is separated [from the authority of the Veda] by the fact of its author being remembered. Herein consists the distinction [between the two kinds of authority]."



established by characteristic sign, and by proof, cannot be overturned by the Chārvākas or any other opponents.

“But let it be admitted that there is a thing called a Veda. Still, the opponents say, it does not deserve explanation, being unsuited for it, since it does not constitute proof. The Veda, they urge, is no proof, as it is difficult to show that it has any sign of that character. Now, some define proof as the instrument of perfect apprehension; others say, it is that which arrives at what was not before ascertained. But neither of these definitions can be reasonably applied to the Veda. For the Veda consists of Mantra and Brāhmaṇa. Of these mantras some convey no meaning. Thus one is *amyak sā te Indra rishtir*, etc.; another is *yādriśmin*, etc.; a third is *śrinyā iva*, etc. The texts *āpāntu-manyuḥ*,<sup>68</sup> etc., and others may be adduced as further examples. Now no meaning whatever is to be perceived through these mantras; and when they do not even convey an idea at all, much less can they convey a perfect idea, or be instruments of apprehension. Even if the mantra *adhaḥ svid āsīd upari svid āsīd*, ‘was it below or above?’ (R.V. x. 129, 5) convey a meaning, still, like such sayings as ‘either a post or a man,’ it conveys a dubious meaning, and so possesses no authority. The mantra, ‘deliver him, o plant,’ has for its subject grass. Another, ‘do not hurt him, axe,’ has for its subject an axe (*kshura*). A third, ‘hear, stones,’ has for its subject stones. In these cases, grass, an axe, and stones, though insensible objects, are addressed in the Veda as if they were intelligent. Hence these passages have no authority, because, like the saying, ‘two moons,’ their import is absurd. So also the two texts, ‘there is one Rudra; no second has existed,’ and ‘the thousand Rudras who are over the earth,’ involving, as they do, a mutual contradiction (just as if one were to say, ‘I have been silent all my life’), cannot be authoritative. The mantra *āpaḥ undantu* expresses the wetting of the sacrificer’s head with water at the time of tonsure; while the text ‘*śubhike*,’ etc. (‘garland, mount on my head and decorate my face’) expresses the placing of a garland formed of flowers on the heads of the bridegroom and bride, by way of blessing, at the time of marriage. Now, as these two last texts merely repeat a matter of

<sup>68</sup> See Nirukta, v. 12, and vi. 15, and Roth’s Illustrations. It is not necessary for my purpose to inquire whether the charge of intelligibility brought against these different texts is just or not.

common notoriety, they cannot be said to attain to what was not before ascertained. Wherefore the Mantra portion of the Veda is destitute of authority.

“To this we reply, the meaning of these texts, ‘*amyaḥ*,’ and the others, has been explained by Yāska in the Nirukta.<sup>69</sup> The fact that they are not understood by persons ignorant of that explanation, does not prove any defect in the mantras. It is customary to quote here the popular maxim, ‘it is not the fault of the post that the blind man does not see it; the reasonable thing to say is that it is the man’s fault.’ The mantra ‘*adhah svid*,’ etc. (‘was it above or below?’) (R.V. x. 129, 5) is not intended to convey doubt, but rather to signify the extreme profundity of the supreme Essence, the cause of the world. With this view the author intimates by this turn of expression the difficulty which persons who are not versed in the deep Scriptures have, in comprehending such subjects. The same intention is manifested in the following mantras *ko addhā veda*, etc. (R.V. x. 129, 6) (‘who knows?’ etc.) In the texts *oshadhe*, etc. (‘o herb,’ etc.), the deities who preside over these various objects are addressed by these several names. These deities are referred to by the venerable Bādarāyaṇa in the aphorism *abhimāni-vyapadeśaḥ*. As Rudra, though only one, assumes by his power a thousand forms, there is no contradiction between the different texts which relate to him. And though the moistening, etc., of the head by water, etc., is a matter of common notoriety, yet as the goodwill of the deities who preside over these objects is not generally known, the texts in question, by having this for their subject, are declaratory of what is unknown, Hence the Mantra portion of the Veda, being shown to have a characteristic mark, is authoritative.”

Sāyaṇa then, in p. 11 of his Preface, proceeds to extend his argument to the Brāhmanas. These are divisible into two parts, Precepts (*vidhi*), and Explanatory remarks (*arthavāda*). Precepts again are either (a) incitements to perform some act in which a man has not yet engaged (*apavrīta-pravarttanam*), such as are contained in the ceremonial sections (*Karma-kāṇḍa*); or (b) revelations of something previously unknown (*ajñāta-jñāpanam*), such as are found in the portions which treat of sacred knowledge or the supreme spirit (*Brahma-kāṇḍa*). Both these parts

<sup>69</sup> See the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1866, pp. 323, 329, 334, and 337.

are objected to as unauthoritative. The former is said (1) to enjoin things afterwards declared to be improper; and (2) to prescribe in some texts things which, are prohibited in others. Thus in the Aitareya, Taittirīya, and other Brāhmaṇas, many injunctions given in other places are controverted in such phrases as, “This or that must not be regarded;” “This must not be done in that way” (*tat tad na ādṛityam | tat tathā na kuryyam*).<sup>70</sup> And again prescriptions are given which are mutually contradictory. Another objection is that no result, such as the attainment of paradise, is perceived to follow the celebration of a *gyotishtoma* or other sacrifice; whilst satisfaction never fails to be experienced immediately after eating (*gyotishtomādishv apy amushthānānantaram eva cha svargādi-phalaṁ na upalabhyate | na hi bhojanānantaram tripter anupalambho'sti* |). The answer given to the earlier of these objections is that the discrepant injunctions and prohibitions are respectively applicable to people belonging to different Sākhās or Vedic schools; just as things forbidden to a man in one state of life (*āśrama*) are permitted to one who is in another. It is thus the difference of persons which gives rise to the apparent opposition between the precepts (*tathā jarttilādi-vidhir attra nindyamāno 'pi kvachit sākhāntare bhaved iti chet | bhavatu nāma | prāmānyam api tach-chhākhādhyāyinaṁ prati bhavishyati | yathā grīhasthāśrame nishiddham api parānna-bhojanam āśramāntareṣu prāmānikaṁ tad-vat | anena nyāyena sarvatra parasparaviruddhau vidhi-nishedhau puruṣa-bhedena vyavasthāpanīyau yathā mantrēṣu pāṭha-bhedaḥ* |). In the same way, it is remarked, the different Sākhās adopt different readings in the mantras. As regards the objection raised to the authoritativeness of the revelations of things hitherto unknown, which are made in the *Brahma-kāṇḍa*, that they are mutually contradictory—as when the Aitareyins say, *Ātmā vai idam ekaḥ eva agre āsit*, “This was in the beginning soul only;” whilst the Taittirīyaks on the other hand affirm, *asad vai idam agre āsit*, “This was in the beginning non-existent;”—the answer is given that it is determined by a particular aphorism (which is quoted)<sup>71</sup> that in the latter passage the word *asad* does not mean absolute vacuity or nothingness, but merely an

<sup>70</sup> Compare the quotation given above, p. 54, from the *S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa*, iv. 1, 2, 19.

<sup>71</sup> *Brahma Sūtra*, ii. 1, 7, appears to be intended; but the text of it as given by *Sāyaṇa* does not correspond with that in the *Bibliotheca Indica*.

undeveloped condition (. . . *iti sūtre Taittirīya-gata-vākya-sya asachchhabdasya na śūnya-paratvaṃ kintv avyaktāvasthā-paratvam iti nirṇātam* |).<sup>72</sup> Sāyaṇa accordingly concludes (p. 19. of his Preface) that the authority of the whole Veda is proved.

II.—The second passage which I shall quote is from the Vedārtha-prakāśa of Mādhava Āchāryya on the Taittirīya Yajur-veda (p. 1 ff. in the Bibliotheca Indica). Mādhava was the brother of Sāyaṇa,<sup>73</sup> and flourished in the middle of the 14th century (Colébrooke's Misc. Ess. i. 301):

*Nanu ko 'yaṃ vedo nāma ke vā asya vishaya-prayajana-sambandhādhi-kārīṇaḥ kathaṃ vā tasya prāmāṇyam | na khalv etasmin sarvasmīn asati vedo vyākhyāna-yogyo bhavati | Atra uchyate | Ishṭa-prāpti-anishṭa-parihārayor alaukikam upāyaṃ yo grantho vēdayati sa vedaḥ | Alaukika-padena pratyakshānumāne vyāvartyete | Anubhūyamānasya srak-chandana-vanītāder ishṭa-prāpti-hetutvam aushadha-sevāder anishṭa-parihāra-hetutvaṃ cha pratyaksha-siddham | Svenānubhavishyamānasya purushāntaragatasya cha tathātvaṃ anumāna-gamyam | "Evaṃ tarhi bhāvi-janma-gata-sukhādīkam anumāna-gamyam" iti chet | na | tad-viśeshasya anavagamāt | Na khalu jyotiṣṭomādīr ishṭa-prāpti-hetuḥ kalanja-bhakṣhaṇa-varjanādīr anishṭa-parihāra-hetur ity amum artham veda-vyatirekeṇa anumāna-sahasrenāpi tārīkika-sīromanīr apy asyāvagantuṃ śaknoti | Tasmād alaukiko-pāya-bodhako vedaḥ iti lakṣhaṇasya na ativyāptaṃ | ata evoktam | "Pratyakshenānumityā vā yas tūpāyo na budhyate | Etaṃ vindanti vedena tasmād vedasya vedatā" iti | sa eva vāpāyo vedasya vishayaḥ | tad-bodhaḥ eva prayojanam | tad-bodhārthī cha adhikārī | teṇa saha upakāryyopakā-raka-bhāvaḥ sambandhaḥ | nanu "evaṃ sati strī-śūdra-sahitāḥ sarve vedādhikārīṇaḥ syur 'ishṭam me syād anishṭam mā bhūd' iti āsishāḥ sārva-janātvaṃ" | maivam | strī-śūdrayor saty upāye bodhārthitve hetv-antareṇa vedādhikārasya pratibaddhatvāt | upanītasya eva adhyayanādhikāram*

<sup>72</sup> Compare with this the passages quoted from the S'atapatha and Taittirīya Brāhmaṇas in the First Volume of this work, pp. 19 f., 24 f., 27 f., and from the Taitt. Sanh. and Brāh. in pp. 52 and 53; and see also the texts referred to and commented upon in the Journ. of the Roy. As. Soc. for 1864, p. 72, and in the No. for 1865, pp. 345-348.

<sup>73</sup> Whether either of these two brothers, who were ministers of state, were the actual writers of the works which bear their names, or whether the works were composed by Pandits patronized by the two statesmen, and called after the names of their patrons, is a point which I need not attempt to decide.

bruvat śāstram anupanītayoḥ strī-śūdrayoḥ vedādhyayanam anishta-prāp-  
 ti-hetur iti bodhayati | kathāṁ tarhi tayos tad-upāyāvagamah | purānā-  
 dibhir iti brūmah | ata evoktam | “strī-śūdra-dvijabandhūnām trayī na  
 śruti-gocharā | iti Bhāratam ākhyānam muninā kṛipayā kṛitam” (Bhāg.  
 Pur. i. 4, 25) | iti | tasmād upanītair eva traivarnikair vedasya sam-  
 bandhah | tat-prāmānyaṁ tu bodhakatvāt svataḥ eva siddham | pauru-  
 sheya-vākyaṁ tu bodhakam api sat puruṣa-gata-bhrānti-mūlatva-sam-  
 bhāvanayā tat-parīhārāya mūla-pramāṇam apekshate na tu vedah | tasya  
 nityatveṇa vaktri-dosha-śaṅkānudayāt | . . . . Nanu vedo 'pi Kālidā-  
 sādi-vākya-vat paurusheyaḥ eva Brahma-kāryyatva-śraṇāt | “richah  
 sāmāni jajnire | chhandāmsi jajnire tasmād yajus tasmād ajayata” iti  
 śruteḥ | ata eva Bādarāyanaḥ (i. 1, 3) “śāstra-yonitvād” iti sūtreṇa Brah-  
 maṇo veda-kāranatvam avocāt | maivam | śruti-smṛitibhyāṁ nityatvāva-  
 gamāt | “vāchā Vīrūpa nityayā” (R. V. viii. 64, 6) iti śruteḥ | “anādi-  
 nidhanā nityā vāg utśriṣṭā svayambhuvā” iti smṛiteḥ cha | Bādarā-  
 yana 'pi devatādihikarane sūtrayāmāsa (i. 3, 29) “ata eva cha nityatvam”  
 iti | tarhi “paraspara-virodhaḥ” iti chet | na | nityatvasya vyāvahāri-  
 katvāt | śriṣṭer ūrdhvaṁ saṁhārāt pūrvam vyāvahāra-kālas tasmīn ut-  
 patti-vināśādarsanāt | kālākāśādayo yathā nityāḥ evaṁ vedo 'pi vyāvahā-  
 ra-kāle Kālidāsādi-vākya-vat puruṣa-virachitatvābhāvād nityaḥ | ādi-  
 śriṣṭtau tu kālākāśādi-vad eva Brahmaṇah sakāśād vedotpāttir āmnā-  
 yate | ato vishaya-bhedād na paraspara-virodhaḥ | Brahmaṇo nirdoshat-  
 vena vedasya vaktri-doshābhāvāt svatas-siddham prāmānyaṁ tad-avas-  
 tham | tasmāl lakṣaṇa-pramāṇa-sadbhāvād vishaya-prayojana-samban-  
 dhādihikāri-sadbhāvāt prāmānyasya susthatvāch cha vedo vyākhyātavyaḥ  
 eva |

“Now, some may ask, what is this Veda, or what are its subject-  
 matter, its use, its connection, or the persons who are competent to  
 study it? and how is it authoritative? For, in the absence of all these  
 conditions, the Veda does not deserve to be expounded. I reply: the  
 book which makes known (*vedayati*) the supernatural (*lit.* non-secular)  
 means of obtaining desirable objects, and getting rid of undesirable  
 objects, is the Veda. By the employment of the word “supernatural,”  
 [the ordinary means of information, viz.] perception and inference, are  
 excluded. By perception it is established that such objects of sense,  
 as garlands, sandal-wood, and women are causes of gratification, and  
 that the use of medicines and so forth is the means of getting rid

of what is undesirable. And we ascertain by inference that we shall in future experience, and that other men now experience, the same results (from these same causes). If it be asked whether, then, the happiness, etc., of a future birth be not in the same way ascertainable by inference, I reply that it is not, because we cannot discover its specific character. Not even the most brilliant ornament of the logical school could, by a thousand inferences, without the help of the Vedas, discover the truths that the *jyotishṭoma* and other sacrifices are 'the means of attaining happiness, and that abstinence from intoxicating drugs'<sup>74</sup> is the means of removing what is undesirable. Thus it is not too wide a definition of the Veda to say that it is that which indicates supernatural expedients. Hence, it has been said, 'men discover by the Veda those expedients which cannot be ascertained by perception or inference; and this is the characteristic feature of the Veda.' These expedients, then, form the subject of the Veda; [to teach] the knowledge of them is its use; the person who seeks that knowledge is the competent student; and the connection of the Veda with such a student is that of a benefactor with the individual who is to be benefitted.

"But, if such be the case, it may be said that all persons whatever, including women and Sūdras, must be competent students of the Veda, since the aspiration after good and the deprecation of evil are common to the whole of mankind. But it is not so. For though the expedient exists, and women and Sūdras are desirous to know it, they are debarred by another cause from being competent students of the Veda. The scripture (*śāstra*) which declares that those persons only who have been invested with the sacrificial cord are competent to read the Veda, intimates thereby that the same study would be a cause of unhappiness to women and Sūdras [who are not so invested]. How, then, are these two classes of persons to discover the means of future happiness? We answer, from the Purāṇas and other such works. Hence it has been said, 'since the triple Veda may not be heard by women, Sūdras, and degraded twice-born men, the Mahābhārata was, in his benevolence,

<sup>74</sup> *Kalanja-bhakshanam* is mentioned in the Commentary on the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, x. 33, 2f. In his translation of the Kusumāñjali, p. 81, note, Professor Cowell says: "Some hold the *Kalanja* to be the flesh of a deer killed by a poisoned arrow—others hemp or bhang,—others a kind of garlic. See Raghunandana's *Ekādaśī tattva*."

composed by the Muni.'<sup>75</sup> The Veda, therefore, has only a relation to men of the three superior classes who have obtained investiture.

"Then the authority of the Veda is self-evident, from the fact of its communicating knowledge. For though the words of men also communicate knowledge, still, as they must be conceived to participate in the fallibility of their authors, they require some primary authority to remedy that fallibility. But such is not the case with the Veda; for as that had no beginning, it is impossible to suspect any defect in the utterer.' . . .

"A doubt may, however, be raised whether the Veda is not, like the sentences of Kālidāsa and others, derived from a personal being,<sup>76</sup> as it proclaims itself to have been formed by Brahmā, according to the text, 'the Rich and Sāman verses, the metres, sprang from him; from him the Yajush was produced;'<sup>77</sup> in consequence of which Bādarāyaṇa, in the aphorism<sup>78</sup> 'since he is the source of the śāstra,' has pronounced that Brahma is the cause of the Veda. But this doubt is groundless; for the eternity of the Veda has been declared both by itself, in the text, 'with an eternal voice, o Virūpa,'<sup>79</sup> and by the Smṛiti in the verse 'an eternal voice, without beginning or end, was uttered by the Self-existent.'<sup>80</sup> Bādarāyaṇa, too, in his section on the deities (Brahma Sūtras, i. 3, 29) has this aphorism; 'hence also [its] eternity [is to be maintained].' If it be objected that these statements of his are mutually conflicting, I answer, No. For [in the passages where] the word eternity is applied to the Vedas, it is to be understood as referring to the period of action [or mundane existence]. This period is that which commences with the creation, and lasts till the destruction of the universe, since, during this interval, no worlds are seen to

<sup>75</sup> See the quotation from the Bhāgavata Purāṇa, above, p. 42.

<sup>76</sup> This seems to be the only way to translate *paurusheya*, as *purusha* cannot here mean a human being.

<sup>77</sup> R. V. x. 90, 9, quoted in the First Volume of this work, p. 10; and p. 3, above.

<sup>78</sup> Brahma Sūtras, i. 1, 3, p. 7 of Dr. Ballantyne's Aphorisms of the Vedānta.

<sup>79</sup> These words are part of Rig-veda, viii. 64, 6: *Tasmai nūnam abhidyave vāchā Virūpa nityayā | vṛishṇe chodasva sushṭutim |* "Send forth praises to this heaven-aspiring and prolific Agni, o Virūpa, with an unceasing voice [or hymn]." The word *nityayā* seems to mean nothing more than "continual," though in the text I have rendered it "eternal," as the author's reasoning requires. Colebrooke (Misc. Ess. i. 306), however, translates it by "perpetual." I shall again quote and illustrate this verse further on.

<sup>80</sup> This line, from the M. Bh. S'āntip. 8533, has already been cited above, in p. 16.

originate, or to be destroyed. Just as time and æther (space) are eternal,<sup>81</sup> so also is the Veda eternal, because, during the period of mundane existence, it has not been composed by any person, as the works of Kālidāsa and others have been.<sup>82</sup> Nevertheless, the Veda, like time and æther, is recorded in Scripture to have originated from Brahma at the first creation. There is, therefore, no discrepancy between the two different sets of passages, as they refer to different points. And since Brahma is free from defect, the utterer of the Veda is consequently free from defect; and therefore a self-demonstrated authority resides in it. Seeing, therefore, that the Veda possess a characteristic mark, and is supported by proof, and that it has a subject, a use, a relation, and persons competent for its study, and, moreover, that its authority is established, it follows that it ought to be interpreted.”

SECT. VIII.—*Arguments of the Mīmāṃsakas and Vedāntins in support of the eternity and authority of the Vedas.*

I shall now proceed to adduce some of the reasonings by which the authors of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā, and Vedānta, aphorisms, and their commentators, defend the doctrine which, as we have already seen, is held by some of the Indian writers, that the Vedas are eternal, as well as infallible.

I.—*Pūrva Mīmāṃsā.*—I quote the following texts of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā which relate to this subject from Dr. Ballantyne’s aphorisms of the Mīmāṃsā, pp. 8 ff.<sup>83</sup> I do not always follow the words of Dr. Ballantyne’s translations, though I have made free use of their substance. (See also Colebrooke’s Misc. Ess. i. 306, or p. 195 of Williams and Norgate’s ed.) The commentator introduces the subject in the following way :

<sup>81</sup> Passages affirming both the eternity of the æther, and its creation, are given in the First Volume of this work, pp. 130 and 506.

<sup>82</sup> The same subject is touched on by Sāyana, at p. 20 of the introductory portion of his commentary on the Rīgveda. The passage will be quoted at the end of the next section.”

<sup>83</sup> Since the 1st edition of this Volume was published, the Sanskrit scholar has obtained easy access to a more considerable portion of the Mīmāṃsā Sūtras with the commentary of S’abara Svāmin by the appearance of the first, second, and part of third, Adhyāyas in the Bibliotheca Indica.



*Sabdārthayor utpatty-anantaram purushena kalpita-sanketātmake-sambandhasya kalpitatvāt puruṣa-kalpita-sambandha-jñānāpekṣhītvāt sabdāsya yathā pratyakṣa-jñānaṁ śūktikādaṁ satyatvam vyabhicharati tathā puruṣādhīngtvena śabde 'pi satyatva-vyabhichāra-sambhavāt na dharme chodanā pramānam iti pūrva-pakṣe siddhāntam āha |*

“Since, subsequently to the production of words and the things signified by them, a connection of a conventional character has been established between the two by the will of man, and since language is dependent upon a knowledge of this conventional connection determined by man, [it follows that] as perception is liable to error in respect of mother-of-pearl and similar objects [by mistaking them for silver, etc.], so words also may be exposed to the risk of conveying unreal notions from [their sense] being dependent on human will; and consequently that the Vedic precepts [which are expressed in such words, possessing a merely conventional and arbitrary meaning] cannot be authoritative in matters of duty. Such is an objection which may be urged, and in reply to which the author of the aphorisms declares the established doctrine.”

Then follows the fifth aphorism of the first chapter of the first book of the Mīmāṃsā: *Autpattikas tu<sup>(a)</sup> śabdāsya<sup>(b)</sup> arthena sambandhas<sup>(c)</sup> tasya<sup>(d)</sup> jñānam<sup>(e)</sup> upadeśo<sup>(f)</sup> vyatirekaś cha<sup>(g)</sup> arthe 'nupalabdhe<sup>(h)</sup> tat<sup>(i)</sup> pramānam Bādarāyanasya anapekṣhāt |* which may be paraphrased as follows: “The connection of a word with its sense is coeval with the origin of both. In consequence of this connection the words of the Veda convey a knowledge of duty, and impart unerring instruction in regard to matters imperceptible. Such Vedic injunctions constitute the proof of duty alleged by Bādarāyaṇa, author of the Vedānta Sūtras; for this proof is independent of perception and all other evidence.”

I subjoin most of the remarks of the scholiast as given by Dr. Ballantyne, indicating by letters the words of the aphorism to which they refer:

<sup>(a)</sup> *Autpattikaḥ | svābhāvikaḥ | nityaḥ iti yāvat |* “*Autpattika* (original) means natural, eternal in short.”

<sup>(b)</sup> *S'abdāsya | nitya-veda-ghaṭaka-padāsya* “*agnihotraṁ juhuyāt svarga-kāmaḥ*” *ityādeḥ |* “*S'abda* (word) refers to terms which form part of the eternal Veda, such as, ‘the man who desires heaven should perform the Agnihotra sacrifice.’”

(c) *Sambandha* (connection), “in the nature of power,” *i.e.* according to Dr. Ballantyne, depending on the divine will that such and such words should convey such and such meanings.

(d) *Atas tasya | dharmasya* | “‘Hence’ is to be supplied before ‘this,’ which refers to ‘duty.’”

(e) *Jñānam | atra karane lyuṭ | jñapter yathārtha-jñānasya karanam* | “In the word *jñāna* (knowledge) the affix *lyuṭ* has the force of ‘instrument,’ ‘an instrument of correct knowledge.’”

(f) *Upadeśaḥ | artha-pratipādanam* | “Instruction, *i.e.* the establishment of a fact.”

(g) *Avyatirekaḥ | avyabhichārī dṛśyate ataḥ* | “‘Unerring,’ *i.e.* that which is seen not to deviate from the fact.”

(h) *Nanu “vahnimān iti śabda-śravaṇānantaram pratyakṣeṇa vahnim dṛśiṣṭvā śabde pramātvam grihṇāti iti loke prasiddheḥ pratyakṣhādītara-pramāna-sūpekshatvāt śabdasya sa katham dharme pramānam ata āha “anupalabdhe” iti | anupalabdhe pratyakṣhādi-pramānair ajnāte’rthe* | “Since it is a matter of notoriety that any one who has heard the words ‘[the mountain is] fiery’ uttered, and afterwards sees the fire with his own eyes, is [only] then [thoroughly] convinced of the authority of the words, it may be asked how words which are thus dependent [for confirmation on] perception and other proofs, can themselves constitute the proof of duty? In reference to this, the word *anupalabdhe* (‘in regard to matters imperceptible’) is introduced. It signifies ‘matters which cannot be known by perception and other such proofs.’”

(i) *Tat | vidhi-ghaṭita-vākyaṁ dharme pramānam Bādarāyaṇāchāryasya sammatam | ayam ūśayaḥ | ‘parvato vahnimān’ iti doshavat-purusha-prayuktam vākyaṁ arthaṁ vyabhicharati | ataḥ prāmānya-nischaye pratyakṣhādīkam apekshate | tēthā ’gnihotraṁ juhoti iti vākyaṁ kāla-traye ’py arthaṁ na vyabhicharati | ata itara-nirapekshaṁ dharme pramānam* | “This, *i.e.* a [Vedic] sentence consisting of an injunction, is regarded by Bādarāyaṇa also as proof of duty. The purport is this. The sentence, ‘the mountain is fiery,’ when uttered by a person defective [in his organ of vision], may deviate from the reality; it therefore requires the evidence of our senses, etc.’ to aid us in determining its sufficiency as proof. Whereas the Vedic sentence regarding the performance of the Agnihotra sacrifice can never deviate from the truth in any time, past, present, or future; and is therefore a proof of duty, independently of any other evidence.”

The commentator then proceeds to observe as follows: *Pūrva-sūtre śabdārthayoḥ sambandho nityaḥ ity uktam | tach cha śabda-nityatvādhīnam iti tat sisādhayishur ādau śabdānityatva-vādi-matam pūrva-paksham upādayati* | “In the preceding aphorism it was declared that the connection of words and their meanings [or the things signified by them] is eternal. Desiring now to prove that this [eternity of connection] is dependent on the eternity of words [or sound], he begins by setting forth the first side of the question, viz. the doctrine of those who maintain that sound is not eternal.”

This doctrine is accordingly declared in the six following aphorisms (*sūtras*), which I shall quote and paraphrase, without citing, in the original, the accompanying comments. These the reader will find in Dr. Ballantyne's work.

*Sūtra 6.—Karma eke tatra darśanāt* | “Some, *i.e.* the followers of the Nyāya philosophy, say that sound is a product, because we see that it is the result of effort, which it would not be if it were eternal.”

*Sūtra 7.—Asthānāt* | “That it is not eternal, on account of its transitoriness, *i.e.* because after a moment it ceases to be perceived.”

*Sūtra 8.—Karoti-śabdāt* | “Because, we employ in reference to it the expression ‘making,’ *i.e.* we speak of ‘making’ a sound.”

*Sūtra 9.—Sattvāntare yaugapadyāt* | “Because it is perceived by different persons at once, and is consequently in immediate contact with the organs of sense of those both far and near, which it could not be if it were one and eternal.”

*Sūtra 10.—Prakṛiti-vikṛityoś cha* | “Because sounds have both an original and a modified form; as *e.g.* in the case of *dadhi atra*, which is changed into *dadhy atra*, the original letter *i* being altered into *y* by the rules of permutation. Now, no substance which undergoes a change is eternal.”

*Sūtra 11.—Vṛiddhiś cha kartri-bhūmnā'sya* | “Because sound is augmented by the number of those who make it. Consequently the opinion of the Mīmāṃsakas, who say that sound is merely manifested, and not created, by human effort, is wrong, since even a thousand manifesters do not increase the object which they manifest, as a jar is not made larger by a thousand lamps.”

These objections against the Mīmāṃsaka theory that sound is manifested, and not created, by those who utter it, are answered in the following Sūtras:

*Sūtra 12.*—*Samañ tu tatra darśanam* | “But, according to both schools, viz. that which holds sound to be created, and that which regards it as merely manifested, the perception of it is alike momentary. But of these two views, the theory of manifestation is shown in the next aphorism to be the correct one.”

*Sūtra 13.*—*Satah param adarśanañ viśhayākāgamāt* | “The non-perception at any particular time, of sound, which, in reality, perpetually exists, arises from the fact that the utterer of sound has not come into contact with his object, *i.e.* sound. Sound is eternal, because we recognise the letter *k*, for instance, to be the same sound which we have always heard, and because it is the simplest method of accounting for the phenomenon to suppose that it is the same. The still atmosphere which interferes with the perception of sound, is removed by the conjunctions and disjunctions of air issuing from a speaker’s mouth, and thus sound (which always exists, though unperceived) becomes perceptible.<sup>84</sup> This is the reply to the objection of its ‘transitoriness’ (*Sūtra 7*).”

An answer to *Sūtra 8* is given in

*Sūtra 14.*—*Prayogasya param* | “The word ‘making’ sounds, merely means employing or uttering them.”

The objection made in *Sūtra 9* is answered in

*Sūtra 15.*—*Āditya-vaḍ yaugapadyam* | “One sound is simultaneously heard by different persons, just as one sun is seen by them at one and the same time. Sound, like the sun, is a vast, and not a minute object, and thus may be perceptible by different persons, though remote from one another.”

An answer to *Sūtra 10* is contained in

*Sūtra 16.*—*Varṇāntaram avikārah* | “The letter *y*, which is substituted for *i* in the instance referred to under *Sūtra 10*, is not a modification of *i*, but a distinct letter. Consequently sound is not modified.”

The 11th *Sūtra* is answered in

*Sūtra 17.*—*Nāda-ṛiddhiḥ parā*<sup>85</sup> | “It is an increase of ‘noise,’ not

<sup>84</sup> “Sound is unobserved, though existent, if it reach not the object (vibrations of air emitted from the mouth of the speaker proceed and manifest sound by their appulse to air at rest in the space bounded by the hollow of the ear; for want of such appulse, sound, though existent, is unapprehended).”—Colebrooke, i. 306.

<sup>85</sup> The text as given in the Bibliotheca Indica has *nāda-ṛiddhi-parā*.

of sound, that is occasioned by a multitude of speakers. The word 'noise' refers to the 'conjunctions and disjunctions of the air' (mentioned under Sūtra 13) which enter simultaneously into the hearer's ear from different quarters; and it is of these that an increase takes place."

The next following Sūtras state the reasons which support the Mīmāṃsaka view :

*Sūtra 18.*—*Nityas tu syād darśanasya parārthatvāt* | "Sound must be eternal, because its utterance is fitted to convey a meaning to other persons. If it were not eternal [or abiding], it would not continue till the hearer had learned its sense, and thus he would not learn the sense, because the cause had ceased to exist."

*Sūtra 19.*—*Sarvatra yaugapadyāt* | "Sound is eternal, because it is in every case correctly and uniformly recognized by many persons simultaneously; and it is inconceivable that they should all at once fall into a mistake."

When the word *go* (cow) has been repeated ten times, the hearers will say that the word *go* has been ten times pronounced, not that ten words having the sound of *go* have been uttered; and this fact also is adduced as a proof of the eternity of sound in

*Sūtra 20.*—*Sankhyābhāvāt* | "Because each sound is not numerically different from itself repeated."

*Sūtra 21.*—*Anapekshāt* | "Sound is eternal, because we have no ground for anticipating its destruction."

"But it may be urged that sound is a modification of air, since it arises from its conjunctions (see Sūtra 17), and because the Śikshā (or Vedāṅga treating of pronunciation) says that 'air arrives at the condition of sound;' and as it is thus produced from air, it cannot be eternal." A reply to this difficulty is given in

*Sūtra 22.*—*Prakhyābhāvāch cha yogyasya* | "Sound is not a modification of air, because, if it were, the organ of hearing would have no appropriate object which it could perceive. No modification of air (held by the Naiyāyikas to be tangible) could be perceived by the organ of hearing, which deals only with intangible sound."

*Sūtra 23.*—*Linga-darśanāch cha* | "And the eternity of sound is established by the argument discoverable in the Vedic text, 'with an eternal voice, o Virūpa.' (See above, p. 69.) Now, though this sentence had another object in view, it, nevertheless, declares the eternity of language, and hence sound is eternal."

“But though words, as well as the connection of word and sense, be eternal, it may be objected—as in the following aphorism—that a command conveyed in the form of a sentence is no proof of duty.”

*Sūtra 24.—Utpattau vā rachanāḥ syur arthasya a-tan-nimitatvāt |* “Though there be a natural connection between words and their meanings, the connection between sentences and their meanings is a factitious one, established by human will, from these meanings (of the sentences) not arising out of the meanings of the words. The connection of sentences with their meanings is not (like the connection of words with their meanings) one derived from inherent power (see *Sūtra 5*, remark <sup>(c)</sup>, above, p. 72), but one devised by men; how, then, can this connection afford a sufficient authority for duty?”

An answer to this is given in

*Sūtra 25.—Tad-bhūtānām kriyārthena samāmnāyo'rthasya tan-nimitatvāt |* “The various terms which occur in every Vedic precept are accompanied by a verb; and hence a perception (such as we had not before) of the sense of a sentence is derived from a collection of words containing a verb. A precept is not comprehended unless the individual words which make it up are understood; and the comprehension of the meaning of a sentence is nothing else than the comprehension of the exact mutual relation of the meanings arising out of each word.”

*Sūtra 26.—Loke sanniyamāt prayoga-sannikarshaḥ syāt |* “As in secular language the application of words is known, so also in the Veda they convey an understood sense, which has been handed down by tradition.”

The author now proceeds in the next following *Sūtras* to state and to obviate certain objections raised to his dogmas of the eternity and authority of the Vedas.

*Sūtra 27.—Vedāṁś cha eke sannikarsham purushākhyāḥ |* “Some (the followers of the *Nyāya*) declare the Vedas to be of recent origin, *i.e.* not eternal, because the names of men are applied to certain parts of them, as the *Kāthaka* and *Kauthuma*.”

This *Sūtra*, with some of those which follow, is quoted in *Sāyana's* commentary on the *R.V.* vol. i. pp. 19 and 20. His explanation of the present *Sūtra* is as follows:

*Yathā: Raghvaṁśādayaḥ idānīntanās tathā vedāḥ api | na tu vedāḥ anādayaḥ | ataḥ eva veda-karṭṛitvena purushāḥ ākhyāyante | Vaiyāsikam*

*Bhārataṁ Vālmīkiyaṁ Rāmāyaṇam ity atra yathā Bhārataḍi-karṭṛitvena Vyāśadayah ākhyāyante tathā Kāṭhakāṁ Kauthumaṁ Taittirīyakam ity evaṁ tat-tad-vedā-śākhā-karṭṛitvena Kāṭhādīnāṁ ākhyātatvāt pauruṣeṣyāḥ | Nany nityānāṁ eva vedānāṁ upādhyāya-vat sampradāya-pravartakatvena Kāṭhakādi-sāmākhyā syād ity āsankya yukty-antaraṁ sūtrayati | . . . kā tarhi Kāṭhakādy-ākhyāyikāyāḥ gatiṛ ity āsankya sampradāya-pravarttanāt sū iyaṁ upapadyate |*

“Some say, that as the Raghuvāṁśa, etc., are modern, so also are the Vedāś, and that the Vedāś are not eternal. Accordingly, certain men are named as the authors of the Vedas. Just as in the case of the Mahābhārata, which is called Vaiyāsika (composed by Vyāsa), and the Rāmāyaṇa, which is called Vālmīkiya (composed by Vālmīki), Vyāsa and Vālmīki are indicated as the authors of these poems; so, too, Kāṭha, Kuthumi, and Tittiri are shown to be the authors of those particular Śākhās of the Vedas which bear their names, viz. the Kāṭhaka, Kauthuma, and Taittirīya; and consequently those parts of the Vedas are of human composition. After suggesting that the Vedas, though eternal, have received the name of Kāṭhaka, etc., because Kāṭha and others, as teachers, handed them down; he adduces another objection in the next Sūtra.”

The explanation here indicated is accepted a little further on, in the remarks on one of the following Sūtras: “What, then, is the fact in reference to the appellations Kāṭhaka, etc.? It is proved to have arisen from the circumstance that Kāṭha, etc., handed down the Vedas.” I proceed to

*Sūtra 28.—Anitya-darśanāḥ cha |* “It is also objected that the Vedas cannot be eternal, because we observe that persons, who are not eternal, but subject to birth and death, are mentioned in them. Thus it is said in the Veda ‘Babara Prāvahaṇi desired,’ ‘Kusuruvinḍa Audḍālaki desired.’ Now, as the sentences of the Veda, in which they are mentioned, could not have existed before these persons were born, it is clear that these sentences had a beginning, and being thus non-eternal, they are proved to be of human composition” (‘Babaraḥ Prāvahaṇir akāmayata’ ‘Kusuruvinḍaḥ Audḍālakir akāmayata’ ityādi (vākyānāṁ?) vedeshu darśanāt teshāṁ jananāt prāg imāni vākyāni nāsann iti sādītṛvād anityatvam pauruṣeṣyatvāṁ cha siddham).

These objections are answered in the following aphorisms :

*Sūtra 29.*—*Uktaṁ tu śabda-pūrvatvam* | “ But the priority—eternity—of sound has been declared, and, by consequence, the eternity of the Veda.”

*Sūtra 30.*—*Ākhyā pravachanāt* | “ The names, derived, from those of particular men, attached to certain parts of the Vedas, were given on account of their studying these particular parts. Thus the portion read by Kaṭha was called *Kāthaka*, etc.”

*Sūtra 31.*—*Parantu śruti-sāmānya-mātram* | “ And names occurring in the Veda, which appear to be those of men, are appellations common to other beings besides men.”

“ Thus the words *Babara Prāvahani* are not the names of a man, but have another meaning. For the particle *pra* denotes ‘pre-eminence,’ *vahana* means ‘the motion of sound,’ and the letter *i* represents the agent; consequently the word *prāvahani* signifies that ‘which moves swiftly,’ and is applied to the wind, which is eternal. *Babara* again is a word imitating the sound of the wind. Thus there is not even a semblance of error in the assertion that the Veda is eternal” (*Yadyapi Babaraḥ Prāvahaniḥ ity asti parantu śrutiḥ prāvahany ādi-śabdaḥ sāmānyam | anyārthasyāpi vāchakam | tathā hi | “pra” ity asya utkarshāśrayaḥ | “vahanaḥ” śabdasya gatiḥ | i-kāraḥ karttā | tathā cha utkrishṭa-gaty-āśrayaḥ vāyu-paraḥ | sa cha anādiḥ | Babaraḥ iti vāyu-śabdānukarānam | iti na anupapatti-gandho ’pi* ).

Before proceeding to the 32nd *Sūtra*, I shall quote some further illustrations of the 31st, which are to be found in certain passages of the Introduction to *Sāyaṇa*’s Commentary on the *Rig-veda*, where he is explaining another section of the *Mīmāṃsā Sūtras* (i. 2, 39 ff.). The passages are as follows (p. 7):

*Anitya-saṁyogād mantrāharthakyaṁ* | “ *kiṁ te kṛivanti Kīkaṭeṣhv* ” *iti mantre Kīkaṭo nāma janapadaḥ āmnātāḥ | Tathā Naichāśakhaṁ nāma nagaram Pramagando nāma rājā ity ete ’rthāḥ anityāḥ āmnātāḥ | Tathā cha sati prāk Pramagandūd na ayam manthro bhūta-pūrvaḥ iti gamyate* | And in p. 10: *Yad apy uktam Pramagandūdy anityārthā - saṁyogād mantrasya anāditvaṁ na syād iti tatrottaram sūtrayati* | “ *Uktāś chānitya-saṁyogaḥ* ” *iti | prathama-pādasya antimādhi-karāṇe so ’yam anitya-saṁyoga-doshaḥ uktaḥ parihrītaḥ | Tathā hi | tatra pūrva-pakshe Vedānām pāurusheyatvaṁ vaktuṁ Kāthakaṁ Kālāpakam ity-ādi-purusha-sambandhābhīdhūnaṁ hetukṛītya “anitya-darśanāch cha” iti hetv-antaram*



*sūtritām* | “*Babaraḥ prāvāhanir akāmayata*” *ity anityānām Babarādīnām arthānām darśanāt tataḥ pūrvam asattvāt paurusheyo vedaḥ iti tasya uttaraṁ sūtritām* “*paraṁ tu śruti-sāmānya-mātram*” *iti* | *tasya ayam arthaḥ* | *yat Kāṭhakaḍḍi-samākhyānaṁ tat prāvachana-nimittam* | *yat tu param Babarādy-anitya-darśanaṁ tat śabda-sāmānya-mātraṁ na tu tatra Babarākhyāḥ kaśchit puruṣhō vivakṣitaḥ* | *kintu “babara” iti śabdaṁ kurvaṁ vāyur abhidhīyate* | *sa cha prāvāhaniḥ* | *prakarṣheṇa vahana-śīlah* | *Evam anjatrāpy ūhanīyam* |

“It is objected that the mantras are useless, because they are connected with temporal objects. Thus in the text, ‘what are thy cows doing among the Kikaṭas?’<sup>86</sup> a country called Kikaṭa is mentioned, as well as a city named Naichaśākha, and a king called Pramaganda, all of them non-eternal objects. Such being the case, it is clear that this text did not exist before Pramaganda.” The answer to this is given in p. 10: To the further objection that the mantras cannot be eternal, because such temporal objects as Pramaganda, etc., are referred to in them, an answer is given in the following Sūtra: ‘The connection with non-eternal objects has been already explained.’ In the last section of the first chapter, this very objection of the hymns being connected with non-eternal things has been stated and obviated (see above, Sūtras 28–31). For in the statement of objections, after it has first been suggested as a proof of the human origin of the Vedas, that they bear names, Kāṭhaka, Kālāpaka, etc., denoting their relation to men, a further difficulty is stated in a Sūtra, viz., that ‘it is noticed that non-eternal objects are mentioned in the Vedas;’ as, for example, where it is said that ‘Babara Prāvāhani desired.’ Now, as it specifies non-eternal objects of this kind, the Veda, which could not have existed before those objects, must be of human composition. The answer to this is given in the aphorism, ‘any further names are to be understood as common to other things.’ The meaning is this: the names Kāṭhaka, etc., are given to the Vedas because they are expounded by Kāṭha, etc.; and the further difficulty arising from the names of Babara and other objects supposed to be non-eternal, is removed by such names being common to other objects [which are eternal in their nature]. No persons called Babara, etc., are intended by those names, but the wind, which makes the sound babara, is so designated. And prāvāhani refers

<sup>86</sup> See the First Volume of this work, p. 342, and the Second Volume, p. 362.

to the same object, as it means that which carries swiftly. The same method of explanation is to be applied in other similar cases."

I proceed to the 32nd Sūtra. It is asked how the Veda can constitute proof of duty when it contains such incoherent nonsense as the following: "An old ox, in blanket and slippers, is standing at the door and singing benedictions. A Brāhman female, desirous of offspring, asks, 'Pray, o king, what is the meaning of intercourse on the day of the new moon?' or the following: 'the cows celebrated this sacrifice'" (*Nanu* "Jaradgavo kambāla-pādūkābhyaṃ dvāri sthito gāyati mangalāni"<sup>67</sup> | *tam brāhmaṇī prichhati puttra-kāmā rājann amāyāṃ labhanasya ko'rthaḥ*" | *iti* | "gāvo vai etat sattram āsata" *ity-ādīnām asambaddhapralāpānāṃ vede sattvāt kathāṃ sa dharme prēmānam*). A reply is contained in

*Sūtra 32.—Kṛite vā viniyogaḥ syāt karmaṇaḥ sambandhāt* | "The passages to which objection is taken may be applicable to the duty to be performed, from the relation in which they stand to the ceremony" (as eulogistic of it).

As a different reading and interpretation of this Sūtra are given by Sāyaṇa in his commentary, p. 20, I shall quote it, and the remarks with which he introduces and follows it:

*Nanu vedē kvachid evaṃ śrūyate "vanaspatayaḥ satram āsata sarpāḥ satram āsata" iti* | *tatra vanaspatīnām achetanavāt sarpānāṃ chetanatve 'pi vidyā-rahitatvād na tad-anuśṭhānaṃ sambhavati* | *Ato "Jaradgavo gāyati madrakāṇi" ityādy-unmatta-bāla-vākya-sadrīśatvāt kenachit kṛito vedaḥ ity āsankya uttaraṃ sūtrayati* | "Kṛite cha aviniyogaḥ syāt karmaṇaḥ samatvāt" | *Yadi jyotishṭomādi-vākyaṃ kenachit puruṣheṇa kriyeta tadānīm kṛite tasmin vākye svarga-sādhanatve jyotishṭomasya viniyogaḥ na syāt* | *sādhyā-sādhanā-bhāvasya puruṣheṇa jñātum āsakyatvāt* | *śrūyate tu viniyogaḥ* | "jyotishṭomena svarga-kāmo yajeta" *iti* | *na cha etat unmatta-vākya-sadrīśaṃ laukika-vidhi-vākya-vaḥ bhāvya-karaṇetikartavyatā-rūpais tribhir aṃśair upetāyāḥ bhāvanāyāḥ avagamāt* | *loke hi "brāhmaṇān bhojayed" iti vidhau kiṃ kena kathām ity ākāṅkshāyāṃ*

<sup>67</sup> In his commentary on the following aphorism S'abara Svāmin gives only a part of this quotation, consisting of the words *Jaradgavo gāyati mattakāni*, "An old ox sings senseless words;" and adds the remark: *kathāṃ vāma jaradgavo gāyey*, "How, now, can an old ox sing?" We must not therefore with the late Dr. Ballantyne take *jaradgava* for a proper name.

*triptim uddīśya odanena dravyena śāka-sūpādi-parivēshana-prakāreṇa iti yathā uchyate jyotiṣṭoma-vidhāv api svargam uddīśya somena dravyena dīkṣanīyādy-āṅgoyakārya-prakāreṇa ity ukte katham unmatta-vākya-sudriṣam bhaved iti | vānāspaty-ādi-satra-vākyaṃ api na tat-sadriṣāṃ tasya, satra-karmano jyotiṣṭomādinā samatvāt | yat-paro hi śabdāḥ sa śabdārthāḥ iti nyāya-vidāḥ āhuḥ | jyotiṣṭomādi-vākyaṣya vidhāyakatvād anuṣṭhāne tatparjyaṃ | va.āspaty-ādi-satra-vākyaṣya arthavādatvād praśaṃsāyāṃ tātparyam | sū śha avidyamānenāpi karttuṃ śakyate | achanāḥ avidvāṃso 'pi satram anuṣṭhitavantaḥ kim pānāś chetanāḥ vidvāṃso brāhmaṇāḥ iti satru-stutiḥ |*

“ But it will be objected that the Veda contains such sentences as this: ‘trees and serpents sat down at a sacrifice.’ Now, since trees are insensible, and serpents, though possessing sensibility, are destitute of knowledge, it is inconceivable that either the one or the other should celebrate such a ceremony. Hence, from its resembling the silly talk of madmen and children, as where it says, ‘An old ox sings songs (fit only for the Madras?)’ (see the Second Volume of this work, pp. 481 ff.), the Veda must have been composed by some man. The answer to this doubt is contained in the following Sūtra (which I can only render by a paraphrase): ‘If prescribed by mere human authority, no rite can have any efficacy; but such ceremonies as the jyotiṣṭoma rest on the authority of the Veda; and narrative texts such as that regarding the trees and serpents have the same intention as precepts, *i.e.* to recommend sacrifice.’ If the sentence enjoining the jyotiṣṭoma sacrifice had been composed by any man then, as the sentence was so composed, the sacrifice so enjoined would not have been applicable as a means of attaining paradise; for no man could know either the end, or the means of accomplishing it. But the application in question is prescribed in the Veda by the words ‘let him, who seeks paradise, sacrifice with the jyotiṣṭoma.’ Now this injunction does not resemble the talk of a madman, since we recognize in it, as in injunctions of a secular kind, the contemplation of the three characteristics of the action to be performed, *viz.* its end, means, and mode. For, as when a question is put in regard to the object for which, the instrument through which, and the manner in which the precept, ‘to feed Brahmans,’ is to be fulfilled, we are told that the object is to be their satisfaction, the instrumental substance boiled rice, and the manner, that it is to be served up with

vegetables and condiments;—in the same way, in the Vedic injunction regarding the jyotishṭoma, we are told that paradise is the object, that soma is the instrumental substance, and that the application of the introductory and other portions of the ritual is the manner. And when this is so, how can this precept be compared to the talk of a madman? Nor does the sentence regarding trees, etc., celebrating a sacrifice, admit of such a comparison, since the sacrifice in question is similar to the jyotishṭoma and other such rites. For logicians say that the meaning of a word is the sense which it is intended to intimate. The purport of the sentence regarding the jyotishṭoma, which is of a preceptive character, is to command performance. The object of the sentence regarding trees, etc., attending at a sacrifice, which is of a narrative character, is eulogy; and this can be offered even by a thing which has no real existence. The sacrifice is eulogized by saying that it was celebrated even by insensible trees and ignorant serpents: how much more, then, would it be celebrated by Brāhmins possessed both of sensation and knowledge!”

The following passage from the Nyāya-mālā-vistara, a treatise containing a summary of the doctrines of the Pūrva-mīmāṃsā of Jaimini, by Mādhava Āchāryya, the brother of Sāyaṇa Āchāryya (see above, p. 66) repeats some of the same reasonings contradicting the idea that the Veda had any personal author (i. 1, 25, 26):

*Paurusheyam na vā veda-vākyaṃ syāt paurusheyatā | Kāṭhākādi-samākhyānād vākyatvāch chānya-vākya-vat | Samākhyā 'dhyāpakatvena vākyatvaṃ tu parāhatam | Tatkartr-anupalambheṇa syāt tato 'paurusheyatā | Kāṭhakaṃ Kāuthumaṃ Taittirīyakam ityādi samākhyā tat-tad-veda-vishayā loke drishṭā | taddhita-pratyayaś cha tena proktam ity asminn arthe varttate | tathā sati Vyāsenā proktam Vaiyāsikam Bhāratam ity-ādāv iva paurusheyatvam pratīyate | kincha | vimatāṃ veda-vākyaṃ paurusheyam | vākyatvāt | Kālidāsādi-vākya-vad iti prāpte brūmah | adhyayana-sampradāya-pravarttakatvena samākhyā upapadyate | Kālidāsādi-grantheshu tat-sargāvasāne karttārah upalabhyante | tat-kū vedasyāpi paurusheyatve tat-karttā upalabhyeta na cha upalabhyate | ato vākyatva-hetuḥ pratikūla-tarka-parāhataḥ | tasmād apaurusheyo vedaḥ | tathā sati puruṣa-buddhi-kṛitasya aprāmānyasya anāśankaniyatvād vidhi-vākyaṃ dharmē prāmānyaṃ susthitam |*<sup>88</sup>

<sup>88</sup> I have extracted this passage from Prof. Goldstücker's text of the Nyāya-mālā-

“[Verses] ‘Is the word of the Veda derived from a personal author or not? It must (some urge) be so derived, since (1) it bears the names of Kāṭhaka, etc., and (2) has the characters of a sentence, like other sentences. No (we reply); for (1) the names arose from particular persons being teachers of the Vedas, and (2) the objection that the Vedic precepts have the characters of common sentences is refuted by other considerations. The Veda can have no personal author, since it has never been perceived to have had a maker.’ [Comment] It is objected (1) that the names Kāṭhaka, Kauthumā, Taittirīyaka, etc., are applied in common usage to the different Vedas; and the taddhita affix by which these appellations are formed, denotes ‘uttered by’ [Kāṭha, Kuthumi, and Tittiri], (comp. Pānini, iv. 3, 101). Such being the case, it is clear that these parts of the Vedas are derived from a personal author, like the Mahābhārata, which is styled Vaiyāsika, because it was uttered by Vyāsa, etc. And further (2), the sentences of the Veda, being subject to different interpretations, must have had a personal author, because they have the properties of a sentence, like the sentences of Kālidāsa, etc. To this we reply (1), the name applied to any Veda originates in the fact that the sage whose name it bears, was an agent in transmitting the study of that Veda. But (2) in the books of Kālidāsa and others, the authors are discoverable [from the notices] at the end of each section. Now if the Veda also were the composition of a personal author, the composer of it would, in like manner, be discoverable; but such is not the case. Hence, the objection that the Veda partakes of the nature of common sentences is refuted by opposing considerations. Consequently the Veda is not the work of a personal author. And such being the case, as we cannot suspect in it any fallibility occasioned by the defects of human reason, the preceptive texts of the Veda are demonstrated to be authoritative in questions of duty.”

II.—*Vedārtha-prakāśa*. The verses just quoted are repeated in the *Vedārtha-prakāśa* of Mādhava on the Taittirīya Sanhitā (p. 26), with a various reading at the beginning of the third line, viz. “*samākhyānam pravachanāt*” instead of “*samākhyā dhyāpakatvena*.” The comment by which the verses are explained in the same work, is as follows:

*Vālmīkiyañ Vaiyāsikīyam ityādi-samākhyāṅgād Rāmāyaṇa-Bhāratā-vistara*; and I am indebted to the same eminent scholar for some assistance in my translation of it.

*dikañ yathā paurusheyañ tathā Kāṭhakañ Kauthumañ Taittirīyam ity-  
ādi-samākhyānād vedaḥ paurusheyaḥ | kincha veda-vākyaṃ paurusheyañ  
vākyatvāt Kālidāsādi-vākya-vad iti chet | maivam | sampradāya-pravṛti-  
tyā samākhyopapatteḥ | Vākyatva-hetus' tv anupabiddhi-viruddha-kālātya-  
yāpadishṭaḥ | Yathā Vyāsa-Vālmiki-prabhṛitayas tad-grantha-nirmānū-  
vasare kaiśchid upalabdhaḥ anyair apy uvichikṣna - sampradāyena upa-  
labhyante | na tathā veda-karttā puruṣaḥ kaiśchid upalabdhaḥ | prat-  
yuta vedasya nityatvañ śruti-śrutiḥyām pūrvam ulāhṛitam | Para-  
mātmā tu veda-karttā 'xi na laukika-puruṣaḥ | tasmāt karttr-doshā-  
bhāvād nāsty aprāmānya-śankā |*

“It may be said (1) that as the Rāmāyaṇa, the Mahābhārata, and other such books, are regarded as the works of personal authors from the epithets Vālmikīya (composed by Vālmiki), Vaiyāsikīya (composed by Vyāsa), etc., which they bear, so too the Veda must have had a similar origin, since it is called by the appellations of Kāṭhaka, Kauthuma, Taittirīya, etc.; and further (2), that the sentences of the Veda must have had this origin, because they possess the properties of a common sentence, like those of Kālidāsa and others. But these objections are unfounded, for (1) the appellations of those parts of the Veda are derived from the sages who were agents in transmitting the study of them; and (2) the objection about the Veda having the properties of a common sentence is opposed to the fact that no author was ever perceived, and so proceeds upon an erroneous generalization.<sup>89</sup> For though Vyāsa and Vālmiki, etc., when employed in the composition of their respective works, were perceived by some persons to be so en-

<sup>89</sup> This phrase thus translated (*kālātyayāpadishṭa*) is a technical term in the Nyāya philosophy, denoting one of the *hetv-abhāsas*, or “mere semblances of reasons,” and is thus defined in the Nyāya-śūtras, i. 49, *Kālātyayāpadishṭaḥ kālātītaḥ*, which Dr. Ballantyne (Aphorisms of the Nyāya, p. 42) thus explains: “That [semblance of a reason] is mis-timed, which is adduced when the time is not [that when it might have availed]. [For example, suppose, one argues that] fire does not contain heat, because it is factitious, [his argument is mis-timed if we have already ascertained by the superior evidence of the senses that fire does contain heat].” It does not, however, appear, how the essential validity of an argument can depend at all on the time when it is adduced, as is justly observed by Professor Goldstücker, who has favoured me with his opinion on the sense of the phrase. After consulting the commentary of Vātsyāyana in loco, he thinks the aphorism (which is not very distinctly explained by the commentators) must denote the erroneous transference of a conclusion deduced from the phenomena happening at one “time,” i.e. belonging to one class of cases, to another class which does not exhibit, or only apparently exhibits, the same phenomena; in short, a vicious generalization.

gaged, and are known by others also [in after ages] to be the authors, from the existence of an unbroken tradition to that effect;—no human author of the Veda has ever been perceived. On the contrary, we have formerly shown that the eternity of the Veda is declared both by itself and by the Smṛiti. And even if the Supreme Spirit be the maker of it, still he is not a mundane person; and consequently, as no defect exists in the maker, there is no reason to suspect fallibility in his work.”

No notice has been taken by these commentators of an objection which might have been raised to the validity of this reasoning, viz. that the hymns of the R̥ich and other Vedas are all set down in the Anukramāṇīs, or indices to those works, as being uttered by particular rishis; the rishis being, in fact, there defined as those whose words the hymns were—*yasya vākyaṃ sa rishiḥ*.<sup>90</sup> (See Colebrooke’s Misc. Ess. i. 26, or p. 12 of Williams and Norgate’s ed.) Though, however, this objection has not been alluded to in any of the preceding passages, an answer has been provided to it in the well-known assertion of the orthodox Indian writers that the rishis did not compose, but only saw and afterwards repeated the hymns and other parts of the Vedas, which had in reality pre-existed from eternity.

Thus, in the Vedārtha-prakāśa on the Taittirīya Sanhitā, p. 11, it is said: *Atīndriyārtha-drashṭāraḥ rishayaḥ | Teshāṃ veda-drashṭritvaṃ smaryate | Yugāntē ’ntarhitān*<sup>91</sup> *Vedān setihāsān mahārshayaḥ | Lebhīre tapasā pūrvām anujnātāḥ svayambhuvā |* (Mahābhārata, Sāntiparvan, verse 7660. See above, p. 49.) “The rishis were seers of things beyond the reach of the bodily senses. The fact of their seeing the Vedas is recorded in the Smṛiti: ‘The great rishis, empowered by Svayambhū, formerly obtained, through devotion, the Vedas and the Itihāsas which had disappeared at the end of the [preceding] Yuga.’”

So, too, Manu (as already quoted, Vol. I. p. 394) says, in similar, although more general language: *Prājāpatir idam śāstraṃ tapasāivā-srijat prabhuḥ | Tathāiva veāṇ rishayas tapasā pratipedire |* “Prajāpati created this Śāstra (the Institutes of Manu) by austere-fervour (*tapas*); and by the same means the rishis obtained the Vedas.”

<sup>90</sup> Some passages from the Nirukta on this subject will be quoted in a later part of this volume.

<sup>91</sup> The text of the Biblioth. Ind. reads *tarhi tān*. I have followed the M. Bh., which evidently gives the true reading.

The following extract from the account of the Pūrva-mīmāṃsā philosophy, given in the Sarva-darśana-saṅgraha of Mādhava Ācharyya (Bibliotheca Indica, pp. 127 ff.), contains a fuller summary of the controversy between the Mīmāṃsakas and the Nāilyāyikas respecting the grounds on which the authority of the Veda should be regarded as resting :

*Syād etat | vedasya katham apaurusheyatvam ebhidhīyate | tat-prati-pādaka-pramāṇābhāvāt katham manyethāḥ apaurusheyāḥ vedāḥ | sampra-dēyāvichchhede saty aśmuryyamāna-karttrikatvād ātma-vaḍ iti | tad etad mandaṁ viśeshanāsiddheḥ | paurusheya-veda-vāḍibhiḥ pralaye sampra-dāya - vichchhedasya kakshīkaranāt | kincha kim idam asmaryyamāna-karttrikatvaṁ nāma | apratīyamāna - karttrikatvam asmarāna - gochara-karttrikatvaṁ vā | na prathamaḥ kalpaḥ Paramēśvarasya karttuḥ pra-mīter abhyupagamāt | na dvitīyo vikalpāsahatvāt | tathā hi | kim ekena asmarānam abhipreyate sarvaiv vā | na ādyaḥ | “yo dharmā-śīlo jīta-māna-roshaḥ” ityādīshu muktakoktīshu vyabhichārāt | na dvitīyaḥ | sar-vāsmarānasya asarvajna-durjñānatvāt |*

*Paurusheyatve pramāna-sambhavāch cha veda-vākyāni paurusheyāni | vākyatvāt | Kālidāsādi-vākya-vat | veda-vākyāni āpta-praṇītāni | pra-mānatve sati vākyatvād Manv-ādi-vākya-vaḍ iti |*

*Nanu | “Vedasyādhyayanaṁ sarvaṁ gurv-adhyayana-pūrvakam | vedā-dhyayana-sāmānyād adhunā ’dhyayanaṁ yathā” | ity anumānam prati sādhanam pragalbhate iti chet | tad api na pramāna-koṭim praveshṭum īshṭe | “Bhāratādhyayanaṁ sarvam gurv-adhyayana-pūrvakam | Bhāra-tādhyayanatvena sāmpratādhyayanaṁ yathā” itī ābhāsa-samāna-yoga-kshematvāt | nanu tatra Vyāsaḥ karttā itī smāryyate “ko hy anyāḥ Puṇḍarikākshhād Mahābhārata-kṛid bhavet” ity-ādāv itī chet | tad asūram | “richaḥ sāmāni jājnīre | chhandāmīsi jajnīre tasmād yajus tas-mād ajāyata” itī purusha-sūkte vedasya sa-karttrikatā-pratīpādanāt |*

*Kincha anityaḥ śabdaḥ sāmānyavattve sati asmad-ādi-vāhyendriya-grāhyatvād ghaṭa-vat | nanv idam anumānaṁ sa evāyaṁ ga-kāraḥ ity pratyabhijñā-pramēna-pratihatam itī chet | tad atō phalgu “kūna-punar-jāta-keśa-dalita-kund”-ādāv iva pratyabhijñāyāḥ sāmānya-vishayatvena bādhatvābhavāt |*

*Nanv asarīrasya Paramēśvarasya tālv-ādi-sthānābhāvena varṇochchē-  
raṇāsambhavāt katham tat-praṇītatvaṁ vedasya syād itī chet | na tad  
bhadrāṁ svabhāvato ’sarīrasyāpi tasya bhaktānugrahārtham līlā-vigraha-*



grahana-sambhavāt | tasmād vedasya āpaurusheyatva-vācho yuktir na yuktā iti chet |

Tatra samādhānam abhidhīyate | Kim idam paurusheyatvaṁ sisūdhayishitam | puṣūṣhād utpannatva-mātram | yathāsmad-ādībhīr ahar ahar uchchāryyamānasya vedasya | pramānāntareṇa artham upalabhya tat-prakāśanāya rachitatvaṁ vā | yathā smad-ādībhīr iva nibadhyamānasya prabandhasya | prathame na vipratipattiḥ | charame kim anumāna-balāt tat-sādhanam āgama-balād vā | na ādyaḥ | Mālati-mādhavādi-vākyeshu savyabhihāratvāt | atha pramānatve sati iti viśiṣhyate iti chet | tad api nā vipaśchito maṇasi vaiśadyam āpadyate | pramānāntarāgocharārthapratipādakaṁ hi vākyam Veda-vākyam | tat pramānāntara-gocharārthapratipādakam iti sādhyamāne “mama mātā bandhyū” iti vad vyāghātā-pātāt | kincha Paramēśvarasya līlā-vigraha-parigrahābhyupagame ’py atīndriyārtha-darśanaṁ na sanjāghaṭīti deśa-kāla-svabhāva-viprakriṣṭārtha-grahānopāyābhāvāt | na cha tach-chakshur-ādīkam eva tādrīk-pratīti-janana-kshamam iti mantavyam | dṛiṣṭānusāreṇaiva kalpanāyāḥ āśrayanīyatvāt | tad uktaṁ Gurubhiḥ sarvajna-nirākarāna-velāyām “yatrapy atīśayo dṛiṣṭaḥ sa svārthānatīlanghanāt | dūra-sūksmādi-dṛiṣṭau syād na rūpe śrotra-vṛittitā” iti | ataḥ eva na āgama-balāt tat-sādhanam |

“Tena proktam” iti Pāṇinīy-anuśāsane jāgraty api Kāṭhaka-Kālāpa-Taittirīyam ityādi-samākhyā adhyayana-sampradāya-pravarttaka-vishayatvena upapadyate | tad-vad atrāpi sampradāya-pravarttaka-vishayatvenāpy upapadyate | na cha anumāna-balāt śabdasya anīyatva-siddhiḥ | pratyabhijñā-virodhāt | . . . .

Navv idam pratyabhijñānaṁ gatvādi-jāti-viśayaṁ na gādi-vyakti-viśayaṁ tāsāṁ prati-purusham bhedopalambhū | anyathā “Somaśarmā dhīte” iti vibhāgo na syād iti chet | tad api śobhāṁ na bibhartti gādi-vyakti-bhede pramānābhāvena gatvādi-jāti-viśaya-kalpanāyām pramānābhavāt | Yathā gatvam ajānataḥ ekaṁ eva bhinna-deśa-parimāna-saṁsthāna-vyakty-upadhāna-vaśād bhinna-deśam iva alpam iva mahad iva dīrgham iṣa vāmanav iva prāthate tathā ga-vyaktim ajānataḥ ekā ’pi vyanjaka-bhedāt tat-tad-dharmānubandhinī pratibhāsate | etena viruddha-dharmādhyāśād bheda-pratibhāsaḥ iti pratyuktam | tatra kiṁ svābhāviko viruddha-dharmādhyāso bheda-sādhatvena abhīmataḥ pratītikō vā | prathame asiddhiḥ | aparathā svābhāvika-bhedābhyupagame daśa ga-kārān udachārayat Chaitra iti pratipattiḥ syād na tu daśa-

*kṛitvo ga-kāraḥ iti | dvitīye tu na svābhāvika-bheda-siddhiḥ | na hi paropādhi-bhedena svābhāvikam aikyaṁ vihanyate | mā bhūḍ nabhaso 'pi kumbhādy-upādhi-bhedāt svābhāviko bhedaḥ | . . . tad uktam āchāryayaiḥ | 'prayojanaṁ tu yaj jātes tad varṇād eva labhyate | vyakti-labhyaṁ tu nādebhyaḥ iti gatvādi-dhīr vrithā' iti | tathā cha "pratyabhijñā yadā śabde jāgartti niravagrahā | anityatvānumānāni caiva sarvānī bādhatē" | . . . tatas̄ cha vedasya apaurusheyatayā niraṣṭa-samasta-śānkūkalānkūkuratvena svataḥ siddhaṁ dharme prāmānyam iti susthitam |*

"Be it so. But how, [the Naiyāyikas may ask] is the Veda alleged to be underived from any personal author? How can you regard the Vedas as being thus underived, when there is no evidence by which this character can be substantiated? The argument urged by you Mīmāṃsakas is, that while there is an unbroken tradition, still no author of the Veda is remembered, in the same way as [none is remembered] in the case of the soul (or self). But this argument is very weak, because the asserted characteristics [unbrokenness of tradition, etc.] are not proved; since those who maintain the personal origin [*i.e.* origin from a person] of the Veda, object that the tradition [regarding the Veda] was interrupted at the dissolution of the universe (*pralaya*).<sup>92</sup> And further: what is meant by the assertion that no author of the Veda is remembered? Is it (1) that no author is believed? or (2) that no author is the object of recollection? The first alternative cannot be accepted, since it is acknowledged [by us] that God (*Paramēśvara*) is proved to be the author. Nor can the second alternative be admitted, as it cannot stand the test of the following dilemma, viz. Is it meant (*a*) that no author of the Veda is recollected by some one person, or (*b*) by any person whatever? The former supposition breaks down, since it fails when tried by such detached stanzas as this, 'he who is religious, and has overcome pride and anger,' etc.<sup>93</sup> And the latter supposition is inadmissible, since it would be impossible for any person who was not omniscient to know that no author of the Veda was recollected by any person whatever.

<sup>92</sup> This objection occurs in a passage of the *Kusumāñjali*, which I shall quote further on.

<sup>93</sup> I do not know from what work this verse is quoted, or what is its sequel. To prove anything in point, it must apparently go on to assert that such a saint as is here described remembers the author of the Veda, or at least has such superhuman faculties as would enable him to discover the author.

“And moreover, [the Naiyāyikas proceed], the sentences of the Veda must have originated with a personal author, as proof exists that they had such an origin, since they have the character of sentences, like those of Kālidāsa and other writers. The sentences of the Veda have been composed by competent persons, since, while they possess authority, they have, at the same time, the character of sentences, like those of Manu and other sages.

“But [ask the Mīmāṃsakas] may it not be assumed that, ‘All study of the Veda was preceded by an earlier study of it by the pupil’s preceptor, since the study of the Veda must always have had one common character, which was the same in former times as now;’<sup>94</sup> and that this inference has force to prove [that the Veda had no author or was eternal]? Such reasoning [the Naiyāyikas answer] is of no force as proof, [for it might be urged, with an equal show of reason, that] ‘All study of the Mahābhārata was preceded by an earlier study of it by the pupil’s preceptor, since the study of the Mahābhārata, from the mere fact of its being such, [must have had the same character in former times] as it has now;’ and the advantage of such an argument is simply illusory. But the [Mīmāṃsakas will ask whether there is not a difference between these two cases of the Veda and the Mahābhārata, since] the Smṛiti declares that [Vishṇu incarnate as] Vyāsa was the author of the latter,—according to such texts as this, ‘Who else than Puṇḍarikāksha (the lotus-eyed Vishṇu) could be the maker of the Mahābhārata?’ (see above, p. 39),—[whilst nothing of this sort is recorded in any Śāstra in regard to the Veda]. This argument, however, is powerless, since it is proved by these words of the Purushasūkta, ‘From him sprang the Ṛich and Sāman verses and the metres, and from him the Yajush verses,’ (above, p. 3) that the Veda had a maker.

“Further [proceed the Naiyāyikas] we must suppose that sound [on the eternity of which the eternity and uncreatedness of the Veda depend] is not eternal, since, while it has the properties belonging to a

<sup>94</sup> The purport of this verse is, that as every generation of students of the Veda must have been preceded by an earlier generation of teachers, and as there is no reason to assume any variation in this process by supposing that there ever had been any student who taught himself; we have thus a *regressus ad infinitum*, and must of necessity conclude that the Vedas had no author, but were eternal.

genus, it can, like a jar, be perceived by the external organs of beings such as ourselves. But [rejoin the Mīmāṃsakas], is not this inference of yours refuted by the proof arising from the fact that we recognise the letter G [for example] as the same we have heard before? This argument [replies the Naiyāyika] is extremely weak, for the recognition in question having reference to a community of species,—as in the case of such words as ‘hairs cut and grown again, or of full-blown jasmine,’ etc.,—has no force to refute my assertion [that letters are not eternal].

“But [asks the Mīmāṃsaka] how can the Veda have been uttered by the incorporeal Parameśvara (God), who has no palate or other organs of speech, and therefore cannot be conceived to have pronounced the letters [of which it is composed]? This objection [answers the Naiyāyika] is not happy, because, though Parameśvara is by nature incorporeal, he can yet, by way of sport, assume a body, in order to shew kindness to his devoted worshippers. Consequently, the arguments in favour of the doctrine that the Veda had no personal author are inconclusive.

“I shall now [says the Mīmāṃsaka] clear up all these difficulties. What is meant by this *pauruṣheyatva* (‘derivation from a personal author’) which it is sought to prove? Is it (1) mere procession (*utpannatva*) from a person (*puruṣa*), like the procession of the Veda from persons such as ourselves, when we daily utter it? or (2) is it the arrangement—with a view to its manifestation—of knowledge acquired by other modes of proof, in the sense in which persons like ourselves compose a treatise? If the first meaning be intended, there will be no dispute. If the second sense be meant, I ask whether the Veda is proved [to be authoritative] in virtue (a) of its being founded on inference, or (b) of its being founded on supernatural information (*āgamā-balāt*)? The former alternative (a) [*i.e.* that the Veda derives its authority from being founded on inference] cannot be correct, since this theory breaks down, if it be applied to the sentences of the Mṛlatī Mādhava or any other secular poem [which may contain inferences destitute of authority]. If, on the other hand, you say (b), that the contents of the Veda are distinguished from those of other books by having authority, this explanation also will fail to satisfy a philosopher. For the word of the Veda is [defined to be] a word which proves things that are not

provable by any other evidence. Now if it could be established that this Vedic word did nothing more than prove things that are provable by other evidence, we should be involved in the same sort of contradiction as if a man were to say that his mother was a barren woman. And even if we conceded that Parameśvara might in sport assume a body, it would not be conceivable that [in that case] he should perceive things beyond the reach of the senses, from the want of any means of apprehending objects removed from him in place, in time, and in nature. Nor is it to be thought that his eyes and other senses alone would have the power of producing such knowledge, since men can only attain to conceptions corresponding with what they have perceived. This is what has been said by the Guru (Prabhākara) when he refutes [this supposition of] an omniscient author: 'Whenever any object is perceived [by the organ of sight] in its most perfect exercise, such perception can only have reference to the vision of something very distant or very minute, since no organ can go beyond its own proper objects, as *e.g.* the ear can never become cognizant of form.' Hence the authority of the Veda does not arise in virtue of any supernatural information [acquired by the Deity in a corporeal shape].

"Without any contravention<sup>95</sup> of the rule of Pāṇini (iv. 3, 101; see above, p. 83) that the grammatical affix with which the words Kāṭhaka, Kālāpa, and Taittirīya are formed, imparts to those derivatives the sense of 'uttered by' Kāṭha, Kalāpa, etc., it is established that the names first mentioned have reference [not to those parts of the Veda being composed by the sages in question, but] to the fact that these sages instituted the practice of studying those parts of the Veda. Here also these appellations ought to be understood in the same manner, as referring to the fact of those sages being the institutors of the study of the Veda; and we are not to think that the eternity of sound [or of the words of the Veda] is disproved by the force of any inference [to be drawn from those names], since this would be at variance with the recognition [of letters as the same we knew before] (see above, Mīmāṃsā Sūtras, i. 19 f., p. 75). . . .

"But [the Naiyāyikas will ask] does not the recognition [of G and other letters as the same we knew before] refer to them as belonging to the [same] species, and not as being the [same] individual letters, since, in fact, they are perceived to be different [as uttered by] each

<sup>95</sup> Literally "although the rule of Pāṇini be awake."

person,—for otherwise it would be impossible for us to make any distinction [between different readers, as when we say], ‘Somaśarman is reading?’ This objection, however, shines as little as its predecessors, and has been answered in this way, viz. that as there is no proof of any distinction of individuality between G’s, etc., there is no evidence that we ought to suppose any such thing as a species of G’s, etc. [*i.e.* of G’s and other letters each constituting a species]. Just as to the man who is ignorant that G’s constitute a species, [that letter], though one only, becomes, through distinction of place, magnitude, form, individuality, and position, variously modified as distinct in place, as small, as great, as long, or as short, in the same way, to the man who is ignorant of an individuality of G’s, [*i.e.* of G’s being numerically different from each other], this letter, though only one, appears, from the distinction existing between the different persons who utter it, to be connected with their respective peculiarities; and as contrary characters are in this way erroneously ascribed [to the letter G], there is a fallacious appearance of distinctness [between different G’s]. But does this ascription of contrary characters which is thus regarded as creating a difference [between G’s] result from (1) the nature of the thing, or (2) from mere appearance? There is no proof of the first alternative, as otherwise an inherent difference being admitted between different G’s, it would be established that Chaitra had uttered ten (different) G’s, and not [the same] G ten times. But on the second supposition, there is no proof of any inherent distinction [between G’s]; for inherent oneness (or identity) is not destroyed by a difference of extrinsic disguises [or characteristics]. We must not conceive, from the merely apparent distinctness [occasioned by the separation of its parts] by jars, etc., that there is any inherent distinctness in the atmosphere itself. . . . It has been said by the Āchāryya ‘The object which the Naiyāyikas seek, by supposing a species, is in fact gained from the letter itself; and the object at which they aim by supposing an individuality in letters, is attained from audible sounds (*i.e.* the separate utterances of the different letters), so that the hypothesis of species, etc., is useless.’ And he thus reaches the conclusion that, ‘since, in respect of sounds (letters), recognition has so irresistible a power, [literally, wakes, unrestrained], it alone repels all inferences against the eternity [of sound, or the Veda].’ After some further

argumentation the Mīmānsaka arrives at the conclusion that "as every imputation of doubt which has germinated has been set aside by the underived character of the Veda, its authority in matters of duty is shewn to be self-evident."

I shall not attempt to carry further my translation of this abstruse discussion, as the remainder of it contains much which I should find great difficulty in comprehending.<sup>96</sup>

[Although not directly connected with the subject in hand, the following passage from Sankara's commentary on the Brahma Sūtras, iii: 2, 40,<sup>97</sup> will throw some further light on the doctrines of the Mīmānsā. In the two preceding Sūtras, as explained by Sankara, it had been asserted, both on grounds of reason and on the authority of the Veda, that God is the author of rewards. In the 40th Sūtra a different doctrine is ascribed to Jaimini :

*Dharmañ Jaiminir ataḥ eva | Jaiminis tv āchāryyo dharmam phalaṣya dātāram manyate | ata eva hetoḥ śruter upapattēś cha | śrūyate tāvad ayam arthaḥ "svarga-kāmo yajeta" ity evam ādīshu vākyaṣhu | tatra cha vidhi-śruter viśhaya-bhāvopagamād yāgaḥ svargasya utpādakaḥ iti gamyate | anyathā hy ananushṭhātriko yāgaḥ āpadyeta tatra asya upadeśasya vaiyarthyañ syāt | nanv anukṣhaṇa-vināśinaḥ karmanāḥ phalañ na upapadyate iti parityakto 'yam pakṣhaḥ | na esha doṣhaḥ śruti-prāmāṇyāt | śrutiś chet pramāṇaṁ yathā 'yam karma-phala-sambandhaḥ śrutaḥ upapadyate tathā kalpayitavyaḥ | na cha anutpādya kimapy apūrvam karma vinaśyat kālāntaritam phalañ dātuñ śaknoti ity ataḥ karmaṇo vā sūkṣhmā kāchid uttarāvasthā phalaṣya vā pūrvāvasthā apūrvam nāma asti iti tarkyate | upapadyate cha ayam arthaḥ uktena prakāreṇa | Īśvaras tu phalañ dadāti ity anupapannam avichitrasya kāraṇasya vichitra-kāryānupapattēḥ vaiśhama-nairghṛiṇya-prasangād anuṣṭhāna-vaiyarthypattēś cha | tasmād dharmād eva phalam iti |*

"Jaimini says that for this reason virtue [is the giver of reward]. The Āchāryya Jaimini regards virtue [*i.e.* the performance of the prescribed rites and duties] as the bestower of reward.' 'For this reason,'

<sup>96</sup> In fact I have left out some pages of the translation which I had given in the first edition, as well as the corresponding portion of the text. I am indebted to the kindness of Professor Goldstücker for various suggestions towards the improvement of my translation. But two of the passages on which he had favoured me with his opinion are, to my own apprehension, so obscure, that I have omitted them.

<sup>97</sup> It is partly quoted in Prof. Banerjea's work on Hindu Philosophy.

and because it is proved by the Veda. This is the purport of the Vedic text, 'Let the man who seeks paradise, sacrifice,' and others of the same kind. As from this Vedic injunction we must infer the existence of an object [to be sought after] it is concluded that sacrifice has the effect of producing heavenly bliss; for otherwise we should be involved in the absurdity of a sacrifice without a performer [since no one would care to sacrifice without an object], and thus the injunction would become fruitless. But may it not be said that it is not conceivable that any fruit should result from a ceremony which perishes every moment, so that this view must be abandoned? No, this defect does not attach to our Mīmāṃsaka statement, since the Veda is authoritative. If the Veda be authority, this connection of the reward with the ceremony must be supposed to exist just as is proved by the Veda. But as a ceremony which perishes without generating any unseen virtue, cannot produce a reward at a distant time, it must be concluded that there is either a certain subtle ulterior form of the ceremony, or a certain subtle anterior form of the reward, which is called 'unseen virtue.' And this result is established in the manner before mentioned. But it is not proved that God bestows rewards, because it is inconceivable that a uniform Cause [such as He is] should produce various effects, and because the performance of ceremonies would be useless, owing to the partiality and unmercifulness which would attach [to the supposed arbiter of men's deserts]. Hence it is from virtue alone that reward results."

How far this passage may be sufficient to prove the atheism of the Mīmāṃsā, I will not attempt to say. Before we could decide on such a question, the other Sūtras of that school which refer to this question (if there be any such) would have to be consulted.

Professor Banerjea also quotes the following text from the popular work, the Vidvan-moda-tarangiṇī, in which the Mīmāṃsakas are distinctly charged with atheism :

*Devo na kaśchid bhuvanasya karttā bharttā na karttā 'pi eha kaśchid āste | karmānurūpāṇi śubhāśubhāni prāpnoti sarvo hi janaḥ phalāni | vedasyā karttā na cha kaśchid āste nityāḥ hi śabdāḥ rachanā hi nityā | prāmāṇyam asmin svataḥ eva siddham anādi-siddheḥ parataḥ katham tat |*

"There is no God, maker of the world; nor has it any sustainer or destroyer; for every man obtains a recompence in conformity with his



works. Neither is there any maker of the Veda, for its words are eternal, and their arrangement is eternal. Its authoritativeness is self-demonstrated, for since it has been established from eternity, how can it be dependent upon anything but itself?"

I learn from Professor Banerjea that the Mimāṃsaka commentator Prabhākara and his school treat the Pūrva Mimāṃsā as an atheistic system, while Kumārila makes it out to be theistic. In fact the latter author makes the following complaint at the commencement of his Vārttika, verse 10: *Prāyenaiva hi Mimāṃsā loke lokāyatikṛitā | tām. āstika-pathe karttum ayaṃ yatnaḥ kṛito mayā |* "For in practice the Mimāṃsā has been for the most part converted into a Lokāyata<sup>98</sup> (atheistic) system; but I have made this effort to bring it into a theistic path." See also the lines which are quoted from the Padma Purāṇa by Vijnāna Bhikshu, commentator on the Sāṅkhya aphorisms, in a passage which I shall adduce further on.]

It appears from a passage in Patanjali's Mahābhāshya, that that great grammarian was of opinion that, although the sense of the Veda is eternal, the order of the words has not continued uniform; and that it is from this order having been variously fixed by Kaṭha, Kalāpa, and other sages, that different portions of the Indian scriptures are called by their names.

The following passages from the Mahābhāshya, and from the Commentaries of Kaiyyāṭa and Nāgojibhaṭṭa thereon, are extracted from the fuller quotations given by Professor Goldstücker in pp. 147 f. of the Preface to his Mānava-kalpa-sūtra.

Patanjali: *Nanu cha uktaṃ "na hi chhandāṃsi kriyante nityāni chhandāṃsi" iti | yadyapy artho nityaḥ | yā tv asau varṇānupūrvī sā anityā tad-bhedāc cha etad bhavati Kāṭhakaṃ Kālāpakam Maudakam Paippalādakam ityādi . . . | Kaiyyāṭa: "Nityāni" iti | karttur asmaranāt teshāṃ iti bhavaḥ | "yā tv asāv" iti | mahāpralayādishu varṇānupūrvī-vināse punar utpadya ṛishayaḥ, saṃskārātīśayād vedārthaṃ smṛitvā śabdā-rachanaḥ vidadhāti ity arthaḥ | "tad-bhedād" iti | ānupūrvī-bhedād ity arthaḥ | tataś cha Kāṭhādayo vedānupūrvyāḥ karttāraḥ eva ityādi | Nāgojibhaṭṭa: Aṃśena vedasya nityatvaṃ svkṛitya aṃśena anityatvam āha "yadyapy arthaḥ" iti | anena vedatvam śabdārthobhaya-vṛitti-dhvanitvam | nanu "dhātā yathā pūrvam akalpayad" ityādi-śrūti-balena*

<sup>98</sup> See Colebrooke's Misc. Ess. i. 402 ff., or p. 259 ff. of Williams and Norgate's ed.

ānupūrvī api sā eva iti navya-pūrva-mīmāṃsā-siddhāntāt sā nityā iti ayuktam ata āha “mahāpralayādishv” iti | ānupūrvyās tat-tat-kṣaṇa-ghaṭitatvena anityatvam iti bhāvaḥ iti kechit | taḥ na | “yadyapy artho nityaḥ” ityādi-vākya-śeṣha-virodhāt | arthasyāpi jyotiṣṭomāder anityatvāt | pravāhāvichchedena nityatvaṃ tu ubhayaḥ api tasmād manvantara-bhedena ānupūrvī bhinnā eva “prati-manvantaraṃ chaishā śrutir anyā vidhīyate” ity ukter ity anye | pare tu | “artho nityaḥ” ity atra kṛitakatva-virodhy-anityatvasya eva ābhyupagamaḥ pūrva-pakṣiṇā tādrīśa-nityatvasya eva chhandasū ukteḥ | evaṃ cha artha-śabdēna atra īśvaraḥ | mukhyatayā tasya eva sarva-veda-tātparyya-vishayatvāt | “vedaiś cha sarvair aham eva vedyāḥ” iti Gītokter ity āhūḥ | varṇānupūrvyāḥ anityatve mūnam āha “tad-bhedācch cha” iti | anityatva-vyūpya-bhedena tatsiddhiḥ | bhedo ’tra nānātvaḥ | Īśvare tu na nānātvaḥ | bhede mānaṃ vyavahāram āha | “Kāṭhaka” ityādi | arthaikyēpy ānupūrvī-bhedād eva Kāṭhaka-kālāpakādi-vyavahāraḥ iti bhāvaḥ | atra ānupūrvī anityā ity ukteḥ padāni tāny eva iti dhvanitvam | tad āha “tataś cha Kāṭhādayaḥ” ityādi |

As Professor Goldstücker has only given (in p. 146 of his Preface) a translation of the above extract from Patanjali, and has left the passages from Kaiyyaṭa and Nāgojibhaṭṭa untranslated, I shall give his version of the first, and my own rendering of the two last.

*Patanjali*: “Is it not said, however, that ‘the Vedas are not made, but that they are permanent (*i.e.* eternal)?’ (Quite so); yet though their sense is permanent, the order of their letters has not always remained the same; and it is through the difference in this latter respect that we may speak of the versions of the Kāṭhas, Kalāpas, Mudakas, Pippalādakas, and so on.” *Kaiyyaṭa on Patanjali*: “‘Eternal;’ by this word he means that they are so, because no maker of them is remembered. By the words, ‘the order of their letters,’ etc., it is meant that, the order of the letters being destroyed in the great dissolutions of the universe, etc., the rishis, when they are again created, recollecting; through their eminent science, the sense of the Veda, arrange the order of the words. By the phrase, ‘through the difference of this,’ is meant the difference of order. Consequently, Kāṭha and the other sages [to whom allusion was made] are the authors of the order of the Veda.” *Nāgojibhaṭṭa on Patanjali and Kaiyyaṭa*: “Admitting in part the eternity of the Veda, he, Patanjali, declares in

the words, 'though the sense is eternal,' etc., that it (the Veda) is also in part not eternal. By this clause it is implied that the character of the Veda as such is constituted both by the words and by the sense.<sup>99</sup> But is not the order also eternal, since it is a settled doctrine of the modern Mīmāṃsakas, on the strength of such Vedic texts as this, 'the creator made them as before,' etc., that the order also is the very same? No; this is incorrect, and in consequence, he (Kaiyyaṭa) says, 'in the great dissolutions,' etc. Some say the meaning of this is, that the order is not eternal, inasmuch as it is formed in particular moments. But this is wrong, because it is opposed to the conclusion of the sentence, 'though their sense is eternal,' etc., and because the objects signified also, such as the jyotiṣṭoma sacrifice, are not eternal. Others say that both the sense and the order of the words are eternal [or permanent], owing to the continuity of the tradition; and that, consequently, it is in different manvantaras that the order of the words is different, according to the text, 'in every manvantara this śruti (Veda) is made different.' Others again think that in the words, 'the sense is eternal,' etc., an admission is made by an objector of an eternity opposed to the idea of production, since it is only such a [qualified] eternity that is mentioned in the Veda; and that thus the word 'sense,' or, 'object' (*arthah*), here refers to Īśvara, because he is the principal object which is had in view in the whole of the Veda, according to the words of the Bhagavad-gītā (xv. 15), 'It is I whom all the Vedas seek to know.' He next states the proof of the assertion that the order of the letters is not eternal, in the words, 'through the difference of this,' etc. The difference in the order is proved by the difference in the things included under the category of non-eternity. Difference here means variety. But in Īśvara (God), there is no variety. He declares current usage to be the proof of difference, in the words 'Kāṭhaka,' etc., which mean that, though the sense is the same, we use the distinctions of Kāṭhaka, Kālā-paka, etc., in consequence of the difference of arrangement. Here by saying that the order is not eternal, it is implied that the words are the same. And this is what is asserted in the words [of Kaiyyaṭa], 'consequently Kaṭha and the other sages,' etc.

<sup>99</sup> I am indebted to Professor Goldstücker for a correction of my former rendering of this sentence, and of several others in this passage of Nāgojibhaṭṭa.

After quoting these passages at greater length than I have given them, Professor Goldstücker goes on to remark in his note: "I have quoted the full gloss of the three principal commentators, on this important Sūtra [of Pāṇini] and its Vārttikas, because it is of considerable interest in many respects. . . . We see Kaiyyāṭa and Nāgojibhaṭṭa writhing under the difficulty of reconciling the eternity of the Veda with the differences of its various versions, which, nevertheless, maintain an equal claim to infallibility. Patanjali makes rather short work of this much vexed question; and unless it be allowed here to render his expression *varṇa* (which means 'letter'), 'word,' it is barely possible even to understand how he can save consistently the eternity or permanence of the 'sense' of the Veda. That the modern Mīmāṃsists maintain not only the 'eternity of the sense,' but also the 'permanence of the text,' which is tantamount to the exclusive right of one single version, we learn, amongst others, from Nāgojibhaṭṭa. But as such a doctrine has its obvious dangers, it is not shared in by the old Mīmāṃsists, nor by Nāgoji, as he tells us himself. He and Kaiyyāṭa inform us therefore that, *amongst other* theories, there is one, according to which the order of the letters (or rather words) in the Vaidik texts got lost in the several Pralayas or destructions of the worlds; and since each manvantara had its own revelation, which differed only in the expression, not in the sense of, the Vaidik texts, the various versions known to these commentators represent these successive revelations, which were 'remembered,' through their 'excessive accomplishments,' by the Rishis, who in this manner produced, or rather reproduced, the texts current in their time, under the name of the versions of the Kaṭhas, Kalāpas, and so on. In this way each version had an equal claim to sanctity. There is a very interesting discussion on the same subject by Kumārila, in his Mīmāṃsa-vārttika (i. 3, 10)."

III. *The Vedānta*.—I proceed to adduce the reasonings by which Bādarāyaṇa, the reputed author of the Brahma, S'ārīraka, or Vedānta Sūtras, as expounded by Śāṅkara Āchāryya in his *S'ārīraka-mīmāṃsā-bhāṣya*, or commentary on those Sūtras, defends the eternity and authority of the Veda. His views, as we shall see, are not by any means identical with those of Jaimini and his school. After discussing the question whether any persons but men of the three highest tribes are qualified for divine knowledge, the author of the Sūtras comes to the conclusion

that Sūdras, or persons of the fourth tribe, are incompetent, while beings superior to man, the gods, are competent<sup>100</sup> (Colebrooke's Misc: Ess. i. 348, or p. 223 of Williams and Norgate's ed.) In Sūtra, i. 3, 26, the author determines that the gods have a desire for final emancipation, owing to the transitoriness of their glory, and a capacity for attaining it, because they possess the qualities of corporeality, etc.; and that there is no obstacle which prevents their acquiring divine knowledge. A difficulty, however, having been raised that the gods cannot be corporeal, because, if they were so, it is necessary to conceive that they would be corporeally present (as priests actually are) at the ceremonial of sacrifice, in which they are the objects of worship,—a supposition which would not consist with the usual course of such ceremonies, at which the gods are not seen to be corporeally present, and would, in fact, involve an impossibility, since Indra, for example, being but one, could not be corporeally present at numerous sacrifices at once;—this difficulty is solved (under Sūtra i. 3, 27) in two ways, either by supposing (1) that the gods assume different forms, and are present at many sacrifices at once, although invisible to mortals; or by considering (2) that, as a sacrifice is offered to (and not, by) a deity, many persons may present their oblations to that deity at once, just as one Brāhman may be saluted by many different persons at the same time. It is, therefore, concluded that the corporeal nature of the gods is not inconsistent with the practice of sacrifice. Having settled these points, Sankara comes to Sūtra i. 3, 28 :

“*Śabde iti chet | na | atah prabhavāt | pratyakshānumānābhyām*” |

*Mā nāma vighrahavattve devādīnām abhyupagamyamāne karmani kaśchid virodhaḥ prasajī | śabde tu virodhaḥ prasajyeta | katham | Autpattikaṁ hi śabdasya arthena sambandham āśritya “anapekshatvād” iti vedasya prāmānyaṁ sthāpitam | Idānīm tu vighrahavati devatā 'bhyupagamyamānā yadyapy aiśvarya-yogād yugapad aneka-karma-sambandhīni havīmshi bhunjīta tathāpi vighraha-yogād asmād-ādi-vaj janana-maranavati sū, iti nityasya śabdasya anityena arthena nitya-sambandhe prāṭīyamāne yad vaidike śabde prāmānyaṁ sthitaṁ tasya virodhaḥ syād iti chet | na ayam apy asti virodhaḥ | kasmād “ataḥ prabhavāt” | Atah eva*

<sup>100</sup> For a discussion of the different question whether the gods can practise the ceremonies prescribed in the Vedas, see the First Volume of this work, p. 365, note.

*hi vaidikāt śabdād devādikaṁ jagat prabhavati | Nanu “janmādi asya yataḥ” (Brahma Sūtras i. 1, 2) iti brahma-prabhavatvaṁ jagato ’vadhā-ritāṁ katham iha śabda-prabhavatvam uchyate | Anichā yadi nāma vaidikāt śabdād asya prabhavo ’bhyupagataḥ katham etāvātā vīrodhaḥ śabde pariḥritaḥ | yāvātā Vasavo Rudrāḥ Ādityāḥ Viśvedevāḥ Marutaḥ ity ete ’rthāḥ anityāḥ eva utpattimattvāt | Tad-anityatve cha iad-vāchakānāṁ vaidikānāṁ Vasv-ādi-śabdānāṁ anityatvaṁ keṇa vāryjyate | Prasiddhāṁ hi loka Devadattasya putre utpanne Yajnadattaḥ iti tasya nāma kriyate iti | Tasmād virodhaḥ eva śabde iti chet | na | Gavādi-śabdārtha-sambandhanityatva-darśanāt | Na hi gavādi-vyaktinām utpattimattve tad-ākṛitīnām apy utpattimattvaṁ syād dravya-guna-karmanāṁ hi vyaktayaḥ eva utpadyante na ākṛitayaḥ | Ākṛitibhiḥ cha śabdānāṁ sambandho na vyaktibhiḥ | vyaktinām ānantiyāt sambandha-grahanānupāpatteḥ | Vyaktishu utpadyamānāsv apy ākṛitīnāṁ nityatvād na gavādi-śabdeshu kaśchid virodho drīsyate | Tathā devādi-vyakti-prabhavābhyupagame ’pi ākṛiti-nityatvād na kaśchid Vasv-ādi-śabdeshu virodhaḥ iti drashtavyam | Ākṛiti-viśeṣha tu devādinām mantrārthavādādibhyo vighrahavattvādy-avagamād avagantavyaḥ | Sthāna-viśeṣha-sambandha-nimittāś cha Indrādi-śabdāḥ senāpatyādi-śabda-vat | Tatas cha yo yas tat tat sthānam adhitishṭhati sa sa Indrādi-śabdair abhidhīyate iti na dosho bhavati | Na cha idaṁ śabda-prabhavatvam Brahma-prabhavatva-vad upādāna-kāranatvābhiprāyena uchyate | kathaṁ tarhi sthiti-vāchakātmanā nitye śabde nityārtha-sambandhini śabda-vyavāhāra-yogyārtha-vyakti-nishpattir “ataḥ prabhavaḥ” ity uchyate | katham punar avagamyate śabdāt prabhavati jagad iti | “pratyakshānumānābhyām” | Pratyakshaṁ śrutiḥ | prāmāṇyam prati anapekshatvāt | anumānaṁ smṛitiḥ | prāmāṇyam prati sāpekshatvāt | Te hi śabda-pūrvāṁ śṛishtiṁ darśayataḥ | “Ete” iti vai prajāpatir devān asṛijata “asṛigram” iti manushyān “indavaḥ” iti pitṛīmś “tirah pavitram” iti grahān “āsavaḥ” iti stotraṁ “viśvāni” iti śāstram “abhi saubhagā” ity anyāḥ prajāḥ iti śrutiḥ | Tathā ’nyatrūpi “sa manasā vācham mithunaṁ samabhavad” (Satapaṭha Brāhmaṇa x. 6, 5, 4, and Bṛihadāraṇyaka Upanishad, p. 50) ityādinā tatra tatra śabda-pūrvikā śṛishtiḥ śrāvayate | Smṛitir api “anādi-nidhanā nityā vāg utsṛisṭā svayambhuvā | ādau vedamayī divyā yataḥ sarvāḥ pravṛittayaḥ” ity utsargo ’py ayaṁ vāchāḥ sampradāya-pravarttanātmako drashtavyaḥ anādi-nidhanāyāḥ anyādṛiśāsya utsargasya asamabhavāt | Tathā “nāma rūpaṁ cha bhūtānāṁ karmaṇāṁ cha pravarttanam | Veda-śabdebhya evādau nirmame sa*

*maheśvaraḥ*” iti | “*sarveśhāṁ cha sa nāmāni karmāni cha pṛithak pṛithak | Veda-śabdebhya evādau pṛithak śaṁsthās cha nirmame*” iti cha | *Apiccha chikīrshitam arthaṁ anuṭiṣṭhan tasya vāchakaṁ śabdān pūrvaṁ smṛtvā paśchāt tan artham anuṭiṣṭhati iti sarveśhāṁ naḥ pratyakṣam etat | Tathā prajāpater api sraṣṭuḥ śṛiṣṭeḥ pūrvaṁ vaidikāḥ śabdāḥ manasi prādūrbabhūvuḥ paśchāt tad-anugātān arthān sasarija iti gamyate | Tathā cha śrutiḥ “ sa bhūr iti vyāharan bhūmim asṛijata ”<sup>101</sup> ity-evam-ādikā bhūr-ādi-śabdebhyaḥ eva manasi prādurbhūtebhyo bhūr-ādi-lokān prādurbhūtān śṛiṣṭān darśayati | kim-ātmakam punaḥ śabdān abhipretya idaṁ, śabda-prabhavatvam uchyate | sphoṭam ity āha | . . . Tasmād nityāt śabdāt sphoṭa-rūpād abhidhāyakāt kriyā-kāraka-phala-lakṣhaṇaṁ jagad abhidheya-bhūtam prabhavatīti | . . . Tatas cha nityebhyaḥ śabdebhyo devādi-vyaktinām prabhavaḥ ity aviruddham |*

Sūtra i. 3, 29. “*Ata eva cha nityatvam*” | *svatantrasya karttuḥ smaranād eva hi sthite vedasya nityatve devādi-vyakti-prabhavābhyupagamena tasya virodham āśankya “ataḥ prabhavād” iti parihritya idānīm tad eva veda-nityatvaṁ sthitaṁ draḍhayati “ata eva cha nityatvam” iti | ataḥ eva cha niyatākṛiter devāder jagato veda-śabda-prabhavatvād eva veda-śabda-nityatvam api pratyetyavyam | Tathā cha mantra-varṇaḥ “yajnena vāchaḥ padavīyam āyan tām anvavindann riṣishu pravishṭām” iti sthītām eva vācham anuvinnām darśayati | Vedavyāsaś cha evam eva smarati (Mahābhārata, Vanap. 7660) | “yugānte ’ntarhitān vedān setihāsān maharshayaḥ | lebhīre tapasā pūrvam anujnātāḥ svayambhuvā” iti |*

“Sūtra i. 3, 28 : ‘But it is said that there will be a contradiction in respect of sound (or the word); but this is not so, because the gods are produced from it, as is proved by intuition and inference.’”

“Be it so, that though the corporeality of the gods, etc., be admitted, no contradiction will arise in respect of the ceremonial. Still [it will be said that] a contradiction will arise in regard to the word. How? [In this way.] By founding upon the inherent connection of a word with the thing signified, the authority of the Veda had been established by the aphorism ‘*anapekṣatvāt*,’ etc. (Mīmāṁsā Sūtras i. 2, 21; see above, p. 75.) But now, while it has been admitted that the deities are corporeal, it will follow that (though from their possession of divine power they can at one and the same time partake of the oblations

<sup>101</sup> Compare S’atapatha Brāhmaṇa, xi. 1, 6, 3.

offered at numerous sacrifices), they will still, owing to their corporeality, be subject, like ourselves, to birth and death; and hence, the eternal connection of the eternal word with an object which is non-eternal being lost, a contradiction will arise in regard to the authority proved to belong to the word of the Veda; [for thus the word, not having any eternal connection with non-eternal things, could not be authoritative]. But neither has this supposed contradiction any existence. How? 'Because they are produced from it.' Hence the world of gods, etc., is produced from the Vedic word. But according to the aphorism (Brahma Sūtras i. 1, 2) 'from him comes the production, etc., of all this,' it is established that the world has been produced from Brahma. How, then, is it said here that it is produced from the word? And, moreover, if it be allowed that the world is produced from the Vedic word, how is the contradiction in regard to the word thereby removed, inasmuch as all the following classes of objects, viz. the Vasus, Rudras, Ādityas, Viśvedevas, Maruts, are non-eternal, because produced; and when they are non-eternal, what is there to bar the non-eternity of the Vedic words Vasu, etc., by which they are designated? For it is a common saying, 'It is only when a son is born to Devadatta, that that son receives the name of Yajnadatta,' [*i.e.* no child receives a name before it exists]. Hence a contradiction does arise in regard to [the eternity of] the word. To this objection we reply with a negative; for in the case of such words as cow we discover an eternal connection between the word and the thing. For although individual cows, etc., come into existence, the species to which they belong does not begin to exist, as it is individual substances, qualities, and acts, which begin to exist, and not their species. Now it is with species that words are connected, and not with individuals, for as the latter are infinite, such a connection would in their case be impossible. Thus as species are eternal (though individuals begin to exist) no contradiction is discoverable in the case of such words as cow, etc. In the same way it is to be remarked that though we allow that the individual gods, etc., have commenced to exist, there is no contradiction [to the eternity of the Vedic word] in the [existence of the] words Vasu, etc. [which denote those individual gods], since the species to which they belong are eternal. And the fact that the gods, etc., belong to particular species may be learned from this, that we discover their corporeality and other attributes in



the hymns and arthavādas (illustrative remarks in the Vedas), etc. The words Indra, etc., are derived from connection with some particular post, like the words 'commander of an army' (*senāpati*), etc. Hence, whosoever occupies any particular post, is designated by the words Indra, and so forth; [and therefore Indra and the other gods belong to the species of occupants of particular posts]. Thus there is no difficulty. And this derivation from the word is not, like production from Brahma, meant in the sense of evolution, from a material cause. But how, since language is eternal and connected with eternal objects, is it declared in the phrase 'produced from it' that the production of individual things, corresponding to the ordinary sense of words, is effected by a thing (sound or language), the very nature of which it is to denote continuance [and, not such change as is involved in the idea of production?] <sup>102</sup> How, again, is it known that the world is produced from the word? The answer is, [it is known] 'from intuition and inference.' 'Intuition' means the Veda, because it is independent of any (other authority). 'Inference' means the smṛiti, because it is dependent on another authority (the Veda). These two demonstrate that the creation was preceded by the word. Thus the Veda says, 'at (or with) the word *ete* (these) Prajāpati created the gods; at *asṛigram* (they were poured out) he created men; at *indavaḥ* (drops of soma) he created the pitṛis; at *tiraḥ pavitram* (through the filter) he created the libations; at *āsavaḥ* (swift) he created hymns; at *viśvāni* (all) he created praise; and at the words *abhi saubhagā* (for the sake of blessings) he created other creatures.' <sup>103</sup> And in another place it is said 'with his

<sup>102</sup> This sentence is rather obscure.

<sup>103</sup> According to Govinda Ānanda's Gloss this passage is derived from a Chhandoga Brāhmaṇa. It contains a mystical exposition of the words from Rig-veda, ix. 62, 1 (= Sāma-veda, ii. 180) which are imbedded in it, viz. *ete asṛigram indavas tiraḥ pavitram āsavaḥ | viśvāni abhi saubhagā*. "These hurrying drops of soma have been poured through the filter, to procure all blessings." (See Benfey's translation.) It was by the help of Dr. Pertsch's alphabetical list of the initial words of the verses of the Rig-veda (in Weber's Indische Studien, vol. iii.) that I discovered the verse in question in the Rig-veda. Govinda Ānanda gives us a specimen of his powers as Vedic exegete in the following remarks on this passage: *Ity etan-mantra-sthaiḥ padaiḥ smṛitvā Brahmā devān asṛijata | tattra "ete" iti padam sarvanāmatvād devānām smārakam asṛig rudhiraṁ tat pradhāne dehe ramante iti "asṛigrāḥ" manushyāḥ | chandra-sthānām pitṛiṇām indro-sabdāḥ smārakah ityādī* | "Brahmā created the gods, etc., in conformity with the recollections suggested by the various words in this verse. The word *ete* ('these') as a pronoun suggested the gods. The beings who disport

mind he entered into conjugal connection with Vāch (speech).’ (S. P. Br. x. 6, 5, 4, Bṛih. Ār. Up. p. 50.) By these and other such texts the Veda in various places declares that creation was preceded by the word. And when the Smṛiti says, ‘In the beginning a celestial voice, eternal, without beginning or end, co-essential with the Vedas, was uttered by Svayambhū, from which all activities [proceeded]’ (see above, p. 16), the expression ‘utterance of a voice’ is to be regarded as employed in the sense of the origination of a tradition, since it is inconceivable that a voice which was ‘without beginning or end,’ could be uttered in the same sense as other sounds. Again, we have this other text, ‘In the beginning Maheśvara created from the words of the Veda the names and forms of creatures, and the origination of actions;’ and again, ‘He created in the beginning the several names, functions, and conditions of all creatures from the words of the Veda.’ (See above, pp. 16 and 6.) And it is a matter of common observation to us all, that when any one is occupied with any end which he wishes to accomplish, he first calls to mind the word which expresses it, and then proceeds to effect his purpose. So, too, in the case of Prajāpati the creator, we conclude that before the creation the words of the Veda were manifested in his mind, and that afterwards he created the objects which resulted from them. Thus the Vedic text which says, ‘uttering *bhūh*, he created the earth (*bhūmi*), etc,’ intimates that the different worlds, earth, and the rest, were manifested, *i.e.* created from the words *bhūh*, etc., manifested in his mind. Of what sort, now, was this word which is intended, when it is said that the world was produced from the word? It was *sphoṭa* (disclosure or expression), we are told.”

I shall not quote the long discussion on which Sankara here enters, regarding this term. (See Colebrooke’s Misc. Ess. i. 365 ff.; Ballantyne’s Christianity contrasted with Hindu Philosophy, pp. 192 ff.; the same author’s translation of the commencement of the Mahābhāshya, p. 10; and Professor Müller’s article on the last-named work in the Journal of the German Or. Soc. vii. 170). Sankara states his conclusion themselves in bodies of which blood (*asrik*) is a predominant element, were *asrigrūh*, ‘men.’ The word *indu* (which means both the soma plant and the moon) suggested the fathers who dwell in the moon,” etc., etc. The sense of *asrigram*, as given above in the text, is “were poured out.” Govinda Ānanda, no doubt, understood it correctly, though he considered it necessary to draw a mystical sense out of it.

to be that "from the eternal word, in the form of *sphoṭa*, which expresses [all things], the object signified by it, viz. the world, under the three characters of action, causer, and the results of action, is produced," and finishes his remarks on this Sūtra (i. 3, 28) by observing: "Consequently there is no contradiction in saying that the individual gods, etc., are derived from eternal words." He then proceeds to Sūtra i. 3, 29: "Hence results the eternity of the Vedas." On this he observes, "The eternity of the Veda had been established by the fact of its being described in the Smṛiti as the work of a Self-dependent Maker. But a doubt had been suggested that this eternity is inconsistent with the admission that individual gods, etc., have commenced to exist. This doubt, however, having been set aside by the preceding aphorism, 'Since they are produced from it,' he now confirms the eternity of the Veda (which had been already proved) by the words of the Sūtra before us, which mean that as a result of this very fact that the world, consisting of gods and other beings belonging to fixed species, was produced from the words of the Vedas, the eternity of these Vedic words themselves also must be believed. Accordingly, the words of the hymn, 'by sacrifice they followed the path of Vāch, and found her entered into the rishis' (R.V. x. 71, 3; see the First Volume of this work p. 254, and Volume Second, p. 220) prove that Vāch already existed when she was discovered. And in the very same way Vedavyāsa records that, 'formerly the great rishis, empowered by Svayambhū, obtained through devotion the Vedas and Itihāsas, which had disappeared at the end of the preceding yuga.'"

Sāyana refers to the Sūtra just quoted (i. 3, 29), as well as to another of the Vedānta aphorisms (i. 1, 3) in p. 20 of the introduction to his Commentary on the Rig-veda in these words:

*Nanu bhagavatā Bādarāyaṇena Vedasya Brahma-kāryyatvaṃ sūtritam |*  
*"śāstra-yonitvād" iti | ṛigvedādi-śāstra-kāranatvād Brahma sarvajnam*  
*iti sūtrārthaḥ | bādham | na etāvatā paurusheyatvam bhavati | manushya-*  
*nirmitatvābhāvāt | īdṛśam apaurusheyatvam abhipretya vyavahāra-daśā-*  
*yām akāśādi-vad nityatvam Bādarāyaṇenaiva devatādhikarane sūtritam |*  
*"ata evacha nityatvam" iti |*

"But it is objected that the venerable Bādarāyaṇa has declared in the aphorism 'since he is the source of the śāstra (Brahma Sūtras i. 1, 3), that the Veda is derived from Brahma; the meaning of the aphorism being, that since Brahma is the cause of the Rig-veda and other Śāstras,

he is omniscient. This is true; but it furnishes no proof of the human origin of the Veda, since it was not formed by a man. Bādarāyaṇa had in view such a superhuman origin of the Veda, when in the [other] aphorism 'hence also [its] eternity is to be maintained,' (which is contained in the section on the deities), he declared it to be, like the æther, etc., eternal, during the period of mundane existence."<sup>104</sup>

The remarks of Sankara on the Brahma Sūtra (i. 1, 3) above referred to, begin as follows:

*Mahataḥ ṛig-vedādeḥ śāstrasya aneka-vidyā-sthānopabrīṃhitāsya pra-  
dīpa-vat sarvārtha-dyotinas sarvajna-kalpasya yoniḥ kāraṇam Brahma | na  
hi idrīśasya śāstrasya ṛigvedādi-lākṣhaṇasya sarvajna-guṇānvitasya sar-  
vajnād anyataḥ sambhavo 'sti | Yad yad vistarārthaṃ śāstraṃ yasmāt  
puruṣa-viśeṣhāt sambhavati yathā vyākaraṇādi 'Pāṇiny-āder jneyaika-  
deśārtham api sa tato 'py adhikatara-vijnānaḥ iti prasiddhaṃ loke | kimu  
vaktavyam aneka-śākhā-bheda-bhinnasya deva-tiryāṇ-manuṣhya-varṇā-  
śramādi-pravibhāga-hetor ṛig-vedādy-ākhyasya sarva-jnānākāryasya apra-  
yatnena eva līlā-nyāyena puruṣa-niśvāsa-vad yasmād mahato bhūtād  
yoneḥ sambhavaḥ ("asya mahato bhūtasya niśvasitam etad yad ṛig-vedaḥ"  
ity-ādeḥ śrutes) tasya mahato bhūtasya niratiśayaṃ sarvajnatvaṃ sarva-  
śaktitvaṃ cha iti |*

"Brahma is the source of the great Śāstra, consisting of the Rig-veda, etc., augmented by numerous branches of science, which, like a lamp, illuminates all subjects, and approaches to omniscience. Now such a Śāstra, distinguished as the Rig-veda, etc., possessed of the qualities of an omniscient being, could not have originated from any other than an omniscient being. When an extensive treatise on any subject is produced by any individual, as the works on Grammar, etc., were by Pāṇini and others,—even although the treatise in question have for its subject only a single department of what is to be known,—it is a

<sup>104</sup> See the quotation from the Vedārtha-prakāśa, at the top of p. 70, above. The æther (*ākāśa*) is uncreated according to the Vaiśeṣhikas (Kāṇāda's Sūtras, ii. 1, 28, with Sankara Miśra's commentary, and Sankara Āchāryya on Vedānta Sūtra, ii. 3, 3: *Na hy ākāśasya utpattiḥ sambhāvayituṃ śakyā śrīmat-Kaṇabhug-abhiprāyānusārīṣu jīvatsū* | "The production of the æther cannot be conceived as possible, so long as those who follow Kāṇāda's view retain their vitality"). The Vedānta Sūtras, ii. 3, 1-7, on the other hand, assert its production by Brahma, in conformity with the text of the Taittirīyakas which affirms this: *Tasmād vai etasmād ātmanah ākāśah sambhūtaḥ* | "From that Soul the æther was produced."

matter of notoriety that the author is possessed of still greater knowledge than is contained in his work.<sup>105</sup> What then need we say of the transcendent omniscience and omnipotence of that great Being from whom issued without effort, as an amusement, like a man's breathing (according to the Vedic text 'the Rig-veda is the breathing of that great Being'), that mine of universal knowledge called the Rig-veda, etc., which is divided into many śākhās, and which gave rise to the classes of gods, beasts, and men, with their castes and orders?"<sup>106</sup>

It is clear from the aphorism last quoted that there is a distinction between the doctrine of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā, and the Uttara Mīmāṃsā, or Vedānta, regarding the origin of the Veda, in so far as the former is silent on the subject of its derivation from Brahma, which the latter asserts. It is also to be observed that Sāyaṇa understands the eternity of the Veda as laid down in the Brahma Sūtras in a qualified sense (as limited to the duration of the mundane period) and not as an absolute eternity.

I may remark that in their treatment of the Vedic passages which they cite, the practice of Bādarāyaṇa, the author of the Brahma Sūtras, and of his commentator, Sankara Āchāryya, corresponds to their theory of the infallibility of the sacred text. The doctrines inculcated in the Sūtras, and expounded and vindicated by the commentator, profess to be based on the Veda; and numerous texts are cited in their support. Such passages as coincide with the theories maintained in the Sūtras are understood in their proper or literal (*mukhya*) sense;

<sup>105</sup> Dr. Ballantyne (Aphorisms of the Vedānta, p. 8) renders the last words thus: . . . "that man, even in consideration of *that*, is inferred to be exceedingly knowing." Govinda Ānanda's note, however, confirms the rendering I have given. Part of it is as follows: *Yad yach chhāstraṁ yasmād aptāt sambhavati sa tataḥ sūtrād adhikārtha-jñānaḥ iti prasiddham* | "It is well known that the competent author from whom any treatise proceeds has a knowledge of more than that treatise (contains)." The idea here is somewhat similar to that in the second of Bishop Butler's Sermons "Upon the love of God": "Effects themselves, if we knew them thoroughly, would give us but imperfect notions of wisdom and power; much less of his Being in whom they reside." . . . "This is no more than saying that the Creator is superior to the works of his hands."

<sup>106</sup> An alternative explanation of the aphorism is given by the commentator, according to which it would mean: "The body of Scripture, consisting of the Rig-veda, etc., is the source, the cause, the proof, whereby we ascertain exactly the nature of this Brahma" (*athavā yathoktam rigvedādi-sūtraṁ yoniḥ kāraṇam pramāṇam asya Brahmano yathāvat svarūpādhiḡame*).

whilst other texts which appear to be at variance with the Vedantic dogmas, and to favour those of the other philosophical schools, are explained as being merely figurative (*gauṇa* or *bhākta*); or other interpretations are given. See, for example, the Brahma sūtras, i. 1, 6; ii. 4, 2 f., etc., with S'ankara's comments. The supposition of any real inconsistency between the different statements of the sacred volume is never for a moment entertained.<sup>107</sup> As, however, the different authors of the Vedic hymns, of the Brāhmanas, and even of the Upanishads, gave free expression to their own vague and unsystematic ideas and speculations on the origin of all things, and the relation of the Deity to the universe, and recognized no fixed standard of orthodox doctrine to which they were bound to conform,—it was inevitable that they should propound a great variety of opinions which were mutually irreconcilable. But as, in later times, the Vedas came to be regarded as supernatural and infallible books, it was necessary that those systematic theologians who sought to deduce from their contents any consistent theory of being and of creation, should attempt to shew that the discrepancies between the different texts were only apparent.

SECT. IX.—*Arguments of the followers of the Nyāya, Vaiśeshika, and Sāṅkhya Systems in support of the authority of the Vedas, but against the eternity of sound.*

I. *The Nyāya*.—The eternity of sound is, as we have already discovered from the allusions of the Mīmāṃsaka commentator, (above p. 73), denied by the followers of the Nyāya school. The consideration of this subject is begun in the following way in the Nyāya aphorisms of Gotama, as explained by Viśvanātha Bhaṭṭāchārya in the Nyāya-sūtra-vṛitti, ii. 81 :

<sup>107</sup> See S'ankara on the Br. Sūtras, iii. 31 (p. 844 of Bibl. Indica), where he says, *yadi punar ekasmin Brahmani bahūni vijnānāni vedāntāntreṣhu pratipādayishitāni teshāṃ ekam abhrāntam bhrāntāni itarāṇi ity anaśvāsa-prasango vedānteshu tasmād na tāvat pravivedāntam Brahma-vijnāna-bhedaḥ āśankituṃ śakyate* | “If, again, in the different Vedāntas (*i.e.* Upanishads) a variety of conceptions regarding the one Brahma be sought to be established, one of these (conceptions) will be correct, and the others erroneous, and thus the objection of being untrustworthy will attach to the Upanishads. It must not, therefore, be suspected that there is in each of the Upanishads a different conception of Brahma.”

*Vedasya prāmānyam āpta-prāmānyāt siddham | na cha idaṁ yujyate vedasya nityatvād ity āsankāyāṁ varṇānām anityatvāt kathāṁ tat-samudāya-rūpasya vedasya nityatvam ity āśayena śabdānityatva-prakaranam ārabhate | tatṛa 'siddhānta-sūtram' | "Ādimattvād aindriyakatvāt kṛitakatvād upachārāc cha" | 81. S'abdo 'nityaḥ ityādiḥ | ādimattvāt sakāranakatvāt' | nanu na sakāranakatvaṁ kaṅṭha-tālv-ādy-abhighātāder vyanjakātvenāpy uppatṭer atāḥ āha aindriyakatvād iti sāmānyavattve sati vahir-indriya-janya-laukika-pratyaksha-vishayatvād ity arthaḥ | . . . Aprayojakatvam āsankya āha kṛitakeṭi | kṛitake ghaṭādau yathā upachāro jnūnaṁ tathāiva kāryyatva-prakāraka-pratyaksha-vishayatvād ity arthaḥ | tathā cha kāryatvena anāhāryya-sārvalaukika-pratyaksha-balād anityatvam eva siddhati |*

“It has been proved (In the 68th Sūtra, see below) that ‘the authority of the Veda follows from the authority of the competent person who made it.’ But it may be objected that this is not a proper ground on which to base the authority of the Veda, since it is eternal. With the view of proving, in opposition to this, that since letters are not eternal, the Veda, which is a collection of letters, cannot be so either, the author of the Sūtras commences the section on the non-eternity of sound. The Sūtra laying down the established doctrine, is as follows: ‘Sound cannot be eternal, as (1) it had an origin, as (2) it is cognizable by sense, and (3) it is spoken of as factitious.’ Sound is non-eternal, etc., because (1) it had a beginning, *i.e.* because it had a cause. But it may be said that it had no cause, as, agreeably to the doctrine of the Mīmāṃsakas (see above, p. 74), the action of the throat and palate in pronunciation may merely occasion a manifestation of sound [without creating it]. In reply to this it is said (2) that sound is cognizable by sense, *i.e.* that though it belongs to a genus, it is an object of ordinary perception through an external sense.” [A different explanation given by other interpreters is next quoted, which I omit.] . . . “Then surmising that the preceding definition may be regarded as not to the point, the author adds the words ‘since it is spoken of as factitious,’ *i.e.* as jars and other such objects are spoken of as—are known to be—products, so, too, sound is distinguishable by sense as being in the nature of a product. And in consequence of this incontrovertible and universal perception of its being produced, it is proved that it cannot be eternal.” [Two other explanations of this last clause of the Sūtra are then added.]

Leaving the reader to study the details of the discussion in Dr. Ballantyne's aphorisms of the Nyāya (Part Second, pp. 77 ff.), I will pass over most of the Sūtras, and merely quote the principal conclusions of the Nyāya aphorist. In Sūtra 86 he says in opposition to the 13th Sūtra of the Mīmāṃsā (above, p. 74):

86. "*Prāg uchchāranād anupalambhād āvaranādy-anupalabdeḥ*" | *S'abdo yadi nityaḥ syād uchchāranāt prāg apy upalabhyeta śrotra-sannikarṣa-sattvāt | na cha atra pratibandhakam aṣṭi ity-āha āvaraneti āvaranādeḥ pratibandhakasya anupalabdhyā bhāva-nirṇayāt | deśāntaragamaṇāṃ tu śabdasya amūrttatvād na sambhāvyaṭe | atīndriyānanta-pratibandhakatva-kalpanām apekshya śabdānityatva-kalpanā eva laghīyasī iti bhāvaḥ |*

"Sound is not eternal, because it is not perceived before it is uttered, and because we do not perceive anything which should intercept it.' If sound were eternal, it would be perceived even before it was uttered, from its being in contact with the ear. [Sound, as Dr. Ballantyne explains, is 'admitted to be a quality of the all-pervading æther.'] And in the next words the aphorist says that there is no obstacle to its being so heard, since the non-existence of any hindrance, such as an intercepting medium, is ascertained by our not perceiving anything of that sort. And it is not conceivable that sound should have gone to another place [and for that reason be inaudible], since it has no defined form. The supposition that sound is non-eternal, is simpler than the supposition that there are an infinity of imperceptible obstacles to its perception."

The 89th and 90th Sūtras, with part of the comments on them, are as follows:

89. "*Asparśatvāt*" | *śabdō nityaḥ | asparśatvād gagana-vad iti bhāvaḥ |*  
 90. "*Na karmānityatvāt*" *asparśatvaṃ na śabda-nityatva-śādhakaṃ karmāni vyabhichārāt |*

89. "It may be said that sound is eternal, from its being, like the sky, intangible. 90. But this is no proof, for the intangibility of sound does not establish its eternity, since these two qualities do not always go together; for intangibility, though predicable, e.g. of action, fails to prove its eternity."

The 100th and following Sūtras are as follows:

100. "*Vināsa-kāraṇānupalabdeḥ*" | 101. "*Āśravaṇa-kāraṇānupalab-*



*dheḥ satata-śravaṇa-prasaṅgaḥ*” | *Yady apratyakshād abhāva-siddhis tadā 'śravaṇa-kāraṇasya apratyakshatvād āśravaṇam na syād iti satata-śravaṇa-prasaṅgaḥ, iti bhāvaḥ* | 102. “*Upalabhyamāne cha anupalabdher asattvād anapadeśaḥ*” | *Anumānādīnā upalabhyamāne vināśa-kāraṇe anupalabdher abhāvāt tvadīyo hetur anapadeśaḥ asādhakaḥ asiddhatvāt | janya-bhāvatvend vināśa-kalpanam iti bhāvaḥ* |

“It is said (100) that ‘sound must be eternal, because we perceive no cause why it should cease.’ The answer is (101), first, ‘that if the non-existence of any such cause of cessation were established by the mere fact of its not being perceived, such non-perception would occasion our hearing continually, which is an absurdity.’ And (102), secondly, ‘since such non-perception is not a fact, inasmuch as [a cause of the cessation of sound] is perceived, this argument falls to the ground.’ Since a cause for the cessation of sound is discovered by inference, etc., and thus the non-perception of any cause is seen to be untrue, this argument of yours proves nothing, because its correctness is not established. The purport is that we suppose, from sound being produced, that it must also be liable to perish.”

Sūtras 106–122 are occupied with a consideration of the question (above treated, pp. 73, 74, in Sūtras 10 and 16 of the Mīmāṃsā) whether letters can change or not. The conclusion at which Gotama arrives is, that the substance of letters cannot undergo any alteration, though they may be said to change when they are modified in quality by being lengthened, shortened, etc.

In a preceding part of the Second Book (Sūtras 57–68) Gotama treats of the Veda, and repels certain charges which are alleged against its authority. I shall quote most of these aphorisms, and cite the commentary more fully than Dr. Ballantyne has done. (See Ballantyne’s Nyāya Aphorisms, Part ii. pp. 56 ff.)

*Śabdasya dṛiṣṭādṛiṣṭārthakatvena dvaivīdhyam uktaṁ tatra cha adṛiṣṭārthaka-śabdasya vedasya prāmānyam parikṣhitum pūrva-pakṣahyati* | 57. “*Tad-aprāmānyam anṛita-vyāghāta-punarukta-doshabhyah*” | *Tasya dṛiṣṭārthaka-vyatirikta-śabdasya vedasya aprāmānyam | kutaḥ | anṛitatvādi-doshāt | tatra cha putreshṭi-kāryādau kvachit phalānutpattidarśanād anṛitatvam | vyāghātaḥ pūrvāpara-virodhaḥ | yathā “udite juhōti anudite juhōti samayādhyushite juhōti | śyāvo’sya āhutim abhyavaharati ya udite juhōti śavalo’sya āhutim abhyavaharati yo, nudite juhōti*

śyāva-śavalāv asya āhutim abhyavaharato yah samayādhyushite juhōti”  
 atra cha uditādi-vākyaṇām nindānumitānīṣṭa-sādhanatū-bodhaka-vākya-  
 virodhaḥ | paunaruktyād aprāmāṇyam | Yathā “trīḥ prathamām anvāha |  
 trīr uttamām anvāha” | ity atra uttamatvasya p̄rathamatva-p̄caryavasānāt  
 trīḥ kathanena cha paunaruktyam | eteshām aprāmāṇye tad-dṛiṣṭāntena  
 tad-eka-karttrikatvena tad-eka-jātīyatvena vā sarva-vedāp̄rāmāṇyaṁ sādha-  
 nīyam iti bhāvaḥ | siddhānta-sūtram | 58. “Na karma-karttrī-sādhana-  
 vaigunyat” | Na vedāp̄rāmāṇyaṁ karma-karttrī-ādhaṇa-vaigunyat pha-  
 lābhāvopapatteḥ | karmaṇḥ kriyāyāḥ vaigunyam ayathāvidhitvādi | kart-  
 tur vaigunyam avidvattvādi | sādhanasya havir-āder vaigunyam āprokṣi-  
 tatvādi | Yathokta-karmaṇaḥ phalābhāve hy anṛitatvam | na cha evam  
 asti iti bhāvaḥ | vyāghātāḥ pariharati | 59. “Abhyupetya kāla-bhede  
 doṣha-vachanāt” | na vyāghātāḥ iti śeṣaḥ | Agny-ādḥāna-kāle uditā-  
 homādīkam abhyupetya svīkrītya anudita-homādi-karane p̄rvokta-dōṣha-  
 kathanād na vyāghātāḥ ity arthaḥ | paunaruktyam pariharati | 60.  
 “Anuvāḍopapatteḥ cha” | chaḥ punar-arthe | anuvāḍopapatteḥ punar na  
 paunaruktyam | nishprayojanatve hi paunaruktyaṁ doṣaḥ | ukta-sthale  
 tv anuvāḍasya upapatteḥ prayojanasya sambhavāt | ekādaśa-sāmidhenīnām  
 prathamottamayos trīr abhidhāne hi panchadaśatvaṁ sambhavati | tathā-  
 cha panchadaśatvaṁ śrūyate | “Imam aham bhr̄trīvyam panchadaśāva-  
 reṇa vāg-vajreṇa cha bādhe yo ’smān dveshṭi yaṁ cha vayaṁ dviṣmaḥ”  
 iti | Anuvāḍasya sārthakatvaṁ loka-prasiddham iti āha | 61. “Vākya-  
 vibhāgasya cha artha-grahanāt” | Vākya-vibhāgasya | anuvāḍatvena  
 vibhaktā - vākyaṣya artha-grahanāt p̄rāyojana - svīkārāt | śiṣṭair iti  
 śeṣaḥ | śiṣṭāḥ hi vidhāyakānudevādakādi-bhedena vākyaṁ vibhājya anu-  
 vāḍakasyāpi saprayojanatvam manyante | Vede ’py evam iti bhāvaḥ | . . .  
 Evam aprāmāṇya-sādhaḥkaṁ nirasya p̄rāmāṇyaṁ sādhayati | 68. “Man-  
 trāyurveda-vach cha tat-p̄rāmāṇyam āpta-p̄rāmāṇyat” | Āptasya veda-  
 karttuḥ p̄rāmāṇyād yathārthopadesakatvād vedasya tad-uktatvam arthāl  
 labdham | tena ketunā vedāṣya p̄rāmāṇyam anumeyam | tatra dṛiṣṭāntam  
 āha mantrāyurveda-vad iti | mantrō vishādi-nūśakaḥ | āyurveda-bhāgāś  
 cha veda-sthaḥ eva | tatra saṁvādena p̄rāmāṇya-grahāt tad-dṛiṣṭāntena  
 vedatvāvachhedena p̄rāmāṇyam anumeyam | āptaṁ grihītam p̄rāmāṇyaṁ  
 yatra sa vedas tūdrīṣena vedatvena p̄rāmāṇyam anumeyam iti kechit |

“It had been declared (Nyāya Sūtras, i. 8) that verbal evidence is of two kinds, (1) that of which the subject-matter is seen, and (2) that of which the subject-matter is unseen. With the view, now, of testing

the authority of that verbal evidence which refers to unseen things, viz. the Veda, Gotama states the first side of the question. Sūtra 57. 'The Veda has no authority, since it has the defects of falsehood, self-contradiction, and tautology.' That verbal evidence, which is distinct from such as relates to visible objects, *i.e.* the Veda, has no authority. Why? Because it has the defects of falsehood, etc. Of these defects, that of 'falsehood' is established by the fact that we sometimes observe that no fruit results from performing the sacrifice for a son, or the like. 'Self-contradiction' is a discrepancy between a former and a later declaration. Thus the Veda says, 'he sacrifices when the sun is risen; he sacrifices when the sun is not yet risen; he sacrifices' [I cannot explain the next words]. 'A tawny [dog?] carries away the oblation of him who sacrifices after the sun has risen; a brindled [dog?] carries off the oblation of him who sacrifices before the sun has risen; and both of these two carry off the oblation of him who sacrifices.' . . . . Now here there is a contradiction between the words which enjoin sacrifices, and the words which intimate by censure that those sacrifices will occasion disastrous results. Again, the Veda has no authority, owing to its 'tautology,' as where it is said, 'he repeats the first thrice, he repeats the last thrice.' For as the lastness ultimately coincides with [?] the firstness, and as there is a triple repetition of the words, this sentence is tautological. Now since these particular sentences have no authority, the entire Veda will be proved by these specimens to stand in the same predicament, since all its other parts have the same author, or are of the same character, as these portions."

Here follows the Sūtra which conveys the established doctrine. "58. 'The Veda is not false; it is owing to some fault in the ceremonial, or the performer, or the instrument he employs, that any sacrifice is not followed by the promised results.' Faults in the ceremonial are such as its not being according to rule. Faults in the performer are such as ignorance. Faults in the instrument, *i.e.* in the clarified butter, etc., are such as its not being duly sprinkled, etc. For falsehood might be charged on the Veda, if no fruit resulted from a sacrifice when duly performed as prescribed; but such failure never occurs."

Gotama next repels the charge of self-contradiction in the Vedas. "59. 'There is no self-contradiction, for the fault is only imputed in case the sacrifice should be performed at a different time from that

at first intended.' The fault imputed to these sacrifices in the text in question would [only] be imputed if, after agreeing, at the time of placing the sacrificial fire, to perform the sacrifice after sunrise, one were to change it to a sacrifice before sunrise; there is, therefore, no self-contradiction in the passage referred to."

He next rebuts the charge of tautology. "60. 'The Veda is not tautological because repetition may be proper.' The particle *cha* means 'again.' 'Again, since repetition may be proper, there is no tautology.' For repetition is only a fault when it is useless. But in the passage referred to, since repetition is proper, its utility is apparent. For when the first and the last of the eleven *sāmīdhenīs* (forms of prayer used on throwing fuel into the fire) are each repeated thrice, the whole number of verses will be made up to fifteen.<sup>108</sup> Accordingly, this number of fifteen is mentioned in these words of the Veda, 'I smite this enemy who hates us, and whom we hate, with the last of the fifteen verses, and with the thunderbolt of my words.'"

He next observes that the advantage of repetition is commonly recognised. "61. 'And the Veda is not tautological, because the utility of this division of discourse is admitted,' *i.e.* because the necessity for such a division of language, that is, of a description of language characterized as reiterative, is acknowledged, *viz.* by the learned. For by dividing language into the different classes of injunctive, reiterative, etc., learned men recognise the uses of the reiterative also. And this applies to the Veda."

The author of the aphorisms then proceeds to state and to define (in *Sūtras* 62-67) the different sorts of discourse employed in the Veda, and to defend the propriety of reiteration. "Having thus refuted the arguments which aim at showing that the Veda is of no authority, he goes on to prove its authority. 68. 'The authority of the Veda, like that of the formulas, and the *Āyur-veda* (treatise on medicine) follows from the authority of the competent [persons from whom they proceeded].' Since the competent maker of the Veda possesses authority, *i.e.* inculcates truth, it results from the force of the terms that the Veda was uttered by a person of this character; and by this reasoning the au-

<sup>108</sup> If there are in all eleven formulas, and two of these are each repeated thrice, we have ( $2 \times 3 =$ ) six to add to the nine (which remain of the original eleven), making ( $6 + 9 =$ ) fifteen. See Müller's *Anc. Sansk. Lit.* pp. 89 and 393.

thority of the Veda is to be inferred. He illustrates this by the case of the formulas and the Āyur-veda. By formulas (*mantra*) are meant the sentences which neutralize poison, etc., and the section containing the Āyur-veda forms part of the Veda. Now as the authority of these two classes of writings is admitted by general consent, the authority of everything which possesses the characteristics of the Veda must be inferred from this example. Some, however, explain the aphorism thus: a Veda is that in which authority is found or recognised. From such vedicity (or possession of the character of a Veda) the authority of any work is to be inferred."

I add the greater part of the more detailed and distinct exposition of this aphorism given by the commentator Vātsyāyana (*Bibliotheca Indica*, p. 91):<sup>109</sup>

*Kim punar āyurvedasya prāmānyam | yad āyurvedena upadiśyate  
idaṁ kṛtvā ishṭam adhigachchhati idaṁ varjjayitvā 'niṣṭaṁ jahāti  
tasya anusṭhīyamānasya tathā - bhāvaḥ satyārthatā - 'viparyayaḥ |  
mantra - padānāṁ cha visha - bhūtāsani - pratishedhārthānām prayoge  
'rthasya tathā - bhāvaḥ etat prāmānyam | kim - kṛitam etat | āpta - prā-  
mānya - kṛitam | kim punar āptānām prāmānyam | sākshāt - kṛita - dhar-  
matā bhūta - dayā yathā - bhūtārtha - chikhyāpayishū iti | āptāḥ khalu sāk-  
shāt - kṛita - dharmānah idaṁ hātavyam ayam asya hāni - hetur idam asya  
adhigantavyam ayam asya adhigamana - hetur iti bhūtāny anukampante |  
teshām khalu vai prāna - bhṛitām svayam anavabudhyamānānām na anyad  
upadeśād avabodha - kāraṇam asti | na cha anavabodhe samīhā varjjanaṁ vā |  
na vā akṛitvā svasti - bhāvaḥ | nā 'py asya anyāḥ upakārako 'py asti | hanta  
vayam ebhyo yathā - darsanaṁ yathā - bhūtām upadiśamaḥ | te ime śrutvā  
pratipadyamānāḥ heyaṁ hūsyanty adhigantavyam eva adhigamishyanti  
iti | evam āptopadeśaḥ etena tri - vidheṇa āpta - prāmānyena parigrihito  
'nusṭhīyamāno 'rthasya sādhaḥ bhavati | evam āptopadeśaḥ pramānam  
evam āptāḥ pramānam | dṛiṣṭārthena āptopadeśena āyurvedena adṛiṣ-  
ṭārtho veda - bhūjo 'numātavyaḥ pramānam iti | āpta - prāmānyasya hetoḥ  
samānatvād iti | asya api cha eka - deśo " grāma - kāmo 'yajeta " ity evam - ādi-  
dṛiṣṭārthas tena anumātavyam iti | loke cha bhūyān upadeśāśrayo vya-  
vahāraḥ | laukikasya apy upadeśṭur upadeśṭavyārtha - jñānena parānuji-  
ghṛikshayā yathā - bhūtārtha - chikhyāpayishayā cha prāmānyam | tat - pari-*

<sup>109</sup> A small portion of this comment, borrowed from Professor Banerjea's *Dialogues on Hindu philosophy*, was given in the 1st edition of this vol. p. 210.

*grahād āptopadeśah pramānam iti | drashṭri-pravaktri-sāmānyāch cha anumānam ye eva āptāḥ vedārthānām drashṭarāḥ pravaktāraś cha te eva āyurveda-prabhṛitīnām | ity āyurveda-prāmānye-vaḍ veda-prāmānyam anumātavyam iti | nityatvād veda-vākhyānām pramānatve tat-prāmānyam āpta-prāmānyād ity ayuktam | śabdasya vāchakatvād artha-pratipattau pramānatvaṁ na nityatvāt | nityatve hi sarvasya śarveṇa vachānāch chhabdārtha-vyavasthā 'nupapattiḥ | na anityatve vāchakatvam iti chet | na | laukikeshv adarśanāt | te 'pi nityāḥ iti chet | na | anāptopadeśād artha-visaṁvādo 'nupapañnah | . . . Manvantara-yugāntareṣu cha atītānāgateshu sampradāyābhyāsa-prayogāvichhedo vedānām nityatvam āpta-prāmānyāch cha prāmānyam | laukikeshu śabdeshu cha etat samānam |*

“On what then does the authority of the Āyur-veda depend? The Āyur-veda instructs us that to do so and so, is the means of attaining what is desirable, and to avoid so and so is the means of escaping what is undesirable: and the fact of such action having been followed by the promised result coincides with the supposition that the book declares what is true. So, too, the authority of the formulæ for neutralizing poison, repelling demons, and arresting lightning, is shewn by their application fulfilling its object. How is this result obtained? By the authoritativeness of competent persons. But what is meant by the authoritativeness of competent persons? It means their intuitive perception of duty, their benevolence to all creatures, and their desire to declare the truth of things. Competent persons are those who have an intuitive perception of duty; and they shew their benevolence to all creatures by pointing out that so and so is to be avoided, and that such and such are the means of avoiding it, and that so and so is to be attained, and that such and such are the means of attaining it. ‘For these creatures,’ they reflect, ‘being themselves unaware of such things, have no other means of learning them except such instruction; and in the absence of information they can make no effort either to attain or avoid anything; whilst without such action their welfare is not secured; and there is no one else who can help in this case: come let us instruct them according to the intuition we possess, and in conformity with the reality; and they hearing, and comprehending, will avoid what should be avoided, and obtain what should be obtained.’ Thus the instruction afforded by competent persons according to this threefold character of their authoritativeness [viz. (1) intuition, (2)

benevolence, and (3) desire to teach], being received, and acted upon, effects the object desired. And so the instruction given by competent persons is authority, and these competent persons are authorities. From the Āyur-veda, which conveys instruction given by competent persons in reference to objects perceptible by the senses, it is to be inferred that that part also of the Veda which is concerned with imperceptible objects<sup>110</sup> is authoritative, since the cause, the authoritativeness of competent persons, is the same in both cases; and the same inference is to be drawn from the fact that a portion of the injunctions of the last mentioned part of the Veda also have reference to perceptible objects, as in the case of the precept, 'Let the man who desires landed property sacrifice,' etc., etc. In common life, too, men usually rely upon instruction. And the authority of an ordinary instructor depends (1) upon his knowledge of the matter to be taught, (2) upon his disposition to shew kindness to others, and (3) upon his desire to declare the truth. From its being accepted, the instruction imparted by competent persons constitutes proof. And from the fact that the seers and declarers are the same in both cases, viz. that the competent seers and declarers of the contents of the (rest of the) Veda are the very same as those of the Āyur-veda, etc., we must infer that the authoritativeness of the former is like that of the latter. But on the hypothesis that the authority of the Vedic injunctions is derived from their eternity, it will be improper to say that it arises from the authoritativeness of competent persons, since the authority of words as exponents of meanings springs from their declarative character, and not from their eternity. For on the supposition of the eternity of words, every (word) would express every (thing), which would be contrary to the fixity of their signification. If it be objected that unless words are eternal, they cannot be declarative, we deny this, as it is not witnessed in the case of secular words. If it be urged again that secular words also are eternal, we must again demur, since the discrepancy of purport arising from the injunctions of incompetent persons would be at variance with this." After some further argumentation Vātsyāyana concludes: "The eternity of the Vedas [really] consists in the unbroken continuity of their tradition, study, and application, both in the Manvantaras and

<sup>110</sup> Compare the commentator's remarks introductory to the Nyāya aphorism ii. 57, quoted above, p. 112.

Yugas which are past, and those which are to come; whilst their authority arises from the authoritativeness of the competent persons (who uttered them). And this is common to them with secular words."

The phrase *sākshāt-kṛita-dharmānaḥ*, "possessing an intuitive perception of duty," which is employed by Vātsyāyana in the preceding extract as a definition of *āptāḥ*, "competent persons," is one which had previously been applied by Yāska (Nirukta, i. 20) to describe the character of the rishis: *Sākshāt-kṛita-dharmānaḥ ṛishayo bahūruḥ | te 'varebhyo 'śākshāt-kṛita-dharmabhyach upadeśena mantrān samprādūḥ | upadeśāya glāyanto 'vare bilma-grahaṇāya imān granthān samāmnāsishur vedaṁ cha vedāngāni cha |* "The rishis, who had an intuitive perception of duty, handed down the hymns by (oral) instruction to men of later ages, who had not that intuitive perception. These, declining in their power of giving instruction, compiled this work (the Nirukta), the Veda, and the Vedāngas, in order to facilitate the comprehension of details."

*The Vaiśeshika.*—Among the aphorisms of this system also there are some which, in opposition to the Mīmānsakas, assert, 1st, that the Vedas are the product of an intelligent mind; and 2nd (if the interpretation of the commentator is to be received) that they have been uttered by God.<sup>111</sup>

The second aphorism of the first section of the first book is as follows:

*Yato 'bhyudaya-niśreyasa-siddhiḥ sa dharmāḥ |*

"Righteousness is that through which happiness and future perfection<sup>112</sup> are attained."

After explaining this the commentator proceeds to introduce the next aphorism by the following remarks:

*Nanu nivṛitti-lakshano dharmas tattva-jñāna-dvārā niśreyasa-hetur ity*

<sup>111</sup> Of the aphorisms, which I am about to quote, the first has been translated by Dr. Ballantyne (who published a small portion of these Sūtras with an English version in 1851); and it, as well as the others, is briefly commented upon by the Rev. Prof. Banerjea, in his Dialogues on Hindu Philosophy, pp. 474 ff., and Pref. p. ix., note. See my article in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, No. xx. for 1832, entitled "Does the Vaiśeshika philosophy acknowledge a Deity or not?" from which the translations now given have been transferred with but little alteration and a few additions. And compare Dr. Roer's German translation of the Vaiśeshika aphorisms in the Journal of the German Oriental Society for 1867, pp. 309 ff.

<sup>112</sup> The Commentator explains *abhyudaya* as = *tattva-jñānam*, "a knowledge of the reality," and *niśreyasa* as *ātyantikī duḥkha-nivṛittiḥ*, "the complete cessation of suffering."



*attra śrutiḥ pramānam | śruter eva prāmānye vayaṁ vipratipadyāmahe*  
*“anṛita-vyāghāta-punarukta-dosḥebhyaḥ” | . . . na cha āmnāya-pra-*  
*tipādakaṁ kinchid asti; nityatve vipratipattau | nitya-nirdoshatvam api*  
*sandigdham | paurusheydtve tu bhrama-pramāda-vipratipatti-karanāpā-*  
*ṭavādi-sambhāvanayā āptoktatvam api sandigdham eva iti na niśśreyasaṁ*  
*na vā tatra tatva-jnānaṁ dvāraṁ na vā dharmāḥ iti sarvam etad āku-*  
*lam | ataḥ āha “tad-vachanād āmnāyasya prāmānyam” | “tad” ity*  
*anupakrāntam api prasiddhī-siddhatayā īśvaram parāmṛśati | yathā*  
*“tad-aprāmānyam anṛita-vyāghāta-punarukta-dosḥebhyaḥ” iti Gauta-*  
*mīya-sūtre tach-chhabdena anupakrānto 'pi vedāḥ parāmṛśyate | tathā*  
*cha tad-vachanāt tena īśvareṇa pranayanād āmnāyasya vedasya prāmā-*  
*nyam | yadvā “tad” iti sannihitāṁ dharmam eva parāmṛśati | tathā cha*  
*dharmaṁsya “vachanāt” pratipādanād “āmnāyasya” vedasya prāmā-*  
*nyam | yad hi vākyam prāmānikam artham pratipādayati tat prāmānam*  
*eva yataḥ ity arthaḥ | īśvaras tad-āptatvaṁ cha sādhayishyate |*

“But may it not be objected here that it is the Veda which proves that righteousness, in the form of abstinence from action, is, by means of the knowledge of absolute truth, the cause of future perfection; but that we dispute the authority of the Veda because it is chargeable with the faults of falsehood, contradiction, and tautology<sup>113</sup> . . . . And further, there is nothing to prove the authority of the Veda, for its eternity is disputed, its eternal faultlessness is doubted, and if it have a personal author, the fact of this person being a competent utterer is questioned, since there is an apprehension of error, inadvertence, contradiction, and want of skill in composition attaching to him. Thus there is neither any such thing as future perfection, nor is either a knowledge of absolute truth the instrument thereof, or righteousness. Thus everything is perplexed.”

In answer to all this the author of the aphorism says:

“The authority of the sacred record arises from its being uttered by Him.”

“Here,” says the commentator, “the word *tad* (His) refers to Īśvara (God); as, though no mention of Him has yet been introduced, He is proved by common notoriety to be meant; just as in the aphorism of Gautama: ‘Its want of authority is shown by the faults of falsehood,

<sup>113</sup> Here the same illustrations are given as in the commentary on the Nyāya aphorisms, quoted above, pp. 113 ff.

contradiction, and tautology,' the Veda, though not previously introduced, is intended by the word *tad*.<sup>114</sup> And so [the meaning of the aphorism is that] the authority of the sacred record, *i.e.* the Veda, is proved by its being spoken by Him, composed by Him, by Īśvara. Or, *tad* (its)<sup>114</sup> may denote *dharma* (duty) which immediately precedes; and then [the sense will be that] the authority of the sacred record, *i.e.* the Veda, arises from its declaring, *i.e.* establishing, duty, for the text which establishes any authoritative matter must be itself an authority. The proof of Īśvara and his competence will be hereafter stated." The commentator then goes on to answer the charges of falsehood, contradiction, and tautology alleged against the Veda.

The next aphorism which I shall quote (vi. 1, 1) is thus introduced by the commentator:

*Buddhi-pūrvā vākya-kṛitir vede | saṁsāra-mūla-kāraṇayor dharmādhar-*  
*mayoḥ parīkṣhā śaśthādhyāyārthaḥ | dharmādharmau cha "svarga-*  
*kāmo yajeta" "na kalanjam bhakshayed" ityādi-vidhi-nishedha-bala-*  
*kalpanīyau vidhi-nishedha-vākyaayoḥ prāmāṇye sati syātām | tat-prāmā-*  
*ṇyaṁ cha vaktur yathārtha-vāk्यārtha-jñāna-lakṣhaṇa-guṇa-pūrvakatvād*  
*upapadyate | svataḥ prāmāṇyasya nishedhāt | ataḥ prathamam veda-prā-*  
*māṇya-prayojaka-guṇa-sādhanam upakramate | "vākya-kṛitir" vākya-*  
*rachanā | sā buddhi-pūrvā vakṛi-yathārtha-vāk्यārtha-jñāna-pūrvā |*  
*vākya-rachanātvāt | "nadī-tīre pancha phalāni santi" ity asmad-ādi-*  
*vākya-rachanā-vat | "vede" iti vākya-samudāye ity arthaḥ | tatra samu-*  
*dāyinām vāk्यानām kṛitih pakshaḥ | nā cha asmad-ādi-buddhi-pūrvaka-*

<sup>114</sup> For the sake of the reader who does not know Sanskrit, it may be mentioned that *tad* being in the crude, or uninflected form, may denote any of the three genders, and may be rendered either 'his,' 'hers,' or 'its.' I may observe that the alternative explanation which the commentator gives of the Aphorism, i. 1, 3, *viz.* that the authority of the Veda arises from its being declarative of duty, is a much less probable one than the other, that its authority is derived from its being the utterance of God; for it does not clearly appear how the subject of a book can establish its authority; and, in fact, the commentator, when he states this interpretation, is obliged, in order to give it the least appearance of plausibility, to assume the authoritative character of the precepts in the Veda, and from this assumption to infer the authority of the book which delivers them. I may also observe that Jayanārāyaṇa Tarkapanchānana, the author of the Gloss on S'ankara Miśra's Commentary, takes no notice of this alternative interpretation; and that in his comment on the same aphorism when repeated at the close of the work (x. 2, 9) S'ankara Miśra himself does not put it forward a second time. Dr. Roer (Journ. Germ. Or. Soc. for 1867, p. 310) argues in favour of the former of the two interpretations as the true one.

*tvena anyathā-siddhiḥ | “svarga-kāmo yajeta” ityādāv ishta-sādhanatāyāḥ kāryyatāyāḥ vā asmad-ūdi-buddhy-agocharatvāt | tena svatantra-purusha-pūrvaḥkātāṁ vede siddhyati | vedatvaṁ cha śabda-tad-upajivipramāṇātirikta - pramāṇa-janya-pramity-aviśhayārthakatve sati śabda-janya-vākya-rtha-jnānājanya-pramāṇa-śabdatvam |*

“An examination of righteousness and unrighteousness, which are the original causes of the world,<sup>115</sup> forms the subject of the 6th section. Now, righteousness and unrighteousness are to be constituted by virtue of such injunctions and prohibitions as these: ‘The man who desires paradise should sacrifice,’ ‘Let no one eat garlic,’ etc., provided these injunctions and prohibitions be authoritative. And this authoritative-ness depends upon the fact of the utterer [of these injunctions or prohibitions] possessing the quality of understanding the correct meaning of sentences, for the supposition of inherent authoritative-ness is untenable. The author, therefore, first of all enters upon the proof of that quality which gives rise to the authoritative-ness of the Veda.

“Aphorism vi. 1. 1.—‘There is in the Veda a construction of sentences which is produced (*lit.* preceded) by intelligence.’”

“The ‘construction of sentences,’ the composition of sentences, ‘is produced by intelligence,’ *i.e.* by a knowledge of the correct meaning of sentences on the part of the utterer [of them]; [and this is proved] by the fact of these sentences possessing an arrangement like the arrangement of such sentences as ‘There are five fruits on the river side,’ composed by such persons as ourselves. ‘In the Veda,’ *i.e.* in the collection of sentences (so called). Here the construction of the sentences composing the collection is the subject of the proposition which is asserted. And this construction must not be ascribed to a wrong cause by assuming that it was the work of a [limited] intelligence such as ours. [Because it was not a limited intelligence which produced these sentences]. For it is not an object of apprehension to the understandings of persons like ourselves that such injunctions as, ‘He who desires paradise should sacrifice,’ are the instruments of obtaining what we desire, or that they are obligatory in themselves. Hence in the case of the Veda the agency of a self-dependent person is

<sup>115</sup> This, I suppose, means that the existence of the world in its present or developed form, is necessary in order to furnish the means of rewarding righteousness and punishing unrighteousness.

established [since these matters could be known by such a person alone.] And while the contents of the Veda are not the subjects of a knowledge produced by any proof distinct from verbal proof, and the proofs dependent thereon, Vedicity, or the characteristic nature of the Veda, consists in its being composed of (authoritative) words, whose authority does not spring from a knowledge of the meaning of sentences arising from words [but depends on the underived omniscience of its author].” “Or, Vedicity consists in being one or other of the four collections, the Rich, Yajush, Sāman, or Atharvan.”<sup>116</sup>

I will introduce the next aphorism (x. 2, 9) which I propose to cite (and which is a repetition of aphorism i. 1, 3), by adducing some remarks of the commentator on the one which immediately precedes it, viz. x. 2, 8 :

*Nanu śruti-prāmāṇye sati syād evam | tad eva tu durlabham | na hi mīmāṃsakānām iva nitya-nirdoshatvena śruti-prāmāṇyaṃ trayā ishryate paurusheyatvenābhyupagamāt purushasya cha bhrama-pramāda-vipralipsādi-sambhavāt | ataḥ āha “dṛiṣṭābhāve” iti | dṛiṣṭam purushāntare ’smad-ādau bhrama-pramāda- [viprati?] lipsādikaṃ puruṣa-dūṣhaṇaṃ tad-abhāve sati ity arthaḥ | kṣiti-kartṛitvena veda-vakṛitvena vā ’numitasya puruṣa-dhaureyasya nirdoshatvena eva upasthiteḥ | tathā cha tad-vachasām na nirabhidheyatā na viparītābhidheyatā na nishprayojanābhidheyatā | bhūtendriya-manasām doṣhād bhrama-pramāda-kārānāpāṭavādi-prayuktāḥ eva vachasām avīśuddhayaḥ sambhavyante | na cha īśvara-vachasi tāsām sambhavaḥ | tad uktam “rāgājnānādibhir vaktā grastatvād anṛitaṃ vadet | te cheṣvare na vidyante sa brūyāt katham anyathā” | nanu tena īśvareṇa vedāḥ praṇītaḥ ity atra eva viprapattir ataḥ āha | “tad-vachanāt āmnāyasya prāmāṇyam” | iti śāstra-parisamāptau “tad-vachanāt” tena īśvareṇa vachanāt praṇayanād “āmnāyasya” vedasya prāmāṇyam | tathā hi | vedās tāvat paurusheyāḥ vākyaivād iti sādhitam | na cha asmad-ādayas teshām sahasra - śākhāvachchinnānām vaktāraḥ sambhavyante atīndriyārthatvāt | na cha atīndriyārtha-darśino ’smad-ādayaḥ | kincha āptoktāḥ vedāḥ mahājana-parigṛihītvāt | yad na āptoktaṃ na tad mahājana-parigṛihītaṃ | mahājana-parigṛihītaṃ cha idam | tasmād āptoktam | sva-tantra-puruṣa-praṇītatvaṃ cha āptoktatvam | mahājana-parigṛihītatvaṃ cha sarva-darśanāntahpāti-puruṣhānusṭhīyamānārthtatvam | kvachit phalābhāvaḥ karma-kartṛi-sādhana-vaigun्यād*

<sup>116</sup> The last words are a translation of the conclusion of Jayanārāyaṇa’s gloss.

*ity uktam | karttṛi-smaraṇābhavād na evam iti chet | na | karttṛi-smara-  
nasya pūrvam eva sādhitatvāt | tat-praṇītatvaṃ cha sva-tantra-puruṣa-  
praṇītatvād eva siddham | na tv asmā-ādīnāṃ sahasra-sūkha-veda-pra-  
nayane svātantryāṃ sambhūvati ity uktatvāt | kincha pramāyāḥ guṇa-  
janyatvena vaidika-pramāyāḥ api guṇa-janyatvam āvaśyakam | tatra cha  
guṇo vaktṛi-yathārtha-vākyaṛtha-jñānam eva vāchyah | tathā cha tād-  
rīśah eva vede vaktā yāḥ svargāpūrvādi-vishayaka - sākshātkāravān |  
tādrīśas cha na īśvarād anyah ity uktam |*

“Now all this will be so, provided the Veda is authoritative: but this condition is the very one which is difficult to attain; for you do not hold, like the Mīmāṃsakas, that the authority of the Veda arises from its eternal faultlessness; since you admit that it has a personal author, and error, inadvertence, and a desire to deceive are incident to such a person. It is with a view to this objection that the writer says in his aphorism, ‘In the absence of what is seen,’ *i.e.* in the absence of those personal faults which are seen in other persons like ourselves,<sup>117</sup> such as error, inadvertence, and a desire to deceive: for the Supreme Person who is inferred from the creation of the world, or the authorship of the Veda, can only exist in a state of freedom from fault; and, consequently, neither want of meaning, nor contradiction of meaning, nor uselessness of meaning, can be predicated of his words. Incorrectnesses in words are to be apprehended as the results of error, inadvertence, or unskilfulness in composition, arising from some defect in the elements, the senses, or the mind. But none of these things is to be imagined in the word of Īśvara (the Lord). And this has been expressed in the following verse: ‘A speaker may utter falsehood, from being possessed by affection, ignorance, and the like; but these [defects] do not exist in God; how then can he speak what is otherwise [than true]?’

“But may not the fact that the Veda is composed by God be disputed? In consequence of this, the author says (in the next aphorism):  
x. 2, 9. ‘The authority of the Vedic record arises from its being uttered by Him.’

<sup>117</sup> A different interpretation is given by the commentator to this phrase *drishṭābhāve*, in an earlier aphorism in which it occurs, viz. vi. 2, 1. He there understands it to mean that where there is no visible motive for a prescribed action, an invisible one must be presumed (*yatra drishṭam prayojanaṃ nopalabhyate tatra adrishṭam prayojanaṃ kalpanīyam*).

“Thus at the end of his treatise [the writer lays it down that] the authority of the Veda is derived from its being His word, viz. from its being spoken, *i.e.* composed by Him, *i.e.* by Īśvara. As thus: The Vedas are derived from a person, because they are formed of sentences. This has been proved. And persons like ourselves cannot be conceived as the utterers of these Vedas, which are distinguished by having thousands of Sākhās (recensions), because their objects are such as lie beyond the reach of the senses; and persons like us have no intuition into anything beyond the reach of the senses. Further, the Vedas [are not only derived from a personal author, but they] have been uttered by a competent author (*āpta*), because they have been embraced by great men. Whatever has not been uttered by a competent person is not embraced by great men: but this (book) is embraced by great men: therefore it has been uttered by a competent person. Now, composition by a self-dependent person is utterance by a competent person; and the reception (of the Veda) by great men is the observance of its contents by persons who are adherents of all the different philosophical schools: and (the infallibility of the Veda is defended by that which) has been already said, viz. that any occasional failure in the results (of ceremonies prescribed in the Veda) is owing to some defect in the rite, or in the performer, or in the instruments employed [and not to any fallibility in the Veda].

“If it be objected to this reasoning, that no author (of the Veda) is recollected, we rejoin, that this is not true, because it has been formerly proved that the author is remembered. And that it was composed by Him is proved by the simple fact of its being composed by a self-dependent person; and because it has been said that the self-dependence [or unassisted ability] of people like us in the composition of the Veda, consisting, as it does, of a thousand Sākhās, is inconceivable. And since authority (in a writing in general) springs from a quality [in its author], it necessarily follows that the authority of the Veda also springs from a quality. And there the quality in question must be declared to be the speaker’s knowledge of the correct meaning of sentences. And thus (we have shewn that) there is such an utterer of the Veda, who possesses an intuitive knowledge of paradise, and of the yet unseen consequences of actions, etc., and such an utterer is no other than Īśvara. Thus all is satisfactory.”

The ultimate proofs, then, of the binding authority of the Veda are, according to the commentator, 1st, its extent and subject-matter, and 2ndly, its unanimous reception by great men, adherents of all the different orthodox systems. Of course these arguments have no validity except for those who see something supernatural in the Veda, and on the assumption that the great men who embraced it were infallible; and therefore as against the Bauddhas and other heretics who saw nothing miraculous in the Vedas, and consequently regarded all their adherents as in error, they were utterly worthless. But possibly it was not the object of the commentator (for the greater part of the argumentation is his, not that of the author of the Aphorisms) to state the ultimate reasons on which the authority of the Vedas would have to be vindicated against heretics, but merely to explain the proper grounds on which the orthodox schools who already acknowledged that authority ought to regard it as resting; *i.e.* not, as the Mīmāṃsakas held their eternal faultlessness, but the fact of their being uttered by an intelligent and omniscient author; whose authorship, again, was proved by the contents of the Vedas having reference to unseen and future matters of which only an omniscient Being could have any knowledge; while the fact of these revelations in regard to unseen things having actually proceeded from such a Being, and being therefore true, was guaranteed by the unanimous authority of the wisest men among the faithful.

As it is a matter of some interest to know what is the nature of inspiration, or supernatural knowledge, as conceived by the Vaiśeshikas, I shall quote some passages bearing on this subject from the aphorisms, or from their expounder, Śankara Miśra. In his remarks on Aphorism viii. 1, 2 (p. 357), the commentator states that opinion (*jnāna*) is of two kinds, true (*vidyā*) and false (*avidyā*); and that the former (*vidyā*) is of two descriptions, arising from perception, inference, recollection, and the infallible intuition "peculiar to rishis" (*Tach cha jnānaṃ dvividhaṃ vidyā cha avidyā cha | vidyā chaturvidhā pratyaksha-laingika-smṛity-ārśha-lakshana*). Perception or intuition, again, is of different kinds or degrees (Aphorism ix. 1, 11-15, pp. 385 ff.). Aphorism ix. 1, 11 (p. 386), is as follows:

*Tad evam bhāvābhāva-vishayakaṃ laukika-pratyakshaṃ nirūpya yogi-pratyakshaṃ nirūpayitum prakaraṇāntaram ūrabhate | ix. 1, 11. "Ātmany ātma-manasoḥ saṃyoga-viśeshād ātma-pratyaksham" | jnānam ut-*

*padyate iti śeṣaḥ | dvividhās tāvad yoginaḥ samāhitāntaḥkaraṇāḥ ye  
 “yuktāḥ” ity abhidhīyante asamāhitāntaḥkaraṇās cha ye “viyuktāḥ”  
 ity abhidhīyante | tatra yuktāḥ sākshātkartavyḥ vartun्य udareṇa mano  
 nidhāya nididhyāsanavāntaḥ | teshāṃ ātmani svātmani parātmani cha  
 jñānam utpadyate | “ātma-pratyakṣam” iti | ātmā sākshātkāra-vishayo  
 yatra jñāne tat tathā | yadyapy asmad-ādīnāṃ api kadāchid ātma-  
 jñānam asti tathāpy avidyā-tiraskṛitatvāt tad asat-kalpam ity uktam |  
 “ātma-manasos sannikarsha-viśeshād” iti yoga-jā-dhārmānugreḥāḥ ātma-  
 manasoḥ sannikarsha-viśeshas tasmād ity arthaḥ |*

“Having thus defined ordinary perception which has for its objects existence and non-existence, the author, with the view of determining the character of the intuition of yogins, says: ‘From a particular concentration of both the soul and the mind<sup>118</sup> on the soul, arises the perception (or intuition) of soul.’ On this the commentator remarks: ‘There are two kinds of *yogins* (intent, or contemplative, persons), (1) those whose inner sense is fixed *samāhitāntaḥkaraṇāḥ*), who are called (*yuktāḥ*) united (*i.e.* with the object of contemplation), and (2) those whose inner sense is no longer fixed, and who are called disunited (*viyuktāḥ*).<sup>119</sup> Of these the first class, who are called ‘united,’ fix their minds with reverence on the thing which is to be the object of intuition, and contemplate it intently. In this way knowledge arises in their souls regarding their own souls, and the souls of others. ‘Intuition of soul,’ that is, a knowledge in which soul is the perceptible object of intuition. Now, although persons like ourselves have sometimes a knowledge of soul, yet from this knowledge being affected by ignorance, it has been said to be like what is unreal. ‘From a particular concentration of the soul and the mind;’ that is, from a particular conjunction of the soul and the mind which is effected by means of the virtue derived from yoga.” See also Aphorism xv. p. 390.

At the conclusion of his remarks (Bibl. Ind. p. 408) on the third sort of true knowledge (referred to in p. 357, Bibl. Ind.), viz. recollection, the commentator remarks that the author of the aphorisms does not make any separate mention of the fourth kind of knowledge, viz. infallible intuition:

<sup>118</sup> The “mind” (*manas*) is regarded by the Indian philosophers as distinct from the soul, and as being merely an internal organ.

<sup>119</sup> This class is the more perfect of the two, as appears from the gloss of Jayanā-rāyaṇa: *ayam api viśiṣṭa-yogavattvād viyuktāḥ ity uchyate.*



ix. 2, 6. . . . . *Ārshaṁ jñānam sūtra-kṛitā prīṭhaṁ na lakṣhitam | yogi-pratyakṣhāntarbhāvitam | padārtha-pradeśūkhye tu prakaraṇe tad uktam | tad yathā |* “*āmnāya-vidhātṛiṇām rishīṇām atītānāgata-varttamāneshv atīndriyārtheshv artheshu dharmādishu-granthopanibaddheshu vā lingādy-anapekṣhād ātma-manasoḥ saṁyogād dharma-viśeṣhāch cha prātibhaṁ jñānaṁ yad utpadyate tū ārshaṁ iti | tach cha kadāchil laukikūnām āpi bhavati, yathā kanyakā vadati “śvo me bhrātā gantā iti hriḍayam me kathayati” iti |*

“Rishis’ (*ārsha*) knowledge,” he says, “is not separately defined by the author of the aphorisms, but is included in the intuition of yogins.<sup>120</sup> But the following statement has been made (in reference to it) in the section on the categories: ‘Rishis’ (*ārsha*) knowledge is that which, owing to a conjunction of the soul and the mind, independent of inference, etc., and owing to a particular species of virtue, illuminates those rishis who have composed the record of the Vedas (*āmnāya-vidhātṛiṇām*), in reference to such matters, whether past, future, or present, as are beyond the reach of the senses, or in reference to matters of ‘duty, etc., recorded in books,’ etc. And this sort of knowledge is also sometimes manifested by ordinary persons, as when a girl says, ‘my heart tells me that my brother will go to-morrow.’” See also Aphorism ix. 2, 13 (Bibl. Ind. pp. 414, 415).

The Tarka-sangraha, another Vaiśeṣhika work, also affirms the divine authorship of the Veda in these words: <sup>121</sup> *Vākyaṁ dvividhaṁ laukikaṁ vaidikaṁ cha | vaidikam Īśvaroktaḥ vāt sarvam eva pramāṇam laukikaṁ tu āptoktam pramāṇam anyad apramāṇam |* “Sentences are of two kinds, Vedic and secular. Vedic sentences, from being uttered by Īśvara, are all proof [or authoritative]. Of secular sentences, those only which are uttered by competent persons (*āpta*) are proof; the rest are not proof.”

In this text, the authority of the Veda is founded on its being uttered by Īśvara; and this characteristic is regarded as limited to the Veda.

<sup>120</sup> It had been already noticed by Professor Max Müller in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vii. p. 311, that “the Vaiśeṣhikas, like Kapila, include the intuition of enlightened rishis under the head of *pratyakṣa* (intuition), and thus separate it decidedly from *aitihya*, ‘tradition.’” He also quotes the commentator’s remark about a similar intuition being discoverable among ordinary persons, which he thinks is not “without a certain irony.”

<sup>121</sup> See Dr. Ballantyne’s ed. with Hindī and English Versions, p. 40 of the Sanskrit.

On the other hand, such secular works as proceed from competent persons (*āpta*) are also declared to possess authority. Here, therefore, a distinction is drawn between the authority of the Veda and that of all other writings, however authoritative, inasmuch as the former was uttered by Īśvara, while the latter have only been uttered by some competent person (*āpta*). But in the Nyāya aphorism, ii. 68, quoted and commented upon above (p. 114), the authority of the Veda itself is made to rest on the authority of the wise, or competent persons (*āpta*), from whom it proceeded.<sup>122</sup> In this aphorism, therefore, either the word "āpta" must mean "Īśvara," or we must suppose a difference of view between the author of the aphorism on the one hand, and the writers of the Vaiśeṣhika aphorisms and the Tarka-sangraha on the other. We shall see from the next extract that the Kusumānjali coincides with the latter.

I quote from the work just named (of which Udayana Āchārya is the author), and its commentary,<sup>123</sup> some statements of the doctrine maintained by the author regarding the origin and authority of the Veda. Mr. Colebrooke (Misc. Ess. i. 263, or p. 166 of Williams and Norgate's ed.) speaks of this treatise as being accompanied by a commentary of Nārāyaṇa Tīrtha; but the one which is printed in the Calcutta edition, as well as in Professor Cowell's, is by Haridāsa Bhaṭṭāchārya. The object of the work is to prove the existence of a personal god (Īśvara), in opposition to various other antagonistic theories.

I. Kusumānjali, 2nd Stavaka, at the commencement: *Anyathā 'pi paraloka-sādhana-nushthāna-sambhavād iti dvitīya-vipratipattiḥ | Anyathā Īśvaraṁ vinū 'pi paraloka-sādhana-yūgādy-anushthānaṁ sambhavati yūgādeḥ svarga-sādhana-trayaṣya veda-gamyatvāt | nitya-nirdoshatayā cha veda-sya prāmāṇyam | mahājane-parigrahāch cha prāmāṇyasya grahaḥ iti veda-kāranatayā na Īśvara-siddhiḥ | yogardhi-sampādita-sā.vajnya-Kapi-*

<sup>122</sup> The following words are put by the author of the Vishṇu Purāna (iii. ch. 18; Wilson, vol. iii. p. 212) into the mouth of the deluder who promulgated the Bauddha and other heresies: *Na hy āpta-vādāḥ nabhāso nipatanti mahāsurāḥ | yuktimaḍ vachanaṁ grāhyam nāyā 'nyais cha bhavad-vidhaiḥ |* "Words of the competent do not, great Asuras, fall from the sky. It is only words supported by reasons that should be admitted by me and others like yourselves."

<sup>123</sup> This book was published at the Sanskrit Press, Calcutta, in the S'aka year, 1769. A new edition was published by Professor Cowell in 1864, accompanied by an English translation. I have availed myself of this excellent version to correct a good many mistakes in my own.

*lūdi-pūrvakaḥ eva vū vedo 'stv ity atra āha | "pramāyāḥ paratantratvāt sarga-pralaya-sambhavāt | tad-nyasminn aviśvāsūd na vidhāntara-sambhavaḥ" | S'ūbdi pramā, vaktṛi-yathārtha-vakyārtha-dhī-rūpa-guṇa-janyā iti guṇādhāratyā Īśvara-siddhiḥ | nanu sakartṛike 'stu yathārtha-vāk-yārtha-dhīr guṇaḥ | akartṛike cha vede nirdoshatvam eva prāmānya-prayojakam āstu mahājana-parigrāheṇa cha prāmānya-grahaḥ ity ata āha | "sarga-pralaya-sambhavad" iti | pralayottaram pūrva-veda-nāsūd uttara-vedasya katham prāmānyam mahājana-parigrāhasyāpi tadā abhāvāt | śabdasya anityatvam utpanno ga-kārah iti pratīti-siddham | pravāhāvichcheda-rūpa-nityatvam api pralaya-sambhavad nāsti iti bhavaḥ | Kapilā-dayaḥ eva sargūdaḥ pūrva-sargābhyasta-yoga-janya-dharmānubhavāt sākshāt-kṛita-sakalārthāḥ karttārah santu | ity ata āha | "tad-nyasminn" iti | viśva-nirṇāna-samarthāḥ animādi-śakti-sampannāḥ yadi sarvajñās tadā lāghavād eka eva tādṛiśaḥ vikriyatām | sa eva bhagavān Īśvaraḥ | anityāsarva-vishayaka-jñānavati cha viśvāsaḥ eva nāsti | iti vaidika-vyavahāra-vilopaḥ | iti na vidhāntara-sambhavaḥ Īśvarānangī-kartṛi-naye iti śeṣaḥ |*

“The second objection is that [there is no proof of an Īśvara], since the means of attaining paradise can be practised independently of any such Being. That is to say, the celebration of sacrifices, etc., which are the instruments of obtaining paradise, can take place otherwise, *i.e.* even without an Īśvara (God). For the fact that sacrifices, etc., are the instruments of obtaining paradise is to be learned from the Veda, while the authority of the Veda rests upon its eternal faultlessness; and the [immemorial] admission of that authority results from its reception by illustrious men. Now in this way there is no proof of the existence of a God to be derived from the idea that he is the cause of the Veda. Or let it be supposed that the Veda was preceded [composed] by Kapila and other sages, who by their wealth in devotion had acquired omniscience.

“In answer to all this the author says: [verse] ‘Since truth depends on an external source, since creation and dissolution occur, and since there is no confidence in any other than God, therefore no other manner can be conceived [in which the Veda originated, except from God].’ [Comment] Verbal truth [or authoritativeness] is derived from the attribute, possessed by its promulgator, of comprehending the true sense of words [*i.e.* in order to constitute the Veda an authoritative

rule of duty, it must have proceeded from an intelligent being who understood the sense of what he uttered]; and since God is the substratum of this attribute [of intelligence], there is proof of his existence.

“But it may be said that if the Veda had a maker, then, indeed, such comprehension of the true sense of words as you insist upon may be a quality belonging to him; but if the Veda had no maker, let it be its faultlessness which imparts to it its authority, while the [immemorial] admission of that authority results from its reception by illustrious men.

“In answer to this the author says: ‘Since creation and dissolution occur.’ Since the previous Veda [the one which existed during the former mundane period] perished after the dissolution of the universe, how can the subsequent Veda [*i.e.* the one supposed by our opponents to have existed during the dissolution] be authoritative, since there was not then even any reception of it by illustrious men [who also had all become extinct at the dissolution]. And further, the non-eternity of sound is proved by the conviction we have that letters such as G are produced, [and not eternal]: and even that eternity (or perpetuity) of the Veda which consists in unbroken continuity of tradition, does not exist, as there is probable proof of a dissolution.<sup>124</sup> But, again, it is urged that Kapila and other saints—who, from their perception of duty, springing from the practice of devotion during the former mundane period, had acquired an intuitive knowledge of every subject—may at the creation have been the authors of the Veda. This is answered in the words, ‘since there is no confidence in any other but God.’ If persons capable of creating the universe and possessing the faculty of minuteness be omniscient, then, for the sake of simplicity, let one such person only be admitted, namely, the divine Īśvara.<sup>125</sup> And no confidence can be reposed in any person who is not eternal, and who is not possessed of a knowledge which extends to all objects. Thus the Vedic tradition disappears. And so he concludes that no other manner [of the origination of the Veda] can be conceived [except

<sup>124</sup> The writers on the other side seem to reply to this Naiyāyika objection about the interruption of the tradition of the Veda through the dissolution of the universe, by saying that the Veda was retained in the memory of Brahmā or the Rishis during the interval while the dissolution lasted. See Kullūka on Manu, i. 23, above, p. 6; and the passage of Kaiyaṭa on the Mahābhāshya, above, p. 96.

<sup>125</sup> “The law of parsimony bids us assume only one such,” etc.—Cowell.

from Īśvara]; that is, in the system of those who deny an Īśvara [no way is pointed out].”

II. Kusumānjali, iii. 1ḡ.—“*Na pramānam anāptoktir nādrishte kvachid āptatā | adriśya-driśhtau sarvajño na cha nityāgamaḥ kṣamaḥ*” | *ayaṁ hi sarva-karṣṭritvābhāvavedakaḥ śabdaḥ anāptoktaś ched na pramānam | āptoktaś'ched etad-ārtha-gochara-jñānavato nitya-sarva-vishayaka-jñānavatvam indriyādy-abhāvāt | āgamasya cha nityatvaṁ dūṣitam eva prāg iti veda-kāro nityaḥ sarvajñaḥ siddhyati* |

[Verse] “The word of an incompetent person is not authoritative; nor can there be any competency in regard to a thing unseen [by the speaker]. To perceive invisible things, a person must be omniscient; and an eternal scripture is impossible. [Comment] This [supposed] scriptural testimony, denying the fact of there being a creator of all things, if uttered by an incompetent person, would be no proof. If it was uttered by a competent person, then the person who possessed an acquaintance with this circumstance [that there was no creator] would be master of a knowledge which was eternal, and universal in its range, since he would not be limited by any bodily organs. And we have previously disproved the eternity of any scripture (see the first extract from the Kusumānjali, above). Consequently an omniscient and eternal author of the Veda is established.”

III. Kusumānjali, v. 1.—“*Kāryyāyोजना-dhṛityādeḥ padāt pratyaya-taḥ śruteḥ | vākyaṭ sankhyā-viśeṣāḥ cha sādhyo viśvavid avyayaḥ*” | . . . *Pratyayatāḥ prāmānyāt | veda-janya-jñānaṁ kāraṇa-guṇa-janyam pramātvāt | pratyakṣhādi-pramā-vat | śruter vedāt | vedāḥ paurusheyo vedatvād āyurveda-vat | kineha vedāḥ paurusheyo vākyaṭvād bhāratādi-vat | veda-vākyaṇi paurusheyāni vākyaṭvād asmād-ādi-vākya-vat* |

[Verse] “An omniscient and indestructible Being is to be proved from [the existence of] effects, from the conjunction of [atoms], from the support [of the earth in the sky], etc., from ordinary usages, from belief [in revelation], from the Veda, from sentences, and from particular numbers.”

The following is so much of the comment as refers to the words *pratyaya*, *śruti*, and *vākya*: “From belief, *i.e.* from authoritative-ness. The knowledge derived from the Veda is derived from the attributes of its Cause; since it is true knowledge, like the true knowledge derived from perception. From the *śruti*, *i.e.* the Veda, The Veda is [shewn

to be] derived from a person, by its having the characters of a Veda, like the Āyur-veda. It is also [shewn to be] derived from a person, by having the character of sentences, like the Mahābhārata. The words of the Veda are [shewn to be] derived from a person, by their having the character of sentences, like the sentences of persons such as ourselves."

IV. Kusumājali, v. 16.—“*Syām*” “*abhūvam*”, “*bhaviṣhyāmī*” *tyādaṁ sankhyā pravaktrī-gū | samākhya ’pi cha śākhānām nādyā-pravachanād rīte | Vaidikottama-purushena svatantrōchchārayituh sankhyā vāchyā | “tad aikshata eko ’ham bahu syām” ityādi-bahushu uttama-purusha-śruteḥ | sankhyā-padārtham anyam āha “samākhya” ityādi | sarvāsām śākhānām hi Kāṭhaka-Kālāpakādyāḥ samākhyaḥ sanjñā-viśeṣhāḥ śrūyante | te cha na adhyayana-mātra-nibandhanāḥ | adhyetrīṇām ānantyāt | ādāv anyair api tad-adhyayanāt | tasmād atīndriyārtha-darśī bhagavān eva Īśvaraḥ kāruṇikāḥ sargādāv asmād-ādy-adṛiṣṭākṛiṣṭa-kāṭhakādi-śārīra-viśeṣham adhishṭhāya yām śākhām uktavāms tasyāḥ śākhāyās tanmānā vyapadeśaḥ iti siddham Īśvara-mananam moksha-hetuḥ |*

[Verse] “In the phrases ‘let me be,’ ‘I was,’ ‘I shall be,’ [which occur in the Veda], personal designations have reference to a speaker; and the names of the Śākhās could only have been derived from a primeval utterance. [Comment] The first person (I), when it occurs in the Veda, must be employed to denote a self-dependent utterer. Now there are many instances there of such a use of the first person, as in the words, ‘It reflected, I am one, let me become many.’ The author then specifies another signification of the term *sankhyā* in the clause, ‘and the designations,’ etc. For all the Śākhās of the Veda traditionally bear the names, the special names, of Kāṭhaka, Kālāpaka, etc. And these names cannot be connected with the mere study [of these Śākhās by Kāṭha, Kalāpa, etc.] from the infinite multitude of students, since they must have been studied before by others besides the persons just mentioned. Wherefore the particular Śākhās which Īśvara, the beholder of objects beyond the reach of the senses, the compassionate Lord, himself uttered at the beginning of the creation, when he assumed the bodies of Kāṭha, etc., which were drawn on by the destiny (*adṛiṣṭa*) of beings like ourselves—these Śākhās, I say, were designated by the names of the particular sages [in whose persons they were promulgated]. And so it is proved that the contemplation of Īśvara is the cause of final liberation.”

I am unable to say if the ancient doctrine of the Nyāya was theistic, as that of the Vaiśeṣhika Sūtraṣ (at least as interpreted by Śaṅkara Miśra) appears to be, and as that of the Kusumāñjali, the Tarka-saṅgraha,<sup>126</sup> and the Siddhānta Muktvāvali undoubtedly is (p. 6 of Dr. Ballantyne's ed., or p. 12 of his "Christianity contrasted with Hindu Philosophy," and p. 13 of Dr. Röer's Bhāṣhā-parichcheda, in Bibl. Ind.). The remarks of Dr. Röer on the subject, in pp. xv., xvi., of the introduction to the last named work, may be consulted. The subject is also discussed by Professor Banerjea in his work on Hindu philosophy, pp. 144-153. The solution of the question may depend much on the interpretation to be given to the aphorisms of Gotama, 19-21 of the fourth book.

III. *The Sāṅkhya*.—The opinions of the author of the Sāṅkhya aphorisms in regard to the authority of the Veda and the principles on which that authority depends, are contained in the 45th to the 51st aphorisms of the Fifth Book, which I extract with the comments of Vijnāna Bhikshu:<sup>127</sup>

45. "Na nityatvaṁ Vedānāṁ kāryatva-śruteḥ" | "Sa tapo 'tapyata tasmāt tapas tepānāt trayo vedā ajāyanta" ity ādi-śruter vedānāṁ na nityatvam ity arthaḥ | veda-nityatā-vākyaṇi cha sajātīyānupūrvī-pravāhānuchcheda-parāṇi | Tarhi kim paurusheyāḥ vedāḥ | na ity āha | 46. "Na paurusheyatvaṁ tat-kartuḥ purushasya abhāvāt" | īśvara-pratishēdād iti śeṣaḥ | sugamam | aparāḥ karttū bhavtv ity ākāṅkshāyām āha | 47. "Muktāmuktayor ayogyatvāt" | Jīvan-mukta-dhurīṇo Vishṇur viśudha-sattvatayā niratiśaya-sarvajno 'pi vīta-rāgatvāt sahasra-śūkha-vedā-nirmāṇyogyāḥ | amuktas tv asarvajnatvād eva ayogyāḥ ity arthaḥ | nanv evam apaurusheyatvād nityatvam eva āgatam | tatrāha | 48. "Na apaurusheyatvād nityatvam ankurādi-vat" | Spashtam | nanv ankurādishv api kāryatvena ghaṭādi-vat purusheyatvam anumeyam | tatrāha | 49. "Teshām api tad-yoge dṛiṣṭa-būdhādi-prasaktiḥ" | Yat paurusheyāṁ tach chha-

<sup>126</sup> Jnānādīkaraṇam ātmā | sa dvivīdho jīvātmā paramātmā cha | tatra īśvaraḥ sarvajnaḥ paramātmā eka eva | jīvātmā prati śarīram bhīno vibhūr nityaścha | "The substratum of knowledge is soul. It is of two kinds, the embodied soul, and the supreme soul. Of these the supreme soul is the omniscient Īśvara, one only. The embodied soul is distinct in each body, all-pervading, and eternal."

<sup>127</sup> Compare Dr. Ballantyne's translation of the Sāṅkhya Aphorisms, books v. and vi., published at Mirzapore in 1856, pp. 26 ff., as well as that which subsequently appeared in the Bibliotheca Indica (in 1865), pp. 127 ff.

rīra-janyam iti vyūptir loka dṛishṭā tasyāḥ bādhdīr evam sati syād iti arthaḥ | nanv Ādi-purushochcharitatvād Vedāḥ api paurusheyāḥ eva ity āha | 50. "Yasmin adṛishṭe'pi kṛita-buddhir apajūyate tat paurusheyam" | Dṛishṭe iva adṛishṭe'pi yasmin vastuni kṛita-buddhir buddhi-pūrvakatva - buddhir jāyate tad eva paurusheyam iti vyavahriyate ity arthaḥ | etad uktam bhavati | na purushochcharitatā-mātreṇa paurusheyatvaṃ śvāsa-prasvāsayoḥ sushupti-kālinayoḥ paurusheyatva-vyavahārā-bhāvāt kintu buddhi-pūrvakatveṇa | Vedāe tu niśvāsa-vad eva adṛishṭa-vasād abuddhi-pūrvakāḥ eva Svayambhuvah sakāsāt svayam bhāvanti | ato na te paurusheyāḥ | tathā cha śrutih "tasyaitasya mahato bhūtasya niśvasitam etad yad ṛigvedo ity ādir" iti | nanv evam yathārtha-vākyārthajñānāpūrvakatvāt śuka - vākyasyeva vedānām 'api prāmānyaṃ na syāt tatrāha | 51. "Nija-śakty-abhvyakteḥ svataḥ prāmānyam" | Vedānām nijā svābhāviki yā yathārtha-jñāna-janana-śaktis tasyāḥ mantrāyurvedādāv abhivyakter upalambhād akhila-vedānām eva svataḥ eva prāmānyaṃ siddhyati na vaktri-yathārtha-jñāna-mūlakatvādinā ity arthaḥ | tathā cha Nyāya-sūtram | "mantrāyurveda-prāmānya-vach cha tat-prāmānyam" iti |

"Sūtra 45. 'Eternity cannot be predicated of the Vedas, since various texts in these books themselves declare them to have been produced.' The sense is this, that the Vedas are proved not to be eternal by such texts as the following: 'He performed austerity; from him, when he had thus performed austerity, the three Vedas were produced.' [See above, p. 4.] Those other texts which assert the eternity [or perpetuity] of the Vedas refer merely to the unbroken continuity of the stream of homogeneous succession [or tradition]. Are the Vedas, then, derived from any personal author? 'No,' he replies in Sūtra 46. 'The Vedas are not derived from any personal author (paurusheya), since there is no person to make them.' We must supply the words, 'since an Īśvara (God) is denied.' The sense is easy. In answer to the supposition that there may be some other maker, he remarks, Sūtra 47, 'No; for there could be no fit maker, either liberated or unliberated.' Viṣṇu, the chief of all those beings who are liberated even while they live,<sup>128</sup> although, from the pure goodness of his nature, he is possessed of perfect omniscience, would, owing to his impassiveness, be unfit to compose the Veda consisting of a thousand śākhās (branches),

<sup>128</sup> See Colebrooke's Essays, i. 369, or p. 241 of Williams and Norgate's ed.



while any unliberated person would be unfit for the task from want of omniscience. (See Sankara's comment on Brahma Sūtras i. 1, 3; above, p. 106.) But does not, then, the eternity of the Vedas follow from their having no personal author? He replies (48), 'Their eternity does not result from their having no personal author, as in the case of sprouts, etc.' This is clear. But is it not to be inferred that sprouts, etc., since they are products, have, like jars, etc., some personal maker? He replies (49), 'If such a supposition be applied to these (sprouts, etc.) it must there also be exposed to the objection that it is contrary to what we see, etc.' Whatever is derived from a personal author is produced from a body; this is a rule which is seen to hold invariably. But if we assert that sprouts are derived from a personal author, we contradict the rule in question, [since they evidently did not spring from any embodied person]. But are not the Vedas, too, derived from a person, seeing that they were uttered by the primeval Purusha? He answers (50), 'That object only (even though it be an invisible one), which its maker is conscious of having made, can be said to be derived from [or made by] such a person.' It is only those objects, be they seen or unseen, in regard to which a consciousness of design arises, that are ordinarily spoken of as made by a person. The sense is, that it is not mere utterance by a person which constitutes formation by that person (since we do not ordinarily speak of the inspirations and expirations of any person during the time of sleep, as being formed by that person), but only utterance with conscious design. But the Vedas proceed of their own accord from Svayambhū (the self-existent), like an expiration, by the force of *adrishṭa* (destiny), without any consciousness on his part. Hence they are not formed by any person. Thus the Veda says, 'This Rig-veda, etc., is the breath of this great Being, etc.' [See above, p. 8.] But will not the Vedas, also, be in this way destitute of authority, like the chatter of a parrot, since they did not result from any knowledge of the correct meaning of the words of which they are made up? In reference to this, he says (51), 'The Vedas have a self-proving authority, since they reveal their own inherent power.' The self-evidencing authority of the entire Vedas is established by the perception of a manifestation in certain portions of them, viz. in the formulas and the Āyur-veda, etc., of that inherent power which they (the Vedas) possess of generating correct knowledge, and does not depend on

its being shown that they (the Vedas) are founded on correct knowledge in their utterer,<sup>129</sup> or on any other ground of that sort. And to this effect is the Nyāya Sūtra, that 'their authority is like the authority of the formulas and the Āyur-veda.' (See above, p. 114.)

In reference to the 46th Sūtra I add here the 98th aphorism of the 1st book, with the remarks by which it is introduced and followed :

*Nanu chet sadā sarvajñaḥ īśvaro nāsti tarḥi vedānta mahāvākyaṛthasya vivekasya upadeśe 'ndha-paramparāsankayā aprāmānyam praśajyeta | tatra āha | 98. Siddha-rūpa-bodddhṛitvād vākyaṛthopadeśaḥ | Hiranyagarbhādīnām siddha-rupānām<sup>130</sup> yathārthārthasya bodddhṛitvāt tad-vak-trikāyurvedādi-prāmānyena avadhṛitāc cha eśhām vākyaṛthopadeśaḥ pramānam iti śeśaḥ |*

"But may it not be said that if there be no eternally omniscient Īśvara, the charge of want of authority will attach to the inculcation of discriminative knowledge which is the subject of the great texts of the Upanishads, from the doubt lest these texts may have been handed down by a blind tradition. To this he replies : 86. 'From the fact that beings perfect in their nature understood them, it results that we have an (authoritative) inculcation of the sense.' As Hiranyagarbha (Brahmā) and other beings who were perfect in their nature understood the true sense, and are ascertained to have done so by the authoritativeness of the Āyur-veda, etc., which they uttered, their inculcation of the sense of the texts is authority ;—such is the complete meaning of the aphorism."

In the 57th and following Sūtras of the fifth book, Kapila denies that sound has the character of *sphoṭa*, or that letters are eternal :

57. "*Pratity-apratitibhyām na sphoṭātmakaḥ śabdaḥ*" | *Pratyekavarnebhyo 'tiriktaṁ kalāśaḥ ityādi-rūpam akhaṇḍam eka-padam sphoṭaḥ iti yogair abhyupagamyate | kambu-grīvādy-avayavebhyo 'tirikto ghaṭādy-avayavīva | sa cha śabda-viśeśho padākḥyo 'rtha-sphuṭikaranāt sphoṭaḥ ity uchyate | sa śabdo 'prāmānikaḥ | kutaḥ |, "pratity-apratitibhyām" | sa śabdaḥ kim pratīyate na vā | ādye yena varṇa-śāmodāyena ānupurvī-*

<sup>129</sup> This directly contradicts the doctrine enunciated in the Vaiśeṣika Sūtras and the Kusumāñjali. See above, pp. 121, 123, and 129 f.

<sup>130</sup> This is a various reading given by Dr. Hall in the appendix to his edition of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya ; and I have adopted it in preference to *siddha-rūpasya* which he gives in his text, as the former seems to afford a better sense.

*viśeṣha-viśiṣṭhena* so 'bhivyaḥyate tasya eva artha-pratyāyakatvam astu | kim antargadunā tena | antye tv ajnāta-sphoṭasya nāsty artha-pratyāyana-saktir iti vyarthā, sphoṭa-kalpanā ity arthaḥ | Pūrvaṁ vedānāṁ nityatvam pratishiddham | idānīm vārṇa-nityatvam api pratishedati | 58. "Na śabda-nityatvaṁ kāryatā-pratīteḥ" | Sa eva ayaṁ ga-kāraḥ ityādi-pratyabhijñā - bālād vārṇa-nityatvaṁ na yuktaṁ | utpanno ga-kāraḥ ityādi-pratyayena, anityatva-siddher ity arthaḥ | pratyabhijñā taj-jātiyatā-vishayinī | akṣathā, ghaṭāder api pratyabhijñāyāḥ nityatūpatter iti | śankate | 59. "Pūrva-siddha-sattvāsya abhivyaḥkir dīpeneva ghaṭasya" | Nanu pūrva-siddha-sattākasyaiva śabdāsya dhvany-ādibhir yā 'bhivyaḥkris tan-mātram utpattih pratīter vishayaḥ | abhivyaḥktau dṛiṣṭānto dīpeneva ghaṭasya iti | Pariharati, | 60. "Sat-kāryya-siddhāntaś chet siddha-sūdhānam" | Abhivyaḥkris yady anāgatāvasthā - tyāgena varttamānāvasthā-lābhaḥ ity uchyaṭe tadā sat-kāryya-siddhāntaḥ | tādṛiṣa-nityatvaṁ cha sarva-kāryānām eva iti siddha-sūdhanam ity arthaḥ | yadi cha varttamānatayā sataḥ eva jñāna-mātra-rūpiny abhivyaḥkris uchyaṭe tadā ghaṭādīnām api nityatvāpattir ityādi |

“ ‘Sound has not the character of *sphoṭa*, from the dilemma that the latter must be either apparent or not apparent.’ A modification of sound called *sphoṭa*, single, indivisible, distinct from individual letters, existing in the form of words like *kalāśa* (jar), distinguished also from parts of words like *kambu-grīva* (striped-neck) and forming a whole like the word *ghaṭa* (jar), is assumed by the Yogas. And this species of sound called a word (*pada*) is designated *sphoṭa* from its manifesting a meaning. But the existence of this form of sound is destitute of proof. Why? ‘From the dilemma that it must be either apparent or not apparent.’ Does this form of sound appear or not? If it appears, then let the power of disclosing a meaning [which is ascribed by our opponents to *sphoṭa*] be regarded as belonging to that collection of letters, arranged in a particular order, by which the supposed *sphoṭa* is manifested. What necessity is there then for that superfluous *sphoṭa*? If, on the contrary, it does not appear, then that unknown *sphoṭa* can have no power of disclosing a meaning, and consequently it is useless to suppose that any such thing as *sphoṭa* exists.

“The eternity of the Vedas has been already denied. He now denies the eternity of letters also. 58. ‘Sound is not eternal, since it is clear that it is a production.’ The meaning is, that it is not reasonable to

infer on the strength of the recognition of the letter G as the same that we knew before (see Mīmāṃsā Aphorisms i. 13; above, p. 74), that letters are eternal; since it is clear that G and other letters are produced, and therefore cannot be eternal. The recognition of these letters has reference to their being of the same species as we have perceived before; since otherwise we are landed in the absurdity that, because we recognize a jar or any other such object to be the same, it must therefore be eternal.

“He expresses a doubt: 59. ‘What we hear may be merely the manifestation of a previously existing thing, as a jar is manifested (not created) by the light of a lamp.’ (See Mīmāṃsā Aphorisms i. 12, 13; above, p. 74.) Is it not the fact that it is merely the manifestation of previously existing language by sounds, etc., which we perceive as originating? An illustration of such manifestation is that of a jar by means of a lamp.

“He repels this doubt: 60. ‘If the axiom that an effect exists in its cause be here intended, this is merely proving what is already admitted.’ If by manifestation is meant the relinquishment by any substance of its past (?) condition, and the attainment of its present state, then we have merely the recognized principle of an effect virtually existing in its cause (see Sāṅkhya Kārika Aph. ix.); and as such eternity is truly predicable of all effects whatever, it is proving a thing already proved to assert it here. If, on the other hand, by manifestation be merely meant the perception of a thing actually existing, then we shall be involved in the absurdity of admitting that jars, etc., also are eternal, etc.”

SECT. X.—*On the use which the authors of the different Darśanas make of Vedic texts, and the mode of interpretation which they adopt.*

I have already (in p. 107) touched on the mode of interpretation applied by the author of the Brahma Sūtraṣ, or his commentator Śaṅkara Āchāryya, to the Vedic texts, derived chiefly from the Brāhmaṇas and Upanishads, on which the Vedāntic doctrines are based, or by which they are defended, or with which, at least, they are asserted to be consistent. It will, however, be interesting to enquire a little more in detail into the extent to which the Indian scriptures are appealed to, and the manner in which they are treated by the authors or expounders of the different

Darśanas. The object proposed by the Pūrva-mīmāṃsā is an enquiry into duty (*dharma-jñānā*—Aph. i.). Duty is defined as something enjoined by the Veda (*chodanā-lakṣhaṇo'rtho dharmah*—Aph. ii.); and which cannot be ascertained to be duty except through such injunction.<sup>131</sup> The first six lectures of the Mīmāṃsā, according to Mr. Colebrooke, “treat of positive injunction;” the remaining six concern “indirect command.” The authority of enjoined duty is the topic of the first lecture: its differences and varieties, its parts, . . . and the purpose of performance, are successively considered, in the three next. . . . The order of performance occupies the fifth lecture; and qualification for its performance is treated in the sixth. The subject of indirect precept is opened in the seventh lecture generally, and in the eighth particularly. Inferable changes, adapting to the variation or copy what was designed for the type or model, are discussed in the ninth, and bars or exceptions in the tenth. Concurrent efficacy is considered in the eleventh lecture; and co-ordinate effect in the twelfth.” . . . “Other matters are introduced by the way, being suggested by the main topic or its exceptions” (Misc. Essays, i. 304 f.). It appears, therefore, that the general aim of the Pūrva-mīmāṃsā is (1) to prove the authority of the Veda, and then to (2) deduce from it the duties, whether enjoined directly or indirectly, which are to be performed, the manner and conditions of their performance, and their results. It is also termed the Karma-mīmāṃsā, “as relating to works or religious observances to be undertaken for specific ends” (Colebrooke, i. 296, 325).

The Brahma-mīmāṃsā, or Vedānta, is, according to the same author, the complement of the Karma-mīmāṃsā, and “is termed *uttara*, later, contrasted with *pūrva*, prior, being the investigation of proof deducible from the Vedas in regard to *theology*, as the other is in regard to *works* and their merit. The two together, then, comprise the complete system of interpretation of the precepts and doctrine of the Vedas, both practical and theological. They are parts of one whole. The later Mīmāṃsā is supplementary to the prior, and is expressly affirmed to be so: but differing on many important points, though agreeing on others, they are essentially distinct in a religious as well as a philosophical view” (Misc. Ess. i. 325). In fact the Brahma-mīmāṃsā proceeds upon a depreciation of the value of the objects aimed at by the Karma-mīmāṃsā,

<sup>131</sup> See Ballantyne's Mīmāṃsā aphorisms, p. 7.

since the rewards which the latter holds out even in the future state are but of temporary duration; and according to Sankara it is not even necessary that the seeker after a knowledge of Brahma should first have studied the Karma-mīmāṃsā before he conceives the desire to enter upon the higher enquiry (*nanv iha karmāvabodhānantaryyam viśe-  
shaḥ | na | dharma-jijnāsāyāḥ prāg apy adhīta-vedāntasya Brahma-jijnā-  
sopapatteḥ*). (Sankara on Brahma Sūtra, i. 1, 1, p. 25 of Bibl. Ind.) This is distinctly expressed in the following passage, p. 28 :

*Tasmāt kim api vaktavyam yad-anantaram Brahma-jijnāsā upadiśyate  
iti | uchryate | nityānitya-vastu-vivēkaḥ ihāmutrārtha-phala-bhoga-virā-  
gaḥ śama-damādi-sādhanā-sampad mumukshatvaṁ cha | teshu hi satsu  
prāg api dharma-jijnāsāyāḥ ūrdhvaṁ cha śakyate Brahma jijnāsayituṁ  
jnātuṁ cha na viparyyaye | tasmād "atha" śabdēna yathokta-sādhanā-  
sampatty-ānantaryyam upadiśyate | "ataḥ" śabdo hetv-arthāḥ | yasmād  
vedaḥ eva agnihotrādīnāṁ śreyas-sādhanānām anitya-phalatāṁ darśayati  
"tad yathā iha karma-chito lokāḥ kshīyate evam eva amuttra punya-chito  
lokāḥ kshīyate" ity-ādi | tathā Brahma-vijnānād api param purushār-  
thaṁ darśayati Brahma-vid āpnoti param" ity-ādi | tasmād yathokta-  
sādhanā-sampatty-anantaram Brahma-jijnāsā kartavyā |*

The author is explaining the word *atha* 'now,' or 'next,' with which the first Sūtra begins; and is enquiring what it is that is referred to as a preliminary to the enquiry regarding Brahma: "What, then, are we to say that that is after which the desire to know Brahma is enjoined?" The answer is, 'it is the discrimination between eternal and non-eternal substance, indifference to the enjoyment of rewards either in this world or the next, the acquisition of the means of tranquillity and self-restraint, and the desire for final liberation. For if these requisites be present, a knowledge of Brahma can be desired, and Brahma can be known, even before, as well as after, an enquiry has been instituted into duty. But the converse does not hold good (*i.e.* without the requisites referred to, though a man may have a knowledge of duty, *i.e.* of ceremonial observances, he possesses no preparation for desiring to know Brahma). Hence by the word *atha* it is enjoined that the desire in question should follow the possession of those requisites.' The next word *ataḥ*, 'hence,' denotes the reason. Because the Veda itself,—by employing such words as these, 'Wherefore just as in this life the world which has been gained by works

perishes, so too in a future life the world gained by merit perishes'—points out that the rewards of the agnihotra sacrifice and other instruments of attaining happiness are but temporary. And by such texts as this, 'He who knows Brahma attains the highest exaltation,' the Veda further shews that the highest end of man is acquired by the knowledge of Brahma. Hence the desire to know Brahma is to be entertained after the acquisition of the means which have been already referred to."

In the Mīmāṃsā Sūtras, i. 1, 5, as we have seen above (p. 71), Bādarāyaṇa, the reputed author of the Brahma Sūtras, is referred to as concurring in the doctrine there laid down. But in many parts of the Brahma Sūtras, the opinions of Jaimini are expressly controverted, both on grounds of reason and scripture, as at variance with those of Bādarāyaṇa.<sup>132</sup>

I adduce some instances of this difference of opinion between the two schools :

We have seen above, p. 99, that according to the Brahma Sūtras the gods possess the prerogative (*adhikāra*) of acquiring divine science. This, however, is contested by Jaimini (see Brahma Sūtras, i. 3, 31), who objects (1) that in that case (as all divine sciences possess the characteristic of being science) the gods would also have the prerogative of becoming adepts in the science called Madhuvidyā, etc., which would be absurd, because the sun (Āditya), being the virtual object of worship in the ritual connected with that science, could not be worshipped by another sun, who, according to the supposition, would be one of the deities skilled in it, and one of the worshippers. Similar difficulties are furnished by other cases, as, for instance, that on the hypothesis referred to, the Vasus, Rudras, and three other classes of gods, would be at once the objects to be known and the knowers. In the next Sūtra the further objection is made (2) that the celestial luminaries, commonly called gods, are in reality destitute of sensation and desire; and on this ground also the prerogative in question is denied to the supposed deities. Bādarāyaṇa replies in the 33rd Sūtra (1) that although

<sup>132</sup> Dr. Ballantyne refers to the Mīmāṃsakas as being the objectors alluded to by S'ankara in his remarks which introduce and follow Brahma Sūtra, i. 1, 4; but as Jaimini is not expressly mentioned there, I shall not quote this text in proof of my assertion. See Ballantyne's Aphorisms of the Vedānta, p. 12.

the gods cannot concern themselves with such branches of knowledge as the Madhuvidyā, with which they themselves are mixed up, yet they do possess the prerogative of acquiring pure divine science, as that depends on the desire and capacity for it, and the non-existence of any obstacle to its acquisition (*tathāpy asti hi śuddhāyām brahma-vidyāyām sambhavo 'rthitva-sāmarthyāpratisheddhādy-apekshatvād adhikārasya*). An exception in regard to a particular class of cases cannot, he urges, set aside a rule which otherwise holds good; for if it did, the circumstance that the generality of men belonging to the three highest castes are excluded from the performance of particular rites, such as the Rājasūya, would have the effect of rendering them incapable of performing any sacrifice whatever. And he goes on to cite several Vedic texts which prove that the gods have both the capacity and the desire for divine knowledge. Thus: *Tad yo yo devānām pratyabudhyata sa eva tad abhavat tathā rishīnām tathā manushyānām* | “Whosoever, whether of gods, rishis, or men, perceived That, he became That.” Again: *Te ha ūchur ‘hanta tam ātmānam anvīchhāmo yam ātmānam anvishya sarvān lokān āpnoti sarvāms cha kāmān’ iti | Indro ha vai devānām abhi pravavrāja Virochano 'surānām iti* | “They said, ‘come, we shall enquire after that Soul, after investigating which, one obtains all worlds, and all objects of desire.’ Accordingly Indra among the gods, and Virochana among the Asuras, set out” (“to go to Prajāpati the bestower of divine knowledge,” according to Govinda Ānanda). And in reply to the second objection, Śankara maintains that the sun and other celestial luminaries are each of them embodied deities possessed of intelligence and power; an assertion which he proceeds to prove from texts both of the Veda and the Smṛiti. He then replies to a remark of the Mīmānsakas, referred to under Sūtra 32, that allusions in the Vedic mantras and arthavādas (illustrative passages) cannot prove the corporeality of the gods, as these texts have another object in view: and his reply is that it is the evidence, or the want of evidence, derivable from any texts which occasions us to believe or disbelieve in the existence of anything; and not the circumstance that such a text was or was not primarily intended to prove that particular point. The Mīmānsaka is represented as still unsatisfied: but I need not carry my summary further than to say that Śankara concludes by pointing out that the precepts which enjoin the offerings to certain gods imply that these gods have a particular form which the wor-



shipper can contemplate; and that in fact such contemplation is enjoined in the text, "Let the worshipper when about to repeat the Vashatkara meditate on the deity to whom the oblation is presented" (*yasyai devatāyāi havir grāhitaṁ syāt tāṁ dhyaḥyed vashatkariṣyan*).<sup>133</sup>

In Brahma Sūtras, iii. 4, 1, it is laid down as the principle of Bādarāyaṇa that the knowledge of Soul, described in the Upanishads, is the sole means of attaining the highest end of man, i.e. final liberation; that it is not to be sought with a view to, and that its operation is altogether independent of, ceremonial observances (*ataḥ | asmāt vedānta-vihitād ātma-jñānāt svatantrāt puruṣhārthaḥ siddhyati iti Bādarāyaṇaḥ āchāryyo manyate*). This he proves by various texts (*ity-evaṁ-jātyakā śrutir vidyāyāḥ kevalāyāḥ puruṣhārtha - hetutvaṁ śrāvayati*), such as *Tarati śokam ātma-vit | sa yo ha vai tat param Brahma veda Brahma eva bhavati | Brahma-vid āpnoti param |* "He who knows soul overpasses grief" (Chhāndogya Up. see above, p. 33); "He who knows that Brahma becomes Brahma;" "He who knows Brahma obtains the highest (exaltation);" etc. In the following Sūtra (2) Jaimini is introduced as contesting this principle, and as affirming that the knowledge of soul is to be acquired with a view to the performance of ceremonial works. The Sūtra in question, as explained by Sankara, means that "as the fact that soul is an agent in works implies an ultimate regard to works, the knowledge of soul must also be connected with works by means of its object" (*kartritvena ātmanaḥ karma-śeṣatvāt tad-vijnānam api . . . vishaya-dvāreṇa karma-sambandhḥ eva iti*). The same view is further stated in the following Sūtras 3-7, where it is enforced by the example of sages who possessed the knowledge of Brahma and yet sacrificed (Sūtra 3), by a text which conjoins knowledge and works (Sūtra 5), by a second which intimates that a person who knows all the contents of the Veda has a capacity for ceremonial rites (Sūtra 6), and by others (7). Sankara replies under Sūtra 8 to the view set forth in Sūtra 2, which he declares to be founded on a mistake, as "the soul which is proposed in the Upanishads as the object of knowledge is not the embodied soul, but the supreme Spirit, of which agency in regard to rites is not predicible. That knowledge, he affirms, does not promote, but on the

<sup>133</sup> The passage in which Sankara goes on to answer the objection that in cases like this the Itihāsas and Purāṇas afford no independent evidence, will be quoted below.

contrary, puts an end to all works" (*na cha tad-~~pr~~nānaṁ karmanām pravarttakam bhavati pratyuta tat karmāṇy uchehhiṅṅti*), and under Sūtra 16 he explains how this takes place, viz. by the fact that "knowledge annihilates the illusory conceptions of work, worker, and reward, which are caused by ignorance, and are necessary conditions of capacity for ceremonial observances" (*Api cha karmādhikāra-hetoh kriyā-kārakaphala-lakshanasya samastasya prapanchasya avidyā-kṛtasya vidyā-sāmarthyāt svarūpopamarddam āmananti*). To Sūtra 3 Bādarāyaṇa replies that the ceremonial practice of sages is the same whether they do or do not acquire knowledge with a view to works; to Sūtra 5, by saying that in the text in question works and knowledge are not referable to one and the same person, but works to one and knowledge to another; and to Sūtra 6, by declaring that it is merely the reading of the Veda, and not a knowledge of all its contents that is referred to in the text in question. Another reason assigned in Sūtra 17 to shew that divine knowledge is not dependent on, or subservient to works, is that ascetics who practise no Vedic ceremonies are yet recognized in the Veda as competent to acquire it (*ūrdhhvaretassu cha āśrameshu vidyā śrūyate na cha tatra karmāṅgatvaṁ vidyāyāḥ upapadyate karmābhāvāt | na hy agnihotrādīni vaidikāni karmāṇi teshāṁ santi*). In the following Sūtra (18) Jaimini is introduced as questioning the validity of this argument on the ground that the Vedic texts, which are adduced in support of it, merely allude to the existence of ascetics, and do not recognize such an order as consistent with Vedic usage, or that they have another object, or are ambiguous; while another text actually reprehends the practice of asceticism. To this Bādarāyaṇa rejoins in Sūtra 19, that the texts in question prove the recognized existence of the ascetic order as much as that of any other; and that the alleged ambiguity of one of the passages is removed by the consideration that as two of the three orders referred to, viz. those of the householder and brahmachārin, are clearly indicated, the third can be no other than that of the ascetic. The subject is further pursued in the next Sūtra 20, where the author and his commentator (who adduces additional texts) arrive at the conclusion that the practice of asceticism is not only alluded to, but enjoined in the Veda, and that consequently knowledge, as being inculcated on those who practise it, is altogether independent of works (*tasmāt siddhā ūrdhhvaretasaḥ āśramāḥ siddhāṁ cha ūrdhhvaretassu vidhānād vidyāyāḥ svāntantryam*).

Again in *Brahma Sūtras*, iv. 3, 7-14, the question is discussed whether the words *sa etān Brahma gamayati*, "He conducts them to Brahman," refer to the supreme Brāhmā, or to the created Brāhmā. Bādari (Sūtra 7) holds that the latter is meant, whilst Jaimini (in Sūtra 12) maintains that the former is intended. The conclusion to which the commentator comes at the close of his remarks on Sūtra 14 is that the view taken by Bādari is right, whilst Jaimini's opinion is merely advanced to display his own ability (*tasmāt "kāryyam Bādarir" ity esha eva pakṣaḥ sthitaḥ | "param Jaiminir" iti eka pakṣāntara-pratipādana-mātra-pradarśanam prajñā-vikāśanāya iti drashṭavyam*).

Further, in *Brahma Sūtras*, iv. 4, 10, it is stated to be the doctrine of Bādari that the sage who has attained liberation no longer retains his body or bodily organs, but his mind (*manas*) alone, whilst in the following Sūtra (11) it is declared to be Jaimini's opinion that he retains his body and senses also. In the 12th Sūtra it is laid down as the decision of Bādarāyaṇa that either of the two supposed states may be assumed at will by the liberated spirit.

Jaimini and his opinions are also mentioned in *Brahma Sūtras* i. 2, 28, and 31; i. 4, 18; and iv. 4, 5.

I shall now adduce some illustrations of the claims which the founders of the other philosophical schools put forward on behalf of their own principles as being in conformity with the Vedas. I begin with a passage on this subject from Sankara's note introductory to *Brahma Sūtras* i. 1, 5 ff.:

*Brahma cha sarvajñaṁ sarvaśakti jagad-utpatti-sthiti-nāśa-kāraṇam ity uktam | Sāṅkhyādayaḥ tu pariniśchītaṁ vastu pramāṇāntara-gamyam eva iti manyamānāḥ pradhānādīni kāraṇāntarāni anumimānās tat-paratayā eva vedānta-vākyāni yojayanti | sarveṣu eva tu vedānta-vākyeṣu śriṣṭi-vishayeshu anumānena eva kāryyena kāraṇam lilakṣayishītam | Pradhāna-puruṣa-saṁyogāḥ nityānumeyāḥ iti Sāṅkhyāḥ manyante | Kāṇḍās tv etebhyaḥ eva vākyebhyaḥ Īsvaraṁ nimitta-kāraṇam anumimate anūmāṣ cha śamavāyī-kāraṇam | evam anye 'pi tārikāḥ vākyābhāsa-yukty-ābhāsāvashṭumbhāḥ pūrva-pakṣa-vādīnaḥ iha uttiṣṭhante | tatra pada-vākyā-pramāṇa-jnena āchāryyena vedānta-vākyānāṁ Brahmāvagati-paratva-pradarśanāya vākyābhāsa-yukty-ābhāsa-pratipattayūḥ pūrvapakṣhī-kṛītya nirākriyante | tatra Sāṅkhyāḥ pradhānam triguṇam ahetanaṁ jagataḥ kāraṇam iti manyamānāḥ āhur "yāni vedānta-vākyāni sarvajña-*

sya sarvaśakter Brahmano jagat-kāranatvam pratipadyanti ity avochas  
tāni pradhāna-kāraṇa-pakshe 'pi yojayituṃ śakyante | sarvaśaktitvaṃ  
tāvāt pradhānasyāpi sva-vikāra-vishayaṃ upapadyate | evaṃ sarvajna-  
tvam upapadyate | katham | yat tvaṃ jñānam manyase sa sattva-dharmah  
“sattvāt sanjāyate jñānam” iti smṛiteḥ | tena cha sattva-dharmena  
jñānena kāryya-kāraṇavantah purushāḥ sarvajnāḥ yogīnāḥ prasiddhāḥ |  
sattvasya hi niratīśayotkarshe sarvajnatvam prasiddham | na cha kevalasya  
akāryya-kāraṇasya purushasya' upalabdhi-māttasya' sarva-jnatvaṃ kin-  
chij-jnatvaṃ vā kalpayituṃ śakyam | trigunatvāt tu pradhānasya sarva-  
jnāna-kāraṇa-bhūtaṃ sattvam pradhānāvasthāyām api vidyate iti pradhā-  
nasya achetanasya eva sataḥ sarvajnatvam upachāryyate vedānta-vākyeshu |  
avaśyaṃ cha tvayā 'pi sarvajnam Brahma abhyupagachhatā sarva-jnāna-  
śaktimattvena eva sarvajnatvam abhyupagantavyam | na hi sarva-vishayaṃ  
jñānaṃ kurvaḍ eva Brahma varittate | tathā hi jñānasya nityatve jñāna-  
kriyām prati svātantryaṃ hīyeta | atha anityaṃ tad iti jñāna-kriyāyāḥ  
uparame uparameta api Brahma | tadā sarva-jnāna-śaktimattvena eva  
sarvajnatvam āpatati | api cha prāg utpatteḥ sarva-kāraka-śūnyam Brahma  
ishyate tvayā | na cha jñāna-sādhanānāṃ śarīrendriyādīnām abhāve  
jñānotpattih kasyachid upapannā | api cha pradhānasya anekātmakasya  
parināma-sambhavāt kāraṇatvopapattir mṛid-ūdi-vat | na asaṃhata-sya  
ekātmakasya Brahmanaḥ | ity evam prāpte idam sūtram ārabhyate | 5. “Īk-  
shater na | aśabdām” | na Sāṅkhya-parikalpitam achetanam pradhānaṃ ja-  
gataḥ kāraṇaṃ śakyaṃ vedānteshv āsrayitum | aśabdaṃ hi tat | katham  
aśabdām | “īkshiteḥ” | īkshīṛitva-śrāvaṇāt kāraṇasya | katham | evaṃ hi  
śrūyate “Sad eva saumya idam agre āsīd ekam eva ḍvītiyam” ity upakra-  
mya “tad aikshata ‘bahu syām prajāyeya’ iti tat tejo 'srījata” iti | tattva  
idam-śabda-vāchyaṃ nāma-rūpa-vyākṛitaṃ jagat prāg utpatteḥ sad-āt-  
manā 'vadhāryya tasya eva prakṛitasya sach-chhabda-vāchyasya īkshana-  
pūrvakaṃ tejaḥ-prabhṛiteḥ sraśṛitvaṃ darśayati | tathā cha anyatra  
“ātmā vai idam ekaḥ eva agre āsīt | na anyat kinchana mishat | sa aik-  
shata 'lokān nu sṛijai' iti sa imān lokān asṛijata” iti īkshā-pūrvikām eva  
sṛiṣṭim āchashṭe | . . . ity-evam-ādīny api sarvajñeśvara-kāraṇa-parāni  
vākyāny udāhartavyāni | yat tu uktam “sattva-dharmena jñānena sar-  
vajnam pradhānam bhaviṣyati” iti tad na upapadyate | na hi pradhā-  
nāvasthāyām guṇa-sāmyāt sattva-dharmo jñānaṃ sambhavati | nanu  
uktam “sarva-jnāna-śaktimattvena sarvajnam bhaviṣyati” iti tad api na  
upapadyate | yadi guṇa-sāmye sati sattva-vyapāśrayāṃ jñāna-śaktim

*āsritya sarvajnam pradhānam uchyeta kāmam rajas-tamo-vyapāśrayām  
 api jñāna-pratibandhāka-śaktim āsritya kinchij-jnatvam uchyeta | api cha  
 na asāksikā sattva-vṛttir jānāti, na abhidhīyate | na cha achetanasya  
 pradhānasya sākshitam aṣṭi | tasmād anupannam pradhānasya sarvajna-  
 tvam | yoginām tu chetanatvāt sarvotkarsha-nimittam sarvajnatvam upa-  
 pannam, ity anudāharanam | atha puṇaḥ sākshi-nimittam ikshitrītvam  
 pradhānasya kalpyeta yathā, agni-nimittam ayah-pindūder dagdhrītvam  
 tathā sati-yan-nimittam ikshitrītvam pradhānasya tad eva sarvajnam mukh-  
 yam Brāhma jagataḥ kāraṇam iti yukṭam | yat punar uktam Brahmano-  
 'pi na mukhyam sarvajnatvam upapadyate nitya-jñāna-kriyatve jñāna-  
 kriyām prati svātantryāsambhavād ity atra uchyate | idaṁ tāvad bhavān  
 prashṭavyaḥ “katham nitya-jñāna-kriyatve sarvajnatva-hānir” iti | yasya  
 hi sarva-vishayāvabhāsa-kshamaṁ jñānam nityam asti so 'sarvajnaḥ iti  
 vipratishiddham | anityatve hi jñānasya kadāchij jānāti kadāchid na jānāti  
 ity asarvajnatvam api syāt | na asau jñāna-nityatve doṣo 'sti | jñāna-  
 nityatve jñāna-vishayaḥ svātantrya-vyapadeśo na upapadyate iti chet |  
 na | pratataushṇa-prakāśe 'pi savitari dahati prakāśayati iti svātantrya-  
 vyapadeśa-darśanāt | nanu savitur dāhya-prakāśya-saṁyoge sati dahati  
 prakāśayati iti vyapadeśaḥ syāt | na tu Brahmanaḥ prāg utpatter jñāna-  
 karma-saṁyogo 'sti iti vishamo dṛishṭāntaḥ | na | asaty api karmaṇi savitā  
 prakāśate iti kartṛitva-vyapadeśa-darśanāt | evam asaty api jñāna-kar-  
 maṇi Brahmanas “tad aikshata” iti kartṛitva-vyapadeśopapatter na vai-  
 shamyam | karmāpekshāyām tu Brahmani ikshitrīva-śrutayaḥ sutarām  
 upapannāḥ | kim punas tat karma yat prāg utpatter īśvara-jñānasya  
 vishayibhavati iti | ṣattvaṅnyatvābhyām anīrvachanīye nāma-rūpe avyā-  
 krīte vyāchikīrshīte iti brūmaḥ | yat-prasādād hi yoginām apy atītānā-  
 gata-vishayam pratyakṣam jñānam ichhanti yoga-sūtra-vidāḥ kimu vak-  
 tavyam tasya nitya-sūddhasya īśvarasya śriṣṭi-sthiti-saṁhṛīti-vishayam  
 nitya-jñānam bhavati iti | yad apy uktam prāg utpatter Brahmanaḥ śarī-  
 rūdi-sambandham antareṇa ikshitrītvam anupannam iti na tach chodyam  
 avatarati savitṛi-prakāśa-vad Brahmano jñāna-svarūpa-nityatvena jñāna-  
 sādhanāpekṣānupapattēḥ | . . . yad apy uktam “pradhānasya anekāt-  
 makatvād mṛid-ādi-vat kāraṇatvopapattir na asaṁhatasya Brahmanaḥ”  
 iti tat pradhānasya asādatvena eva pratyukṭam | yathā tu tarkenāpi Brah-  
 manaḥ eva kāraṇatvam nīrvodhuṁ śakyate na pradhānādīnām tathā pra-  
 panchayishyate “na vilakṣaṇatvād asya” ity-evam-ādinā (Brahma Sū-  
 tras ii. 1, 4) |*

*Attra āha yad uktam "na achetanam pradhānam jñgat-kāranam ikshitrīva-śravanād" iti tad anyathā 'py upapadyate. achetane 'pi chetana-  
 vad upachāra-darśanāt | pratyāsanna-pātanatām kūlasya ālakshya kūlam  
 pīpatishati ity achetane 'pi kūle chetana-vad upachāro dṛishṭaḥ tad-vad achetane 'pi  
 pradhāne pratyāsanna-sarge chetana-vad upachāro bhaviṣhyati "tad aikshata" iti |  
 yathā loke kaśchich chetanaḥ snātvā bhuktvā cha "aparāhne grāmaṁ rathena gamiṣhyāmi" iḥi  
 ikshitvā anantaraṁ tathāiva niyamena pravarttate tathā prādhānam api makad-āṅy-ākāreṇa  
 niyamena pravarttate | tasmāch chetana-vad upacharyyate | kasmāt punaḥ kūrānad  
 vihūya mukhyam ikshitrīvam aupachārikaṁ kalpyate | "tat tejaḥ aikshata" "tāḥ  
 āpaḥ aikshanta" iti cha achetanayor apy ap-tejasoś chetana-vad upachāra-darśanāt |  
 tasmāt sat-karttrikam api ikshanam aupachārikam iti gamyate upachāra-prāye  
 vachanād ity evam prāpte idaṁ sūtram ārabhyate | 6. "Gauṇaś chet | na |  
 ātma-śabdāt" | yad uktam pradhānam achetanaṁ sach-chhabda-vāchyam  
 tasmīn aupachārikī ikshitrī ap-tejasor iva iti tad asat | kasmāt | ātma-śabdāt |  
 "sad eva saumya idam agre asīd" ity upakramya "tad aikshata tat tejo 'sṛijata"  
 iti cha tejo 'b-annānām sṛiṣṭim uktvā tad eva prakṛitaṁ sad ikshitrī tāni  
 cha tejo 'b-annāni devatā-śabdena parāmṛiṣya āha "sā iyaṁ devatā  
 aikshata hanta aham imās tisro devatāḥ anena jīvena ātmanā 'nupraviṣya  
 nāma-rūpe vyākara-vāni" iti | tatra yadi pradhānam achetanaṁ  
 guṇa-vṛittiyā ikshitrī kalpyeta tad eva prakṛitatvāt sā iyaṁ devatā  
 parāmṛiṣyeta | na tadā devatā jīvam ātma-śabdena abhidadyāt |  
 jīvo hi nāma chetanaḥ śarīrādhyakṣaḥ prānānām dhārayitū  
 prasiddher nirvāchanāch cha | sa katham achetanasya pradhānasya  
 ātmā bhavet | ātmā hi nāma svarūpam | na achetanasya  
 pradhānasya chetano jīvaḥ svarūpam bhavitum arhati | attra tu  
 chetanam Brahma mukhyam ikshitrī parigrīhyate | tasya jīva-vishayaḥ  
 ātma-śabda-prayogaḥ upapadyate | tathā "sa yaḥ eṣo 'nimā etadāt-  
 myam idaṁ sarvaṁ tat satyaṁ sa ātmā tat tvam asi S'vetaketo" ity  
 attra "sa ātmā" iti prakṛitaṁ sad-aṇimānam ātmānam ātma-śabdena  
 upadiṣya "tat tvam asi S'vetaketo" iti chetanasya S'vetaketor ātmatvena  
 upadiṣati | ap-tejasoś tu vishayatvād achetanātvam nāma-rūpa-vyākara-  
 nādau cha prayojyatvena eva nirdeśāt | na cha ātma-śabda-vat  
 kinchid mukhyatve kāraṇam asti iti yuktaṁ kūla-vad gauṇatvam ikshitrī-  
 vasya | tayoṛ api cha sad-adhishṭhitatvāpeksham eva ikshitrīvam |  
 sataś tv ātma-śabdād na gauṇam ikshitrīvam ity uktam | atha uchyate |  
 achetane 'pi pradhāne bhavaty ātma-śabdaḥ | ātmanaḥ sarvārtha-kāritvāt |*

yathā rājnaḥ sarvātha-kūrini bhṛitye bhavaty ātma-śabdo “mama ātmā Bhadrāsenah” iti | pradhānaṁ hi puruṣhātmano<sup>134</sup> bhogāpavargau kurvad upakaroti rājnaḥ iva bhṛityaḥ sandhi-vigrahādishu varttamānaḥ | athavā ekaḥ eva ātma-śabdāś chetanāchetana-vishayo bhaviṣyati “bhūtātmā” “indriyātmā” iti cha prayoga-darśanād yathā ekaḥ eva jyotiḥ-śabdaḥ kratu-jvalana-viśvayāḥ | tatra kutāḥ etaḥ ātma-śabdādīkṣiteḥ agauṇatvam ity atra uttaram paṭhaḥ | 7. “Tan-niṣṭhasya mokshopadeśāt” | na pradhānam aḥetanam ātma-śabdālambanam bhavitum arhati “sa ātmā” iti prakṛitaṁ sad animānam ādāya “tat tvam asi S’vetaketo” iti chetanasya S’vetaketor mokshayitavyasya tan-niṣṭhām upadiśya “Āchāryyavān puruṣho veda tasya tāvad eva chiraṁ yāvad na vimokṣhye atha sampatsye” iti mokshopadeśāt | yadi hy ahetanam pradhānaṁ sach-chhabda-vāchyaṁ “tad asi” iti grāhyeḥ mumukṣuṁ chetanaṁ santam “ahetano ‘si” iti tadā viparīta-vādi sūtram puruṣhasya anarthāya ity apramāṇaṁ syāt | na tu nirdoṣaṁ sūtram apramāṇaṁ kalpayituṁ yuktam | yadi cha ajnasya sato mumukṣor ahetanam anātmānam “ātmā” ity upadiśet pramāṇa-bhūtaṁ sūtraṁ sa śraddadhānatayā ’ndha-go-lāngūla-nyūyena tad-ātma-dṛiṣṭiṁ na purityajet tad-vyatiriktaṁ cha ātmānaṁ na pratipadyeta | tathā sati puruṣhārthād viḥanyeta anarthaṁ cha ricchet | tasmād yathā svargūdy-arthino ’gnihotrādi-sādhanāṁ yathā-bhūtam upadiśati tathā mumukṣor api “sa ātmā | tat tvam asi S’vetaketo” iti yathā-bhūtam eva ātmānam upadiśati iti yuktam | evaṁ cha sati tapta-paraśu-grahana-mokṣa-dṛiṣṭāntena satyābhisandhasya mokshopadeśaḥ upapadyate | . . . tasmād na sad-animāny ātma-śabdasya gauṇatvam | bhṛitye tu svāmi-bhṛitya-bhedasya pratyakṣatvād upa-panno gauṇaḥ ātma-śabdo “mama ātmā Bhadrāsenah” iti | api cha kvachid gauṇaḥ śabdo dṛiṣṭaḥ iti na etāvātū śabda-pramāṇake ’rthe gauṇī kalpanā nyūyā sarvattra anūśvāsa-prasangāt | yat tu uktaṁ chetanāchetanayoḥ sādharānaḥ ātma-śabdaḥ kratu-jvalanayor iva jyotiḥ-śabdaḥ iti | tad na | anekārthatvasya anyūyatyāt | tasmāch chetana-vishayaḥ eva mukhyaḥ ātma-śabdāś chetanatvopachārād bhūtādishu prayujyate “bhūtātmā” “indriyātmā” iti cha | sādharānatve ’py ātma-śabdasya na prakaraṇam upapadaṁ vā kinchid niśchāyakam antareṇa anyatara-vṛittitā nirdhārayituṁ śakyate | na cha atra ahetanasya niśchāyakaṁ kinchit kāraṇam asti prakṛitaṁ tu sad īkṣitṛi sannihitāś cha chetanaḥ S’vetaketuḥ | na hi chetanasya S’vetaketor ahetanaḥ ātmā sam-

<sup>134</sup> The edition printed in Bengali characters reads *puruṣhasya ātmānaḥ*.

*bhavati ity avochāma | tasmāch chetana-vishayaḥ iha ātma-sabdah iti niśchīyate |*

“And it has been declared that Brahma, omniscient and omnipotent, is the cause of the creation, continuance, and destruction of the world. But the Sāṅkhyas and others, holding that an ultimate (*parinīṣṭhita*)<sup>135</sup> substance is discoverable by other proofs, and inferring the existence of Pradhāna or other causes, apply the texts of the Upanishads as having reference to these. For (they assert that) all the texts of the Upanishads which relate to the creation, design inferentially to indicate the cause by the effect. The Sāṅkhyas think that the conjunctions of Pradhāna and Purusha (Soul) are to be inferred as eternal. From the very same texts the followers of Kaṇāda (the Vaiśeshikas) deduce that Īśvara is the instrumental cause and atoms the material cause<sup>136</sup> (of the world). So, too, other rationalizing objectors rise up who rely on fallacies founded on texts or reasoning. Here then our teacher (*āchāryya*), who understood both words and sentences and evidence, with the view of pointing out that the texts of the Upanishads have for their object the revelation of Brahma, first puts forward and then refutes the fallacies founded by those persons on texts or reasoning. The Sāṅkhyas regarding Pradhāna, consisting of the three qualities (*gunas*, viz. *sattva*, *rajas*, and *tamas*, or “Goodness,” “Passion,” and “Darkness”), and inanimate, as the cause of the world, tell us: (a) ‘Those texts in the Upanishads which, as you say, declare that an omniscient and omnipotent Brahma is the cause of the world, can be applied to support the view that Pradhāna is the cause. For omnipotence in regard to its own developments is properly predicable of Pradhāna also; and omniscience too may be rightly ascribed to it. You will ask, how? We answer (b), What you call knowledge is a characteristic of ‘Goodness’ (*sattva*), according to the text of the Smṛiti, ‘From Goodness springs knowledge.’ And (c) through this knowledge, which is a characteristic of Goodness, Yogins, who are men

<sup>135</sup> Compare Sāṅkhya Sūtras, i. 69: *pāramparye ’pi ekatra parinīṣṭhā*, etc., which Dr. Ballantyne renders, “Even if there be a succession, there is a halt (*parinīṣṭhā*) at some one point,” etc.

<sup>136</sup> The phrase so translated is *samavāyi-kāraṇam*. The word *samavāya* is rendered by Dr. Ballantyne, in his translation of the *Īhāshāparichheda* (published January, 1851), p. 22, by “intimate relation” (the same phrase as Dr. Roer had previously employed in 1850); and in the translation of the *Tarka-sangraha* (published in September of the same year), pp. 2 and 4, by “co-inherence.”



with bodily organs,<sup>137</sup> are reputed to be omniscient; for owing to the transcendent excellence of Goodness its omniscience is matter of notoriety. Nor it is only of a person (*puruṣha*) whose essence is mere perception, and who is devoid of corporeal organs, that either omniscience or partial knowledge can be predicated: but from Pradhāna being composed of the three qualities, Goodness, which is the cause of omniscience, belongs to it too in the condition of Pradhāna. And so in the texts of the Upanishads omniscience is figuratively ascribed to it, although it is unconscious. " And (*d*) you also, who recognize an omniscient Brahma, must of necessity acknowledge that His omniscience consists in His possessing the power of omniscience. For He does not continually exercise knowledge in regard to all objects. For (*e*) if His knowledge were continual. His self-dependence (or voluntary action) in reference to the act of knowledge would be lost. But if knowledge be not continual, then when the act of knowledge ceases Brahma must cease (to know). And so omniscience results from the possession of the power of omniscience. Further (*f*) you, too, hold that before the creation Brahma was devoid of any impulse to action. Nor can knowledge be conceived to arise in anyone who has no bodily organs or other instruments of knowledge. Moreover (*g*) causality can properly be ascribed to Pradhāna (as it can to earth, etc.) owing to the variety in its nature,<sup>138</sup> and the consequent possibility of its development, but not to Brahma whose essence is simple and uniform.' These arguments having been urged, the following Sūtra is introduced: 5. 'No; for in consequence of the word 'beholding' being employed, your view is contrary to the Veda.' (*a*) The unconscious Pradhāna, imagined by the Sāṅkhyas as the cause of the world, can find no support in the Upanishads. For it is unscriptural. How so? From its beholding, *i.e.* because the act of 'beholding' (or 'reflecting') is in scripture ascribed to the cause. How? Because the Veda contains a text which begins thus: 'This, o fair youth, was in the beginning' 'Existent, one without a second' (Chh. Up. vi. 2, 1); and proceeds: 'It beheld, let

<sup>137</sup> The epithet *kāryya-karaṇavantaḥ* is rendered *dehendriya-yukta* in the Bengali translation of S'ankara's comment, which forms part of the edition of the S'ārīraka-sūtras, with comment and gloss, published at Calcutta in 1784 of the S'aka era. This translation is useful for ascertaining the general sense, but it does not explain all the difficult phrases which occur in the original.

<sup>138</sup> The meaning of this is that Pradhāna, as cause, possesses in its nature a variety corresponding to that exhibited by the different kinds of objects which constitute the visible creation; whilst Brahma is one and uniform.

me multiply, and be propagated.' 'It created light' (3). By these words the scripture, having first determined that the world, denoted by the word 'this' and now developed as Name and Form, subsisted before the creation in the form of the 'Existent,' then goes on to shew that this very subject of the text, denoted by the word 'Existent,' became, after 'beholding,' the creator of light and other objects. And accordingly another text (Ait. Up. i. 1) declares in the following words that the creation was preceded by 'beholding:': 'This was in the beginning Soul, one only; there was nothing else which saw.<sup>139</sup> It beheld, Let me create worlds; it created these worlds.'" After quoting two other texts Sankara proceeds: "These and other passages may also be adduced which shew that an omniscient Īśvara was the cause (of all things). And (b) the opinion which has been referred to, that Pradhāna will be omniscient in virtue of the knowledge which is an attribute of Goodness, is groundless. For since the three qualities are in a state of equilibrium as long as the state of Pradhāna lasts, knowledge as an attribute of Goodness cannot then belong to it. And the assertion (d) that Pradhāna will be omniscient from possessing the power of omniscience is equally untenable. If (b) in reliance on the power of knowledge residing in Goodness during the state of equilibrium, it be maintained that Pradhāna is then omniscient, a merely partial knowledge may with equal reason be ascribed to it on the strength of the power to obstruct knowledge which resides in Passion and Darkness (the other two qualities which constitute it). Besides, no function of Goodness can either be, or be called, knowledge, unless it be accompanied by the power of observing (or witnessing). 'But Pradhāna, being unconscious, possesses no such power. Consequently the omniscience of Pradhāna is untenable. And the omniscience of Yogins, (c) springing from their eminence in every attribute, becomes possible in consequence of their being conscious creatures; and therefore cannot be adduced as an illustrative argument in the case before us. If, again, you ascribe to Pradhāna a power of reflection derived from an observer (like the power of burning possessed by iron balls, etc., which is derived from fire) then it will be right to say that the source from which that power of reflection comes to Pradhāna, viz. the omniscient Brahma in the proper sense, and nothing else, is the cause of the world. Once more, (e) it is

<sup>139</sup> This is the sense assigned in Böhlingk and Roth's Lexicon to the word *mishat*. The commentators render it "moving" (*chalat*).

urged that omniscience cannot in the literal sense be properly attributed even to Brahma himself, because if the cognitive acts were continual, His self-dependence (or spontaneity), in regard to the act of cognition, would be no longer conceivable: we reply, that we must ask you how the supposition that cognitive acts are continual, interferes with the existence of omniscience. Because it is a contradiction to say that he who possesses a perpetual knowledge which can throw light upon all subjects can be otherwise than omniscient. For although on the hypothesis that knowledge is not continual, a negation of omniscience would result, as in that case the person in question would sometimes know and sometimes not know,—the same objection does not attach to the supposition of a perpetuity of knowledge. If you reply that on that supposition, self-dependence (or spontaneity), in regard to knowledge can no longer be attributed, we deny this, because we observe that spontaneity, in regard to burning and illuminating, is attributed to the sun, although he continually burns and shines. If you again object that this illustration does not hold good, because the power in question is ascribed to the sun only when his rays are in contact with the objects to be burnt or illuminated, whereas before the creation, Brahma has no contact with the object of knowledge;—we reply that the parallel is exact, because we observe that agency in shining is attributed to the sun even when there is no object [for his beams]; and in the same way agency in regard to ‘beholding,’ is justly ascribed to Brahma, even when there is no object of knowledge. But the texts which record the fact of ‘beholding’ will be applicable to Brahma with still greater propriety if that ‘beholding’ have had reference to a positive object. What then is the object which is contemplated by Brahma before the creation? We reply, the undeveloped Name and Form which were not describable either in their essence or differences, and which He wished to develop. For what need we say to prove the perpetual knowledge, relating to the creation, continuance, and destruction of the world, which belongs to Īśvara, the perpetually pure, from whose grace it is that the intuitive knowledge of things past and future, which men learned in the Yoga doctrine attribute to Yogins, is derived? And as regards the further objection (*f*) that Brahma, who before the creation was without body or organs of sense, could not be conceived to ‘behold,’—that argument cannot be sustained, as from

Brahma's existence in the form of knowledge being, like the sun's lustre, perpetual, he cannot be supposed dependent upon any (bodily organs as) instruments of knowledge." . . . "Then as regards the assertion (g) that Pradhāna, from its multiformity of character can (like earth, etc.,) be readily conceived as the cause (of the manifold products which we see around us), whilst such causality cannot be ascribed to the simple and uniform Brahma,—that has been answered by the remark that the existence of Pradhāna is not established by scripture. And that the causality of Brahma, but not that of Pradhāna, etc.; can be established by reasoning will hereafter be shewn in the Sūtras, 'Brahma, you say, cannot be the material cause of this world, because it differs from him in its nature,' etc. (Brahma Sūtras, ii. 1, 4 ff.). Here the Sāṅkhyas remark: 'As regards your objection that the unconscious Pradhāna cannot be the cause of the world, because the Veda describes that cause as 'beholding,' we observe (h) that that text, if otherwise explained, will be consistent with our view. For we find that even unconscious objects are figuratively spoken of as conscious. Thus we notice that any one who perceives that the bank of a river is on the point of falling, speaks in a figurative way of that unconscious bank as intending to fall.<sup>140</sup> In the same way when Pradhāna is on the point of creating, it can be figuratively said of it, although unconscious, as of a conscious being, that it 'beheld.'<sup>141</sup> Just as any conscious person, after bathing and eating, resolves that on the following day he will proceed to his village in a car, and afterwards acts according to that plan, so too Pradhāna (becoming developed) in the form of Mahat (intellect), etc., acts according to a law, and therefore is figuratively spoken of as conscious. If you ask us, why we abandon the proper sense of 'beholding,' and adopt a figurative one, we answer that we do so because we find the term figuratively applied to Water and to Light, though unconscious objects, in the Vedic texts, 'The Light beheld,' 'the Waters beheld' (Chh. Up. vi. 2, 3f.). Hence from the fact that the expression is for the most

<sup>140</sup> *Kūlam pipatishati*, literally, "The bank wishes to fall;" but, as is well known, a verb, or verbal noun, or adjective, in the desiderative form, often indicates nothing more than that something is about to happen. Here, however, the Sāṅkhyas are introduced as founding a serious argument on this equivocal form of speech.

<sup>141</sup> See Vijnāna Bhikshu's remarks on the Sāṅkhyā Sūtra, i. 96, where the same illustration is given.

part figuratively employed, we conclude that the act of beholding,' performed by the 'Existent' also was a figurative one." These objections having been brought forward, the following Sūtra is introduced: 6. "If you say that the act of 'beholding' is figuratively ascribed to Pradhāna, it is not so, because the word Soul also is applied to the cause." (h) "The assertion that the unconscious Pradhāna is designated by the word 'Existent,' and that 'beholding' is figuratively ascribed to it, as to Water and Light, is incorrect. Why? Because the word Soul also is employed. The text which begins with the words, 'This, o fair youth, was in the beginning Existent,' and goes on 'It beheld, it created light,' after relating the creation of Light, Water, and Food, refers to that 'Existent,' the 'beholder,' which is the subject of the text, and to Light, Water, and Food, under the appellation of deities, thus: 'This deity beheld (or resolved), come let me enter into these three deities with this living Soul, and make manifest Name and Form' (vi. 3, 2). Here if the unconscious Pradhāna were regarded as being, through the function of the quality (of Goodness), the 'beholder,' it would from the context be referred to in the phrase 'that deity;' and then the deity in question could not denote a 'living being' by the term 'Soul.' For the principle of life is both according to common usage, and interpretation, the conscious ruler of the body, and the sustainer of the vital breaths. How could such a principle of life be the Soul of the unconscious Pradhāna? For Soul means the essential nature, and a conscious principle of life cannot be the essence of the unconscious Pradhāna. But in reality the conscious Brahma is understood in this text as the 'beholder' in the proper sense of the term; and the word Soul, as relating to the principle of life, is rightly applied to Him. And thus in the sentence 'This entire universe is identical with this subtile particle; it is true; it is Soul: Thou art it, o Svetaketu,' (Chh. Up. vi. 8, 6 f.) the author by employing the words 'it is Soul' designates the subtile particle, the Existent, which is the subject of the text, as Soul, by the term Soul, and so in the words 'thou art it, o Svetaketu,' describes the conscious Svetaketu as being Soul. But Water and Fire are unconscious things, because they are objects of sense,<sup>142</sup> and because it is pointed out that they were employed in the manifestation of Name and Form; and so there is no reason, as in the

<sup>142</sup> *Vishayatvāt = drig-vishayatvāt*, "from their being objects of the sense of sight."—Govinda Ānanda.

case of Soul, to describe them as 'beholders' in the proper sense: that term must be applied to them by a figure, as in the case of the 'river bank.' And their act of 'beholding' was dependent on their being governed by the 'Existent.' But, as we have said, the act of 'beholding' is not figurative in the case of the 'Existent,' because the word Soul is applied to it. But it is now urged (i), that the term Soul does apply to Pradhāna, though unconscious, because it fulfils all the objects of soul; just as it is applied by a king to his servant who accomplishes all his designs, when he says 'Bhadrasena is my soul.' For Pradhāna renders aid to a man's soul by obtaining for it both celestial enjoyment, and final liberation, as a king's servant assists him by acting in peace and war, etc. Or (j) the one word Soul may apply both to conscious and unconscious objects, as we see it employed in the phrases 'soul of the elements,' 'soul of the bodily organs;' just as the same word *gyotis* means both sacrifice and light. Why then, the Sāṅkhyas conclude, should you infer from the word 'Soul' that the term 'beholding' cannot be figuratively used?

"This is answered in the 7th Sūtra ('Soul cannot denote Pradhāna), because it is declared that the man who fixes his thoughts upon it obtains final emancipation.' Unconscious Pradhāna must not be understood to derive any support from the word 'Soul;' for after referring in the words 'it is Soul' to the 'Existent,' the 'very subtile thing,' which is the subject of the passage, and indicating in the words 'thou art it, o Svetaketu,' that the conscious Svetaketu, who was about to obtain emancipation, was intent upon it, the text above adduced declares his emancipation in the words 'the man who has an instructor knows, "this will only last until I am liberated; I shall then be perfected."' (Chh. Up. vi. 14, 6) For if the unconscious Pradhāna were denoted by the term 'Existent,' the words 'thou art it,' would cause the conscious person, who was seeking after emancipation, to understand (of himself) 'Thou art unconscious;' and in that case the Sāstra which declared what was contradictory would be unauthoritative, because injurious to the person in question. But we cannot conceive a faultless Sāstra to be unauthoritative. And if a Sāstra esteemed authoritative should inform an ignorant seeker after emancipation, that a thing which was not soul was soul, he (the ignorant seeker) would in consequence of his faith, persist in regarding it as soul, as in the case of

the blind man and the bull's tail,<sup>143</sup> and would fail of attaining to soul which was quite different from it; and would in consequence lose the object of its efforts, and suffer injury. It is therefore proper to conclude that just as the Vedic precept, that he who desires paradise should perform the agnihotra sacrifice is conformable to truth, so, too, the text which says to the man seeking after emancipation, 'this is soul, thou art that, o S'vetaketu,' declares to him soul in conformity with the reality. And so,—as in the case of the man (charged with theft) who takes into his hand the red-hot axe, and (in consequence of the truth of his protestation of innocence) is delivered (Chh. Up. vi. 16, 2),—the promise of final emancipation will hold good in the case of the man whose thoughts are fixed on the true Brahma. . . . Consequently the application of the word 'soul' to the 'existent subtle thing' is not figurative. Whereas (i) the use of the same word when applied to a servant (as when it is said 'Bhadrasena is my soul'), is shown to be figurative by the manifest distinctness of a servant from his master. And the fact that a word is sometimes observed to be employed figuratively does not justify the supposition that it is so used in cases where the (proper) sense is established by the words; because that would give rise to doubt in every instance. Again, (j) it is incorrect to say that the word soul is common to things conscious and unconscious, (as the term *gyotis* means both sacrifice and flame), because the assertion that it has a variety of significa-

<sup>143</sup> The story or fable here alluded to is told at length by Ānanda Giri, and more briefly by Govinda Ānanda as follows: *Kaśchit kila duṣhṭāmā mahāranya-nārgē patitam andhaṁ sva-bāndhu-nagaraṁ jigamishum bābhāshe* "kim atra āyushmatā duḥkhitena sthīyate" iti | *sa cha andhaḥ sukha-vāṇīm ākārnya tam ōptam matvā uvācha* "aho mad-bhāgadhēyaṁ yad atra bhavān mām dīnaṁ svābhīṣṭa-nagara-prāpty-āsamartham bhāshate" iti | *sa cha viprālipṣur duṣhṭa-go-yuvānam ānīya tadīya-lāngūlaṁ andhaṁ grāhayāmāsa upadīdeṣa cha enam andham* "eṣa go-yuvā tvām nagaraṁ neshyati mā tyaja lāngūlam" iti *sa cha andhaḥ śraddhātayā tad atyajan svābhīṣṭam aprāpya anārtha-paramparām prōptas tena nyāyena ity arthaḥ* | "A certain malicious person said to a blind man who was lying on the road through a forest, and wishing to proceed to the city of his friends, 'Why, distressed old man, do you stay here?' The blind man hearing the agreeable voice of the speaker, and regarding him as trustworthy, replied: 'O how great is my good fortune that you have accosted me who am helpless, and unable to go to the city which I desire to reach!' The other, wishing to deceive him, brought a vicious young bull, and made the blind man lay hold of his tail, and told him that the young bull would conduct him to the city, enjoining him not to let go the tail. Trusting to the speaker, the blind kept his hold, but did not attain the object of his desire, and encountered a series of mishaps;—such is the illustration."

tions is unreasonable. Hence the word soul, which properly refers to conscious things, is applied to the elements, etc., by a figurative ascription to them of consciousness, as when we say, 'the soul of the elements,' or 'the soul of the bodily organs.' And even if it were admitted that the word soul was common to different things, it could not be ascertained whether it had reference to one thing or another unless the context or some auxiliary word determined the point. But in the case before us there is nothing to determine that it denotes anything unconscious; on the contrary, the subject of the sentence is the 'Existent, the beholder,' and in immediate connection with it is the conscious S'vetaketu; for as we have already said an unconscious thing cannot be conceived as the soul of the conscious S'vetaketu. Thus it is settled that the word 'soul' refers to a conscious being," etc.

In the fourth section (*pāda*) of the 1st Book, the author of the Sūtras returns to his controversy with the Sāṅkhyas, and Sankara, after alluding to the aphorisms in which they had previously been combated, proceeds as follows (p. 334):

*Idaṁ tv idānīm avasiṣṭam āsankyate | yad uktam pradhānasya aśabdatvaṁ tad asiddhaṁ kūsucit śākhāsu pradhāna-samarpanābhāsānām śabdānām śrūyamānatvāt | ataḥ pradhānasya kāraṇatvaṁ veda-prasiddham eva mahadbhiḥ paramarśibhiḥ Kapilādibhiḥ parigrīhitam iti prasajyate | tad yāvat teshām śabdānām anya-paratvaṁ na pratipādyate tāvat sarvajnam Brahma jagataḥ kāraṇam iti pratipāditam apy ākulībhavet | atas teshām anya-paratvaṁ dakṣayitum paraḥ sandarbhaḥ pravarttate | "ānumānikam api" (Br. Sūtra i. 4, 1) anumāna-nirūpitam api pradhānam "ekeshām" śūkhinām śabdavad upalabhyate | Kāṭhake hi paṭhyate "mahataḥ param avyaktam avyaktāt puruṣaḥ paraḥ" iti | tatra ye eva yan-nāmāno yat-kramakās cha mahad-avyakta-puruṣāḥ smṛiti-prasiddhās te eva iha pratyabhijñāyante | tatra "avyaktam" iti smṛiti-prasiddheḥ śabdādi-hīnatvāc cha na vyaktam avyaktam iti vyutpatti-sambhavāt smṛiti-prasiddham pradkīnam abhidhīyate | atas tasya śabdavattvād aśabdatvam anupapannam<sup>144</sup> | tad eva cha jagataḥ kāraṇam śruti-smṛiti-prasiddhibhṛaḥ iti chet | na etad evam | na hy etad Kāṭhaka-vākyaṁ smṛiti-prasiddhayor mahad-avyaktayor astitva-param | na hy attra yādṛiṣāṁ smṛiti-prasiddhaṁ svatantraṁ kāraṇam triguṇam pradhānam*

<sup>144</sup> The text given in the Bibl. Indica has *upapannam*, but I follow the old edition in Bengali characters in reading *anupapannam*, which seems required by the sense.



tādṛśam pratyabhijnāyate | śabda-māttraṁ hy atra avyaktam iti pratyabhijnāyate | sa cha śabdo na vyaktam avyaktam iti yaugikavād anyasmīn api sūkṣhme-durlakṣhye cha prayujyate na cha ayaṁ kasminśchid rūdhah | yā tu pradhāna-vādinām rūdhiḥ sā teshāṁ eva pāribhūshikī satī na vedārtha-nirūpane kāraṇa-bhāvam pratipadyate | na cha krama-māttra-sāmarthyāt samānārtha-pratīpattir bhavaty asati tad-rūpa-pratyabhijnāne | na hy asva-sthāne gām paśyann asvo 'yam ity amūdhō 'dhyādasyati | prakaraṇa-nirūpanāyāṁ cha atra na para-parikalpītam pradhānam pratīyate śarīra-rūpa-ka-vinyasta-grīhiteḥ | śarīraṁ hy atra ratha-rūpa-ka-vinyastam avyakta-śabdena parigrīhyate | kutaḥ | prakaraṇāt pariśeṣhāc cha | tathā hy anantarāto granthaḥ ātma-śarīrādīnāṁ rāhi-rathādi-rūpa-ka-kṛiptiṁ darśayati | (Kaṭha Upanishad, i. 3, 3 f.) "ātmanāṁ rathināṁ viddhi śarīraṁ ratham eva cha | buddhiṁ cha sārathiṁ viddhi manāḥ pragraham eva cha | 4. Indriyāni hayān āhur viśhayāṁś teshu gocharān | ātmendriya-mano-yuktam bhoktety-āhur manīshinaḥ" | taiś chāndriyādibhir asaṁyataiḥ saṁsāram adhigacchhati | saṁyataiś tv adhvanaḥ pāraṁ tad Viśnoḥ paramam padam āpnoti iti darśayitvā kiṁ tad adhvanaḥ pāram Viśnoḥ paramam padam ity asya ākāṅkṣhāyāṁ tebhyaḥ eva prakṛitebhyaḥ indriyādibhyaḥ paratvena paramātmānam adhvanaḥ pāraṁ tad Viśnoḥ paramam padaṁ darśayati | Kaṭha Up. i. 3, 10 f.) "indriyebhyaḥ parāḥ hy arthāḥ arthebhyaś cha param manāḥ | manasas tu parā buddhir buddher ātmā mahān parāḥ | 11. Mahataḥ param avyaktam avyaktāt puruṣhaḥ parāḥ | puruṣhād na paraṁ kinchit sā kāśhṭhā sā parā gatir" iti | . . . "Buddher ātmā mahān parāḥ" yaḥ sa "ātmanāṁ rathināṁ viddhi" iti rathitvena upakṣiptaḥ | kutaḥ | ātma-śabdād bhoktuś cha bhogopakaranāt paratvopapatteḥ | mahattvaṁ cha asya svāmitvād upapannam | . . . yā prathamajasya Hirānyagarbhasya buddhiḥ sā sarvāsām buddhinām paramā pratishṭhā sā iha "mahān ātmā" ity uchyate | sā cha pūrvattra buddhigrahaṇena eva grīhītā satī hirug iha upadiśyate tasyāḥ apy asmadīyābhyo buddhibhyaḥ paratvopapatteḥ | . . . tad evaṁ śarīram eva ekam pariśiśhyate | teshu<sup>145</sup> itarāni indriyādīni prakṛitāny eva parama-pada-didarśayishayā samanukrāman pariśiśhyamāṇeṣu iha anena avyakta-śabdena pariśiśhyamāṇam prakṛitāṁ śarīraṁ darśayati iti gamyate | . . . tad evam pūrvāparālochanāyāṁ nūsty atra para-parikalpitasya pradhānasya avakāśaḥ | 2. "Sūkṣhāṁ tu tad-arhatvāt" | uktam etat prakaraṇa-

<sup>145</sup> The earlier edition above referred to omits teshu.

pariśeshūbhyām śarīram avyakta-śabdaṁ na pradhānam iti | idam idānīm āśankyate katham avyakta-śabdārhatvaṁ śarīrasya yāvata sthūlatvāt spashṭataram idaṁ śarīraṁ vyakta-śabdārham 'aspashṭa-vachanas tv avyakta-śabdaḥ iti | ataḥ uttaram uchyate | sūkshām tv iha kāraṇātmanā śarīraṁ vivakshyate sūkshmasya avyakta-śabdārhatvāt | yadyapi sthūlam idaṁ śarīraṁ na svayam avyakta-śabdam arhati tāthāpi tasya tv ārambhakam bhūta-sūksham avyakta-śabdam arhati | . . . attra āha yadi jagad idam anabhivyaktā-nāma-ūpaṁ vījātmakam prāg-avastham avyakta-śabdārham abhyupagamyeta tad-ātmānā cha śarīrasyāpy avyakta-śabdārhatvam pratijñeyeta sa eva tarhi pradhānakāraṇa-vādaḥ evam saty āpadyeta asya eva jagataḥ prāg-avasthāyāḥ pradhānatvena abhyupagamād iti | attra uchyate | yadi vyaṁ svatantrāṁ kānehit prāg-avasthāṁ jagataḥ kāraṇatvena abhyupagachchema prasanjayema tadā pradhāna-kāraṇa-vādam | Parmeśvarādhiṅgā tv iyam asmābhiḥ prāg-avasthā jagato 'bhyupagamyate na svatantrā | sū cha avaśyam abhyupagantavyā | arthavati hi sū | na hi tayā vinū Parmeśvarasya sraśṭritvaṁ siddhyati śakti-rahitasya tasya pravṛitty-anupapatteḥ muktānāṁ cha punar-utpattir vidyayā tasyāḥ vīja-śakter dāhāt | avidyātmikā hi sū vīja-śaktir avyakta-śabda-nirdeśyā Parmeśvarāśrayā māyāmayī mahāsushuptir yasyūṁ svarūpa-pratibodha-rahitāḥ śerate saṁsarīno jīvūḥ | tad etad avyaktāṁ kvachid ākāśa-śabda-nirdiśṭam | "etasmin nu khalv akshare Gārgi ākāśaḥ ośaś cha protaś cha" iti śruteḥ | kvachid aksharā-śabdoditam "āksharāt parataḥ paraḥ" iti śruteḥ | kvachid māyā iti sūchitam "māyāṁ tu prakṛitiṁ vidyād māyinaṁ tu mahēśvaram" iti mantra-varṇāt | avyaktā hi sū māyā tattvānyatva-nirūpanāsya āśakyatvāt | tad idam "mahataḥ param avyaktam" ity ūktam avyakta-prabhavadvād mahato yadā Hairanyagarbhī buddhir mahān | yadā tu jīvo mahāms tadā 'py avyaktādhiṅnatvāj jīva-bhāvasya mahataḥ param avyaktam ity ūktam | avidyā hy avyaktam avidyāvattve cha jīvasya sarvaḥ saṁvyavahāraḥ santato varttate | tach cha avyakta-gatam mahataḥ paratvam abhedopachārāt tad-vikāre śarīre parikulpyate |

"But now this doubt still remains. The assertion that the existence of Pradhāna is not supported by the Veda is, say the Sāṅkhyas, destitute of proof, as certain Vedic Sākhās contain passages which have the appearance of affirming Pradhāna. Consequently the causality of Pradhāna has been received by Kapila and other great rishis on the ground that it is established by the Veda; and this is an objection to the state-

ment which you make to the contrary. Until, therefore, it be established that these passages have a different object, the doctrine that an omniscient Brahma is the cause of the world, even though it has been proved, will be again unsettled; and consequently you bring forward a great array of arguments to shew that these texts apply to something else. In the words 'it may be deduced also,' *i.e.* it is determined by inference,—it is shewn that in the opinion of certain schools the doctrine of Pradhāna is scriptural, for in the Kaṭha Upanishad (i. 3, 11) we read the words 'Above the Great one is Avyakta (the Unmanifested one), and above the Unmanifested one is Purusha (Soul).' Here we recognize 'the Great one,' 'the Unmanifested one,' and Purusha, with the same names and in the same order in which they are known to occur in the Smṛiti (*i.e.* the system of Kapila). Here that which is called Pradhāna in the Smṛiti is denoted by the word 'the Unmanifested one,' as we learn both from its being so called in the Smṛiti, and from the epithet 'unmanifested' (which is derived from the words 'not' and 'manifested') being properly applicable to it in consequence of its being devoid of sound, and the other objects of sense: wherefore, from its having this Vedic authority to support it, its (*i.e.* Pradhāna's) unscriptural character is refuted; and it is proved both by the Veda, the Smṛiti, and common notoriety to be the cause of the world. If the Sāṅkhyas argue thus, we reply that the case is not so; for this text of the Kaṭha Upanishad does not refer to the existence of the 'Great one' and the 'Unmanifested one,' which are defined in the Smṛiti (of Kapila); for here we do not recognize such a self-dependent cause, *viz.* Pradhāna, composed of the three qualities, as is declared in that Smṛiti, but the mere epithet 'unmanifested.' And this word 'unmanifested,' owing to its sense as a derivative from the words 'not' and 'manifested,' is also applied to anything else which is subtle or indistinguishable, and has not properly a conventional meaning in reference to any particular thing. As for the conventional use which the assertors of Pradhāna make of it, that is a technical application peculiar to themselves, and does not afford any means for determining the sense of the Vedas. Nor does the mere identity of the order (of the three words) furnish any proof of identity of meaning unless we can recognise the essential character of the things to be the same. For no man but a fool, if he saw a cow in the place where he expected to see a horse, would falsely

ascribe to it the character of a horse. And if we determine the sense of the context, it will be found that the Pradhāna imagined by our opponents finds no place here, since it is the 'body' which is indicated in the preceding simile. For here the body as represented under the figure of a chariot, etc., is to be understood by the word 'the Unmanifested.' Why? From the context and the remainder of the sentence. For the context which immediately precedes sets forth the soul, the body, etc., under the figure of a rider, a chariot, etc., as follows: 'Know that the soul is the rider, the body the chariot, the intellect the charioteer, and the mind the reins. The senses are called the horses, and the objects of sense the roads on which they go. The soul accompanied by the senses and the mind is the enjoyer; <sup>146</sup> so say the wise.' After pointing out (in the following verses) that with these senses, etc., if uncontrolled, the soul gains only this world, but if they are kept under control, it attains to the highest state of Vishṇu, which is the end of its road; the author (in answer to the question 'What is that highest state of Vishṇu which is the end of the road?') shews in the following verses that it is the supreme Spirit who transcends the senses, etc. (which form the subject of the context), who is alluded to as the goal, and the highest state of Vishṇu: 'The objects of sense are higher than the senses; the mind is higher than the objects of sense; the intellect is higher than the mind; the Great soul is higher than the intellect; the Unmanifested one is higher than the Great soul; the spirit (Purusha) is greater than the Unmanifested: there is nothing higher than Spirit, that is the end, that is the highest goal.'" After observing that the various terms in these lines are the same which had been previously introduced in the simile of the chariot, charioteer, rider, horses, etc., Śankara assigns the reason of the superiority attributed to each succeeding object over that which precedes it, and then goes on to say in regard to intellect and soul: "'The Great soul is higher than the intellect,' that soul, namely, which is figuratively described as a rider, in the words 'Know the soul to be the rider.' But why is the Soul

<sup>146</sup> The words of the original, both as given here and in the text of the Kaṭha Upanishad are *ātmenḍriya-mano-yuktam bhoktā*, which are not very clear. The commentators understand *ātman* at the beginning of the compound as denoting body, and supply *ātmanā* as the subject. See Dr. Roer's translation of the Upanishads (Bibl. Ind. p. 107).

superior to the intellect? Both from the use of the word Soul and because it aids the enjoyment of the enjoyer, it is shewn to be superior. Its character as the Great soul is proved by its being the master. . . The intellect of Hiranyagarbha, the first-born, is the highest basis of all intellect; and it is that which is here called the 'Great soul.' It had been previously comprehended under the word 'intellect,' but is here separately specified, because it also is superior to our intellects. . . . Thus the body alone remains of the objects referred to in the passage. After going over all the others in order, with the view of pointing out the highest state to be attained, he indicates by the one remaining word, the 'Unapparent,' the one remaining subject of the text, viz. the body—such is our conclusion. . . . Hence after examining both the earlier and later portions of the passage, we find that there is no place for the Pradhāna imagined by our opponents." Going on to interpret the next aphorism (i. 4, 2) 'But the subtile body may also be properly called 'unmanifested,' Sankara begins:

"We have declared that, looking to the context and the only word which remained to be explained, the body, and not Pradhāna, is denoted by the word the 'Unapparent.' But here a doubt arises: 'How can the body be properly designated by the word 'unapparent,' inasmuch as from its grossness it is very distinctly perceptible, and therefore should rather be denoted by the word 'apparent,' while the word 'unapparent' signifies something that is not perceptible? We answer: In this passage the subtile body in its character of cause is intended, since what is subtile is properly designated by the term 'unapparent.' Although this gross body itself cannot properly be described by the word 'Unapparent,' still this term applies to the subtile element which is its originator" . . . Sankara begins his interpretation of the next aphorism (i. 4, 3) as follows: "Here the Sāṅkhyas rejoin: 'If you admit that this world in its primordial condition, before its name and form had been manifested, and while it existed in its rudimentary form, could be properly designated by the word 'Unapparent,' and if the same term be declared applicable to body also while continuing in that state, then your explanation will exactly coincide with our doctrine of Pradhāna as the cause of all things; since you will virtually acknowledge that the original condition of this world was that of Pradhāna. To this we reply: If we admitted any self-dependent original

condition as the cause of the world, we should then lay ourselves open to the charge of admitting that Pradhāna is the cause. But we consider that this primordial state of the world is dependent upon the supreme Deity (Parameśvara) and not self-dependent. And this state to which we refer must of necessity be assumed, as it is essential. For without it the creative action of the supreme Deity could not be accomplished, since, if he were destitute of his Śakti (power), any activity on his part would be inconceivable. And so, too, those who have been emancipated from birth are not born again, because this germinative power (on the destruction,—which implies the previous existence,—of which emancipation depends) is consumed by knowledge.<sup>147</sup> For that germinative power, of which the essence is ignorance, and which is denoted by the word “Unapparent,” has its centre in the supreme Deity, and is a great illusive sleep, during which mundane souls repose unconscious of their own true nature. This ‘Unapparent one’ is in some places indicated by the term æther (*ākāśa*), as in the text (Bṛih. Ār. Up. iii. 8, 11) ‘On this undecaying Being, o Gārgī, the æther is woven as warp and woof;’ in other places by the word ‘undecaying’ (*akshara*), as in the text, ‘Beyond the Undecaying is the Highest;’ and is elsewhere designated by the term ‘illusion’ (*māyā*) as in the line (Svetaśv. Up. 4, 10) ‘Know that Prakṛiti (or matter) is illusion, and the great Deity the possessor of illusion.’ For this ‘illusion’ is ‘unapparent,’ because it cannot be defined in its essence and difference. This is the ‘Unapparent’ which is described as above the ‘Great one,’ since the latter, when regarded as identical with the intellect of Hīraṇyagarbha, springs from the former. And even if the ‘Great one’ be identified with the embodied soul (*jīva*), the ‘Unapparent’ can be said to be above it, as the condition of the embodied soul is dependent upon the ‘Unapparent.’ For the ‘Unapparent’ is ignorance, and it is during its condition of ignorance that the entire mundane action of the embodied soul is car-

<sup>147</sup> Govinda Ānanda explains this clause as follows: *Bandha-mukti-vyavasthārtham api sāvīkāryyā ity āha “muktānām” iti | yan-nāśād muktiḥ sāvīkāryyā tāṁ vinā eva spīṣṭau muktānām punar bandhāpattir ity arthaḥ |* “In the words ‘Those who had been emancipated,’ etc., he tells us that this ignorance must be admitted, in order to secure the permanence of emancipation from the bondage (of birth): that is, that ignorance by the destruction of which emancipation is obtained must be admitted; as without it those who had been emancipated would at the creation be again involved in bondage,” [because to be released at all, they must be released from something].

ried on. And that superiority of the 'Unapparent' over the 'Great one' is by a figurative description of body as identical with the former attributed to body also."

By these subtle and elaborate explanations Śankara scarcely appears to make out his point. But I cannot follow further the discussion of this question, and now go on to the eighth aphorism (i. 4, 8) where the purport of another Vedic text is investigated :

"*Chāmāsa-vad aviśeṣāt*" | *punar api pradhāna-vādī asabdatvam pradhānasya asiddhaṁ ity āha* | *kasmāt* | *mantra-varṇāt* | (Svetāśvatara Upanishad, iv. 5) "*ajām ekāṁ lohita-śukla-kṛishṇām bahvīḥ prajāḥ sri-jamānām svarūpāḥ*<sup>148</sup> | *ajo hy eko jushamāno 'nuṣete jahāty enām bhukta-bhogām ajo 'nyah*" *iti* | *attra hi mantrā lohita-śukla-kṛishṇa-śabdaiḥ rajah-sattva-tamāṁsy abhidhīyante* | *lohitaṁ rajo ranjanātmakatvāt suklaṁ sattvaṁ prakāśātmatkatvāt kṛishṇaṁ tamaḥ āvaraṇātmakatvāt* | *teshāṁ sāmīyāvasthāvayava-dharmair vyapadiśyate lohita-śukla-kṛishṇā ity* | *na jāyate iti cha "aja" syād "mūla-prakṛitir avikṛitir" ity abhyupagamāt* | *nanv ajā-śabdaś chhāgāyām rūḍhaḥ* | *vāḍham* | *sā tu rūḍhir iha nā āsrayitum śakyā vidyā-prakaranāt* | *sā cha bahvīḥ prajāś traigunyanvitāḥ janayati . . . . tasmāt śruti-mūlā eva pradhānādi-kalpanā Kāpilānām ity evam prāpte brūmah* | *na anena mantreṇa śruti-mūlatvaṁ Sāṅkhya-vādasya śakyam āsrayitum* | *na hy ayam mantrāḥ svātantryeṇa kanchid api vādaṁ samarthayitum utsahate* | *sarvatrāpi yayā kayāchit kalpanayā ajātvādi-sampādanopapatteḥ Sāṅkhya-vādaḥ eva iha abhipretaḥ ity viśeśhāvadhārāna-kāraṇābhāvāt* | "*chāmāsa-vat*" |

"'Because, as in the case of the spoon, there is nothing distinctive.' The assertor of Pradhāna again declares that Pradhāna is not proved to be unscriptural. Why? From the following verse (Sv. Up. iv. 5): 'One unborn male, loving the unborn female of a red, white, and black colour, who forms many creatures possessing her own character, unites himself with her: another unborn male abandons her after he has enjoyed her.' For in this verse the words 'red,' 'white,' and 'black,' denote (the three Qualities) Passion, Goodness, and Darkness;—Passion, from its stimulating character, being designated by the term

<sup>148</sup> The text of Dr. Rōer's ed. of the Upanishad (Bibl. Ind. vol. vii.) has two various readings in this line, viz. *lohita-kṛishṇa-varṇāḥ* for *lohita-śukla-kṛishṇām* (which latter, however, is the reading referred to by Śankara in his commentary on that work), and *sarūpām* for *svarūpāḥ*.

‘red,’ Goodness, from its illuminating character, by ‘white,’ and Darkness, from its enveloping character, by ‘black.’ The unborn female is described as red, white, and black, with reference to the characteristics of the three components which make up the state of equilibrium. She must be called ‘unborn’ (*Ajā*), because she is not produced, since it is admitted that ‘original matter’ (*Mūla-Prakṛiti* = *Prādhāna*) is not a modification (of any other substance—*Sāṅkhya Kārikā*, verse 3). But is not *ajā* the conventional name for ‘she-goat?’ True (reply the *Sāṅkhyas*), but that conventional sense cannot be adopted here, because knowledge is the subject of the context. And this unborn female produces many creatures characterized by the three Qualities . . . . And from this it is concluded that the theory of Kapila’s followers regarding *Pradhāna*, etc., is based upon the *Veda*. We reply: that it cannot be admitted on the strength of this verse that the theory of the *Sāṅkhyas* is founded on the *Veda*. For the verse in question, if regarded independently, is powerless to sustain any hypothesis whatever; and the reason is that, as this description of the state of the unborn female may be rendered applicable on any hypothesis whatever, there is no ground for determining specifically that the *Sāṅkhya* theory is here intended—‘as in the case of the spoon.’” This aphorism refers to a verse quoted in the *Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad*, ii. 2, 3 (Bibl. Ind. p. 413 of the Sanskrit, and p. 174 of Dr. Roer’s translation), and beginning ‘a cup with its mouth down, and its bottom upwards,’ which, as *Sankara* remarks, cannot, without some further indication, be applied to any one cup in particular; and in the same way, he argues, the unborn female in the passage under discussion cannot, in the absence of anything to restrict the application in any special way be understood as denoting *Pradhāna* (*evam ihāpy aviśesho ’jām ekām ity asya mantrasya | na asmin mantre Pradhānam eva ajā ’bhipretā iti śakyate niyantum*). The question then arises what is meant by this ‘unborn female.’ To this the author of the aphorisms and *Sankara* reply, that the word denotes the material substance of a four-fold class of elements, viz. light, heat, water, and food, all derived from the supreme Deity (*Paramēśvarād utpannā jyotiḥ-pramukhā tejo ’b-anna-lakṣhaṇā chatur-vidhā bhūta-grāmasya prakṛiti-bhūtā iyam ajā pratipattavyā*). These four elements he however seems (p. 357) to identify with three, in the words: *bhūta-traya-lakṣhaṇā eva iyam ajā vijneyā na guṇa-traya-lakṣhaṇā |* ‘This



unborn female is formed by three elements, not by the three qualities;’ and the ascription of the three colours in the text to these three elements, is supported by a quotation from the Chhândogya Upanishad, vi. 4, 1, which is as follows: *Yad agneḥ rohitam rūpam tejasas tad rūpam yat śuklaṁ tad apāṁ yat kṛṣṇaṁ tad annasya* | “The red colour of fire is that of heat; its white colour is that of water; and its black colour is that of food (which here means earth, according to the commentator on the Chhândogya Upanishad).<sup>149</sup> In this way, he adds, the words denoting the three colours are used in the proper sense, whereas if applied to the three qualities they would be figuratively employed (*rohitādīnāṁ cha śabdānāṁ rūpa-viśeṣeṣhu mukhyatvād bhāktvāc̣ cha guṇa-viśayaṭvāsyā*). Sankara concludes that this verse, descriptive of the unborn female, does not denote any self-dependent material cause called Pradhāna, but is shewn from the context to signify the Divine Power in its primordial state before Name and Form were developed (*na svatantrā kāchit prakṛitiḥ pradhānaṁ nāma ajā-mantrena āmnāyāte iti śakyate vaktum | prakaraṇāt tu sā eva daivī śaktir avyākṛita-nāma-rūpā nāma-rūpayoḥ prāg avasthānenāpi mantrena āmnāyate ity uchyate*).

Passing over the further questions, which are raised on this subject, I go on to the 11th Sūtra and the comment upon it, from which we learn that the words ‘knowing him by whom the five times five men, and the æther are upheld, to be Soul,’ etc. (*yasmin pancha pancha-janūḥ ākāśās cha pratishṭhitaḥ | tam evānyaḥ ātmānam vidvān ityādī*), are adduced by the Sāṅkhyas in support of their system, as the number of the principles (*tattva*), which it affirms (see Sāṅkhya Kārikā, verse 3, and Sāṅkhya Sūtras, i. 61), corresponds to the number twenty-five in this text; while the applicability of the passage is denied by the Vedāntins on the ground that the ‘principles’ of the Sāṅkhya are not made up of five homogeneous sets of five each (p. 362); that if the Soul and æther mentioned in the text are added, as they must be, to the twenty-five, the aggregate number will exceed that of the Sāṅkhya ‘principles,’ among which both Soul and æther are comprehended (pp. 364 f.); that the fact of the correspondence of the numbers, if admitted, would not suffice to shew that the ‘principles’ of the Sāṅkhya were referred to, as they are not elsewhere recognized in the Veda, and as the word

<sup>149</sup> See Babu Rajendra Lal Mitra’s translation of this Upanishad, p. 106.

'men' (*janāḥ*) is not usually applied to denote 'principles' (p. 365); and further that the phrase 'the five five men,' signifies only 'five,' and not 'five times five' (p. 366), etc. The conclusion arrived at in the twelfth aphorism is that the breath, and other vital airs, are referred to in the passage under consideration; and that although the word 'men' (*janāḥ*) is not generally applied to 'breath,' etc., any more than to 'principles,' the reference is determined by the context. Others, as Sankara observes, explain the term 'the five men' (*pañchajanāḥ*) of the gods, fathers, gandharvas, asuras, and rakshases, and others again of the four castes, and the Nishādas.<sup>150</sup> The Vedāntic teacher (Bādarāyana) however, as his commentator adds, has decided that the breath, etc., are intended.

If we now turn to the Sāṅkhya aphorisms themselves, we shall find that their author constantly refers to texts of the Veda as supporting, coinciding with, or reconcileable with his dogmas. I have noticed the following instances, viz. Sūtras i. 5, 36, 51, 54, 78, 84, 148, 155; ii. 20-22; iii. 14, 15, 80; iv. 22; v, 1, 12, 15, 21; vi. 32, 34, 51, 58, 59, which may be consulted in Dr. Ballantyne's translation. I can only refer more particularly to a few of these with the commentator's remarks.

I begin with Sūtra i. 155,<sup>151</sup> in which the author of the Aphorisms maintains that the great distinctive dogma of the Vedānta, the oneness of Soul, is not supported by the Veda. In Sūtra 150 he had laid it down as his own conclusion, established by the fact of the variety observable in the conditions of birth, etc., that there is a multitude of souls, and he now defends this as conformable to Scripture.

"*Na advaita-śruti-virodho jāti-paratvāt*" | *ātmaikya-śrutinām virodhas tu nāsti tāsām jāti-paratvāt* | *jātiḥ sāmānyam eka-rūpatvaṁ tatra advaita-śrutinām tātparyād na tv akhaṇḍatve prayojanābhāvād ity arthaḥ* | . . . *yathā-śruta-jāti-śabdasya ādare tv "ātmā idam ekaḥ eva agre asīt"* "*sad eva saumya idam agre āsīt ekam eva 'advitīyam*" (Chhānd. Up. vi. 2, 1) *ity-ādy-advaita-śrutya-upapādatayā eva sūtram vyākhyeṣṭi* | "*jāti-paratvāt*" | *vijātiya-dvaita-nishedha-paratvād ity arthaḥ* | *tatra ādyavyākhyāyām ayam bhāvaḥ* | *ātmaikya-śruti-smṛtiḥ ekādi-śabdās chid-*

<sup>150</sup> See the First Volume of this work, pp. 176 ff.

<sup>151</sup> i. 154 in Dr. Hall's edition in the Bibl. Ind.

*ekarūpatā-mātra-parāḥ bhedādi-śabdās cha vaidharmya-lakṣhaṇa-bheda-parāḥ |*

“155. ‘This is not opposed to the Vedic doctrine of non-duality, since that merely refers to genus.’ Our doctrine that souls are numerous does not conflict with the Vedic texts which affirm the oneness of Soul, since these passages refer to oneness of genus. Genus means sameness, oneness of nature; and it is to this that the texts regarding non-duality relate, and not to the undividedness (or identity) of Soul; since there is no occasion for the latter view. The Sūtra must be explained with due regard to the sense of the word genus as it occurs in the Veda, so as (thereby) to bring out the proper meaning of such texts, expressing non-duality, as these, ‘This was in the beginning Soul, one only;’ ‘This was in the beginning, o fair youth, Existent, one without a second.’ The words ‘since that merely refers to genus,’ mean ‘since that is merely intended to deny a duality denoting a difference of genus.’ The first of two interpretations given of the Sūtra is as follows: In the texts of the Śruti and Smṛiti relating to the oneness of Soul, the words ‘One,’ etc., denote simply that Spirit is one in its nature; whilst the words, ‘distinction,’ etc., designate a distinction defined as difference of nature.” At the close of his remarks the commentator gives a second explanation of the Sūtra.

The author returns to this subject in the 61st Sūtra of the fifth Book :

*“Na advaitam ātmano lingāt tad-bheda-pratīteḥ” | yadyapy ātmanām anyonyam bheda-vākya-vad abheda-vākyaṇy api santi tathāpi na advaitam | na atyantam abhedaḥ | ajādi-vākya-sthaiḥ prakṛiti-tyāgātyāgādi-lingair bhedasyaiva siddher ity arthaḥ | na hy atyantābhede tāni lingāny upapadyante |*

“‘Soul is not one; for a distinction of souls is apparent from various signs.’ Although there are texts affirming that there is no distinction, just as there are others which assert a distinction, of souls, still non-duality, *i. e.* an absolute absence of distinction must be denied; because a distinction is established by signs, such as the abandonment and non-abandonment of Prakṛiti, etc., mentioned in such texts as that about the ‘unborn female,’ etc. (See above, p. 165.) For these signs are inconsistent with the hypothesis of an absolute absence of distinction,” etc.

A kindred subject is introduced in the next Sūtra, the 62nd :

*“Na anātmanā ’pi pratyakṣa-bādhāt” | anātmanā ’pi bhogyā-prapan-*

*chena ātmano na advaitam pratyakshenāpi bādhat | ātmanaḥ sarva-bhog-  
yābhede ghaṭa-paṭayor apy abhedaḥ syāt | ghaṭādeḥ paṭādy-abhinnātma-  
bhedaḥ | sa cha bheda-grāhaka-pratyakṣā-bādhitāḥ |*

“Further, there is not an absence of distinction (*i.e.* identity) between Soul and non-soul, as this is disproved by the evidence of sense.’ That is : non-duality (*i.e.* identity) is not predicable of Soul on the one hand, and non-soul, *i.e.* the perceptible objects by which our senses are affected, on the other, because this is opposed to the evidence of sense. For if soul were identical with all that is perceptible, there would also be no distinction between a jar and cloth, inasmuch as jars, etc., would not be distinct from soul which is not distinct from cloth, etc. ; and such identity (of jars, etc., with cloth, etc.) is opposed to the evidence of sense which obliges us to perceive a distinction.”

But how is this to be reconciled with such Vedic texts as ‘this is nothing but soul’ (*ātmā eva idam*)? An answer is given in Sūtra 64, which seems to admit that the passages in question do at least on a *prima facie* view convey the sense ascribed to them by the Vedāntins :

*“Anyā-paratvam avivekānām tatra” | avivekānām aviveki-purushān  
prati tatra advaite ’nya-paratvam upāsanārthakānūvādaḥ ity arthaḥ |  
loke hi śarīra-śarīrīnor bhogyā-bhoktroś cha avivekena abhedo vyavahriyate  
“’haṁ gauro” “mama ātmā Bhādrasenaḥ” ityādiḥ | atas tam eva vya-  
vahāram anūdyā tām eva prati tathā upāsanām śrutir vidadhāti sattva-  
śuddhy-ādy-artham iti |*

“These texts have another object, with a view to those who have no discrimination.’ That is : in the passages which affirm non-duality another object is intended, viz. a reference (to vulgar ideas) with a view to stimulate devotion. For it commonly occurs that indiscriminating persons confound the body and the soul, the object to be experienced, and the person who experiences it, as when they say ‘I am white,’ ‘Bhādrasena is myself.’ The Veda, therefore, referring to this mode of speaking, inculcates on such undiscerning people the practice of devotion with a view to the promotion of goodness, purity, etc.”

The author returns to the subject of non-duality in Sūtra vi. 51, which is introduced by the remark :

*Nanv evam pramānūdy-ānurodhena dvaita-siddhāv advaita-śruteḥ kā  
gatir iti |*

“But if duality be thus established in accordance with proofs, etc., what becomes of the Vedic texts declaring non-duality?”

The answer is as follows :

“*Na śrutī-virodhō rāginām vairāgyāya tat-siddheḥ*” | *advaita-śrutī-virodhas tu nāsti rāgirām puruṣhātirikte vairāgyāya eva śrutībhir advaita-sādhānāś* |

“ ‘Our view is not opposed to the Veda, as the texts in question establish non-duality with a view to produce apathy in those who are actuated by desire.’ That is to say : There is in our doctrine regarding non-duality nothing contrary to the Veda, as the passages referred to affirm this principle with the view of producing in those who have desire an indifference in regard to everything except Soul.”

The 12th aphorism of the fifth Book asserts that according to the Veda, Pradhāna, and not Īśvara, is the cause of the world. The details of the reasoning on which this view is founded, as here stated by the commentator, differ in some respects from those which Sankara puts into the mouth of the Sāṅkhyas :

“*Śrutir api pradhāna-kāryyatvasya*” | *prapanche pradhāna-kāryyatvasya eva śrutir asti na chetana-kāranatve* | *yathā “ajām ekām lohitaśukla-kṛishnām bahvīḥ prajāḥ sṛijamānām sarūpāḥ*” | “*tad ha idaṁ tarhy avyākṛitam asit tad nāma-rūpābhyāṁ vyākriyata*” *ity-adir ity arthaḥ* | *yā cha “tad aikshata bahu syām*” *ityādiś chetana-kāranatā-śrutīḥ sā sargādāv utpannasya mahat-tattvopādhikasya mahāpurushasya janya-jnāna-parā* | *kiṁvā bahu-bhavanānurodhāt pradhāne eva “kūlam pipatishati” iti-vaḍ gauṇī* | *anyathā “sākshī chetāḥ kevalo nīrguṇāś cha”* (Svetāśvatara Upanishad, vi. 11) *ity-ādi-śrutī-uktūparināmitvasya puruṣe nupapattir iti* | *ayaṁ cha īśvara-pratishedhaḥ aiśvaryye vairāgyārtham īśvara-jnānaṁ vinā pi moksha-pratipādanārthaṁ cha prauḍhi-vāda-māttram iti prāg eva vyākhyātam* |

“ ‘There are also Vedic texts to support the doctrine that the world has sprung from Pradhāna, as its cause.’ That is: There are Vedic texts to shew that the phenomenal world has sprung from Pradhāna, and that it has not had a conscious being for its cause. They are such as these : ‘An unborn female, red, white, and black in hue, producing many creatures like herself, etc.’ ; ‘This was once undeveloped : it was developed with Name and Form.’ As regards those other texts which affirm the causality of a conscious being, such as ‘It reflected, let me become many,’ they refer to the knowledge which sprang up in the great Male who was produced at the beginning of the creation pos-

sessing the attributes of the principle of Intellect (*Mahat*). Or, in accordance with the idea of becoming multiplied, the expression (indicating consciousness and will) is figuratively applied to Pradhāna, as when it is said of the bank of a river that it 'intends to fall.' For on any other supposition the incapability of any modification which is ascribed to Purusha in such texts as 'He who is the witness, the conscious, the sole being, free from the Qualities,' could not properly be applied to him (since if he were the material cause of the creation he must become modified). And it has been before explained<sup>152</sup> that this denial of an Īśvara is a mere display of ingenuity, introduced for the purpose of producing apathy in regard to glory, and of propounding a method of final liberation even independently of the knowledge of an Īśvara."

The following is the 34th Sūtra of the sixth Book, with the remarks by which it is introduced and followed :

*Nanu " bahvīḥ prajāḥ puruṣāt samprasūtāḥ " ity-ādi-śruteḥ puru-  
shasya kāraṇatvāvagamād vivarttādi-vādūḥ āsrayānīyāḥ ity āśankya  
āha | " śruti-virodhād na kutarkāpasadasya ātma-lābhāḥ " | puruṣa-  
kāraṇatāyām ye ye pakṣhāḥ sambhāvitās te sarve śruti-viruddhāḥ iti |  
atas tad-abhyupagantrīṇām kutārkikādy-adhamānām ātma-svarūpa-  
jnānaṁ na bhavati ity arthaḥ | etena ātmani sukha-duḥkhādi-guṇopādā-  
natva-vādino 'pi kutārkikāḥ eva | teshām apy ātma-yathārtha-jnānaṁ  
nāsti ity avagantavyam | ātma-kāraṇatā-śrutayaś cha śakti-śaktimad-  
abhedena upāsānārthāḥ eva " ajām ekām " ity-ādi-śrutiḥ pradhāna-  
kāraṇatā-siddheḥ | yadi cha ākāśasya abhīdy-adhisṭhāna-kāraṇatā-vad  
ātmanaḥ kāraṇatvam uchyate tadā tad na nirākurmaḥ pariṇāmasya pra-  
tishedhāt |*

"But must we not adopt the theories of an illusory creation, etc., because the causality of Purusha (soul) is to be learned from such texts as the following 'many creatures have been produced from Purusha?' To this difficulty he replies: 'From his opposition to Scripture the illogical outcaste does not attain to Soul.' 'The sense of this is, that all the propositions, affirming the causality of Soul, which have been devised, are contrary to the Veda; and consequently the low class of bad logicians, etc., who adopt them have no knowledge of the nature of

<sup>152</sup> See Vijnāna Bhikshu's remarks, introductory to the Sūtras (p. 5, at the foot), which will be quoted in the next Section, and his comment on Sūtra i. 92. He is, as we shall find, an eclectic, and not a thorough-going adherent of the Sāṅkhya.

Soul. Hence it is to be understood that those also who assert that Soul is the substance of the qualities of pleasure and pain, etc., are incompetent reasoners: they too are destitute of the true knowledge of Soul. The Vedic texts which declare its causality are intended to inculcate devotion on the ground that there is no distinction between Power (*S'akti*) and the possessor of Power (*S'aktimat*); for the causality of Pradhāna is established by such texts as that relating to the 'one unborn female,' &c. But if it be affirmed that Soul is the cause of the world merely in the same sense in which the æther is the cause of clouds, etc., viz. by affording them a receptacle, we do not object to that, since we only deny the transformation (of Soul into material productions)."<sup>153</sup>

In regard to the question whether the principles of the Vedānta or those of the Sāṅkhya are most in harmony with the most prevalent doctrine of the Upanishads, I shall quote some of the remarks of Dr. Röer, the translator of many of these treatises. In his introduction to the Taittirīya Upanishad he observes that we there find "the tenets peculiar to the Vedānta already in a far advanced state of development; it contains as in a germ the principal elements of this system." "There are, however," he adds, "differences" (*Bibliotheca Indica*, vol. xv. p. 5). The same nearly is the case with the Aitareya Upanishad (*ibid.* p. 27). In reference to the Svetāśvatara Upanishad he remarks: "Sāṅkara in his commentary on this Upanishad generally explains its fundamental views in the spirit of the Vedānta. He is sometimes evidently wrong in identifying the views of some of the other Upanishads with the tenets of the Vedānta, but he is perfectly right to do so in the explanation of an Upanishad which appears to have been composed for the express purpose of making the principle of the Vedānta agreeable to the followers of the Sāṅkhya" (*ibid.* pp. 43 f.). Of the Kaṭha Upanishad Dr. Röer says (*ibid.* p. 97): "The standing point of the Kaṭha is on the whole that of the Vedānta. It is the absolute spirit which is the foundation of the world. . . . In the order of manifestations or emanations from the absolute spirit it deviates, however, from that adopted by the other Upanishads and by the later Vedānta, and is evidently more closely allied to the Sāṅkhya. The order is here: The unmanifested (*avyakta*), the great soul (*mahātma*, or *mahat*), intellect

<sup>153</sup> See Dr. Ballantyne's translation, which I have often followed. He does not, however, render in extenso all the passages which I have reproduced.

(*buddhi*), mind, the objects of the senses, and the senses," etc.<sup>154</sup> The reader who wishes to pursue the subject further may consult the same author's remarks on the other Upanishads. On the whole question of the relation of the Vedānta and the Sāṅkhya respectively to the Veda, Dr. Rörer thus expresses himself in his introduction to the Śvetāśvatara Upanishad (p. 36): "The Vedānta, although in many important points deviating from the Vedas, and although in its own doctrine quite independent of them, was yet believed to be in perfect accordance with them, and being adopted by the majority of the Brāhmins, it was never attacked on account of its orthodoxy. The same cannot be said of the Sāṅkhya; for it was not only frequently in opposition to the doctrine of the Vedas, but sometimes openly declared so. Indeed, the Vedānta also maintained that the acquisition of truth is independent of caste (1) or any other distinction, and that the highest knowledge which is the chief end of man cannot be imparted by the Vedas (vide Kaṭha ii. 23); yet it insisted that a knowledge of the Vedas was necessary to prepare the mind for the highest knowledge (2). This the Sāṅkhya denied altogether, and although it referred to the Vedas, and especially to the Upanishads, still it did so only when they accorded with its own doctrines, and it rejected their authority (3) in a case of discrepancy."

I make a few remarks on some points in this quotation indicated by the figures (1), (2), and (3). (1) We have already learned above, p. 99, that, according to the Brahma Sūtras (see i. 3, 34 ff., and Sāṅkara's explanation of them), at least, a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of acquiring divine knowledge. (2) It appears from Sāṅkara's argument against Jaimini that he does not consider a knowledge of the ceremonial part of the Veda as necessary for the acquisition of divine knowledge, but he seems to regard the Upanishads as the source from which the latter is derived. (3) I do not know on what authority this statement that the Sāṅkhyas ever actually rejected the authority of the Vedas is founded. Their attempts to reconcile their tenets with the letter of the Veda may often seem to be far-fetched and sophistical; but I have not observed that Sāṅkara, while arguing elaborately against the interpretations of the Sāṅkhyas, anywhere charges them either with denying the authority of the Veda, or with insincerity in the appeals which they make to the sacred texts.

<sup>154</sup> See above, p. 161.



On the subject of the Upanishads the reader may also consult Prof. Max Müller's Ancient Sanskrit Literature.

I subjoin in a note some extracts from this work.<sup>155</sup>

The Nyāya and Vaiśeshika Sūtras do not appear to contain nearly so many references to Vedic texts as the Sāṅkhya; but I have noticed the following: Nyāya iii. 32 (= iii. 1, 29 in the Bibl. Ind.); Vaiśeshika ii. 1, 17; iii. 2, 21; iv. 2, 11; v. 2, 10.

The author of the Vaiśeshika Sūtras affirms, in iii. 2, 20, the doctrine that souls are numerous; and in the 21st Sūtra, which I quote, along with the comment of Śaṅkara Miśra, and the gloss of the editor Paṇḍit Jayanārāyaṇa Tarkapanchānana, he claims Vedic authority for this tenet:

21. "S'āstra-sāmarthyāch cha" | (Śaṅkara Miśrā) S'āstraṁ srutiḥ |

<sup>155</sup> "They (the Upanishads) contain, or are supposed to contain, the highest authority on which the various systems of philosophy in India rest. Not only the Vedānta philosopher, who, by his very name, professes his faith in the ends and objects of the Veda, but the Sāṅkhya, the Vaiśeshika, the Nyāya, and Yoga philosophers, all pretend to find in the Upanishads some warranty for their tenets, however antagonistic in their bearing. The same applies to the numerous sects that have existed and still exist in India. Their founders, if they have any pretensions to orthodoxy, invariably appeal to some passage in the Upanishads in order to substantiate their own reasonings. Now it is true that in the Upanishads themselves there is so much freedom and breadth of thought that it is not difficult to find in them some authority for almost any shade of philosophical opinion." (p. 316 f.) Again: "The early Hindus did not find any difficulty in reconciling the most different and sometimes contradictory opinions in their search after truth; and a most extraordinary medley of oracular sayings might be collected from the Upanishads, even from those which are genuine and comparatively ancient, all tending to elucidate the darkest points of philosophy and religion, the creation of the world, the nature of God, the relation of man to God, and similar subjects. That one statement should be contradicted by another seems never to have been felt as any serious difficulty." (p. 320 f.) Once more: "The principal interest of the older Upanishads consists in the absence of that systematic uniformity which we find in the later systems of philosophy; and it is to be regretted that nearly all the scholars who have translated portions of the Upanishads have allowed themselves to be guided by the Brahmanic commentators," etc. (p. 322). "In philosophical discussions, they (the Brahmans) allowed the greatest possible freedom; and although at first three philosophical systems only were admitted as orthodox (the two Mīmāṃsās and the Nyāya), their number was soon raised to six, so as to include the Vaiśeshika, Sāṅkhya, and Yoga schools. The most conflicting views on points of vital importance were tolerated as long as their advocates succeeded, no matter by what means, in bringing their doctrines into harmony with passages of the Veda, strained and twisted in every possible sense. If it was only admitted that besides the perception of the senses and the induction of reason, revelation also, as contained in the Veda, furnished a true basis for human knowledge, all other points seemed to be of minor importance." (p. 78 f.)

*tayā 'py ātmano bheda-pratipādanāt | śrūyate hi . . . (Jayanārāyaṇa) ito 'py jīvasya īśvara-bhinnatvam ity 'āha | śāstrasya, śruteḥ sāmāthyāj jīveśvarayor bheda-bodhakatvāt | tathā hi | "dve brahmaṇī vedītavye" (Maitrī Up. vi. 22) | "dvā suparnū sayujā sakhāyā samānaṁ vṛkṣham parishasvajāte | tayor anyah pippalaṁ svādu atti anaśṇann anyo abhichākaṣīti" (Rig-veda Sanhitā, i. 164, 20; Svetāśy. Up. vi. 6; Muṇḍaka Up. i. 3, 1, 1) ity-ādi-śruter jīveśvarayor "bhedo 'vaśyam angīkāryyah | na cha "tat tvam asi Svetaketo" "Brahma-vid Brahma eva bhavati" ity-ādi-śrutinām kū "gatir iti vācāyam | "tat tvam asi" iti śrutes tad-abhedena tadīyatva-pratipādanena abheda-bhāvanā-paratvāt | "Brahma-vid Brahma eva" iti śrūtiś cha nirduḥkhatvādīnā Īśvara-sāmyaṁ jīvasya abhidhatte na tu tad-abhedam | "niranjanaḥ pāraṁ sāmyam upaiti" iti śruter gaty-antarāsambhavāt | asti hi laukika-vākyeshu "sampad-ādihikye purohito 'yaṁ rājā saṁvṛittah" ity-ādishu sādṛīśya-pareshv abhedopachārah | na cha moksha-daśāyām ajnāna-nivṛittāv abhedo jāyate iti vāchyaṁ bhedasya nityatvena nāśāyogād bheda-nāśāngīkāre 'pi vyakti-dvayāvasthānasya āvaśyakatvāch cha iti sankshepaḥ | bheda-sādhakāni yukty-antarāni śruty-antarāni cha grantha-gaurava-bhīyā parityaktāni |*

"And this opinion is confirmed by the Śāstra." (Sānkara Mīśra)

The Śāstra means the Veda; by which also a distinction of Souls is established. For it is said," etc. [He then quotes two texts which are repeated by Jayanārāyaṇa, the author of the gloss, whose remarks are as follows:] "There is another proof of the Soul being distinct from Īśvara; viz. this, that it is confirmed by the Śāstra, the Veda, which declares the distinctness of the two; and this principle must of necessity be admitted from such texts as these: 'Two Brāhmās are to be known;' <sup>156</sup> and 'Two birds, united, friends, attach themselves to the same tree; one of them eats the sweet fruit of the pippala tree, while the other, without eating, looks on.' Nor are we to ask what will then become of such other texts as (1) 'Thou art that, o Svetaketu;' (2) 'He who knows Brahma becomes Brahma;' for the former of these two passages (1) tends to convey the idea of identity by representing as identity with That, the fact of Svetaketu's entirely belonging to That; whilst

<sup>156</sup> The full text is: *Dve brahmaṇī vedītavye śabda-brahma paraṁ cha yat—śabda-brahmaṇī nishṇātah param brāhmādhigachhati |* "Two Brāhmās are to be known, the verbal and the supreme. He who is initiated in the former attains the latter." Here, however, by the verbal Brāhmā, the Veda must be intended.

the second (2) affirms the equality of the Soul with Īśvara, in consequence of its freedom from pain and other weaknesses, and not its identity with Him; for it is shown by another Vedic text, viz. 'The passionless man attains the highest state of equality,' that any other destiny would be inconceivable. In secular modes of speaking also, such as the following, 'From the abundance of his wealth the domestic priest has become the king,' we find a figurative assertion of identity. Nor can it be said that distinction disappears on the cessation of ignorance in the state of final emancipation, because distinction, from its eternity, cannot be destroyed, and because, even if its destructibility were admitted, two separate personalities must still continue to exist. Such is a summary of our argument: further proofs from reasoning, and further texts of the Veda, are omitted from a dread of making the book too bulky."

The charge of open contempt of the Veda is brought by Śankara against Sāṅḍilya, the author of the Bhāgavata heresy, as the orthodox Vedāntin considers it.<sup>157</sup> Of that doctrine Śankara thus speaks in his remarks on Brahma Sūtra ii. 2, 45 :

*Veda-vipratishedhaś cha bhavati | chaturshu vedeshu paraṁ śreyo 'labdhvā S'āṅḍilyaḥ idaṁ śāstram adhigatavān ity-ādi-veda-nindā-darśanāt | tasmād asangatā eshā kalpanā iti siddham |*

"And it also contradicts the Veda: for we see such an instance of contempt of the Vedas as this, that Sāṅḍilya, not finding the means of attaining the highest good in the whole four of them, devised this Śāstra. Hence it is established that these imaginations are absurd."

The points of the Bhāgavata doctrine objected to by Śankara do not however appear to be those which are principally insisted on in the Bhakti Sūtras of Sāṅḍilya, published by Dr. Ballantyne in the Bibliotheca Indica in 1861. I will notice some of these doctrines. The leading principle of the system is that it is not knowledge (*jnāna*) but devotion (*bhakti*) which is the means of attaining final liberation (Sūtra 1). Devotion is defined in the 2nd Sūtra to be a supreme love of God (*sā parā anuraktir Īśvare*). Knowledge cannot, the author considers, be the means of liberation, as it may co-exist with hatred of the object known (Sūtra 4). Neither the study of the Veda nor the acqui-

<sup>157</sup> See Colebrooke's Misc. Essays, i. 413: "A passage quoted by Śankara Āchārya seems to intimate that its promulgator was Sāṅḍilya," etc., etc.

sition of such qualities as tranquility of mind is a necessary preliminary to devotion. The only requisite is a desire of emancipation, according to the commentator (remarks on Sūtra 1). Ceremonial works, too, have no bearing upon devotion (Sūtra 7), which may be practised by men of all castes, and even by Chāṇḍālaṣ, since the desire to get rid of the evils of mundane existence is common to all (Sūtra 78). The commentator explains that the authority of the Vedas as the only source of supernatural knowledge is not denied, nor the fact that only the three highest castes have the right to study them: but it is urged that women, Sūdras, etc., may attain by means of the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, etc., to knowledge founded on the Vedas, whilst Chāṇḍālas, etc., may acquire it by traditional instruction based on the Smṛiti and the practice of virtuous men. Those whose devotion is not matured in the present world, will find the opportunity of perfecting it in Svetadvīpa, the world of the divine Being (Sūtra 79). Even the wicked may have a penitential devotion (*ārtti-bhaktāv eva adhikāraḥ*), and after they are freed from their guilt, they may attain to full devotion. The Bhagavad Gītā is much quoted by the commentator on these Sūtras; but the Veda is also sometimes adduced in proof of their doctrines; as e.g. the following words of the Chhāndogya Upanishad, vii. 25, 2, are cited to prove that devotion is the chief requisite, and knowledge, etc., subservient to it:

“*Ātmā eva idaṁ sarvam iti | sa vai esha eva paśyann evam manvānaḥ evaṁ vijānann ātma-ratir ātma-kṛdāḥ ātma-mithunaḥ ātmānandaḥ sa svarād bhavati*” | tatra “*ātma-rati-*”rūpāyāḥ para-bhakteḥ “*paśyann*” *iti darśanam apriyatvādi-bhrama-nirāsa-mukhena angaṁ bhavati* |

“‘All this is Soul. He who perceives this, thinks this, knows this, delights in Soul, sports with Soul, consorts with Soul, takes pleasure in Soul; he becomes self-resplendent.’ Here the sight expressed in the words ‘perceiving,’ etc., is by removing all errors regarding disagreeableness, etc., an adjunct of supreme devotion in the form of ‘de-light in Soul.’”

In his remarks on Sūtra 31 the commentator quotes another passage of the same Upanishad, iii. 14, 4, in which a Sāṅḍilya is referred to as the author of a statement. Sāṅkara in his commentary on the Upanishad calls him a rishi. He cannot, however, have been the same person as the author of the Sūtras; although, even if he had been so reputed,

Sankara would have had little difficulty in denying that they could have been written by a rishi, as we shall see in the next section that he contradicts the opinion that the rishi Kapila, referred to in the S'vetāśvatara Upanishad, was the author of the Sāṅkhya aphorisms.

SECT. XI.—*Distinction in point of authority between the Veda and the Smṛitis or non-Vedic S'āstras, as stated in the Nyāya-mālā-vistara, and by the Commentators on Manu, and the Vedānta, etc.; difference of opinion between S'ankara and Madhusūdana regarding the orthodoxy of Kapila and Kaṇāda, etc.; and Vijnāna Bhikshu's view of the Sāṅkhya.*

A distinct line of demarcation is generally drawn by the more critical Indian writers between the Vedas, and all other classes of Indian Sāstras, however designated. The former, as we have seen, are considered to possess an independent authority and to be infallible, while the latter are regarded as deriving all their authority from the Veda, and (in theory at least) as infallible guides only in so far as they coincide with its dicta. This will be clear from the following passages :

I. *Nyāya-mālā-vistara*.—The first text which I adduce has been already quoted in the Second Volume of this work, but is repeated here for facility of reference. It is from the treatise just named, i. 3, 24 :

*Baudhāyanāpastambāśvalāyana-kātyāyanādi-nāmānkitāḥ kalpa-sūtrādi-granthāḥ nigama-nirukta-shaḍ-anga-granthāḥ Manv-ādi-smṛitayaś cha apaurusheyāḥ dharma-buddhi-janakatvāt veda-vat | na cha mūla-pramāṇa-sāpekshatvena veda-vaishamyam iti śankanīyam | utpannāyāḥ buddheḥ svataḥ-prāmāṇyāṅgikāreṇa nirapekshatvāt | Maivam | uktānumānasya kālātyayāpadishṭatvāt | Baudhāyana-sūtram Āpastamba-sūtram ity evam puruṣa-nāmnā te granthāḥ uchyanṭe | na cha Kāṭhakaḍi-samākhya-vat pravachana-nimittatvaṃ yuktam | tad-grantha-nirmāṇa-kāle tadānīntanaīḥ kaiśchid upalābhatvāt | tach cha avichhinna-pāramparyeṇa anuwarttate | tataḥ Kālīdāsādi-grantha-vat paurusheyāḥ | tathāpi veda-mūlatvāt pramāṇam | . . . kalpasya vedatvaṃ nādyāpi siddham | kintu prayātnena sādhanīyam | na cha tat sādhayitum śakyam | paurusheyatvasya samākhya-yā tat-karttur upalambhena cha sādhitatvāt |*

“It may be said that the Kalpa Sūtras and other works designated by the names of Baudhāyana, Āpastamba, Āśvalāyana, Kātyāyana, etc.,

and the Nigama, Nirukta, and six Vedāngas, together with the Smṛitis of Manu and others, are superhuman, because they impart a knowledge of duty, as the Vedas do; and that they should not be suspected of inferiority to the Vedas on the ground that they depend upon a primary authority, since the knowledge which they impart is independent, because it is admitted to be self-evidencing. But this view is incorrect, for the inference in question proceeds upon an erroneous generalization. The books referred to are called by the names of men, as 'the Sūtras of Baudhāyana,' 'the Sūtras of Āpastamba;' and these designations cannot correctly be said to originate in the exposition of the works by those teachers whose names they bear (as is really the case in regard to the Kāthaka, and other parts of the Veda); for it was known to some of the contemporaries of these men, at the time when they were composing these Sūtras, Smṛitis, etc., that they were so engaged; and this knowledge has descended by unbroken tradition. Hence these books are, like the works of Kālidāsa and others, of human origin. Nevertheless, they possess authority, as being founded on the Veda." . . . The following additional remarks represent the opinion of the Guru (Prabhākara) on the same question: "It is not yet proved that the Kalpa Sūtras possess the character of the Veda; it would require great labour to prove it; and, in fact, it is impossible to prove it. For the human origin of these books is established by the names which they bear, and by their being observed to have had authors."

II. *Kullūka*.—The same thing is admitted by Kullūka, the commentator on Manu, who (in his remarks on i. 1) thus defines the relation of his author to the Vedas:

*Paurusheyatve'pi Manu-vākyaṅām avigīta-mahājana-parigrahāt śruty-upagrahācch cha veda-mūlakatayā prāmāṅyam | Tathā cha chhāndogya-brāhmaṅe śrūyate "Manur vai yat kinchid avadat tad bshajam bshajatāyai" iti | Vṛihaspatir apy āha "Vedārthopanibandhṛitvāt prādhānyam hi Manoh smṛitam | Manv-artha-viparītā' tu yā smṛitiḥ sū na śasyate | Tāvach chhāstrāṅi ścchante tarka-vyākaraṅṅāni cha | Dharmārtha-moksho-padeshṭū Manur yāvad nū dṛiśyate" | Mahābhārate'py uktam "Purāṅam Mānavo dharmah sāngo vedaś chikitsitaṅ | ājnā-siddhāni chatvāri na hantavyāni hetubhiḥ" | virodhi-Bauddhādi-tarkair na hantavyāni | anukūlas tu nīmāṅsādi-tarkah pravarttanīyah eva | ata eva vakshyati "ārsham dharmopadeśam chh veda-sāstrāvirodhinū | yas tarkenānusandhatte sa dharmam veda netarah" iti |*

“Though the Institutes of Manu had a personal author, still, as their reception by illustrious men of unimpeached [orthodoxy], and their conformity to the Veda; prove that they are based upon the latter, they are authoritative. Accordingly it is recorded in the Chhândogya Brâhmaṇa that, ‘Whatever Manu said is a medicine for remedial purposes.’ And Vrihaspati says: ‘As Manu depends upon the contents of the Veda, he is traditionally celebrated as pre-eminent. But that Smṛiti which is contrary to the sense of Manu, is not approved. Scriptures and books on logic and grammar are all eclipsed as soon as Manu, our instructor in duty, and in the means of attaining both earthly prosperity, and final liberation, is beheld.’ And it is said in the Mahābhārata: ‘The Purāṇas, the Institutes of Manu, the Veda with its appendages, and treatises on medicine, these four, which are established by authority, are not to be assailed by rationalistic arguments;’ that is, they are not to be attacked by hostile reasonings, such as those of the Bauddhas. But friendly arguments, such as those of the Mīmāṃsakas, are to be employed. And accordingly we shall find below (Manu xii. 106) that he says, ‘the man who investigates the injunctions of the rishis, and the rules of duty by reasoning which is agreeable to the Veda, he, and he only, is acquainted with duty.’” (See above, p. 24., note 29.)

III. *Nyāya-mālā-vistara*.—But the precepts of the Smṛiti are not considered useless or superfluous. On the contrary, an authority is attributed to them corresponding to the antiquity, elevated position, and sacred character of their supposed authors. Thus the author of the *Nyāya-mālā-vistara* says (i. 3, 3):

*Vimatā smṛitir veda-mūlā | vaidika-manv-ādi-pranīta-smṛititvāt | upa-  
nayanādhyayaṇādi-smṛiti-vat | na cha vaiyarthyaṃ śankaniyam | asmad-  
ādinām pratyaksheshu paroksheshu nānā vedeshu viprakīrṇasya anushthe-  
yārthasya ekatra sankshipyamānatvāt |*

“The variously understood Smṛiti is founded on the Veda, because the traditions, such as those regarding investiture, study, etc., have been compiled by Vedic men, such as Manu and others. Nor is it to be surmised that the Smṛiti is useless, since it throws together in a condensed form a variety of injunctions regarding matters to be observed, which are scattered through different Vedas, both such as are visible and such as are invisible to us.” (This last expression appears

to refer to the supposition that some parts of the Veda which Manu and others had before them when compiling their own works have now been lost. See Müller's Anc. Sansk. Lit. pp. 103-107.)

Accordingly the Smṛitis have an authority superior to that founded merely on the practice of learned men of modern date, who have no intuition into the past and invisible. Thus the Nyāya-mālā-vistara says (i. 3, 19) :

*Na hi idānītanāḥ śiṣṭāḥ Manv-ādi-vad deśa-kāld-viprakṛiṣṭūm vedaṁ divya-jnānena sākshātkarttūm śaknuvanti yena śiṣṭāchāro mūla-vedam anumāpayet |*

“For learned men of the present day do not possess the power, which Manu and others had, of placing before their minds, through divine knowledge, the Veda which is far removed from them both in place and time, so as to justify us in regarding the practice of these moderns as a sufficient ground for inferring the existence of a Veda as its foundation.”

But as learned men, in any particular country or at any particular time, may be able to consult some Smṛiti which authorizes their particular observances, “these observances may serve as ground for inferring the existence of some Smṛiti on which they are founded, but not for inferring a Veda (*tasmāch chhiṣṭāchāreṇa smṛitir anumātuṁ śakyate na tu śrutih*). But a Smṛiti which is thus merely inferred to exist is set aside by any visibly existing Smṛiti of contrary import (*anumitā cha smṛitir viruddhayā pratyakshayā smṛityā bādhyate*).”

IV. *S'ankara*.—The above passages, by assuming that Manu and other eminent sages had the power of consulting Vedic texts now no longer accessible, make them practically almost infallible. The same view is taken by Sankara Āchāryya. (See, however, the passage quoted from him above, in note 67, p. 62; but there he has the author of the Sāṅkhya in view, whose tenets he regarded as contrary to the Veda.) In answer to the remark of a Mīmāṃsaka objector stated in the comment on the Brahma Sūtra i. 3, 32, that the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, being of human origin, have only a derived and secondary authority (*‘itihāsa-purāṇam api pauruṣheyatvāt-pramāṇāntara-mūlatām akāṅkshate’*), Sankara argues in his explanation of the following Sūtra (i. 3, 33) that they have an independent foundation :

*Itihāsa-purāṇam api vyākhyātena mārgena sambhavad mantrārthavāda-*



*mūlatvāt prabhavati devatā-vigrahādi prapanchayitum | pratyaksha-mūlam  
api sambhavati | bhavati hi asmākam apratyaksham api chirantanānām pra-  
tyaksham | tathā cha Vyāsādayo devatābhiḥ pratyakshaṁ vyavaharanti iti  
smaryate | yas tu brūyād idānīntanānām iva pūrveshām api nāsti devādibhir  
vyavahartuṁ sāmartyam iti sa jagad-vaichitryam pratishedet | idānīm  
iva chu na anyadō, 'pi sārvaśāstrīyāḥ kshatriyo 'sti iti brūyāt tatas cha rāja-  
sūyād- chodanāḥ uparūṇḍhyāt | idānīm iva cha kālāntare 'py avyavasthita-  
prāyān varṇāsrama-dharmān prajīnīta, tatas cha vyavasthā-vidhāyī śā-  
stram anārthakam kuryāt | Tasmād dharmotkarṣa-vaśāt chirantanāḥ devā-  
dibhiḥ pratyakshaṁ vyajhrur iti śliṣhyate | api chī smaranti " svādhyā-  
yādishṭa-devatā-samprayogaḥ " ityādi | yogo 'py animādy-aśvarya-prāpti-  
phalakaḥ smaryamāno na śakyate sāhasa-mātreṇa pratyākhyātum | śrutiś  
cha yoga-māhātmyam prakhyāpayati | " pṛithvy-ap-tejo-'nila-khe samut-  
thite panchātmake yoga-guṇe pravṛitte | na tasyo rogo na jarā na mṛityuḥ  
prāptasya yogād<sup>155</sup> nimishaṁ śarīram " iti | rishinām api mantra-brāh-  
maṇa-darśinām sāmartyam na asmādīyena sāmartyena upamātuṁ yuk-  
tam | tasmāt sa-mūlam itihāsa-purānam |*

“The Itihāsas and Purānas also, having originated in the way which has been explained, have power, as being based on the hymns and arthavādas, to evince the corporeality, etc., of the gods. It is also reasonable to suppose that they are founded upon intuition. For there were things palpable through intuition to the ancients, though they are not thus palpable to us.<sup>150</sup> Accordingly it is recorded in the Smṛiti that Vyāsa and others associated face to face with the gods.<sup>160</sup> Any man

<sup>155</sup> Instead of *yogād nimisham* the text of the Biblioth. Indica reads *yogāgninayam*

<sup>150</sup> See above, pp. 116, 118, and 127; and also Prof Müller's article on the Vaiśeṣika Philosophy in the Journal of the German Oriental Society, vol. vii. p. 311, where it is remarked that the Vaiśeṣikas, like Kapila, include the intuition of rishis under the category of *pratyaksha* (*ārshaṁ jñānām sūtra-kṛitā pṛithak na lakshitaṁ yogi-pratyakṣe 'ntar-bhāvāt*).

<sup>160</sup> Compare with this R. V. i. 179, 2: *Ye chid hi pūrve ritasūpaḥ āsan sūkām devebhir avadann ritāni | te chid avāsūr ityādi* | “The pious sages who lived of old and who conversed about sacred truths with the gods,—they led a conjugal life,” etc. See also the passages quoted from the Vāna-parvan of the Mahābhārata, the S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, and Plato in the First Volume of this work, p. 147; and compare Hesiod, fragment 119: *ξυνα γὰρ τότε δαίτες ἔσαν, συνα δὲ θώκοι θανάτοισι θεοῖσι κατὰ βήτοισι τ' ἀνθρώποισι*.

“Immortal gods, not unfamiliar, then

Their feasts and converse shared with mortal men.”

And Herodotus writes of the Egyptians, ii. 144: *Τὸ δὲ πρότερον τῶν ἰνδρῶν τούτων*

who should maintain that the ancients, like his own contemporaries, were destitute of power thus to associate with superhuman beings like the gods, would be denying all variety in the history of the world. Such a person would in like manner affirm that as now there is no Kshattriya possessed of universal sovereignty, so neither was there ever such a prince; and would thus impugn the scriptural injunctions regarding the *rājasūya* sacrifice [which was only to be performed by a universal monarch]. He would also allege that in former times, as now, the duties of castes and of orders were scarcely at all in force, and would thus render fruitless the scriptures by which the rules relating to them are prescribed. By these considerations it is intimated that the ancients, in consequence of their eminent holiness, were admitted to associate immediately with the gods, etc. And the Smṛiti<sup>161</sup> says that nearness to, and converse with the gods is gained by reading the Veda, etc. Again, when the Smṛiti talks of the practice of Yoga resulting in the acquisition of superhuman faculties, such as minuteness, this assertion cannot be impugned through mere audacity, [*i.e.* it must have had some good foundation]. The Veda, too, declares the immense power of devotion in these words: 'When the fivefold influence of Yoga, connected with the elements of earth, water, fire, air, and æther, has begun to act, and a man has attained an æthereal [or fiery] body, he is no longer affected by disease, decay, or death.' And it is unreasonable to estimate, by the analogy of our own power, the power of the rishis, the seers of the Vedic hymns and Brāhmaṇas. Wherefore the Itihāsas and Purāṇas have an (independent) foundation.' "

Sankara does not, however, treat all the ancients in this way. Like many other systematizers, he finds no difficulty in rejecting or explaining away any authorities which come into conflict with his views. It is thus that he deals with Kapila, the author of the Sāṅkhya. That eminent sage is thus spoken of in the Śvetāśvatara Upanishad, v. 2 :

*Yo yoniṁ yonim adhitishṭhaty eko viśvāni rūpāni yonīs cha sarvāḥ |*

θεοὺς εἶναι τοὺς ἐν Ἀιγύπτῳ ἄρχοντας, δικάοντας ἅμα τοῖσι ἀνθρώποισι, "And [the Egyptian priests said] that before these men the gods were the rulers in Egypt, dwelling together with men."

<sup>161</sup> It appears from the gloss of Govinda Ānanda that one of the Yoga Sūtras is here quoted. I give the sense according to his explanation: *mantra-japād deva-sannidhyahāṁ tat-sambhāshanaṁ cha iti sūtrārthaḥ.*

*rishim prasūtañ Kapilañ yas tam agre jñānair bibhartti jāyamānañ cha paśyet |*

“The god who alone superintends every source of production and all forms, who formerly nourished with various knowledge his son the rishi Kapila, and beheld him at his birth, etc.”<sup>162</sup>

Towards the close of his comment on Brahma Sūtras ii. 1, 1, which I shall cite at some length, Sankara makes some remarks on this passage of that Upanishad. After stating the points that had been established in the first Book (*adhyaaya*) of the Brahma Sūtras, and alluding to the objections which had been urged against the Sāṅkhya and other hostile doctrines as contrary to the Veda, Sankara goes on to explain the object of the second book, and the purport of the aphorism with which it begins, as follows :

*Idānīm sva-pakshe smṛiti-nyāya-virodha-parihārah pradhānādi-vādānām cha nyāyābhāsopabṛimhātattvam pratedūntāñ spṛiṣṭy-ādi-prakriyāyāḥ avigītatvam ity asya artha-jātasya pratipādanāya dvitīyo'dhyāyāḥ ārabhyate | tatra prathamāñ tūvat smṛiti-virodham upanyasya pariharati | yad uktam Brahma eva sarvajnañ jagataḥ kāranañ tad ayuktam | kutaḥ “smṛity-anavakāśa-dosha-prasaṅgāt” | smṛitiś cha tantrākhyā paramarshi-pranītā śikṣā-parigṛihītā | anyās cha tad-anusārināḥ smṛitayaḥ | evaṃ saty anavakāśāḥ prasajyeran | tāsū hy achetanam pradhānāñ svatantrañ jagataḥ kāranaḥ upanibadhyate | Manv-ādi-smṛitayas tūvach chodanū-lakṣhaṇena agnīotrādinū dharmā-jātena apekṣhitam arthañ samarpayantyaḥ sāvakaśūḥ bhavanti asya varṇasya asmin kāle 'nena vidhānena upanayanam īdṛiśāś cha āchārah itthañ vedādhayanam itthañ samāvarttanam itthañ saha-dharma-chāriṇī-saṃyogaḥ iti tathā puruṣārthāñś chatur-varṇāśrama-dharmāñ nānā-vidhān vidadhati | na evaṃ kāpilādi-smṛitīnam anuṣṭheye vishaye'vakāśo'sti mokṣa-sādhanam eva hi samyag-darśanam adhikṛitya tūḥ pranītūḥ | yadi tatra apy anavakāśāḥ syur ānarthakyam eva āsām prasajyeta | tasmāt tad-avirodhena vedāntāḥ vyākhyātavyāḥ | katham punar “ikṣhity-”ādibhyo hetubhyo Brahma eva sarvajnañ jagataḥ kāranaḥ ity avadhāritāḥ śruty-arthaḥ | “smṛity-anavakāśa-dosha-prasaṅgena” punar ākṣhipyate | bhaved ayam anūkshepaḥ sva-tantra-prajñānām | para-tantra-prajñās tu prāyena janūḥ*

<sup>162</sup> See Sankara's commentary on this passage in Bibl. Ind. vii. 351, and Dr. Røer's translation, p. 62, with the note; also Dr. Hall's note in p. 19 of the preface to his edition of the Sāṅkhya Sāra, in the Bibl. Ind.

svāntryena śruty-artham avadhārayitum āsaknuvantaḥ prakhyāta-pra-  
 netrikāsu smṛtishv avalambena tad-baleṇa cha śruty-artham pratipat-  
 serann asmat-kṛite cha vyākhyāne na viśvasyur bahu-mānūt smṛitinām  
 pranetrishu | kapila-prabhritinām cha ārshaṃ jñānam apratiḥataṃ sma-  
 ryyate śrutiś cha bhavati “rishim prasūtaṃ kapilāṃ yas tam agre jñānair  
 bibharti jāyamānaṃ cha paśyed” iti | tasmād na eshām natam ayāthār-  
 thaṃ śakyaṃ sambhāvayitum | tarkāvashṭambheṇa cha te rtham pratish-  
 ṭhāpayanti | tasmād api smṛiti-baleṇa vedāntāḥ vyākhyeyāḥ iti punar  
 ākshepaḥ | tasya samādhir “na | anya-smṛity-anavakāśa-doshā-prasan-  
 gād” iti | yadi smṛity-anavakāśa-dōsha-prasangena īśvara-kāraṇa-vādāḥ  
 ākshipyeta evam apy anyāḥ īśvara-kāraṇa-vādīnyāḥ smṛityo ’navakāśāḥ  
 prasajyeran | tāḥ udāharishyāmaḥ | . . . evam ānekaśaḥ smṛtishv api  
 īśvaraḥ kāraṇatvena upādānatvena cha prakāśyate | smṛiti-baleṇa praty-  
 vatishṭhamānasya smṛiti-baleṇa eva uttaram pravakshyāmi ity ato ’yam  
 anya-smṛity-anavakāśa-doshopanyūsaḥ | darśitaṃ tu śrūtinam īśvara-  
 kāraṇa-vādam prati tātparyyam | vipratipattau cha smṛitinām avāśya-  
 kartavye ’nyatara-parigrahe ’nyatarasyāḥ parityāge cha śruty-anusārin-  
 yaḥ smṛitayaḥ pramāṇam anapekshyāḥ itarah | tad uktam pramāṇa-la-  
 kṣhaṇe “virodhe tv anapekshaṃ syād asati hy anumānām” iti (Mīmāṃsā  
 Sūtras i. 3, 3) | na cha atīndriyān arthān śrutiṃ antareṇa kaśchid upa-  
 labhate iti śakyaṃ sambhāvayitum nimittābhāvāt | śakyaṃ kapilādīnām  
 siddhānām apratihata-jñānatvād iti chet | na | siddher api sāpekshatvāt |  
 dharmānushṭhānāpekshā hi siddhiḥ sa cha dharmāś chodanā-lakṣhaṇaḥ |  
 tataś cha pūrva-siddhāyāś chodanāyāḥ artho na paśchima-siddha-purusha-  
 vachana-vaśena atīśankituṃ śakyate | siddha-vyapāśraya-kalpanāyām api  
 bahutvāt siddhānām pradarsītena prakāreṇa smṛiti-vipratipattau satyāṃ  
 na śruti-vyapāśrayād anyad nirṇaya-kāraṇam asti | para-tantra-prajna-  
 sya api na akasmāt smṛiti-viśeṣha-vishayaḥ pakshapāto yuktaḥ | kasyachit  
 kvachit tu pakshapāte sati purusha-mati-vaiśvarūpyeṇa tattvavyasthāna-  
 prasangāt | tasmāt tasya api smṛiti-vipratipatty-upanyāseṇa śruty-anu-  
 sārānanusāra-vivechanena cha san-mārge prajñā sangrahanīyā | Yā tu  
 śrutiḥ Kapilasya jñānātīśayaṃ darśayanti pradarsitā na tayā śruti-  
 viruddham api Kāpilam mataṃ śraddhātuṃ śakyaṃ “Kāpilam” iti  
 “śruti-sāmānya-mātratvād”<sup>163</sup> anyāśya cha Kapilasya Sagara-putrāṇām  
 prataptur Vāsudeva-nāmaḥ smaraṇāt | anyārtha-darśanasya cha prāpti-  
 rahitasye asādhakatvāt | Bhavati cha anyā Manor mähātyam prakhyā-

<sup>163</sup> Mīmāṃsā-sūtra i. 1, 31. See above; pp. 78 f.

payanti śrutir "yad vai kincha Manur avadat tad bhashajam" <sup>164</sup> iti | Manunā cha (xii. 91) "sarva-bhūteshu chātmānaṃ sarva-bhūtāni chātmani | samam paśyann ātma-yūjī svārājyam adhigachehati" iti sarvātmatva-darśanam praśaṃsatā Kāpilam mataṃ nindyate iti gamyate | Kapilo, hi nā sarvātmatva-darśanam anumanyate ātma-bhedābhyupagamāt | . . . . . atāś chā ātma-bheda-kalpanayā 'pi Kāpilasya tantrasya veda-viruddhatvaṃ vedāntīsāri-Manū-vachana-viruddhatvaṃ cha na kevalaṃ svatantra-prakṛiti-pāikāpanayā eveti siddham | vedasya hi nirapekshaṃ svārthe prāmānyaṃ raver iva rūpa-vishaye pūruṣha-vachasūṃ tu mūlāntarāpekshaṃ svārthe prāmānyaṃ vaktṛi-smṛiti-vyavahitaṃ cha iti viprakarshaḥ | tasmād veda-viruddhe vishaye smṛity-anavakāśa-prasango na dośhaḥ |

"But now the second chapter is commenced with the view of effecting the following objects, viz. (a) to refute, in our own favour, the charge of contradicting the reasonings of the Smṛiti, to shew (b) that the doctrines regarding Pradhāna, etc., have nothing more than an appearance of reason, and (c) that the manner in which the subjects of creation, etc., are treated in each of the Upanishads is unimpeachable. First of all then the author states, and removes, the objection of contrariety to the Smṛiti. Our opponents urge that it is incorrect to say that the omniscient Brahma is the cause of the world. Why? Because, (1) as they allege, that doctrine 'is chargeable with the objection of setting aside the Smṛiti as useless' (Br. Sūtra, ii. 1, 1). This term 'Smṛiti' denotes a systematic treatise (*tantra*) cōmposed by an eminent rishi, and received by the learned; and there are other Smṛitis in conformity with it. And the alleged difficulty is that (on the theory that Brahma is the cause) all these would be set aside as useless; since they propound an unconscious Pradhāna as the self-dependent cause of the world. The Smṛitis of Manu and others, indeed, which affirm that by means of the agnihotra and other enjoined ceremonies, the objects desired (by those who practise these rites) will be accomplished, will still retain their use, viz. of prescribing the objects to be pursued, viz. the various duties of the four castes and orders,—that such and such a caste shall be initiated at such a time and by such a process, and shall follow such and such a mode of life, that the Veda is to be studied, that the cessation of study is to take place, and that union with a woman following the same rites is to

<sup>164</sup> See above, p. 181, and the First Volume of this work, pp. 188, and 510.

celebrated, in such and such ways. But [on the hypothesis of Brahma being the creator] no such room is left for the Smṛitis of Kapila and others, on the ground of any ceremonies to be performed [in conformity with their prescriptions]; for they have been composed as embodying perfect systems affording the means of final liberation. If in this respect also no place be left for them the difficulty will arise that they are quite useless. And hence the conclusion is reached that the Upanishads should be interpreted so as to harmonize with them. But, such being the case, how; it is again objected, have you determined on the strength of the reasons furnished by the texts about 'beholding,' etc., that it is the meaning of the Veda that Brahma is the omniscient cause of the world, thus exposing yourself to the charge of leaving no place for the Smṛiti? Although we hold that this charge is harmless as regards those who think for themselves; yet men have for the most part no independent opinion, and are unable by an unassisted act of their own judgment to determine the sense of the Vedas, and will consequently lean upon the Smṛitis composed by renowned authors, and adopt the sense of the Vedas which they enforce: and from their lofty opinion of these authors they will have no confidence in our interpretations. And it is moreover urged (2) that Kapila and the others are declared by the Smṛiti to have possessed an unobstructed intuitive (*ārsha*<sup>165</sup>) knowledge; and there is also a Vedic text to the effect 'He who of old sustains with manifold knowledge Kapila when he is produced, and beholds him when born,' etc. (S'vetāsv. Up. v. 2). Consequently their doctrines cannot be imagined to be untrue. And they further support their tenets by argument. On these grounds also, it is urged, the Upanishads must be interpreted by the aid of the Smṛitis. The questions thus raised are settled by the concluding words of the Sūtra, 'No; for this conclusion is vitiated by the objection that other Smṛitis would in this way be rendered useless.' (1) If the doctrine that God is the cause of the world is chargeable with the objection that it leaves no room for the Smṛiti, in the same way the difficulty will arise (on the other theory) that other texts of the Smṛiti which affirm that God is the cause will be set aside. These we shall adduce." After quoting some passages, Sankara proceeds: "In the same manner in numerous texts of the Smṛiti God is shewn to be both the instrumental and the material cause. I must answer on the

<sup>165</sup> See above, pp. 116, 118, and 127.

strength of the Smṛiti the person who opposes me on the same ground, and so I just indicate this objection against his views as having the effect of setting aside other Smṛitis. But it has been shown that the sense of the Vedic texts is in favour of the causality of God. And since, if the Smṛitis are at variance with each other, we must of necessity accept the one set and reject the other, those of them which are conformable to the Veda will be authoritative, and the rest will deserve no attention: for it has been said in the section (of the Pūrva Mīmāṃsā) on proof (i. 3, 3), that 'if it (the Smṛiti) be contrary (to the Veda) it must be disregarded; but if there be no (contrariety) it must be inferred (that the former is founded on the latter).' And it is inconceivable that anyone should discover things beyond the reach of the senses without the aid of the Veda, since the means of doing so are wanting. If it be urged that we can conceive such discovery (of imperceptible things without the help of the Veda) as possible in the case of Kapila and other perfect persons (*siddhānām*), because there was nothing to obstruct their knowledge;—we reply, No; because perfection (*siddhi*) is dependent upon something else, viz. on the practice of duty. Now duty is defined as something which is enjoined. And the subject-matter of an injunction which was previously promulgated cannot be called into doubt on the strength of the words of a man who became perfect at a subsequent period. And even on the supposition that confidence could be placed in such 'perfect' persons, yet, as they are numerous, and as such a mutual contradiction as we have already pointed out exists between the Smṛitis of different 'perfect' persons, there is no means left of determining the truth, but reliance on the Veda. Causeless partiality to any particular Smṛiti, on the part even of a man who has no independent opinion, is improper; but if anyone ever does exhibit such partiality, the charge of depriving truth of all fixity attaches to his procedure, because the opinions of men (which he takes as the standard of his belief) assume all sorts of forms. Consequently his judgment also should be directed into the right path by indicating the mutual contradictions between the different Smṛitis, and by distinguishing those of them which are conformable to, from those which are at variance with, the Veda. And (2) the Vedic text which has been pointed out, showing the transcendent character of Kapila's knowledge, cannot be a warrant for believing the doctrine of Kapila, though con-

trary to the Veda, since the word Kapila 'has, in this text, a general sense' [applicable to others besides the author of the Sāṅkhya] (Mīm. Sūtra, i. 1, 31), and another Kapila called Vāsudeva, the consumer of Sagara's sons, is also mentioned in the Smṛiti; and since the indication of something which has a different object in view, and is therefore irrelevant to the matter in question, can prove nothing.<sup>166</sup> There is, besides, another text of the Veda which sets forth the eminent dignity of Manu in these terms, 'Whatever Manu said is medicine.'<sup>167</sup> And Manu—when he employs the words (xii. 91), 'He who, with impartial eye, beholds himself in all beings, and all beings in himself, thus sacrificing his own personalty, attains to self-refulgence;' and, by saying this commends the tenet that everything is one with the supreme Spirit—must be understood as censuring Kapila's doctrine. For Kapila does not assent to the identity of Brahma and the universe, since he holds a diversity of souls." . . . (After quoting one passage from the Mahābhārata, and another from the Veda, to prove that Kapila is wrong, Sankara proceeds): "Hence it is proved that Kapila's system is at variance with the Veda and with the words of Manu, who follows the Veda, not only in supposing an independent Prakṛiti (nature), but also in supposing a diversity of souls. Now the Veda has an independent authority in regard to its own contents, as the sun has (an inherent power) of manifesting forms; whilst the words of men have, as regards their own sense, an authority which is dependent on another source (the Veda), and which is distinguished (from the authority of the Veda) by the fact of their authors being remembered. Consequently it forms no objection to a doctrine that it sets aside a Smṛiti on a point which is contrary to the Veda."

<sup>166</sup> The words thus translated are explained as follows in the Gloss of Govinda Ānanda: *Kincha "yaḥ Kapilam jñānair bibharti tam īśvaram paśyed" iti vidhīyate tathā cha anyārthasya īśvara-pratipatti-śeṣasya Kapila-sarvajnatvasya darśanam anuvādas tasya mānāntareṇa prāpti-śūnyasya svārtha-sādhakatvāyogād na anuvāda-mātrād sarvajnatva-siḥkhir i'y āha* | "And it is enjoined (in the text of the S'vetāśvata Upanishad): 'Let him behold that Īśvara who nourishes Kapila with various knowledge;' and so since this 'indication' of, this reference to, the omniscience of Kapila, which has another object in view, and erds in the establishment of an Īśvara, and which on other grounds is shewn to be irrelevant, cannot prove its own meaning, —this mere reference does not suffice to evince Kapila's omniscience:—This is what S'ankara means to say."

<sup>167</sup> See the First Volume of this work, pp. 188 and 510.



See also Sankara's commentary on the Taittirīya Upanishad, Bib. Ind. vii. pp. 136, 137, where he says :

*Kāpila-kāṇādādi-tarka-śāstra-virodhaḥ iti chet | na | teshām mūlābhāve veda-virodhe cha bhīrāntyopapatteḥ |*

“If it be objected that this is contrary to the rationalistic doctrines of Kāpila and Kāṇāda [and therefore, wrong], I answer no, since these doctrines are proved to be erroneous, as having no foundation, and as being in opposition to the Veda.”

His remarks on a passage of the Praśna Upanishad, which are as follows, afford a curious specimen of the contemptuous manner in which this orthodox Vedāntist treats the heretical Sāṅkhyas, etc. (Praśna Up. vi. 4; Bib. Ind. viii. 244) :

*Sāṅkhyās tu avidyā-dhyāropitam eva puruṣe kartṛitvaṁ kriyā-kāram phalaṁ cha iti kalpayitvā ūgama-vāhyatvāt punas tatas trasyantaḥ paramārthataḥ eva bhokṛitvam puruṣasya ichchhanti | tattvāntaraṁ cha pradhānam puruṣāt paramārtha-vastu-bhūtam eva kalpayanto 'nya-tūrkika-kṛita-buddhi-vishayāḥ santo vihanyante | Tathā itare tūrkikāḥ sāṅkhyair ity evam paraspara-viruddhārtha-kalpanātaḥ āmishārthinaḥ iva prāṇino 'nyonyaṁ viruddhamānāḥ artha-darśitvāt paramārtha-tattvāt tad-dūram eva apakṛishyante | atas tan-matam anādritya vedāntārtha-tattvam ekatva-darśanam prati ādaravanto mumukshavaḥ syur iti tūrkikamate doṣa-darśanaṁ kinchid uchyate 'smābhir na tu tūrkika-tātparyeṇa |*

“The followers of the Sāṅkhya imagine that the functions of action, and the enjoyment of reward which causes action, become erroneously attributed to the soul (*puruṣa*) in consequence of supervening ignorance; but as this doctrine differs from that of Scripture, they become afraid of it, and seek to ascribe to the soul enjoyment in the proper sense. And supposing another principle distinct from soul, viz. Pradhāna (or nature), which they regard as substance in the proper sense, they become the objects of correction by other rationalists, and are crushed. Thus, in consequence of the contrariety between the conceptions of the Sāṅkhyas and those of other freethinkers, the two parties quarrel with each other like animals fighting for flesh; and thus, from their having an (exclusive) regard to (their own) views, they are all drawn away to a distance from the essential truth. Wherefore let men, disregarding their tenets, seek for final liberation by paying honour to the principles of the Vedantic doctrine, which maintains the unity of all being. We

have thus pointed out something of the errors of the rationalists, and have said nothing in accordance with their views."

IV.—In thus depreciating Kapila, Śankara is in direct opposition to the Bhāgavata Purāna (which, however, may be a work of later date than his<sup>168</sup>), in which the author of the Sāṅkhya is spoken of with the greatest reverence. Thus in Bhāg. Pur. i. 3, 10, he is described as the fifth incarnation of Viṣṇu :

*Panchamaḥ Kapilo nāma siddheśaḥ kāla-viplutar. | provāchāsura-  
sāṅkhyāṁ tattva-grāma-vinirṇayam |*

"In his fifth manifestation, he [in the form of] Kapila, and lord of saints, declared to Āsuri the Sāṅkhya which defines the series of principles, and which had been lost through the lapse of time."

And again, in Bhāg. Pur. ix. 8, 12, 13, Kapila is made the subject of eulogy. A legend narrates that the sixty thousand sons of king Sagara, conceiving Kapila to be the robber of a horse which had been carried away from their sacrifice, advanced to slay him, when they were burnt up by fire issuing from his body. The author of the Purāna, however, denies that this was in any degree owing to passion on the part of the sage :

*Na sādhu-vādo muni-kopa-bharjitāḥ nṛpendra-putrāḥ iti sattva-dhā-  
mani | kathaṁ tamo roshamayaṁ vibhāvyaṭe jagat-pavitṛātmani khe rajo  
bhuvāḥ | yasyeritā sāṅkhyamayī dṛiḍheha naur yayā mumukshus tarate  
duratyayam | bhavārṇavam mṛityu-pathaṁ vipāśchitaḥ parātma-bhūtasya  
katham prithāṇmatih |*

"It is not an assertion befitting a good man to say that the king's sons were burnt up by the wrath of the sage; for how is it conceivable that the darkness (*tamas*) of anger should reside in the abode of goodness (*sattva*), or that the dust (or passion, *rajas*) of the earth should ascend into the sky, the region of purity? How could that sage, one with the supreme Spirit, by whom the strong ship of the Sāṅkhya was launched, on which the man seeking emancipation crosses the ocean of existence, hard to be traversed, and leading to death,—how could he entertain the idea of any distinction between himself and others [and so treat any one as an enemy]?"

It is not necessary for me to quote any further passages in praise of the author of the Sāṅkhya. There is a great deal about this system

<sup>168</sup> See Wilson's Vish. Pur., preface, pp. xlv. and li.

in the Mahābhārata, Sāntiparvan, verses 11,037 ff. See Colebrooke's Essays, i. 236 (p. 149 of Williams and Norgate's ed.); Wilson's Vishṇu Purāna, pref. p. xciv. and text, pp. 18 ff. with notes; Bhāgavata Purāna, iii. chapters 24-30; Weber's Ind. Stud. passim; Dr. Rœr's Introduction to S'vetāśvatara Upanishad, Bibl. Ind. xv. 35 ff.; and Dr. Hall's preface to the Sāṅkhya-sāra in the Bibl. Ind. p. 19, note.

We have thus seen that a distinct line of demarcation is drawn by the most accurate and critical of the Indian writers, between the Sruti, which they define to be superhuman and independent, and the Smṛiti, which they regard as of human origin, and as dependent for its authority on its conformity with the Sruti. Sāṅkara, indeed, as we have also observed (above, p. 183 f.), goes very nearly, if not altogether, so far as to assign an independent foundation to the Smṛitis; but he confines this distinction to such of these works as coincide in doctrine with the Sruti or Veda, according to his own Vedāntic interpretation of its principles, while all other speculators are denounced by him as heterodox. It is, however, clear from the S'vetāśvatara Upanishad, the Mahābhārata, the Bhagavad Gītā, the Vishṇu, and the Bhāgavata Purānas, etc., that the doctrines of the Sāṅkhya must have been very prevalent in ancient times, and that Sāṅkara, when he condemned them as erroneous, must have done so in the face of many powerful opponents.<sup>169</sup>

<sup>169</sup> I quote the following passage from Dr. Rœr's Introduction to the S'vetāśvatara Upanishad, pp. 36 f.: "At the time of the composition of the S'vetāśvatara, the Sāṅkhya was not a new system, which had to overcome the resistance of old received opinions, and the prejudices of men in power, whose interest might be opposed to the introduction of a doctrine by which their authority could be questioned. It had found many adherents; it was the doctrine of Manu, of some parts of the Mahābhārata, and to its founder divine honour had been assigned by general consent. It was a doctrine whose argumentative portion demanded respect, and as it was admitted by many Brāhmins (*sic*), distinguished for their knowledge of the Vedas, it could not be treated as a heresy. The most learned and eminent of the Brāhmins were evidently divided among themselves with reference to the truth of the Sāṅkhya and Vedānta, and this must have afforded to the opponents of the Vedaic system a most powerful weapon for attacking the Vedas themselves. If both the Sāṅkhya and Vedānta are divine revelations, both must be true; but if the doctrine of the one is true, the doctrine of the other is wrong; for they are contradictory among themselves. Further, if both are derived from the Vedas, it is evident that also the latter cannot reveal the truth, because they would teach opposite opinions about one and the same point. Such objections to the Vedas had been made already in ancient times, as is clear from the Upanishads, from several passages of Manu, from Yāska, etc.; and under these circumstances it cannot be wondered at, if early attempts were made to reconcile the

It is not necessary for me here to inquire with any accuracy what the relation was in which the different philosophical systems stood to each other in former ages. It may suffice to say that the more thorough-going adherents of each—of the Vedānta, the Sāṅkhya, the Nyāya, etc.—must, according to all appearance, have maintained their respective principles with the utmost earnestness and tenacity, and could not have admitted that any of the rival systems was superior to their own in any particular. It is impossible to study the Sūtras of the several schools, and come to any other conclusion. The more popular systems of the Purāṇas, on the other hand, blended various tenets of the different systems syncretically together. In modern times the superior orthodoxy of the Vedānta seems to be generally admitted. But even some who hold this opinion refuse to follow the example of Śankara in denouncing the founders of the rival schools as heretical. On the contrary, they regard them all as inspired Munis, who, by adapting their doctrines to the capacities or tendencies of different students, have paved the way for the ultimate reception of the Vedāntic system. Such is the view taken in the Prasthāna-bheda of Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, who gives the following lucid summary of the leading principles of the different schools of speculation (Weber's Indische Studien, i. 23):

*Sarveshām cha sankshepena trividhaḥ eva prasthāna-bhedaḥ | tatra ārambha-vādaḥ ekaḥ | parināma-vādo dvitīyaḥ | vivartta-vādas tṛtīyaḥ | pūrthivāpya-taijasa-vāyavyās chaturvidhāḥ paramānavo dvya-anukādī-kramena brahmāṇḍa-paryantaṁ jagad ārambhante | asad eva kāryyaṁ kāraka-vyāpārād utpadyate iti prathamā tārkkikānām mīmāṃsā-kānām cha | sattva-rajasa-tamo-guṇātmakam pradhānam eva mahad-ahankārādi-kramena jagad-ākāreṇa parinamate | pūrvam api sūkshmarūpeṇa sad eva kāryyaṁ kārana-vyāpāreṇa abhivyañjate iti dvitīyaḥ pakshaḥ Sāṅkhya-Yoga-Pātanjala-Pāsupatānām | Brahmanāḥ parināmo jagad iti Vaiśhṇvānām | sva-prakāśa-paramānandādvitīyam Brahma sva-māyā-vaśād mithyaiva jagad-ākāreṇa kalpate iti tṛtīyaḥ paksho*

tenets of the Vedānta and Sāṅkhya to save the uniformity of the doctrine, and thereby the sacredness of the Vedas as the Scriptures derived from the immediate revelation of God. So, for instance, it is recorded that Vyāsa, the reputed author of the Brahma Sūtras, wrote also a commentary to Patanjali's Yoga-sāstra, which is still extant under his name. In the same manner composed Gauḍapāda, the eminent Vedāntist, and teacher of Śankara's teacher, Govinda, a commentary to Īśvara Kṛishṇa's Sāṅkhya Kārikā; and the Bhagavad Gītā has also the same object."

*Brahma-vādinām | sarveshām prasthāna-karttrīnām munīnām vivartta-  
vāda-paryavasānena advīṭīye Parameśvare eva pratipādye tātparyam | na  
hi te munayo bhrāntāḥ sarvajnatpāt teshām | kintu vahir-vishaya-prava-  
nānām āpātataḥ purushārthe praveśo na sambhavati iti nāstikya-vāra-  
nāya taiḥ prakāra-bhedāḥ pradarsītāḥ | tatra teshām tātparyam abuddhvā  
veda-viruddhe 'py arthe tātparyam utprekshamānās'tan-matam eva upā-  
deyāḍvena grihṇanto janāḥ nānū-patha-jusho bhavanti | iti sarvam ana-  
vadyam.*

“The difference in principle between these various schools is, when briefly stated, three-fold. The first doctrine is that of a commencement of the world; the second is that of an evolution; the third is that of an illusion. Atoms of four descriptions—earthy, aqueous, igneous, and aerial—beginning with compounds of two atoms, and ending in the egg of Brahmā (the world), originate the universe: and effects, previously non-existent, come into being from the action of a causer. This is the first theory, that of the Logicians and Mīmānsakas. The second theory, that of the Sāṅkhyas, Yogas, Pātanjalas, and Pāśupatas, is that *Pradhāna* (or *Prakṛiti* = nature), consisting of the three *guṇas* (qualities), *sattva*, *rajas*, and *tamas*, is evolved, through the successive stages of *mahat* (intellect), and *aḥankāra* (consciousness), etc., in the form of the world; and that effects, which had previously existed in a subtle form, are [merely] manifested by the action of their cause. Another form of this theory is that of the Vaishṇavas [the Rāmānujas], who hold the universe to be an evolution of Brahma. The third view, that of the Brahma-vādins (Vedāntists), is, that Brahma, the self-resplendent, the supremely happy, and the one sole essence, assumes, unreally, the form of the world through the influence of his own illusion (*Māyā*).

The ultimate scope of all the Munis, authors of these different systems, is to support the theory of illusion, and their only design is to establish the existence of one Supreme God, the sole essence; for these Munis could not be mistaken [as some of them must have been, if they were not all of one opinion, or, as those of them must have been who did not hold Vedāntic principles], since, they were omniscient. But as they saw that men, addicted to the pursuit of external objects, could not all at once penetrate into the highest truth, they held out to them a variety of theories, in order that they might not fall into atheism. Misunderstanding the object which the Munis, thus had in view, and

representing that they even designed to propound doctrines contrary to the Vedas, men have come to regard the specific doctrines of these several schools with preference, and thus become adherents of a variety of systems. Thus all has been satisfactorily stated."

I find that Vijnāna Bhikshu, the commentator on the Sāṅkhya aphorisms, takes very nearly the same view as is here quoted from Mādhusūdana Sarasvatī, in regard to the superiority of the Brahma Mīmāṃsā or Vedānta over the other Darśanas.

In his Sāṅkhya-pravāchana-bhāṣhya (Bibliotheca Indica, pp. 3 ff.), he thus writes :

*Syād etat | Nyāya-vaiśeṣikābhyām atra avirodho bhavatu | brahma-mīmāṃsā-yogābhyāñ tu virodho 'sty eva | tābhyāñ nityeśvara-sādhanāt | atra cha Īśvarasya pratishidhyamānatvāt | na cha atrāpi vyāvahārikā-pāramārthika-bhedena seśvara-nirīśvara-vādayor avirodho 'stu seśvara-vādasya upāsānā-paratva-sambhavād iti vāchyam | vinigamakābhāvāt | īśvaro hi durjneyaḥ iti nirīśvaratvam api loka-vyāvahāra-siddham aiśvarya-vairāgyāya anuvaditūñ śakyate ātmanaḥ saguṇatvam iva | na tu kvāpi śruty-ādāv īśvaraḥ sphuṭam pratishidhyate yena seśvara-vādasyaiva vyāvahārikatvam avadhāryeta iti | atra uchyate | atrāpi vyāvahārikā-pāramārthika-bhāvo bhavati | "asatyam apratishṭhañ te jagad āhur anīśvaram" ityādi-sāstrair nirīśvara-vādasya ninditatvāt | asminn eva śāstre vyāvahārikasyaiva pratishedhasya aiśvarya-vairāgyādy-artham anuvadatvauchityāt | yadi hi laukāyatika-matānusāreṇa nityaiśvaryañ na pratishidhyeta tadā paripūrṇa-nitya-nirdoshaiśvarya-darśanena tatra chittāvesato vivekābhyāsa-pratibandhaḥ syād iti sāṅkhyāchāryyānām āśayaḥ | seśvara-vādasya na kvāpi nindūdikam asti yena upāsānādi-paratayā tat sāstrañ sankochyeta | yat tu "nāsti sāṅkhya-samañ jñānañ nāsti yoga-samam balam | atra vaḥ sañśayo mā bhūj jñānañ sāṅkhyam param smṛitam" ityādi vākyam tad-vivekāñse eva sāṅkhya-jñānasya darśanāntarebhyaḥ utkarsham pratipādayati na tv īśvara-pratishedāñse 'pi | tathā Parāśarādy-akhila-śiṣṭa-saṁvādād api seśvara-vādasyaiva pāramārthikatvam avadhāryate | api cha "Akshapāda-praṇite cha Kāñḍe sāṅkhya-yogayoh | tyājyaḥ śruti-virudho 'mśaḥ śruty-eka-śaraṇair nṛibhiḥ | Jaiminiye cha Vaiyāse virudhāñśo na kaśchana | śrutyā vedārthavijnāne śruti-pārañ gatau hi tāv" iti Parāśaropapurāñādibhyo 'pi brahma-mīmāṃsāyāḥ īśvarañse balavattvam | yathā | "nyāya-tantrāny anekāni taīs tair uktāni vādibhiḥ | hetv-āgama-sadāchārair yad yuktañ*

*tad upāsyatām*” *iti moksha-dharma-vākyaḍ api Parāśarādy-akhila-śiṣṭa-  
 vyavahārena brahma-mīmāṃsā-nyāya-vaiśeṣhikādy-uktaḥ īśvara-sādhaka-  
 nyāyaḥ eva grāhyo balavattvāt | tathā | “Yaṁ na paśyanti yogīndrāḥ  
 sānkhyāḥ api mahēśvarām | anādi-nidhanam brahma tam eva śaraṇaṁ  
 vrajā” ityādi-kaurmādi-vākyaīḥ sānkhyānām īśvarājñānasyaiva nārāya-  
 nādīnā proktatvāch cha | kincha brahma-mīmāṃsāyāḥ īśvaraḥ eva mukhyo  
 vishayaḥ upakramādibhir ayadhṛitaḥ | tatrāmśe tasya bādhe śāstrasyaiva  
 aprāmānyaṁ syāt | “yat-paraḥ śabdaḥ sa śabdārthaḥ” itī nyāyāt | sān-  
 khyā-śāstrasya tu purushārtha-tat-sādhana-prākṛiti-purusha-vivekāv eva  
 mukhyo vishayaḥ | itī īśvara-pratishedhāmśa-bādhe ’pi na aprāmānyam |  
 “Yat-paraḥ śabdaḥ sa śabdārthaḥ” itī nyāyāt | ataḥ sāvakāśatayā sān-  
 khyam eva īśvara-pratishedhāmśe durbalam itī | na cha brahma-mīmāṃ-  
 sāyām api īśvaraḥ eva mukhyo vishayo na tu nityaiśvaryaṁ itī vaktuṁ  
 śakyate | “smṛity-anavakāśa-dosha-prasanga”-rūpa-pūrva-pakshasya anu-  
 papattyā nityaiśvarya-viśiṣṭatvena eva brahma-mīmāṃsā-vishayatvāva-  
 dhāraṇāt | brahma-śabdasya para-brahmany eva mukhyatayā tu “athātaḥ  
 para-brahma-jijnāsā” itī na sūtritām itī | etena sānkhyā-virodhād brah-  
 ma-yoga-darśanayoh kāryyeśvara-paratvam api na sūkanāyam | prakṛiti-  
 svātantryāpattyā “rachanānupapattēś cha na anumānam” ityādi brahma-  
 sūtra-paramparā-nupapattēś cha | tathā “sa purvashām api guruḥ kālena  
 anavachchedād” itī yoga-sūtra-tadīya-vyāsa-bhāshyābhyāṁ sphuṭam īśa-  
 nityatāvagamāch cha itī | tasmād abhyupagama-vāda-prauḍhi-vādādīnā  
 eva sānkhyasya vyāvahārikēśvara-pratishedha-paratayā brahma-mīmāṃsā-  
 yogābhyāṁ saha na virodhaḥ | abhyupagama-vādaś cha śāstre dṛiṣṭaḥ |  
 yathā Vishnu-purāṇe (i. 17, 54) | “Ete bhinna-dṛiśūṁ daityāḥ vikalpāḥ  
 kathitāḥ mayā | kṛitvā’bhyupagamaṁ tatra sankshepaḥ śrūyatām mama” |  
 itī | astu vā pāpināṁ jñāna-pratibandhārtham āstika-darśaneshv apy  
 aṁśataḥ śruti-viruddhārtha-vyavasthāpanaṁ teshu teshv aṁśeshv apra-  
 mānyaṁ cha | śruti-smṛity-aviruddheshu tu mukhya-vishayeshu prā-  
 mānyam asty eva | ataḥ eva Padma-purāṇe brahma-yoga-darśanāti-  
 riktānām darśanānām nindā’py upapadyate | Yathā tatra Pūrvatīm  
 prati Īśvara-vākyaṁ | “śrīṇu’devi pravakshyāmi’ tāmāsāni yathā-kra-  
 mam | yeshāṁ śravaṇa-mātreṇa pātītyāṁ jñānīnām api | prathamāṁ hi  
 mayāvoktāṁ S’āivam Pāsūpatāḍīkam | mach-chhakti-āvēsitair vipraīḥ sam-  
 proktāni tataḥ param | Kanādena tu samproktāṁ śāstraṁ vaiśeṣhikam  
 mahat | Gautamena tathā nyāyaṁ sānkhyāṁ tu Kapilena vai | dvijaṁ-  
 manā Jaiminīnā pūrvaṁ vedamayārthataḥ | nirīśvareṇa vādena kṛitam*

*śāstram mahattaram | Dhishanena tathā proktam chārvākam ati-garhitam | daityānām nāśanārthāya Viṣṇunā Buddha-rūpiṇā | bauddha-śāstram asat proktaṁ nagna-nīla-paṭādikam | mūyā-vādam asach-chhāstram prachchhannam bauddham eva cha | mayāiva kāthitam devi kalau brāhmaṇa-rūpiṇā | apārthaṁ śruti-vākyānām dcrśayat loka-garhitam | karma-svarūpa-tyājyatvam atra cha pratipādyate | sarva-karma-paribhṛg-śād naiṣkarmyaṁ tatra chochyate | parātma-jīvaḥ aikyam mayā 'tra pratipādyate | brahmaṇo 'sya parāṁ rūpaṁ nirgūṇaṁ darśitam mayā | sarvasya jagato 'py asya nāśanārthaṁ kalau yuge | vedūrthavad mahāśāstram mūyā-vādam avaidikam | mayāiva kathitaṁ devi jagatām nāśa-kāraṇād" iti | adhikaṁ tu brahma-mīmāṁsā-bhāṣhye prapanchitam asmābhir iti | tasmād āstika-śāstrasya na kasyāpy aprāmāṇyaṁ virodho vā svasa-viśayeshu sarveṣhām abādhit avirodhāch cha iti | nanv evam puruṣa-bahutvāṁśe 'py asya śāstrasya abhyupagama-vādatvaṁ syāt | na syāt | avirodhāt | brahma-mīmāṁsāyām apy " aṁśo nānā-vyapadeśād" ityādisūtra-jātair jīvātma-bahutvasyaiva nirṇayāt | sāṅkhya-siddha-puruṣhāṇām ātmatvaṁ tu brahma-mīmāṁsayā bādhyate eva | " ātmā iti tu upayanti" iti tat-sūtreṇa paramātmanah eva paramārtha-bhūmāv ātmatvāvadhāranāt | tathāpi cha sāṅkhyasya na aprāmāṇyam | vyāvahārikātmano jīvasya itara-viveka-jñānasya moksha-sādhanatve vivakṣhitūrthe bādhibhāvat | etena śruti-smṛiti-prasiddhāyor nānātmaikātmatvayor vyāvahārika-pāramārthika-bhedena avirodhah |*

“Be it so: let there be here no discrepancy with the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣhika. But it will be said that the Sāṅkhya is really opposed to the Brahma-mīmāṁsā (the Vedānta) and the Yoga [of Patanjali]; since both of these systems assert an eternal Īśvara (God), while the Sāṅkhya denies such an Īśvara. And it must not be said (the same persons urge) that here also [as in the former case of the Nyāya, and Vaiśeṣhika], owing to the distinction between practical [or conventional, or regulative] and essential truths, there may be no [real] contrariety between the theistic and the atheistic theories, inasmuch as the theistic theory may possibly have a view to devotion [and may therefore have nothing more than a practical end in view];—you are not, it will be said, to assert this, as there is nothing to lead to this conclusion [or, distinction]. For as Īśvara is difficult to be known, the atheistic theory also, which is founded on popular opinion, may, indeed, be adverted to for the purpose of inspiring indifference to the conception of a Deity;



(just as it is [conventionally] asserted that soul has qualities); but neither the Veda, nor any other śāstra contains a distinct denial of an Īśvara, by which the merely practical [or conventional] character of the theistic theory could be shewn. [Consequently the theistic theory is not a mere conventional one, but true, and the contradiction between the atheistic Sāṅkhya and the theistic systems is real and irreconcilable].

“To this we reply”: in this case also the distinction of practical and essential truths holds. For although the atheistic theory is censured by such texts as the following: ‘They declare a world without an Īśvara to be false and baseless;’ yet it was proper that in this system (the Sāṅkhya), the merely practical (or conventional) denial [of Īśvara] should be inculcated for the purpose of inspiring indifference to the conception of a Deity, and so forth. Because the idea of the author of the Sāṅkhya was this, that if the existence of an eternal Īśvara were not denied, in conformity with the doctrine of the Laukāyatikas, men would be prevented by the contemplation of a perfect, eternal, and faultless godhead, and by fixing their hearts upon it, from studying to discriminate [between spirit and matter]. But no censure on the theistic theory is to be found in any work, whereby [the scope of] that system might be restricted, as having devotion, etc., in view as its only end. And as regards such texts as the following: ‘There is no knowledge like the Sāṅkhya, no power like the Yoga; doubt not of this, the knowledge of the Sāṅkhya is considered to be the highest,’ they [are to be understood as] proving the superiority of the Sāṅkhya doctrine over other systems, not in respect of its atheism, but only of its discrimination [between different principles]. It is, moreover, established by the concurrence of Parāśara, and all other well instructed persons, that the theistic theory is that which represents the essential truth. Further, such texts as the following of the Parāśara Upapurāṇa, and other works, shew that the strength of the Brāhma-mīmāṃsā lies on the side of its theism, viz., ‘In the systems of Akṣhapāda (Gotama) and Kaṇāḍa, and in the Sāṅkhya and Yoga, that part which is opposed to the Veda should be rejected by all persons who regard the Veda as the sole authority. In the systems of Jaimini and Vyāsa (the Vedānta) there is no portion contrary to the Veda, since both these sages have attained to a perfect comprehension of its true meaning. In the same way it results from this text of the Mokṣha-dharma (a part of the

S'ānti-parvan of the Mahābhārata), viz. : 'Many systems of reasoning have been promulgated by different authors; [in these] whatever is established on grounds of reason, of scripture and of approved custom, is to be respected;' [from this text also, I say, it results] that the theory,—declared in the Brahma-mīmāṃsā, the Nyāya, the Vaiśeṣhika, etc., in consonance with the tradition of Parāśara and all other well-instructed men,—which asserts an Īśvara, is alone to be received, in consequence of its strength; and [the same thing follows] from the fact that in such passages as this of the Kaurma-purāṇa, etc., viz.—'Take refuge with that Maheśvara, that Brahma without beginning or end, whom the most eminent Yogins, and the Sāṅkhyas do not behold,'—Nārāyaṇa (Vishṇu) and others assert that the Sāṅkhyas are ignorant of Īśvara.

"Moreover, Īśvara is determined to be the principal subject of the Brahma-mīmāṃsā by the introductory statement, etc., of that system. If it were open to objection on that side [*i.e.* on the side of its principal subject], the entire system would be without authority. For it is a rule that 'the sense of a word is that which it is intended to denote.' Whereas the principal subjects of the Sāṅkhya are—(1) the grand object of human pursuit, and (2) the distinction between nature (*prakṛiti*) and spirit (*puruṣa*), which is the instrument of attaining that grand object. Thus this system does not lose its authority, even though it be erroneous in so far as it denies an Īśvara. For it is a rule that 'the sense of a word is that which it is intended to denote.' Hence, as the Sāṅkhya has a certain applicability of its own, it is weak only in so far as it denies an Īśvara.

"Nor can it be alleged that it is Īśvara only, and not the eternity of his existence, that is the principal subject of the Brahma-mīmāṃsā; since, through the disproof of the objection (*pūrva-pakṣa*) that the theistic theory 'is chargeable with the defect of rendering the Smṛiti inapplicable,'<sup>170</sup> it is ascertained that the assertion of an eternal Īśvara is the main object of the Brahma-mīmāṃsā. But as the word 'Brahma' is properly employed to denote the supreme Brahma, the first aphorism of the Brahma-mīmāṃsā does not run thus, 'Now follows the enquiry regarding the supreme Brahma;' [but thus, 'Now follows the

<sup>170</sup> The aphorism here referred to (Brahma Sūtras ii. 1, 1), with most of S'ankara's comment on it, has been already quoted above, pp. 185 ff.

enquiry regarding Brahma.'] Hence we are not to surmise that, as they [would otherwise] contradict the Sāṅkhya, the Brahma-mīmāṃsā and Yoga systems must aim at establishing [not an eternal Deity] but a [secondary] Īśvara, who is merely an effect. For this is disproved (1) by the series of Brahma Sūtras (ii. 2, 1 ff.) which affirm that 'an un-intelligent cause of the world cannot be inferred, as it is not conceivable that such a cause should frame anything,' and which would be rendered inconclusive by the assumption of the independent action of Prakṛiti; and (2) by the fact that the eternity of God is clearly understood from the Yoga aphorism [i. 26], viz. 'He is also the instructor of the ancients, as he is not circumscribed by time,' as well as from the commentary of Vyāsa thereon.<sup>171</sup> Hence, as the Sāṅkhya, arguing on its own special principles, and at the same time making a great display of ingenuity<sup>172</sup> and so forth, has in view a merely practical denial of an Īśvara, it does not contradict the Brahma-mīmāṃsā or the Yoga. The method of reasoning on special principles is referred to in the Sāstra. Thus it is said in the Vishṇu Purāṇa [i. 17, 54, Wilson, vol. ii. p. 44], 'These notions, Daityas, which I have described, are the guesses of persons who look on the Deity as distinct from themselves. Accepting them as partially correct, hear from me a summary (of transcendental truth).

“Or let it be [supposed] that even orthodox systems, with the view of preventing sinners from attaining knowledge, lay down doctrines which are partially opposed to the Veda; and that in those particular portions they are not authoritative. Still in their principal contents,

<sup>171</sup> I quote the commentary of Bhoja-rājā on this Sūtra, as given by Dr. Ballantyne (Aphorisms of the Yoga, part first, p. 32): *Pūrveṣhām | ādyānām Brahmādīnām api sa gurur upadeshtā yataḥ sa kālena nāvachchhidīyate anādītīvāt | teshām punar ādīmattīvād asti kālena avachchedaḥ* | “Of the ancients, that is, of the earliest [beings], Brahmā and the rest, he is the *guru*, i.e., the instructor, because He, as having no beginning, is not circumscribed by time; while they, on the other hand, having had a beginning, are circumscribed by time.”

<sup>172</sup> I am indebted to Professor Cowell for a satisfactory interpretation of the first of these two phrases, *abhyupagama-vāda* and *prauḍhi-vāda*, as well as for various other improvements in my translation of this passage. The phrase *abhyupagama-siddhānta* is rendered by Dr. Ballantyne “Implied dogma” (Nyāya aphorisms, i. 31, p. 30, as corrected in MS.). Professor Goldstücker *s.v.* renders it by “implied axiom.” In Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon the phrase *abhyupagama-vāda* is rendered “a discussion in a conciliatory spirit.” In regard to the sense of *prauḍhi-vāda*, see above, p. 172.

which are consonant to the Śruti and the Smṛiti, they possess authority. Accordingly, in the Padma-Purāṇa we find a censure passed even upon the several philosophical systems (*Darśanas*), with the exception of the Brahma (the Vedānta) and the Yoga. For in that work Īśvara (Mahādeva) says to Pārvatī, 'Listen, goddess, while I declare to you the Tāmasa works (the works characterised by *tamas*, or the quality of darkness) in order; works by the mere hearing\* of which even wise men become fallen. First of all, the Saiva systems, called Pāśupata, etc., were delivered by myself. Then the following were uttered by Brāhmins penetrated by my power, viz. the great Vaiśeshika system by Kaṇāda, and the Nyāya, and Sāṅkhya, by Gotama and Kapila respectively. Then the great system, the Pūrva-*mīmāṃsā*, was composed by the Brāhman Jaimini on Vedic subjects, but on atheistic principles. So too the abominable Chārvāka doctrine was declared by Dhishana,<sup>173</sup> while Vishṇu, in the form of Buddha, with a view to the destruction of the Daityas,<sup>174</sup> promulgated the false system of the Baudhas, who go about naked, or wear blue garments. I myself, goddess, assuming the form of a Brāhman, uttered in the Kali age, the false doctrine of Māyā [illusion, the more modern form of the Vedānta], which is covert Buddhism, which imputes a perverted and generally censured signification to the words of the Veda, and inculcates the abandonment of ceremonial works, and an inactivity consequent on such cessation. In that system I propound the identity of the supreme and the embodied soul, and show that the highest form of this Brahma is that in which he is devoid of the [three] qualities. It was I myself, goddess, by whom this great śāstra, which, composed of Vedic materials and inculcating the theory of illusion, is yet un-Vedic, was declared in the Kali age for the destruction of this entire universe.' We have entered into fuller explanations on this subject in the Brahma-mīmāṃsā-bhāṣya. There is, therefore, no want of authority, nor any contradiction, in any orthodox system, for they are all incapable of refutation in their own especial subjects, and are not mutually discrepant. Does, then, this system (the Sāṅkhya) lay down a theory based only on its own assumptions in respect of the multitude of souls also? It does not. For in the Brahma-mīmāṃsā also it is determined by such a kind of texts

\* <sup>173</sup> A name of Vṛihaspati, according to Wilson's dictionary.

<sup>174</sup> See Wilson's 'Vishṇu Purāṇa, pp. 334 ff.

as the following (Brahma Sūtras, ii. 3, 43), viz. ‘the embodied spirit is a portion<sup>175</sup> of the supreme soul, from the variety of appellations,’ that there is a multitude of embodied spirits. But it is denied by the Brahma-mīmāṃsā that the spirits<sup>o</sup>(*puruṣha*) asserted by the Sāṅkhya have the character of Soul; for it is determined by the Brahma Sūtra (iv. 1, 3), ‘they approach Him as one with themselves,’<sup>176</sup> that, on the ground of transcendental truth, the supreme Soul alone has the character of Soul. But, nevertheless, the Sāṅkhya is not unauthoritative; for as the knowledge of its own distinctness from other things, obtained by the embodied spirit in its worldly condition, is instrumental to final liberation, this system is not erroneous in the particular subject matter which it aims at propounding. In this way it results from the distinction of practical and real, that there is no contradiction between the two theories (made known by the Sruti and Smṛiti), of a multitude of souls, and the unity of all soul.

The view taken by Madhusūdana, as quoted above, and partially confirmed by Vijnāna Bhikshu, of the ultimate coincidence in principle of all the different schools of Hindu philosophy, however mutually hostile in appearance, seems, as I have remarked, to be that which is commonly entertained by modern Pandits. (See Dr. Ballantyne’s Synopsis of Science, advertisement, p. iv.) This system of compromise, however, is clearly a deviation from the older doctrine; and it practically abolishes the distinction in point of authority between the Vedas and the Smṛitis, Darśanas, etc. For if the Munis, authors of the six Darśanas, were omniscient and infallible, they must stand on the same level with the Vedas, which can be nothing more.

I return, however, from this digression regarding the hostility of Sankara to the adherents of the Sāṅkhya and other rationalistic schools,

<sup>175</sup> On this, however, Sankara (*in loco*) remarks as follows: *Jīvaḥ Īśvarasya aṁśo bhavitum arhati yathā’gner visphulingaḥ | aṁśaḥ iva aṁśaḥ | na hi niravayavasya mukhyo ’ṁśaḥ sambhavati | kasmāt punar niravayavatvāt sa eva na bhavati | “nānāvya-padeśāt |* ‘The embodied soul must be ‘a portion’ of Īśvara, as a spark is of fire (and not merely dependent upon him as a servant on his master). ‘A portion’ means, ‘as it were a portion;’ for nothing can be, in the proper sense, ‘a portion’ of that which has no parts. Why, then, as Īśvara has no parts, is not the embodied soul the very same as he? ‘From the variety of appellations, etc., etc.’

<sup>176</sup> The original Sūtra runs thus: *Ātmā iti tu upagachchhanti grāhayanti cha |* ‘They approach Him as one with themselves, and [certain texts] cause them to receive Him as one with themselves.’ This refers to certain texts which Sankara adduces from one of the Upanishads, apparently.

and the opinions of later authors concerning the founders of those several systems. The distinction drawn by the Indian commentators quoted in this section between the superhuman Veda and its human appendages, the Kalpa Sūtras, etc., as well as the other Smṛitis, is not borne out by the texts which I have cited above (pp. 8, 31) from the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka (= Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa), and Muṇḍaka Upanishads. By classing together the Vedic Sanhitās, and the other works enumerated in the same passages, the authors of both the Upanishads seem to place them all upon an equal footing; and the former of the two authorities speaks of them all as having proceeded from the breathing of the Great Being. If the one set of works are superhuman, it may fairly be argued that the others are so likewise. According to the Muṇḍaka Upanishad, neither of them (if we except only the Vedāntas or Upanishads) can be placed in the highest rank, as they equally inculcate a science which is only of secondary importance.

As, however, Śankara (who, no doubt, perceived that it would be inconsistent with modern theories to admit that any of the works usually classed under the head of Smṛiti had been really breathed forth by the Creator, and that such a directly divine origin could, on orthodox principles, be assigned only to writings coming under the designation of Śrutī), maintains in his comment on the text of the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad that the whole of the works there enumerated, excepting the Sanhitās of the four Vedas, are in reality portions of the Brāhmaṇas, it will be necessary to quote his remarks, which are as follows (Bibl. Ind. ii. 855 ff.):

. . . *Niśvasitam iva niśvasitam | yathā aprayatnenaiva puruṣa-niśvāso bhavaty evaṃ vā | are kiṃ tad niśvasitaṃ tato jātam ity uchyate | Yad ṛigvedo yajurvedaḥ sāmavedo 'tharvaṅgirasas̄ chaturvidham maṅtra-jātam | itihāsaḥ ity Ūrvaśī-Purūravasor saṃvādādīr "Ūrvaśī ha apsarāḥ" ityādi-brāhmaṇam eva | purāṇam "asad vā idam agre āsīd" ityādi | vidyā devajana-vidyā "vedaḥ so 'yam" ityādiḥ | upanishadaḥ "priyam ity etad upāsita" ityādyāḥ. | ślokāḥ "brāhmaṇa-prābhavāḥ mantrās tad ete ślokāḥ" ity ādayaḥ | sūtrāṇi vastu-sangraha-vākyaṇi vede yathā "ātmā ity eva upāsita" ityādīni | anuvyākhyānāṇi mantra-vicaranāṇi | vyākhyānāṇi arthavādāḥ | . . . . evam aṣṭavidham brāhmaṇam | evam mantra-brāhmaṇayor eva grahaṅgm | niyata-rachanāvato vidyamānasyaiva vedasya abhivyaktiḥ puruṣa-niśvāsa-vat | na cha puruṣa-buddhi-prayatna-pūr-*

*vakaḥ | ataḥ pramānam nirapekshaḥ eva svārthe | . . . tena vedasya apramānyam āśankate | tad-āśankā-nivṛitty-artham idam uktam | puruṣha-niśvāsa-vaḍ aprayatnotthitatvāḍ pramānaṁ vedo na yathā 'nyo granthaḥ iti |*

“‘His breathing’ means, ‘as it were, his breathing,’ or it denotes the absence of effort, as in the case of a man’s breathing. We are now told what that breathing was which was produced from him. It was the four classes of ‘mantras (hymns), those of the R̥ich, Yajush, Sāman, and Atharvāngirases (Ātharvaṇa); Itihāsa (or narrative), such as the dialogue between Urvaśī and Purūravas, viz. the passage in the Brāhmaṇa beginning ‘Urvaśī the Apsaras,’ etc. [S. P. Br. p. 855]; Purāṇa, such as, ‘This was originally non-existent,’ etc.; Vidyā (knowledge), the knowledge of the gods, as, ‘This is the Veda,’ etc.; Upanishads, such as, ‘Let him reverence this, as beloved,’ etc.; Ślokas, such as those here mentioned, ‘The mantras are the sources of the Brāhmaṇas, on which subject there are these ślokas,’ etc.; Sūtras (aphorisms) occurring in the Veda which condense the substance of doctrines, as, ‘Let him adore this as Soul,’ etc.; Anuvyākhyānas, or interpretations of the mantras; Vyākhyānas, or illustrative remarks.” The commentator adds alternative explanations of the two last terms, and then proceeds: “Here, therefore, eight sorts of texts occurring in the Brāhmaṇas are referred to; and consequently the passage before us embraces merely mantras and Brāhmaṇas. The manifestation of the Veda, which already existed in a fixed form of composition, is compared to the breathing of a person. The Veda was not the result of an effort of the intelligence of any person.<sup>177</sup> Consequently, as proof in respect of its own contents, it is independent of everything else.”

Sankara terminates his remarks on this passage by intimating, as one supposition, that the author of the Upanishad means, in the words

<sup>177</sup> Compare Sankara’s Comment on Brahma Sūtra, i. 1, 3, as quoted above in p. 106, where this same text of the Br̥ih. Ār. Up. is referred to. As the fact of Brahma being the author of the Vedas is there adduced to prove the transcendent character of his knowledge, and of his power, we must, apparently (unless we are to charge the great commentator with laying down inconsistent doctrines in the two passages), suppose that in the text before us he does not mean to deny that Brahma was conscious of the procession of the Vedas, etc., from himself, and cognizant of their sense (as the author of the Sāṅkhya aphorisms and his commentator seem to have understood, see above p. 135), but merely that his consciousness and cognizance were not the result of any effort on his part.

on which he comments, to remove a doubt regarding the authority of the Veda, arising from some words which had preceded, and therefore affirms that "the Veda is authoritative, because it was produced without any effort of will, like a man's breathing, and not in the same manner as other books." (See Sāṅkhya Sūtras, v. 50; above, p. 135.)

This attempt to explain the whole of the eight classes of works enumerated in the Upanishad as nothing else than parts of the Brāhmaṇas, cannot be regarded as altogether satisfactory, since some of them, such as the Sūtras, have always been referred to a distinct class of writings, which are regarded as uninspired (see Müller's *Anc. Ind. Lit.* pp. 75, 86); and the Itihāsas and Purāṇas had in all probability become a distinct class of writings at the period when the Upanishad was composed. And Sankara's explanation is rendered more improbable if we compare with this passage the other from the Muṇḍaka Upanishad, i. 1, 5, already quoted above (p. 31), where it is said, "The inferior science consists of the Ṛich, Yajush, Sāman, and Atharvan Vedas, accentuation (*śikshā*), ritual prescriptions (*kalpa*), grammar, commentary (*nirukta*), prosody (*chhandas*), and astronomy."<sup>178</sup> Here various appendages of the Vedas, which later writers expressly distinguish from the Vedas themselves, and distinctly declare to have no superhuman authority, are yet mentioned in the same category with the four Sanhitās, or collections of the hymns, as constituting the inferior science (in opposition to the knowledge of the supreme Spirit). From this we may reasonably infer that the author of the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad also, when he specifies the Sūtras and some of the other works

<sup>178</sup> I take the opportunity of introducing here Sāyana's remarks on this passage in his Commentary on the Rig-veda, vol. i., p. 33: *Atigambhīrasya vedasya artham avabodhayitum śikshādīni shaḍ-angāni pravṛittāni | ata eva teshām apara-vidyā-rūpatvam Muṇḍakopanishady Atharvanikāḥ āmananti | "dve vidye" ityādi | . . . sādhana-bhūta-dharma-jñāna-hetutvāt shaḍ-anga-sahitānām karma-kāṇḍānām apara-vidyātvaṁ | parama-puruṣārtha-bhūta-brahma-jñāna-hetutvād upanishadāṁ para-vidyātvaṁ |* "The Śikshā and other five appendages are intended to promote the comprehension of the sense of the very deep Veda. Hence, as the Muṇḍaka Upanishad, the followers of the Atharva-veda declare that these works belong to the class of inferior sciences, thus: 'There are two sciences,' etc. [see the entire passage in p. 31.] Since the sections of the Veda which relate to ceremonies [including, of course, the hymns], as well as the six appendages, lead to a knowledge of duty, which is an instrument [of something further], they are ranked as an inferior science. On the other hand the Upanishads, which conduct to a knowledge of Brahma, the supreme object of man, constitute the highest science."



which he enumerates, intended to speak of the Vedāngas or appendages of the Vedas, and perhaps the Smṛitis also, as being the breathing of Brahma. The works which in the passage from the Muṇḍaka are called Kalpa, are also commonly designated as the Kalpa Sūtras.

This conclusion is in some degree confirmed by referring to the passage from the Mahābhārata, Śānti-paryan, 7,660, which has been cited in p. 105, where it is said that the "great rishis, empowered by Svayambhū, obtained by devotion the Vedas, and the Itihāsas, which had disappeared at the end of the preceding Yuga." Whatever may be the sense of the word Itihāsa in a Vedic work, there can be no doubt that in the Mahābhārata, which is itself an Itihāsa, the word refers to that class of metrical histories. And in this text we see these Itihāsas placed on a footing of equality with the Vedas, and regarded as having been, like them, pre-existent and supernatural. See also the passage from the Chhāndogya Upanishad, vii. 1, 1 ff. (Bibl. Ind., vol. iii. pp. 473 ff.), quoted above (p. 33), where the Itihāsas and Purāṇas are spoken of as "the fifth Veda of the Vedas." The same title of "fifth Veda" is applied to them in the Bhāg. Pur. iii. 12, 39: *Itihāsa-purāṇāni pañchamaṅ vedam Īsvaraḥ | sarvebhyaḥ eva mukhebhyaḥ sasṛje sarva-darśanaḥ* | "The omniscient Īsvara (God) created from all his mouths the Itihāsas and Purāṇas, as a fifth Veda." See also the passages quoted above in pp. 27-30, from the Purāṇas and Mahābhārata, where the Itihāsas and Purāṇas themselves are placed on an equality with, if not in a higher rank, than the Vedas. The claims put forward by these popular works on their own behalf are not, indeed, recognized as valid by more critical and scientific authors, who, as we have seen at the beginning of this section, draw a distinct line of demarcation between the Vedas and all other works; but it would appear from the passages I have quoted from the Upanishads that at one time the Vedas were, at least, not so strictly discriminated from the other Śāstras as they afterwards were.

SECT. XII.—*Recapitulation of the Arguments urged in the Darśanas, and by Commentators, in support of the Authority of the Vedas, with some remarks on these reasonings.*

As in the preceding sections I have entered at some length into the arguments urged by the authors of the philosophical systems and their

commentators, in proof of the eternity and infallibility of the Vedas, it may be convenient to recapitulate the most important points in these reasonings; and I shall then add such observations as the consideration of them may suggest.

The grounds on which the apologists of the Vedas rest their authority are briefly these: First, it is urged that, like the sun, they shine by their own light, and evince an inherent power both of revealing their own perfection, and of elucidating all other things, past and future, great and small, near and remote (Sāyana, as quoted above, p. 62; Sankara on Brahma Sūtras i. 1, 3, above, p. 190). This is the view taken by the author of the Sāṅkhya Sūtras also, who, however, expressly denies that the Vedas originated from the conscious effort of any divine being (see p. 135). Second, it is asserted that the Veda could have had no (human) personal author, as no such composer is recollected (Mādhava, above, pp. 83 ff), and cannot therefore be suspected of any such imperfection as would arise from the fallibility of such an author (pp. 69 f.; Sāyana p. 106). Third, the Pūrva-mīmāṃsā adds to this that the words of which the Vedas are composed are eternal, and have an eternal connection (not an arbitrary relation depending upon the human will) with their meanings, and that therefore the Vedas are eternal, and consequently perfect and infallible<sup>179</sup> (Mīmāṃsā Sūtras and Commentary, above, pp. 71 ff., and Sarva-darśana-sangraha, above, pp. 91 f.) Fourth, the preceding view is either explained or modified by the commentator on the Taittiriya Sanhitā (above, p. 69), as well as by Sāyana in his Introduction to the Rig-veda (above, p. 106), who say that, like time, æther, etc., the Veda is only eternal in a qualified sense, *i.e.* during the continuance of the existing mundane system; and that in reality it sprang from Brahmā at the beginning of the creation. But this origin cannot according to their view affect the perfection of the Veda, which in consequence of the faultlessness of its author possesses a self-demonstrating authority. Fifth, although the Vedānta, too, speaks of the eternity of the Veda (above, p. 105), it also in the same passage makes mention of its self-dependent author; while in another passage (p. 106) it distinctly ascribes the origin of the Indian Scripture to Brahma as its source or

<sup>179</sup> In the Bṛihad Aranyaka Upanishad (p. 688 of Dr. Rœr's ed.) it is said: *Vā-chaiva samrād Brahma jñāyate vāg vai samrūt paramam Brahma* | "By speech, o monarch, Brāhma is known. Speech is the supreme Brahma."

cause. Brahma here must be taken as neuter, denoting the supreme Spirit, and not masculine, designating the personal creator, as under the fourth head.<sup>180</sup> Sixth, according to the Naiyāyika doctrine the authority of the Veda is established by the fact of its having emanated from competent persons who had an intuitive perception of duty, and whose competence is proved by their injunctions being attended with the desired results in all cases which come within the cognizance of our senses and experience (Nyāya Sūtras, above, pp. 116). Seventh, agreeably to the Vaiśeshika doctrine, and that of the Kusumāñjali, the infallibility of the Veda results from the omniscience of its author, who is God (Vaiśeshika Sūtras, Tarka Sangraha, and Kusumāñjali, pp. 119 ff., 127, and 129 ff., above).

These arguments, as the reader who has studied all their details will have noticed, are sometimes in direct opposition to each other in their leading principles; and they are not likely to seem convincing to any persons but the adherents of the schools from which they have severally emanated. The European student (unless he has some ulterior practical object in view) can only look upon these opinions as matters of historical interest, as illustrations of the course of religious thought among a highly acute and speculative people. But they may be expected to possess a greater importance in the eyes of any Indian readers into whose hands this book may fall; and as such readers may desire to learn in what light these arguments are regarded by Western scholars, I shall offer a few remarks on the subject.

In regard to the first ground in support of the infallibility of the Veda, viz. the evidence which radiates from itself, or its internal evidence, I may observe first, that this is a species of proof which can only be estimated by those who have made the Indian Scripture the object of careful study; and, second, that it must be judged by the reason and conscience of each individual student. This evidence may appear conclusive to men in a certain stage of their national and personal culture, and especially to those who have been accustomed from their infancy to regard the Vedas with a hereditary veneration; whilst to persons in a different state of mental progress, and living under different influences, it will appear perfectly futile. It is quite clear that, even in India itself, there existed in former ages multitudes of learned

<sup>180</sup> See note in p. 205, above.

and virtuous men who were unable to see the force of this argument, and who consequently rejected the authority of the Vedas. I allude of course to Buddha and his followers. And we have even found that some of those writers who are admitted to have been orthodox, such as the authors of the Upanishads, the Bhagavad Gītā, and the Bhāgavata Purāna, while they attach the highest value to the divine knowledge conveyed by the latest portions of the Veda, depreciate, if they do not actually despise, the hymns and the ceremonial worship connected with them.

In regard to the second argument, viz. that the Vedas must be of supernatural origin, and infallible authority, as they are not known to have had any human author, I observe as follows. The Greek historian, Herodotus, remarks (ii. 23) of a geographer of his own day who explained the annual inundations of the river Nile by supposing its stream to be derived from an imaginary ocean flowing round the earth, which no one had ever seen, that his opinion did not admit of confutation, because he carried the discussion back into the region of the unapparent (*ἐς ἀφανὲς τὸν μῦθον ἀνεπίκας οὐκ ἔχει ἔλεγχον*). The same might be said of the Indian speculators, who argue that the Veda must have had a supernatural origin, because it was never observed to have had a human author like other books;—that by thus removing the negative grounds on which they rest their case into the unknown depths of antiquity, they do their utmost to place themselves beyond the reach of direct refutation. But it is to be observed (1) that, even if it were to be admitted that no human authors of the Vedas were remembered in later ages, this would prove nothing more than their antiquity, and that it would still be incumbent on their apologists to show that this circumstance necessarily involved their supernatural character; and (2) that, in point of fact, Indian tradition does point to certain rishis or bards as the authors of the Vedic hymns. It is true, indeed, as has been already noticed (p. 85), that these rishis are said to have only “seen” the hymns, which (it is alleged) were eternally pre-existent, and that they were not their authors. But as tradition declares that the hymns were uttered by such and such rishis, how is it proved that the rishis to whom they are ascribed, or those, whoever they were, from whom they actually proceeded, were not uttering the mere productions of their own minds? The whole character of these compositions, and the circumstances under which, from internal evi-

dence, they appear to have arisen, are in harmony with the supposition that they were nothing more than the natural expression of the personal hopes and feelings of those ancient bards by whom they were first recited? In these songs the Aryan sages celebrated the praises of their ancestral gods (while at the same time they sought to conciliate their goodwill by a variety of oblations supposed to be acceptable to them), and besought of them all the blessings which men in general desire—health, wealth, long life, cattle, offspring, victory over their enemies, forgiveness of sin, and in some cases also celestial felicity.

The scope of these hymns is well summed up in the passage which I have already quoted (from Colebrooke's Misc. Essays i. 26) in the Second Volume, p. 206: *Arthepsavaḥ ṛishayo devatās chhandobhir abhyadhāvan* | “The rishis desiring [various] objects, hastened to the gods with metrical prayers.” The Nirukta, vii. 1, quoted in the same place, says: *Yat-kāmaḥ ṛishir yasyāñ devatāyām arthapatyam ichhan stutim prayunkte tad-devataḥ sa mantrō bhavati* | “Each particular hymn has for its deity the god to whom the rishi, seeking to obtain any object of desire which he longs for, addresses his prayer.” And in the sequel of the same passage from the Nirukta (vii. 3), the fact that the hymns express the different feelings or objects of the rishis is distinctly recognized:

*Paroksha-kritāḥ pratyaksha-kritās cha mantrāḥ bhūyishṭhāḥ alpaśaḥ ādhyātmikāḥ* | *athāpi stutir eva bhavati na āśīrvādaḥ* “*Indrasya nu vīryāni pravocham*” *iti yathā etasmin sūkte* | *athāpi āśīr eva na stutiḥ* “*suchakshāḥ aham akshibhyām bhūyāsañ svarchāḥ mukhena suśrut karnābhyām bhūyāsam*” *iti* | *tad etad bahulam ādhvaryave yājñeshu cha mantreshu* | *athāpi śapathābhiśāpau* | “*adya murīya*” *ityādi . . . athāpi kasyachid bhāṣasya āchikhyāsū* | “*na mṛityur āsīd*” *ityādi . . .* | *athāpi paridevanā kasmāchchid bhāvāt* | “*sudevo adya prapated anāvṛid*” *ityādi* | *athāpi nindā-prasañse* | “*kevalāgho bhavati kevalādi*” *ityādi* | *evam aksha-sūkte dyūta-nindā cha kṛishi-prasañsū cha* | *evam uchchāvachair abhiprāyair ṛishīnām mantra-dṛishṭayo bhavanti* |

“[Of the four kinds of verses specified in the preceding section], (a) those which address a god as absent, (b) those which address him as present, and (c) those which address the worshippers as present and the god as absent, are the most numerous, while those (d) which refer to the speaker himself are rare. It happens also that a god is

praised without any blessing being invoked, as in the hymn (R.V. i. 32). 'I declare the heroic deeds of Indra,' etc. Again, blessings are invoked without any praise being offered; as in the words, 'May I see well with my eyes, be resplendent in my face, and hear well with my ears.' This frequently occurs in the Ādhvaryāna (Yajur) Veda, and in the sacrificial formulæ. Then again we find oaths and curses, as in the words (R.V. vii. 104, 15), 'May I die to-day, if I am a Yātudhāna,' etc. (See Vol. I. p. 327.) Further, we observe the desire to describe some particular state of things, as in the verse (R.V. x. 129, 2), 'Death was not then, nor immortality,' etc. Then there is lamentation, arising out of a certain state of things, as in the verse (R.V. x. 95, 14), 'The beautiful god will disappear and never return,' etc. Again, we have blame and praise, as in the words (R.V. x. 117, 6), 'The man who eats alone, sins alone,' etc. So, too, in the hymn to dice (R.V. x. 34, 13) there is a censure upon dice, and a commendation of agriculture. Thus the objects for which the hymns were seen by the rishis were very various."<sup>181</sup>

It is to be observed, however, that although in this passage the author, Yāska, speaks of the various desires which the rishis expressed in different hymns, he nevertheless adheres to the idea which was recognized in his age, and in which he doubtless participated, that the rishis "saw" the hymns.

In the Nirukta, x. 42, the form of the metre in particular hymns is ascribed to the peculiar genius of the rishi Paruchhepa: <sup>182</sup> *Abhyāse*

<sup>181</sup> In Nirukta, iv. 6, allusion is made to a rishi Trita perceiving a particular hymn when he had been thrown into a well (*Tritam kūpe vahitam etat sūktam prati babhau*).

<sup>182</sup> A Paruchhepa is mentioned in the Taittirīya Sanhitā, ii. 5, 8, 3, as follows: *Nṛimedhas cha Paruchhepas cha brahmavādyaṃ avadetām* "asmin dā.āv ārdre 'gnīm janayāva yataro nau brahmīyān" iti | *Nṛimedho 'bhyavadat sa dhūmam ajanayat* | *Paruchhepo 'bhyavadat so'gnīm ajanayat* | "rishe" ity abravīd "yat samāvadvīdva kathā tvam agnim ajījano nāham" iti | "sāmidhenīnām eva ahañ varnāñ veda" ity abravīt | "yad ghrītavat padam anūchyate sa āsām varṇes 'tañ tvā sanīdhhir An-girah' ity āha sāmidheñīshv eva taj jyotir jañayati" | "Nṛimedha afd Paruchhepa had a discussion concerning sacred knowledge. They said, 'Let us kindle fire<sup>1</sup> in this moist wood, in order to see which of us has most sacred knowledge.'<sup>2</sup> Nṛimedha pronounced (a text); but produced only smoke. Paruchhepa pronounced (a text) and generated fire. Nṛimedha said, 'Rishi, since our knowledge is equal, how is it that thou hast generated fire, while I have not.' Paruchhepa replied, 'I know the lustre

<sup>1</sup> "Without friction."—Comm.

<sup>2</sup> "In regard to the Sāmidhenī formulas."—Comm.

*bhūyāñsam artham manyante yathā “aho darśanīya aho darśanīya” iti | tat Paruchkhepasya śīlam |* “Men consider that by repetition the sense is intensified, as in the words ‘o beautiful, o beautiful.’ This is Paruchhepa’s habit.”

In Nirukta, iii. 11, the rishi Kutsa is mentioned, as being thus described by the interpreter Aupamanyava: *Rishiḥ Kutso bhavati karttā stomānām ity Aupamānyavaḥ,* | “Kutsa is the name of a rishi, a maker of hymns,” according to Aupamanyava.”

So too the same work, x. 32, says of the rishi Hīranyastūpa that “he declared this hymn” (*Hiranyastūpaḥ rishir idaṁ sūktam provācha*).

I do not, as I have already intimated, adduce these passages of the Nirukta to show that the author regarded the hymns as the ordinary productions of the rishis’ own minds, for this would be at variance with the expression “seeing,” which he applies to the mental act by which they were produced. It appears also from the terms in which he speaks of the rishis in the passage (Nirukta, i. 20) quoted above, p. 120, where they are described as having an intuitive insight into duty, that he placed them on a far higher level than the inferior men of later ages. But it is clear from the instances I have adduced that Yāska recognizes the hymns as being applicable to the particular circumstances in which the rishis were placed, and as being the bonâ fide expression of their individual emotions and desires. (See also the passages from the Nirukta, ii. 10 and 24, quoted in Vol. I. pp. 269 and 338, which establish the same point.) But if this be true, the supposition that these hymns, *i.e.* hymns specifically suited to express the various feelings and wishes of all the different rishis, were eternally pre-existent, and were perceived by them at the precise conjunctures when they were required to give utterance to their several aims, is perfectly gratuitous and unnecessary. It might be asserted with nearly the same shew of reason that the entire stock of ordinary language employed by human beings to express their ideas had existed from eternity. <sup>183</sup>

of the Sāmidhenīs. The sentence which contains the word *ghṛita* (butter) forms their lustre. When any one repeats the words, “We augment thee, o Angiras (Agni) with fuel and with butter,” he then generates that lustre in the Sāmidhenīs.”

<sup>183</sup> A difficulty of the same nature as that here urged, viz. that men and objects which existed in time are mentioned in the Vedas which are yet said to be eternal, was felt by Jaimini, as we have already seen (pp. 77 ff.). I recur to this subject in p. 215.

In regard to the third argument for the authority of the Vedas, viz. that they are eternal, because the words of which they are composed are eternal, and because these words have an inherent and eternal (and not a merely conventional) connection with the significations or objects, or the species of objects, which they represent, it is to be observed that it is rejected both by the Nyāya and Sāṅkhya schools.<sup>184</sup> And I am unable (if I rightly comprehend this orthodox reasoning) to see how it proves the authority of the Vēda more than that of any other book. If the words of the Vēda are eternal, so must those of the Bauddha books be eternal, and consequently, if eternal pre-existence is a proof of perfection, the infallibility of these heretical works must be as much proved by this argument as the divine origin of the Vedas, whose pretensions they reject and oppose. Or if the meaning is that the words of the Veda alone are eternal and infallible, this is an assumption which requires proof. If their reception by great rishis be alleged as evidence, it must be remarked that the authority of these rishis is itself a point which cannot be admitted until it has been established.

In regard to the fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh of the arguments above stated, as put forward by the representatives of different schools or opinions in favour of the authority of the Veda, it may suffice to say that they for the most part assume the point to be proved, viz. that the Veda did proceed from an omniscient, or at least a competent, author. The only exception to this remark is to be found in the reasoning of the Nyāya and Sāṅkhya aphorisms that the infallibility of the Vedas is shown by the fact that the employment of the formulas or prescriptions of those parts of them which deal with temporal results, such as can be tested by experience, is always found to be efficacious; a premiss from which the conclusion is drawn that those other parts of the Veda, which relate to the unseen world, must be equally authoritative, as the authors of these different parts are the same persons. This argument cannot appear convincing to any but those who admit first, the invariable efficacy of all the formulas and prescriptions

See, however, the comment on Brahma Sūtra, i. 3, 30, regarding the perpetual recurrence of the same things in successive creations from, and to, all eternity, which will be quoted in the Appendix.

<sup>184</sup> See Fr. Ballantyne's remarks on this controversy, in pp. 186, 189, 191, and 192 of his "Christianity contrasted with Hindu Philosophy."



of the Veda which relate to such matters as can be tested by experience, and secondly, the identity of the authors of the parts of the Veda which contain these formulas and prescriptions with the authors of the other parts. It would be impossible to prove the former point, and next to impossible to prove the latter.

Against the eternity of the Vedas an objection has been raised, which Jaimini considers it necessary to notice, viz. that various historical personages are named in their pages, and that as these works could not have existed before the persons whose doings they record, they must have commenced to exist in time. This difficulty Jaimini attempts, as we have seen above (pp. 77 ff.), to meet by explaining away the names of the historical personages in question. Thus Babara Prāvahīni is said to be nothing else than an appellation of the wind, which is eternal. And this method, it is said, is to be applied in all similar cases. Another of the passages mentioned by an objector (see above, p. 79) as referring to non-eternal objects is R.V. iii. 53, 14, "What are the cows doing for thee among the Kikaṭas?" etc. The author of the Mīmāṃsā Sūtras would no doubt have attempted to show that by these Kikaṭas we are to understand some eternally pre-existing beings. But Yāska, the author of the Nirukta, who had not been instructed in any such subtleties, speaks of the Kikaṭas as a non-Āryan nation. (Vol. I. p. 342, and Vol. II. p. 362.) It is difficult to suppose that Jaimini—unless he was an enthusiast, and not the cool and acute reasoner he has commonly proved himself to be—could have seriously imagined that his rule of interpretation could ever be generally received or carried out.<sup>185</sup> The Brāhmaṇas evidently intend to represent the numerous occurrences which they narrate, as having actually taken place in time, and the actors in them as having been real historical personages. See, for instance, the legends from the Śatapatha and Aitareya Brāhmaṇas, the Taittiriya Saṁhitā, etc., quoted in the First

<sup>185</sup> In Sāyana's Introduction to R.V. vol. i. p. 23, it is said: *Manushya-vrittānta-pratipādakaṅ rīcho nārāśaṁśyaḥ* | "The Nārāśaṁśis are verses which set forth the histories of men." Yāska's definition is the same in substance, Nir. ix. 9. If these Nārāśaṁśis are, as Sāyana says, verses of the hymns (*richak*), and if according to his definition their object is to record events in human history, it follows that they must refer to non-eternal objects. See also the explanation of the words *nārāśaṁśena stomena* in Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā, 3, 53, given by the Commentator Mahidhara, which will be quoted further on.

Volume of this work, pp. 182, 192, 194, 328, 355, etc. And it is impossible to peruse the Vedic hymns without coming to the conclusion that they also record a multitude of events, which the writers believed to have been transacted by men on earth in former ages. (See the passages quoted from the Rig-veda in the First and Second Volumes of this work, passim; those, for example, in Vol. I. pp. 162 ff., 318 ff., 339 ff., and Vol. II. p. 208.)

We shall, no doubt, be assisted in arriving at a correct conclusion in regard to the real origin and character of the hymns of the Veda, if we enquire what opinion the rishis, by whom they were confessedly spoken, entertained of their own utterances; and this I propose to investigate in the following chapter.

## CHAPTER II.

THE RISHIS, AND THEIR OPINIONS IN REGARD TO THE ORIGIN  
OF THE VEDIC HYMNS.

I HAVE already shewn; in the preceding pages, as well as in the Second Volume of this work, that the hymns of the Rig-veda themselves supply us with numerous data by which we can judge of the circumstances to which they owed their origin, and of the manner in which they were created. We have seen that they were the natural product and expression of the particular state of society, of the peculiar religious conceptions, and of all those other influences, physical and moral, which prevailed at the period when they were composed, and acted upon the minds of their authors. (Vol. I. pp. 161 f., Vol. II. pp. 205 ff.; and above, pp. 211 f.) We find in them ideas, a language, a spirit, and a colouring totally different from those which characterize the religious writings of the Hindus of a later era. They frequently discover to us the simple germs from which the mythological conceptions current in subsequent ages were derived,—germs which in many cases were developed in so fanciful and extravagant a manner as to shew that the simplicity of ancient times had long since disappeared, to make way for a rank and wild luxuriance of imagination. They afford us very distinct indications of the locality in which they were composed (Vol. II. Pp. 354–372); they shew us the Aryan tribes living in a state of warfare with surrounding enemies (some of them, probably, alien in race and language), and gradually, as we may infer, forcing their way onward to the east and south (Vol. II. pp. 374 ff., 384 ff., 414 ff.); they supply us with numerous specimens of the particular sorts of prayers, viz. for protection and victory, which men so circumstanced would naturally address to the gods whom they worshipped, as well as of those

more common supplications which men in general offer up for the various blessings which constitute the sum of human welfare; and they bring before us as the objects of existing veneration (a class of deities (principally, if not exclusively, personifications of the elements, and of the powers either of nature, or of reason) who gradually lost their importance in the estimation of the later Indians, and made way for gods of a different description, invested with new attributes, and in many cases bearing new appellations.

These peculiarities of the hymns abundantly justify us in regarding them as the natural product and spontaneous representation of the ideas, feelings, and aspirations of the bards with whose names they are connected, or of other ancient authors, while the archaic forms of the dialect in which they are composed, and the references which are made to them, as pre-existent, in the liturgical works by which they are expounded and applied, leave no reason for doubt that they are the most ancient of all the Indian Scriptures.

We can also, as I have shewn, discover from the Vedic hymns themselves, that some of them were newer and others older, that they were the works of many successive generations of poets, that their composition probably extended over several centuries, and that in some places their authors represent them as being the productions of their own minds, while in other passages they appear to ascribe to their own words a certain divine character, or attribute their composition to some supernatural assistance. (Vol. I. p. 4, and II. pp. 206 ff., 219 ff.)

I shall now proceed to adduce further proofs from the hymns of the Rig-veda in support of these last mentioned positions, repeating, at the same time, for the sake of completeness, the texts which I have already cited in the Second Volume.

SECT. I.—*Passages from the Hymns of the Veda which distinguish between the Rishis as Ancient and Modern.*

The appellations or epithets applied by the authors of the hymns to themselves, and to the sages who in former times had instituted, as well as to their contemporaries who continued to conduct, the different rites of divine worship, are the following: *rishi, kavi, medhāvin, vipra,*

*vipāśhit*, *vedhas*, *muni*, etc. The rishis are defined in Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, to be persons "who, whether singly or in chorus, either on their own behalf or on behalf of others, invoked the gods in artificial language, and in song;" and the word is said to denote especially "the priestly bards who made this art their profession." The word *kavi* means "wise," or "a poet," and has ordinarily, the latter sense in modern Sanskrit. *Ṛjpra* means "wise," and, in later Sanskrit, a "Brāhman;" *medhāvī*, means "intelligent;" *vipāśhit* and *vedhas*, "wise" or "learned." *Muni* signifies in modern Sanskrit a "sage" or "devotee." It is not much used in the Rig-veda, but occurs in viii. 17, 13 (Vol. II. p. 397).

The following passages from the Rig-veda either expressly distinguish between contemporary rishis and those of a more ancient date, or, at any rate, make reference to the one or the other class. This recognition of a succession of rishis constitutes one of the historical elements in the Veda. It is an acknowledgment on the part of the rishis themselves that numerous persons had existed, and events occurred, anterior to their own age, and, consequently, in time; and it therefore refutes, by the testimony of the Veda itself, the assertion of Jaimini (above, pp. 77 ff.) that none but eternally pre-existing objects are mentioned in that book.

If, under this and other heads of my inquiry, I have cited a larger number of passages than might have appeared to be necessary, it has been done with the intention of showing that abundant evidence of my various positions can be adduced from all parts of the Hymn-collection.<sup>1</sup>

R. V. i. 1, 2. *Agniḥ pūrvebhir rishibhir idyo nūtanair uta | sa devān eha vakṣhati |*

"Agni, who is worthy to be celebrated by former, as well as modern rishis, will bring the gods hither."

The word *pūrvebhiḥ* is explained by Sāyaṇa thus: *Purātanair Bhṛigv-angiraḥ-prabhṛitibhir rishibhiḥ |* "By the ancient rishis, Bhṛigu, Angiras," etc.; and *nūtanaiḥ* is interpreted by *idānīntanair asmābhir api*, "by us of the present day also." See also Nirukta, vii. 16.

<sup>1</sup> I have to acknowledge the assistance kindly rendered to me by Prof. Aufrecht in the revision of my translation of the passages quoted in this and the following sections. As, however, the texts are mostly quite clear in so far as regards the points which they are adduced to prove, any inaccuracies with which I may be chargeable in other respects are of comparatively little importance.

i. 45, 3. *Priyamedha-vad Atri-vaj Jātavedo Virūpa-vat | Angiras-vad mahi-vrata Praskaṇvaśya śrudhi havam |* 4. *Mahi-kerqvaḥ ūtaye Priyamedhāḥ akūshata |*

“O (god) of great power, listen to the invocation of Praskaṇva, as thou didst listen to Priyamedha, Atri, Virūpa, and Angiras. 4. The Priyamedhas, skilled in singing praises, have invoked thee.”

Here Praskaṇva is referred to, in verse 3, as alive, whilst Priyamedha, Atri, Virūpa, and Angiras belong to the past. In verse 4 the descendants of Priyamedha are however alluded to as existing. The three other names are also, no doubt, those of families. In R.V. iii. 53, 7, (see Vol. I. p. 341) the Virūpas appear to be referred to; while in viii. 64, 6 (which will be quoted below), a Virūpa is addressed. In v. 22, 4, the Atris are spoken of.

i. 48, 14. *Ye chid hi tvām ṛishayaḥ pūrve ūtaye jūhūre ityādi |*

“The former rishis who invoked thee for succour,” etc.

i. 80, 16. *Yām Atharvā Manuś pitā Dadhyañ dhiyam atnata | tasmin brahmāni pūrvaṭhā Indre ukthā samagmata ityādi |*

“In the ceremony [or hymn] which Atharvan, or our father Manu, or Dadhyanch performed, the prayers and praises were, as of old, congregated in that Indra,” etc.

i. 118, 3 (repeated in iii. 58, 3). *Āhur viprāsaḥ Aśvinā purūjaḥ |*

“O Aśvins, the ancient sages say,” etc.

i. 131, 6. *Ā me asya vedhaso navāyaso manma śrudhi navāyasaḥ |*

“Hear the hymn of me this modern sage, of this modern [sage].”

i. 139, 9. *Dadhyañ ha me januśham pūrvo Angirāḥ Priyamedhaḥ Kaṇvo Atrir Manur vidur ityādi |*

“The ancient Dadhyanch, Angiras, Priyamedha, Kaṇva, Atri, and Manu know my birth.”

i. 175, 6. *Yathā pūrvebhyo jaritṛibhyaḥ Indra mayāḥ iva ūpo na tṛishyate babhūtha | Tām anu tvā nividañ johāvimi ityādi |*

“Indra, as thou hast been like a joy to former worshippers who praised thee, like waters to the thirsty, I invoke thee again and again with this hymn,” etc.

iv. 20, 5. *Vi yo rarapśe ṛishibhir navebhir vriksho na pakvaḥ sṛinyo na jetā | maryo na yoshām abhi manyamāno achhā vivakmi puruhūtam Indram |*

“Like a man desiring a woman, I call hither that Indra, invoked by

many, who, like a ripe tree, like a conqueror expert in arms,<sup>2</sup> has been celebrated by recent rishis."

iv. 50, 1. *Tam pratnāsah ṛiṣṭayo dīdhyānāḥ puro viprāḥ dadhire mandra-jīḥvam |*

"The ancient rishis, resplendent and sage, have placed in front of them [Bṛihaspati] with gladdening tongue."

v. 42, 6. . . . *Nā te pūrve Maghavan na aparāso na vīryaṁ nūtanāḥ kaśchana āpa |*

"Neither the ancients nor later men, nor any modern man, has attained to [conceived] thy prowess, o Maghavan."

x. 54, 3. *Ke u nu te mahimānāḥ samasya asmat pūrve ṛiṣayo antam āpuḥ | yad mātaraṁ cha pitaraṁ cha sākam ajanayathās tanvāḥ svāyāḥ |*

"Who among the rishis who were before us have attained to the end of all thy greatness? for thou didst at once produce from thy own body both the mother and the father (earth and heaven)."

vi. 19, 4. *Yathā chit pūrve jaritārah āsur anedyāḥ anavadyāḥ arishtāḥ |*

"As [Indra's] former worshippers were, [may we be] blameless, irreproachable, and unharmed."

vi. 21, 5. *Idā hi te vevishataḥ purājāḥ pratnāsah āsuh purukṛit sakhāyah | Ye madhyamāsah uta nūtanāsah utāvamasya puruhūta bodhi |*

"For now, o energetic god, men are thy worshippers, as the ancients born of old and the men of the middle and later ages have been thy friends. And, o much-invoked, think of the most recent of all."<sup>3</sup>

vi. 21, 1. *Sa tu śrudhi Indra nūtanasya brahmanyato vīra kārudhāyah |*

"Heroic Indra, supporting the poet, listen to the modern [bard] who wishes to celebrate thee."

vi. 22, 2. *Tam u naḥ pūrve pitaro navagvāḥ sapta viprāsah abhi vājayantah ityādi |*

"To Him (Indra) our ancient fathers, the seven Navagva sages, desiring food, (resorted) with their hymns," etc.

vi. 50, 15. *Evā napāto mama tasya dhībhir Bharadvājāḥ abhyarchanti arkaiḥ |*

"Thus do the Bharadvājas my, grandsons, adore thee with (my?) hymns and praises."

<sup>2</sup> Prof. Aufrecht thinks *śṛiṅyo na jetā* may perhaps mean, "like a winner of sickles (as a prize)."

<sup>3</sup> This verse is translated in Benfey's Glossary to the Sāma-veda, p. 76, col. i.

vii. 18, 1. *Tve ha yat pitarāś chid naḥ Indra viśvā vāmā jaritāro asan-*  
*vann ityādi |*

“Since, in thee, o Indra, even our fathers, thy worshippers, obtained all riches,” etc.

vii. 29, 4. *Uto gha te purushyāḥ id āsan yeshām pūrveshām āsrīnor*  
*rishīnām | adha ahaṁ tvā Maghavān johavīmi tvaṁ naḥ Indra asi prama-*  
*tiḥ piteva |*

“Even they were of mortal birth,—those former rishis whom thou didst hear. I invoke thee again and again, o Maghavan; thou art to us wise as a father.”

vii. 53, 1. . . . *Te chid hi pūrve kavayo grīnantaḥ puro mahī dadhire*  
*devaputre |*

“The ancient poets, celebrating their praises, have placed in the front these two great [beings, heaven and earth] of whom the gods are the children.”

vii. 76, 4. *Te id devānām sadhamādaḥ āsann ritāvānaḥ kavayaḥ pūr-*  
*vyāsaḥ | gūḥyaṁ jyotiḥ pitaro anuvindan satya-mantrāḥ ajanayann*  
*ushāsam |*

“They shared in the enjoyments of the gods, those ancient pious sages. Our fathers discovered the hidden light; with true hymns they caused the dawn to arise.”

vii. 91, 1. *Kuvid anga namasā ye vridhūsaḥ purā devāḥ anavadyāsaḥ*  
*āsan | te Vāyave Manave bādhitāya avāsayann<sup>4</sup> ushasāṁ sūryena |*

“Certainly those gods who were formerly magnified (or grew) by worship were altogether blameless. They lighted up the dawn and the sun to Vāyu (Āyu?) and the afflicted Manu.” (See Vol. I. p. 172.)

viii. 36, 7. *S'yāvāśvasya sūvatas tathā śrīnu yathā āsrīnor Atreḥ*  
*karmāni kṛinvataḥ |*

“Listen to S'yāvāśva pouring forth libations, in the same way as thou didst listen to Atri when he celebrated sacred rites.”<sup>5</sup>

ix. 96, 11. *Tvayā hi naḥ pitaraḥ Soma pūrve karmāni chakruḥ pava-*  
*māna dhīrāḥ |*

“For through thee, o pure Soma, our wise forefathers of old performed their sacred rites.”

<sup>4</sup> See Benfey's Glossary to Sāma-veda, under the word *vas* 2.

<sup>5</sup> Compare viii. 35, 19; and viii. 37, 7.



ix. 110, 7. *Tve Soma prathamāḥ vṛikta-varhisho mahe vājāya śravase dhīyaṁ dadhuḥ |*

“The former [priests] having strewed the sacred grass, offered up a hymn to thee, o Soma, for great strength and food.”

x. 14, 15 (=A.V. xviii. 2, 2). *Idaṁ namaḥ ṛishibhyaḥ pūrvajebhyaḥ pathikṛidbhyaḥ |*

“This reverence to the rishis, born of old, the ancients, who showed us the road.” (This verse may also be employed to prove that at the end of the Vedic period the rishis had become objects of veneration.)

x. 66, 14. *Vasishṭhāsaḥ pitrivad vācham akrata devān ilānāḥ ṛishi- vad | ityādi |*

“The Vasishṭhas, like the forefathers, like the rishis, have uttered their voice, worshipping the gods.”

x. 67, 1—will be quoted in a following section.

x. 96, 5. *Tvam aharyathāḥ upastutaḥ pūrvebhir Indra harikeśa yaj- vabhiḥ |*

“Indra, with golden hair, thou didst rejoice, when lauded by the ancient priests.”

x. 98, 9. *Tvām pūrve ṛishayo gīrbhir āyan tvām adhvareshu puruhūta viśve |*

“To thee the former rishis resorted with their hymns; to thee, thou much invoked, all men [resorted] at the sacrifices.”

Vājasaneyi Sanhitā, xviii. 52. *Imau te pakshāv ajarau patatrināu yā- bhyāṁ rakshāṁsi apahaṁsi Agne | tābhyām patema sukṛitām u lokāṁ yatra ṛishayo jagmuḥ prathamajāḥ purānāḥ |*

“But these undecaying, soaring pinions, with which, o Agni, thou slayest the Rakshases,—with them let us ascend to the world of the righteous, whither the earliest-born ancient rishis have gone.” (This verse is quoted in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, ix. 4, 4, 4, p. 739.)

The ancient rishis, as Sāyaṇa says in his note on R.V. i. 2, were Bhṛigu, Angiras, and others whom he does not name. In another place we find Atharvan, Manū, Dadhyanch, and others mentioned. I will not here enter into any particulars regarding these ancient sages. For some texts relating to Bhṛigu, I may refer to the First Volume of this work, pp. 443 ff.; and various passages relating to Manu will be found in the same volume pp. 162 ff., and in pp. 324–332 of the Second Volume. In regard to Atharvan, as well as Angiras, Professor Gold-

stücker's Sanskrit and English Dictionary, and in regard to the same personages and Dadhyanch, the Sanskrit and German Lexicon of Boehtlingk and Roth, may be consulted.

SECT. II.—*Passages from the Veda in which a distinction is drawn between the older and the more recent hymns.*

From the passages which I propose to bring forward in the present section, it will be found that the hymns which the rishis addressed to the gods are frequently spoken of as new, while others of ancient date are also sometimes mentioned. The rishis no doubt entertained the idea that the gods would be more highly gratified if their praises were celebrated in new, and perhaps more elaborate and beautiful compositions, than if older, and possibly ruder, prayers had been repeated.

The fact that a hymn is called new by its author, does not, however, by any means enable us to determine its age relatively to that of other hymns in the collection, for this epithet of new is, as we shall see, applied to numerous compositions throughout the Veda; and often when a hymn is not designated as new, it may, nevertheless, be in reality of recent date, compared with the others by which it is surrounded. When, however, any rishi characterizes his own effusion as new, we are of course necessarily led to conclude that he was acquainted with many older songs of the same kind. The relative ages of the different hymns can only be settled by means of internal evidence furnished by their dialect, style, metre, ideas, and general contents; and we may, no doubt, hope that much will by degrees be done by the researches of critical scholars towards such a chronological classification of the constituent portions of the Rig-veda.

The hymns, praises, or prayers uttered by the rishis are called by a great variety of names, such as *rich*, *sāman*, *yajush*, *brahman*, *arka*, *uktha*, *mantra*, *manmān*, *mati*, *manīshā*, *sumati*, *dhī*, *dhīti*, *dhishanā*, *stoma*, *stuti*, *sushṭuti*, *praśasti*, *śaṁsa*, *gir*, *vāch*, *vachas*, *nītha*, *nivid*, etc.

R.V. i. 12, 11. *Sā naḥ stavānaḥ ābhara gāyatrena navīyasā | rayiṁ vīravatīm iśam |*

“Glorified by our newest<sup>6</sup> hymn, do thou bring to us wealth and food with progeny.” (Sāyaṇa explains *navīyasā* by *pūrvakair apy asampūditenz gāyatrena* | “A hymn not formed even by former rishis.”)

<sup>6</sup> Compare Psalms, 33, 3; 40, 3; 96, 1; 98, 1; 144, 9; 149, 1; and Isaiah, 42, 10.

i. 27, 4. *Imam ū shu tvam asmākaṁ saniṁ gāyatraṁ navyāṁsam | Agne deveshu pravochaḥ |*

“Agni, thou hast announced [or do thou announce] among the gods this our offering, our newest hymn.”

i. 60, 3. *Taṁ navyasī hṛidaḥ ā jāyamānam asmat sukīrttir madhujihvaṁ aśyāḥ | yam ritvijō vṛijane mānushāsaḥ prayasvantaḥ āyavo jījananta |*

“May our newest laudation (springing) from (our) heart, reach him, the sweet-tongued, at his birth, (him) whom mortal priests the descendants of Manu, offering oblations, have generated in the ceremonial.” (See iii. 39, 1, in next page, and i. 171, 2 and ii. 35, 2, which will be quoted further on in the next section).

i. 89, 3. *Tān pūrvayā nivīdā hūmahe vayam Bhagam Mitram Aditiṁ Daksham Asridham ityādi |*

“We invoke with an ancient hymn Bhaga, Mitra, Aditi, Daksha, Asridh [or the friendly],” etc. (*Pūrvakālinayā | nityayā | nivīdā | vedātmikayā vāchā |* “With an ancient—eternal, hymn—a Vedic text.”—Sāyaṇa.)

i. 96, 2. *Sa pūrvayā nivīdā kavyatā Āyor imāḥ prajāḥ ajanayad manūnām |*

“Through the ancient hymn, the poetic work, of Āyu he (Agni) generated these children of men.”<sup>7</sup>

i. 130, 10. *Sa no navyebhir vṛisha-karman ukthais purāṁ dartaḥ pāyubhiḥ pāhi śagmaiḥ |*

“Through our new hymns, do thou, vigorous in action, destroyer of cities, sustain us with invigorating blessings.”

i. 143, 1. *Pra tavyasiṁ navyasiṁ dhitiṁ Agnaye vācho matiṁ sahasaḥ sūnave bharaḥ |*

“I bring to Agni, the son of strength, a new and energetic hymn, a production of thought uttered by the voice (*vāchāḥ*).”

ii. 17, 1. *Tad asmaḥ navyam Angiras-vad archata ityādi |*

“Utter to him [Indra] that new [hymn] like Angiras.” (“New, *i.e.* never before seen among other people” *anyeshv adṛiṣṭa-pūrvam*—Sāyaṇa.)

ii. 18, 3. *Harī nu kaṁ rathe Indrasya yojam āyai sūktena vachasā navena | mo shu tvām atra bahavo hi viprāḥ nī ṛīraman yajarūnāso anye |*

<sup>7</sup> See the Aitareya Brūhmaṇa, p. 143 of Prof. Haug’s translation; and Vol. I. p. 180.

“With this new and well-expressed hymn I have yoked<sup>8</sup> the steeds in Indra’s car, in order that he may come hither. Let not the other wise sacrificers, who are numerous, stop thee (from coming to me).”

ii. 24, 1. *Sa imām aviddhi prabhṛitiṁ yaḥ śishe | ayā viśhema navyā mahā girā |*

“Do thou who rulest receive this, our offering [of praise]: let us worship thee with this new and grand song.”

iii. 1, 20. *Etā te Agne janimā śanāni pra pūrvyāya nūtanāni vocham |*  
 “These ancient [and these] new productions I have uttered to thee, Agni, who art ancient.” (Comp. R.V. viii. 84, 5, in the next section.)

iii. 32, 13. *Yaḥ stomebhir vāvṛidhe pūrvyebhir yo madhyamebhir uta nūtanebhik |*

“[Indra] who has grown through (or been magnified by) ancient, intermediate, and modern hymns.”

iii. 39, 1. *Indram matir hṛidaḥ ā vachyamānā achhā patiṁ stomataśtā jigāti | ā jāgrivir vidathe śasyamānā Indra yat te jāyate viddhi tasya |* 2. *Divās chid ā pūrvyā jāyamānā vi jāgrivir vidathe śasyamānā | bhadra vastrāni arjunā vasānā sā iyam asme sanajā pitryā dhik |*

“1. The vigilant hymn, formed of praise, and uttered from the heart, proceeds to Indra the lord, when chaunted at the sacrifice: be cognizant, Indra, of this [praise] which is produced for thee. 2. Produced even before the daylight, vigilant, chaunted at the sacrifice, clothed in beautiful and radiant garments,—this is our ancient ancestral hymn.” (Pitryā is rendered by Sāyana as *pitri-kramāgatā*, “received by succession from our fathers.”)

iii. 62, 7. *Iyaṁ te Pūshann āghṛiṇe sushtutir deva navyasī | asmābhis tubhyaṁ śasyate |*

“Divine and glowing Pūshan, this new laudation is recited by us to thee.”

v. 42, 13. *Pra sū mahe susaranāya medhāṁ giram bhare navyasīm jāyamānām |*

“I present to the mighty protector a mental production, a new utterance [now] springing up.”

<sup>8</sup> Compare the expressions *vacho-yujā harī*, “brown horses yoked by the hymn (R.V. viii. 45, 39; viii. 87, 9); *brahma-yuj*, “yoked by prayer” (i. 177, 2; iii. 35, 4; viii. 1, 24; viii. 2, 27; vii. 17, 2); and *mano-yuj*, “yoked by the mind, or will” (i. 14, 6; i. 51, 10; iv. 48, 4; v. 75, 6; viii. 5, 2).

v. 55, 8. *Yat pūrvyam Maruto yach cha nūtanāṃ yad udyate Vasavo yach cha śasyate | viśvasya tasya bhavatha navedasah |*

“Be cognizant of all that is ancient, Maruts, and of all that is modern, of all that is spoken, Vasus, and of all that is recited.”

vi. 17, 13. . . . *Suvīraṃ tvā svāyudhaṃ swajraṃ ā brahma navyam avase vavrityāt |*

“May the new prayer impel thee, the heroic, well-accoutred, the loud-thundering, to succour us.” (“New, *i.e.* never made before by others, prayer, *i.e.* the hymn made by us” *Nātanam anyair akṛita-pūrvam | brahma asmābhiḥ kṛitaṃ stotram—Sāyaṇa.*)

vi. 22, 7. *Taṃ vo dhīyā navyasyā śaviṣṭham pratnam pratna-vat paritaṃsayadhyaḥ |*

“I seek, like the ancients, to stimulate thee, the ancient, with a new hymn.”

vi. 34, 1. *Sam cha tve jagmur giraḥ Indra pūrvīr vi cha tvad yanti vibhvo manishāḥ | purā nūnaṃ cha stutayaḥ ṛishinām paspridhre Indre adhi ukthārkaḥ |*

“Many songs, Indra, are collected in thee; numerous thoughts issue forth from thee; both before and now the praises, texts and hymns of rishis have hastened emulously to Indra.”

vi. 44, 13. *Yaḥ pūrvyābhir uta nūtanābhir gīrbhir vāvridhe grīnatām ṛishinām |*

“He (Indra) who grew through the ancient and modern hymns of lauding rishis.” (See R.V. iii. 32, 13, above p. 223.)

vi. 48, 11. *Ā sakhāyaḥ subardughāṃ dhenum ajādhvam upa navyasā vachaḥ |<sup>9</sup>*

“Friends, drive hither the milch cow with a new hymn.”

vi. 49, 1. *Stushe janaṃ svrataṃ navyasībhir gīrbhir Mitrāvarunā sumnayantā |*

“With new praises I celebrate the righteous race, with Mitra and Varuna, the beneficent,” (“The well-acting race, *i.e.* the divine race, the company of the gods,” *sukarmānām janaṃ dāivyaṃ janaṃ deva-sangham—Sāyaṇa.*)

vi. 50, 6. *Abhi tyāṃ vīraṃ gīrvanasam archa Indram brahmaṇā jaritar navena |*

“Sing, o worshipper, with a new hymn, to the heroic Indra, who delights in praise.”

<sup>9</sup> Compare the words *ni Agne navyasā vachas tanūshu śaṃsam esham*, viii. 39, 2.

vi. 62, 4. *Tū navyaso jaramānasya manma upa bhūshato yuyujāna-sapti ityādi* | 5. *Tū valgū dasrū puruśākatamā pratnā navyasā vachasā vivāse* |

“4. These (Asvins), with yoked horses, approach the hymn of their new worshipper. . . . 5. I adore with a new hymn these brilliant, strong, most mighty, and ancient“(gods).”

vii. 35, 14, will be quoted in the next section.

vii. 53, 2. *Pra pūrvaje pitarā navyasābhir gīrābhiḥ kṛinudhvasi sadane ritasya ityādi* |

“In the place of sacrifice propitiate with new hymns the ancient, the parents” (*i.e.* Heaven and Earth), etc.

vii. 56, 23. *Bhūri chakra Marutaḥ pitryāni vikhāni yā vaḥ śasyante purā chit* |

“Ye have done great things, o Maruts, when our fathers’ hymns were recited of old in your honour.”

vii. 59, 4. . . . *abhi vaḥ āvartt sumatir navīyasī*<sup>10</sup> *tūyañ yāta pipīshavaḥ* |

“May the new hymn turn you hither; come quickly, desirous to drink.”

vii. 61, 6. . . . *Pra vām manmāni ṛichase navāni kṛitāni brahma jujushann imāni* |

“May the new hymns made to praise you, may these prayers gratify you.”

vii. 93, 1. *S'uchiṃ nu stomañ nava-jātam adya Indrāgnī Vṛittra-hanā jushetham* | *ubhā hi vām suhavā johavīmi ityādi* |

“Indra and Agni, slayers of Vṛittra, receive with favour the pure hymn newly produced to-day. For again and again do I invoke you who lend a willing ear,” etc.

viii. 5, 24. *Tābhir āyātam ūtibhir navyasābhiḥ suśastibhiḥ yad vām vṛishanvasū huve* |

“Come with those same succours, since I invoke you, bountiful [deities], with new praises.” (The epithet *navyasābhiḥ* in this text might possibly be construed with the word *ūtibhiḥ*, “aids.”)

viii. 6, 11. *Aham pratnena manmanē girāḥ śumbhāmi Kanva-vat* | *yena Indrah śushmam id dadhe* |

<sup>10</sup> The same words, *sumatir navīyasī*, occur in viii. 92, 9, where they may not have the same sense as here.

“I decorate my praises with an ancient hymn, after the manner of Kaṇva, whereby Indra put on strength.”

viii. 6, 43. *Imām su pūrvyām dhiyam madhor gṛītasya pipyushīm  
Kaṇvāḥ ukthēna vavridhūḥ |*

“The Kaṇvas with their praise have augmented this ancient hymn, replenished with sweet butter.”

viii. 12, 10. *Iyāñ te ritvīyāvati dhītir eti navīyasī saparyanti ityādi |*

“This new and solemn hymn advances to honour thee,” etc.

viii. 20, 19. *Yūnaḥ ū su navishṭhayā vṛishṇaḥ pāvakān abhi Sobhare  
girā | gāya ityādi |*

“Sing, o Sobhari, with a new hymn to these youthful, vigorous, and brilliant (gods).”

viii. 23, 14. *S'rusṭī Agne navasya me stomasya vīra viśpate vi mā-  
yinas tapushā rakshaso daha |*

“Heroic Agni, lord of the people, on hearing my new hymn, burn up with thy heat the deluding Rakshases.”

viii. 25, 24. . . . *Kasāvantā viprā navishṭhayā matī | maho vājīnāv  
arvantā sachā asanam |*

“I have celebrated at the same time with a new hymn, these two sage and mighty [princes], strong, swift, and carrying whips.”

viii. 39, 6. *Agnir veda marttānām apīchyam . . . . Agnir dvārā vyūr-  
nute svāhuto navīyasā |*

“Agni knows the secrets of mortals . . . . Agni, invoked by a new [hymn], opens the doors.”

viii. 40, 12. *Eva Indrāgnībhyām pitṛi-vad navīyo Māndhātṛi-vad  
Angiras-vad avāchi ityādi |*

“Thus has a new [hymn] been uttered to Indra and Agni after the manner of our fathers, and of Māndhātṛi, and of Angiras.”

viii. 41, 2. *Tam ū shu samanā girā pitṛīnām cha manmabhiḥ Nābhā-  
kasya praśastibhir yaḥ sindhūnām upa udaye saptā-śvasā sa madhyamaḥ |*

“[Worship] him (Vāruṇa) continually with a song, with the hymns of the fathers,<sup>11</sup> and with the praises of Nābhāka. He who dwells at the

<sup>11</sup> The expression here employed, *pitṛīnām cha manmabhiḥ*, occurs also in R.V. x. 57, 3 (=Vāj. S. 3, 53): *Mano nu ā kuvāmahe nārāśamsena somena pitṛīnām cha manmabhiḥ |* “We summon his soul with Soma, accompanied by human praises, and with the hymns of the fathers.” The Vājasaneyi Sanhitā reads *stomēna*, “hymn,” instead of *somena*. The commentator there explains *nārāśamsena stomēna* as “a hymn

birth-place of the streams, the lord of the seven sisters, abides in the centre." (This verse is quoted in the Nirukta x. 5. Nābhāka is said by Yāska to have been a rishi (*rishir Nābhāko babhūva*). A translation of the passage is given in Roth's Illustrations of the Nir. p. 135, where reference is also made to two verses of the preceding hymn (viii. 40, 4, 5), in which Nābhāka (the ancestor of Nābhāka) is mentioned thus: (verse 4) *Abhyarcha Nābhāka-vad Indrāgnī yajasa girā . . .* (verse 5) *Pra brahmāni Nābhāka-vad Indrāgnibhyām irajyate* | "Worship Indra and Agni with sacrifice and hymn, like Nābhāka . . . Like Nābhāka, direct your prayers to Indra and Agni." In explanation of the seven sisters, Roth refers to Nir. v. 27 (R.V. viii. 58, 12) where the seven rivers are mentioned. See his Illustrations of Nir. pp. 70, 71.

viii. 44, 12. *Agniḥ pratnena manmanā śumbhānas tanvaṁ svām kavīḥ vipreṇa vavridhe* |

"The wise Agni, illuminating his own body at [the sound of] the sage and ancient hymn, has become augmented."

viii. 55, 11. *Vayaṁ gha te apūrvyā Indra brahmāni vṛittrahan | purutamāsaḥ puruhūta vajrivo bhṛitīm na pra bharāmasi* |

"Indra, slayer of Vṛittra, thunderer, invoked of many, we [thy] numerous [worshippers] bring to thee, as thy hire, hymns which never before existed."

viii. 63, 7, 8. *Iyaṁ te navyasī matir Agne adhāyi asmad ā mandra sujāta sukrato amūra dasma atithe | sū te Agne śantamā chanishṭhā bhavatu priyā tayā vardhasva sushṭutah* |

"O Agni, joyful, well-born, strong, unerring, and wondrous guest, this new hymn has been offered to (or, made for) thee by us; may it be dear to thee, agreeable and pleasant: lauded by it, do thou increase."

viii. 65, 5, 6. . . . *Indraṁ gīrbhir havāmahe | Indram pratnena manmanā marutvantam havāmahe ityādi* | 12. (=S.V. ii. 340.) *Vācham ashṭapadīm aham nava-sraktim ṛita-sprīṣam | Indrāḥ pari tanvam mame* |

"5. We invoke Indra with songs; we invoke Indra, attended by the Maruts, with an ancient hymn. . . 12. I compose for the sake of

in which men are praised," and *pitṛiṇām cha manmabhiḥ*, as hymns "in which the fathers are revered" (*pitāro yaīḥ stotrair manyante te manmānas tair ityādi*). See Prof. Max Müller's translation of this hymn in the Journal of Roy. As. Soc. for 1866, pp. 449 and 458.



Indra a hymn of eight feet and nine lines, abounding in sacred truth." (This verse is translated and explained by Professor Benfey, *Sāma-veda*, p. 255.)

ix. 9, 8. *Nu navyase navīyase sūktāya sādḥaya pathaḥ | pratna-vad rochaya ruḥaḥ |*

"Prepare (o Soma) the paths for our newest, most recent, hymn; and, as of old, cause the lights to shine."

ix. 42, 2. *Eska prātneṇā manmanā devo devebhyah pari | dhārayā pavate sūtaḥ |*

"This god, poured forth to the gods, with an ancient hymn, purifies with his stream."

ix. 91, 5. *Sa pratna-vad navyase viśva-vāra sūktāya pathaḥ kṛiṇuḥi prāchaḥ ityādi |*

"O god, who possessest all good, make, as of old, forward paths for this new hymn."

ix. 99, 4 (= S.V. ii. 983). *Taṁ gāthayā purāṇyā punānam abhi anūshata | uto kṛipanta dhītayo devānām nāma bibhratīḥ |*

"They praised the pure god with an ancient song; and hymns embracing the names of the gods have supplicated him." (Benfey translates the last clause differently.)

x. 4, 6. . . . *Iyaṁ te Agne navyasī manīshā yukshva ratham na śuchayadbhir angaiḥ |*

"This is for thee, Agni, a new hymn: yoke thy car as it were with shining parts."

x. 89, 3. *Samānam asmai anapāvṛiḍ archa kshmayā divo asamam brahma navyam ityādi |*

"Sing (to Indra) without ceasing a new hymn, worthy of him, and unequalled in earth or heaven."

x. 91, 13. *Imām pratnāya sushṭutiṁ navīyasīm voḥeyam asmai usate śṛiṇotu naḥ |*

"I will address to this ancient [deity] my new praises, which he desires; may he listen to us."

x. 96, 11. . . . *Navyam navyam haryasi manmā nu priyam ityādi |*

"Thou delightest in ever new hymns, which are dear to thee," etc.

x. 160, 5. *Aśvāyanto gavyanto vājayanto havāmahe tvā upa gantavai u | ābhūshantas te sumatau navāyām vāyam Indra tvā śunām hūvema |*

"Desiring horses, cattle, and wealth, we invoke thee to approach us."

Paying homage to thee in a new hymn, may we, o Indra, invoke thee auspiciously."

SECT. III.—*Passages of the Rig-veda, in which the rishis describe themselves as the composers of the hymns.*

In this section I propose to quote, first of all, those passages in which the rishis distinctly speak of themselves as the authors of the hymns, and express no consciousness whatever of deriving assistance or inspiration from any supernatural source. I shall then adduce some further texts in which, though nothing is directly stated regarding the composition of the hymns, there is at the same time nothing which would lead the reader to imagine that the rishis looked upon them as anything else than the offspring of their own minds.

I shall arrange the quotations in which the rishis distinctly claim the authorship, according to the particular verb which is employed to express this idea. These verbs are (1) *kri*, "to make," (2) *taṣṣh* (= the Greek *τεκταίνωμαι*), "to fabricate," and (3) *jan*, "to beget, generate, or produce," with others which are less explicit.

I. I adduce first the passages in which (1) the verb *kri*, "to make," is applied to the composition of the hymns. (Compare R.V. vii. 61, 6, already quoted in the last section.)

R.V. i. 20, 1. *Ayaṁ devāya janmane stomo viprebhir āsayā*<sup>12</sup> | *akāri ratna-dhātamaḥ* |

"This hymn, conferring wealth, has been *made* to the divine race, by the sages, with their mouth [or in presence of the gods]."

i. 31, 18. *Etena Agne brahmaṇā vāvriḍhasva śakti vā yat te chakrīma vidā vā* |

"Grow, o Agni, by this prayer which we have *made* to thee according to our power, or our knowledge."

i. 47, 2. . . . *Kaṇvāso vām brahma kriṇvanti adhvaṛe teshāṁ su śrīṇutaṁ havam* |

"The *Kaṇvas* make a prayer to you : hear well their invocation."

i. 61, 16. *Evā te hariyojanā suvṛikti Indra brahmāṇi Gotamāsaḥ akran* |

"Thus, o Indra, yoker of steeds, have the Gotamas *made* hymns for thee efficaciously."

<sup>12</sup> See the note on vi. 32, 1, below.

i. 117, 25. *Etāni vām Aśvinā vīryāni pra pūrvyāni āyavaḥ avochan | brahma kṛṇvanto 13 vṛishanā yuvabhyām suvīrāso vidatham ā vadema |*

“These, your ancient exploits, o Aśvins, men have declared. Let us, who are strong in bold men, making a hymn for you, o vigorous gods, utter our offering of praise.”

i. 184, 5. *Eshā vām stoma Aśvināv akāri mānebhīr maghavānā svrikti |*  
“This hymn has efficaciously been made to you, o opulent Aśvins, by the Mānas. (Comp. i. 169, 8; 171; 5; 182, 8; 184, 3.)

ii. 39, 8. *Etāni vām Aśvinā vardhanāni brahma stomaṁ Gṛitsama-dāsaḥ akran |*

“These magnifying prayers, [this] hymn, o Aśvins, the Gṛitsamadas have made for you.”

iii. 30, 20. *Svavyavo matibhis tubhyaṁ viprah Indrāya vāhaḥ Kuśīkāsah akran |*

“Aspiring to heaven, the sage Kuśikas have made a hymn with praises to thee, o Indra.” (The word *vāhaḥ* is stated by Sāyaṇa to be = *stotra*, “a hymn.”)

iv. 6, 11. *Akāri brahma samidhāna tubhyaṁ ityādi |*

“O kindled [Agni], a prayer has been made to thee.”

iv. 16, 20. *Eved Indrāya vṛishabhāya vṛishne brahma akarma Bhṛig-yavo na ratham | . . . 21. Akāri te harivo brahma navyaṁ dhiyā syāma rathyaḥ sadāsāḥ |*

“Thus have we made a prayer for Indra, the productive, the vigorous, as the Bhṛigus [fashioned] a car. . . . 21. A new prayer has been made for thee, o lord of steeds. May we, through our hymn (or rite), become possessed of chariots and perpetual wealth.”

vi. 52, 2. *Ati vā yo maruto manyate na brahma vā yaḥ kriyamānaṁ nīnitsāt | tapūmshi tasmai vṛijināni santu brahma-dvisham abhi taṁ śochatu dyauḥ |*

“Whoever, o Maruts, regards himself as superior to us, or reviles the prayer which is being made, may burning injuries be his lot; may the sky scorch the enemy of prayer.”<sup>14</sup>

<sup>13</sup> The reader will find Prof. Haug’s opinion of the sense of this phrase in p. 11 f. of his German dissertation “on the original signification of the word *brahma*,” of which the author has been kind enough to send me a copy, which has reached me as this sheet is passing through the press. Prof. Haug mentions R.V. i. 88, 4; vii. 103, 8, as passages (additional to those I have given) in which the expression occurs.

<sup>14</sup> Translated by Prof. Haug in the Dissertation above referred to, p. 6.

vii. 35, 14. *Ādityāḥ Rudrāḥ Vasavo jushanta* (the Atharva-veda has *jushantām*) *idam brahma kriyamāṇāṁ navīyaḥ | śrinvantu no divyāḥ pāṛthivāso gojātāḥ ityādi |*

“The Ādityas, Rudras, and Vasus receive with pleasure this new prayer which is being made. May the gods of the air, the earth, and the sky hear us.”

vii. 37, 4. *Vayaṁ nu te dāśvāṁsaḥ syāma brahma-kṛinvantāḥ ityādi |*

“Let us offer oblations to thee, making prayers,” etc.

vii. 97, 9. *Iyaṁ vām Brahmanaspate swriktir'orahma Indrāya vajrine akāri |*

“Brahmanaspati, this efficacious hymn, [this] prayer has been made for thee, and for Indra, the thunderer.”

viii. 51, 4. *Āyāhi kṛinavāma te Indra brahmāni varddhanā ityādi |*

“Come, Indra, let us make prayers, which magnify thee,” etc.

viii. 79, 3. *Brahma te Indra girvanāḥ kriyante anatiḍbhutā | imā jushasva haryaśva yojanā yā te amanmahi |*

“Unequaled prayers are made for thee Indra, who lovest hymns. Receive favourably, lord of the brown steeds, those which we have thought out for thee, to yoke thy horses.”

x. 54, 6. . . . *Adha priyam śūsham Indrāya manma brahmakṛito<sup>15</sup> Vṛihadukthād avāchi |*

“. . . An acceptable and powerful hymn has been uttered to Indra by Vṛihaduktha, maker of prayers.”<sup>16</sup>

x. 101, 2. *Mandrā kṛinudhvaṁ dhiyaḥ ā tanudhvaṁ nāvam aritra-paranīṁ kṛinudhvam |*

“Make pleasant (hymns), prepare prayers, make a ship propelled by oars.”

It is possible that in many of these passages the verb *kṛi* may have merely the signification which the word *make* has in English when we speak of “making supplications,” etc., in which case it of course means to offer up, rather than to compose. But this cannot be the case in such passages as R.V. iv. 16, 20 (p. 233), where the rishi speaks of making

<sup>15</sup> Compare *ṛishayo mantṛakṛito manāshināḥ* in Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, ii. 8, 8, 5; and R.V. ix. 114, 2: *Ṛiṣhe mantra-kṛitūṁ stomaiḥ Kaśyapodvārdhayam girāḥ | somaṁ namasya rājanāṁ yo jajne vīrudhām patih |* “Ṛishi Kaśyapa, augmenting thy words with the praises of the makers of hymns, reverence King Soma, who was born the lord of plants.”

<sup>16</sup> Prof. Häug thinks the word *brahma-kṛit* here refers to hymns, and mentions other passages in which it occurs: see p. 12 of the Dissertation above referred to.

the hymn as the Bhṛigus made a chariot.<sup>17</sup> And such an interpretation would be altogether inadmissible in the case of the texts which I next proceed to cite.

II. Passages in which the word *taksh*, "to fashion, or fabricate," is applied to the composition of the hymns.

i. 62, 13. *Savāyate Gotamaḥ Indra navyam atakshad brahma hariyo-janāya ityādi* |

"Nōdhas, descendant of Gotama, *fashioned* this new hymn for [thee], Indra, who art of old, and who yokest thy steeds," etc.

i. 130, 6. *Imām te vācham vasujantaḥ āyavo ratham na dhīraḥ svapāḥ atakshishuḥ sumnāya tvām atakshishuḥ* |

"Desiring wealth, men have *fashioned* for thee this hymn, as a skilful workman [fabricates] a car; and thus they have disposed (*lit.* fashioned) thee to (confer) happiness."

i. 171, 2. *Esha vaḥ stoma Maruto namasvān hridā tashṭo manasā dhāyi devāḥ* |

"This reverential hymn, o divine Maruts, *fashioned* by the heart, has been presented [or, made] by the mind. [According to Sāyaṇa, the last words mean, 'let it be received by you with a favourable mind']."

ii. 19, 8. *Evā te Gṛitsamadāḥ śūra manna avasyavo na vayunāni takshuḥ* |

"Thus, o hero, have the Gṛitsamadas, desiring succour, *fashioned* for thee a hymn, as men make works." (Sāyaṇa explains *vayuna* by "road.")

ii. 35, 2. *Imām su asmaḥ hridaḥ ā sutashṭam mantraṁ vochema kvid asya vedat* |

"Let us address to him this *well-fashioned* hymn proceeding from the heart; will he not be aware of it?"

v. 2, 11. *Etaṁ te stomaṁ tuvi-jāta vipro ratham na dhīraḥ svapāḥ ataksham* |

"I, a sage, have *fabricated* this hymn for thee, o powerful [deity], as a skilful workman fashions a car."

v. 29, 15. *Indra brahma kriyamānā jushasva yā te śavishṭha navyā akarma | vastreva bhadraḥ sukṛitā vasūyukḥ ratham na dhīraḥ svapāḥ ataksham* |

<sup>17</sup> See also v. 29, 15, and x. 39, 14, which will be quoted a little further on; and in which the verbs *kṛi* and *taksh* are both employed.

“O mighty Indra, regard with favour the prayers which are *made*, the new [prayers] which we have *made* for thee. Desirous of wealth, I have *fabricated* them like beautiful well-fashioned garments, as a skilful workman [constructs] a car.” (Compare R.V. iii. 39f2; above, p. 226.)

v. 73, 10. *Imā brahmāni vardhanā Aśvibhyāṃ sanṭu śantamā | yā takshāma rathān iva avochāma bṛihad namaḥ |*

“May these magnifying prayers which we have *fashioned*, like cars, be pleasing to the Aśvins: we have uttered great adoration.”

vi. 32, 1 (=S.V. i. 322). *Apūrvyā purutamāni asmai mahe vīrāya tavase turāya | virapśine vajrine śantamāni vachāmsi āsā<sup>18</sup> sthavirāya taksham |*

“To this great hero, vigorous, energetic, the adorable, unshaken thunderer, I have with my mouth *fabricated* copious and pleasing prayers, which have never before existed.”

vi. 16, 47. *Ā te Agne rīchā havir hṛidā tasṭam bharāmasi |*

“In this verse, Agni, we bring to thee an oblation *fabricated* by the heart.” (Comp. R.V. iii. 39, 1, in p. 226.)

vii. 7, 6. *Ete dyumnebhīr viścam ātiranta mantram ye vā araṃ naryāḥ atakshan |*

“These manly (Vasishthas), who have skilfully *fabricated* the hymn, have by their energy accomplished all things (?).”

vii. 64, 4. *Yo vāṃ garttam manasā takshad etam ūrddhvāṃ dhītiṃ kṛiṇavad dhārayach cha |*

“May he who with his mind *fashioned* for you (Mitra and Varuṇa) this car, make and sustain the lofty hymn.” (The same expression *ūrddhvā dhītiḥ* occurs in R.V. i. 119, 2.)

viii. 6, 33. *Uta brahmanyū vayaṃ tubhyam pravṛiddha vajrivo viprah atakshma jīvase |*

“O mighty thunderer, we, who are sage, have *fabricated* prayers for thee, that we may live.”

x. 39, 14. *Etaṃ vāṃ stomam Aśvināv ckarmā atakshāma Bṛigavo na ratham | ni amṛikshāma yoshanūṃ na marye nityaṃ na sūnuṃ tanayaṃ dadhānāḥ |*

“This hymn, Aśvins, we have *made* for you; we have *fabricated* it

<sup>18</sup> On the sense of *āsā* see Prof. Müller's article in the Journal of Roy. As. Soc. for 1867, p. 232 f.; and Böhtlingk and Roth's Lexicon, s.v.

as the Bhrigus [constructed] a car; we have decorated it, as a bride for her husband, continuing the series [of our praises] like an unbroken line of descendants." (See iv. 10, 20, above, p. 233.)

(The following is Sāyana's comment on this passage, for a copy of which I am indebted to Professor Müller: *He Aśvinau vām yuvayor etañ yathakṛtañ stomañ stotraṃ akarma akurṃa | Tad etād āha | Bhrigavo na Bhrigavaḥ iva ratkṃ atakshāma vayañ stotraṃ saṃskṛitavantaḥ | karma-yogād Ribhavo Bhrigavaḥ uchyañte | 'athāvā rathakārāḥ Bhrigavaḥ | kincha vayañ nityaṃ śāsataṃ tanayaṃ yāgādīnām karmanām tanitāraṃ sūnuṃ na aurasaṃ putraṃ iva stotraṃ dadhānāḥ dhārayanto martye manushye nyamrikshāma yuvayoh stutiṃ nitarām saṃskṛitavantaḥ |* "Aśvins, we have made this preceding hymn or praise of you. He means to say this. Like the Bhrigus, we have made a car, we have carefully constructed a hymn. The Ribhus are, in this passage, . . . styled Bhrigus; or Bhrigus are chariot-makers. Moreover, maintaining praise as a constant perpetuator (like a legitimate son) of sacrifice and other rites, we have polished, *i.e.* carefully composed a celebration of you among men [?]." In this comment the word *yoshanā* is left unexplained. In verse 12 of this hymn the Aśvins are supplicated to come in a car fleetier than thought, constructed for them by the Ribhus—*ā tena yātam manaso jāvīyasā rathaṃ yañ vām Ribhavaś chakrur Aśvinā |*.)

x. 80, 7. *Agnaye brahma Ribhavas tatakshuḥ |*

"The Ribhus [or the wise] fabricated a hymn for Agni.

III. I next quote some texts in which the hymns are spoken of as being *generated* by the rishis. (Comp. R.V. vii. 93, 1, in p. 228.)

iii. 2, 1. *Vaiśvānarāya dhishanām ritāvridhe ghṛitaṃ na pūtam Agnaye janāmasi |*

"We generate a hymn, like pure butter, for Agni Vaiśvānara, who promotes our sacred rites."

vii. 15, 4. *Navāñ nu stomam Agnaye divaḥ śyenāya jījanam | vasvaḥ kuvid vanāti naḥ |*

"I have generated a new hymn to Agni, the falcon of the sky; will he not bestow on us wealth in abundance?"

vii. 22, 9. *Ye cha pūrve riskayo ye cha nūtnāḥ Indra brahmāni janayanta viprah |*

"Indra, the wise rishis, both ancient and modern, have generated prayers."

vii. 26, 1. *Na somaḥ Indram asuto mamāda na abrahmāno maghavāvaṁ sutāsaḥ | tasmai uktham janaye yaj jujoshad nṛivad navīyaḥ śrinavad yathā naḥ |*

“The soma exhilarates not Indra unless it be poured out; nor do libations [gratify] Maghavan when offered without a prayer. To him I generate a hymn such as may please him, that, after the manner of men, he may hear our new [production].”

vii. 31, 11. . . . *Suvṛiktim Indrāya brahma jandiyanta viprāḥ |*

“The sages generated an efficacious production and a prayer for Indra.”

vii. 94, 1, 2 (=S.V. ii. 266). *Iyaṁ vām asya manmanaḥ Indrāgnī pūrva-stutir abhrād vṛiṣṭir iva ajani | śrinutam jaritur havam ityādi |*

“This excellent praise has been generated for you, Indra and Agni, from the soul of this [your worshipper], like rain from a cloud. Hear the invocation of your encomiast.” (Benfey thinks *manman*, “spirit,” is to be understood of Soma, whose hymn, *i.e.* the sound of his dropping, resembles the falling of rain. The scholiast of the S.V. makes *manman* = *stotri*, “worshipper”.)

viii. 43, 2. *Asmai te pratiharyate Jātavedo vicharshane Agne janāmi sushṭutim |*

“Wise Agni Jātavedas, I generate a hymn for thee, who receivest it with favour.”

viii. 77, 4. *Ā tvā ayam arkaḥ ūtaye vavarttati yaṁ Gotamāḥ ajjānan |*

“This hymn which the Gotamas have generated, incites thee to succour us.”

viii. 84, 4, 5. *S’rudhi havaṁ Tiraśchyāḥ Indra yas tvā saparyati suvīryasya gomato rāyaḥ pūrddhi mahān asi | Indra yas te navīyasīm giram mandrām ajjānat chikivīn-manasaṁ dhiyam pratnām ṛitasya pipyushīm |*

“Hear, Indra, the invocation of Tiraśchī, thy worshipper; replenish him with wealth in strong men and in cattle, for thou art great. Indra (do this for him) who has generated for thee the newest exhilarating hymn, springing from an intelligent mind, an ancient mental product, full of sacred truth.”

(These verses occur also in the Sāma-veda ii. 233, 234, and are translated by Professor Benfey, at pp. 230 and 250 of his edition. The hymn referred to in this passage is apparently designated as both



new, and old. How can it be both? It may have been an old hymn re-written and embellished; ancient in substance, though new in expression.<sup>19</sup> Compare St. John's Gospel, xiii. 34, and the First Epistle of St. John, ii. 7, 8, and iii. 11.)

ix. 73, 2. . . . *madhor dhṛābhīr janayanto arkam it priyām Indrasya tanvam avīrvāhan |*

"Generating the hymn, they have augmented the beloved body of Indra with the honied streams."

ix. 95, 1 (= S.V. i. 530). . . . *ato matir janayata svadhābhīh |*

"Wherefore generate hymns with the oblations." (Professor Benfey makes *janayata* the 3rd person singular of the imperfect middle, and applies it to Soma.)

x. 7, 2. *Imāh Agne matayas tubhyaṁ jātāh gobhir āsvair abhi grīnanti rādhaḥ |*

"These hymns, Agni, generated for thee, celebrate thy bounty in cows and horses."

x. 23, 5, 6, 7. *Yo vāchā vivācho mṛidhravāchaḥ purū sahasrā asivā jaghāna | Tat tad id asya pauṁsyaṁ grīnīmasi pitā iva yas tavishīm vāvridhe śavah | 6. Stomaṁ te Indra Vimadāh ajījanann apūrvyam purutamaṁ sudānave | Vidma hi asya bhōjanam inasya yad ā paśuṁ na gopāḥ karāmahe | 7. Mā kir naḥ enā sakhyā viyaushus tava cha Indra Vimadasya cha risheḥ | Vidma hi te pramatiṁ deva jāmi-vad asme te santu sakhyā sīvāni |*

"5. Who (Indra) with his voice slew many thousands of the wicked uttering confused and hostile cries. We laud his several acts of valour, who, like a father, grew in vigour and strength. 6. For thee, o Indra, who art bountiful, the Vimadas have generated a copious hymn, which never before existed (*apūrvya*); for we know that it is gratifying to this mighty god, when we attract him hither as a cowherd drives his cattle. 7. Indra, may that friendship of ours never be dissolved, which exists between thee and the rishi Vimada: for we know thy wisdom, o god; may thy friendship be favourable to us, like, that of a kinsman."

x. 67, 1. *Imām dhiyaṁ sapta-śīrshyīm pitā naḥ rītaprajātām bṛihatīm avindat | turīyaṁ svī janayaḍ viśvajanyo Ayāsyah uktham Indrāya śansan |*

<sup>19</sup> As Prof. Aufrecht expresses it: "Gir is opposed to *dhī*, as form to substance a new utterance, but a primordial homage."

“Our father hath discovered [or invented] this great, seven-headed hymn, born of sacred truth; Ayāsyā, friend of all men, celebrating Indra, has *generated* the fourth song of praise.” (In his Lexicon, Roth gives Ayāsyā as a proper name; but says it may also be an adjective with the sense of “unwearied.”)

x. 91, 14. *Kīlālu-pe soma-prīṣṭāya vedhase hṛidā śratiṁ janaye chārum Agnaye |*

“With my heart I *generate* a beautiful hymn for Agni, the drinker of nectar, the soma-sprinkled, the wise.” (See also R.V. i. 109, 1, 2, which will be quoted below.)

IV. In the following texts the verbal root *ri*, “to move, send forth,” etc., used with or without a preposition, is applied to the utterance or (it may even mean) the production of hymns.

i. 116, 1. *Nāsatyābhyām barhir iva pravṛinje stomān iyarmi abhriyā iva vātaḥ | yāv arbhagāya Vimadāya jāyām senājivā ni ūhatuḥ rathena |*

“In like manner as I spread the sacrificial grass to the Nāsatyas (Aśvins), so do I *send forth* to them hymns, as the wind [drives] the clouds; to them (I say), who bore off to the youthful Vimada his bride in a chariot swift as an arrow.”

vii. 61, 2. *Pra vām sa Mitrā-Varunau ṛitāv vipro manmāni dīrghaśrud iyartti | Yasya brahmāni sukratū avāthaḥ ā yat kratvā na śaradaḥ prīnaithe |*

“The devout sage, heard afar off, *sends forth* his hymns to you, o Mitra and Varuna. Do you, mighty gods, receive his prayers with favour, so that for (many) autumns ye may not be satiated with his fervour.” (See Böhtlingk and Roth’s Lexicon, *s.v.* ā + *pri*.)

viii. 12, 31. *Imām te Indra sushṭutiṁ viprah iyartti dhītibhiḥ | jānim padā iva pipratim pra adhvare |*

“In the sacrifice the sage, with praises, *sends forth* to thee this hymn, which is of kin to thee, and, as it were, supplies the places (of others?)

viii. 13, 26. . . . *Ṛitād iyarmi te dhiyam maṇoyujam |*

“. . . From the sacred ceremony I *send forth* a prayer which will attract thy heart.”

x. 116, 9. *Pra Indrāgnibhyām suvachasyām iyarmi sindhāv iva prerayām nāvam arkaiḥ |*

“I *send forth* a [hymn] with beautiful words to Indra and Agni; with my praises I have, as it were, launched a ship on the sea.”

(Compare R.V. ii. 42, 1, spoken of Indra in the form of the bird called Kapinjala, a sort of partridge: *Iyartti vācham ariteva nāvam* | “It sends forth a voice, as a rower propels a boat.” See also R.V. x. 101, 2, quoted above, p. 234.)

.x. 4, 1. *Pra te yakshi pra te iyarmi manma bhuvō yathā vandyo no haveshu | dhanvān iva prapā asi tvam Agne iyakshave pūrave pratna rājan* |

“I offer thee worship, I send forth to thee a meditation, that thou mayest be accessible to adoration in our invocations. For thou, Agni, ancient king, art like a trough of water in the desert to the man who longs for thee.”

V. In the following passages other verbs are employed to denote the composition or presentation of hymns :

i. 61. 2. *Indrāya hṛidā manasā manīshā pratnāya patye dhiyo marjāyanta* |

“To Indra, the ancient lord, they prepared [or polished] hymns [or ceremonies] with the heart, mind, and understanding.”

i. 61, 4. *Asmai id u stomañ sañhinomi rathañ na tashṭā iva ityādi* |

“To him (Indra) I send forth a hymn, as a carpenter a car,” etc.

i. 94, 1 (= S.V. i. 66). *Imañ stomañ arhate Jātavedase ratham iva sam mahema manīshayā | bhadrā hi naḥ pramatir asya sañsadi Agne sakhye mā rishūma vayañ tava* |

“Let us with our intellect construct (or, send forth) this hymn for the adorable Jātavedas like a car, for his wisdom is favourable to us in the assembly. Agni, in thy friendship may we never suffer.” (The root *māh* means to honour or worship.<sup>20</sup> The reader may compare Benfey’s translation.)

There is to be found in the hymns a great multitude of passages in which the rishi speaks of presenting his hymns and prayers to the various deities who are the objects of his worship, without directly claiming for himself the authorship of those compositions. The natural inference to be drawn from the expressions which we shall find to be employed in most of the cases to which I refer, would, I think, be that the personality of the rishi himself was uppermost in his mind, and that he was not conscious that the praises which he was uttering to

<sup>20</sup> See, however, the various reading suggested by Böthlingk and Roth *s.v. māh + sam* and *ah + sam*.

the gods proceeded from any other source than his own unaided faculties. Of this description are the following texts, which represent a manner of thinking and speaking very prevalent in the hymns:

i. 60, 5. *Tam tvā vāyam patim Agne rayīnām praśamsāmo matibhir Gotamāsaḥ* |

“We, the Gotamas, praise with hymns thee, Agni, the lord of riches.”

i. 77, 5. *Eva Agnir Gotamebhir ritāvā viprebhir astoshta jātavedaḥ* |

“Thus has the holy Agni Jātavedas been celebrated by the sage Gotamas.”

i. 78, 5. *Avochāma Rahūgaṇāḥ Agnaye madhumad vachaḥ | dyumnair abhi pra nonumaḥ* |

“We, the Rahūgaṇas, have uttered to Agni honied speech; we incessantly laud him with eulogies.”

i. 91, 11. *Soma gīrbhis tvā vāyaṁ vardhayāmo vacho-vidaḥ | sumṛilīko naḥ āviśa* |

“Soma, we who are skilled in speech magnify thee with praises; do thou enter into us, full of kindness.”

i. 102, 1. *Imām te dhīyam prabhare maho mahīm . . .*

“I present to thee joyfully this great hymn . . . .”

i. 183, 6. *Atārishma tamasas pūram asya prati vām stomo Aśvināv adhāyi* |

“We have crossed over this darkness; a hymn, o Aśvins, has been addressed to you.”

iii. 53, 2. *Pitur na putraḥ sicam ā rabhe te Indra svādishtayā girā śachīvaḥ* |

“Powerful Indra, I lay hold of thy skirt (as a son does that of his father), with a very sweet hymn.”

iv. 3, 16. *Etā viśvā vidushe tubhyaṁ vedho nīthāni Agne nīnyā vachāṁsi | nivachanā kavaye kāvyāni aśaṁsisham matibhir vipraḥ ukthaiḥ* |

“Intelligent Agni, to thee, who knowest, [have I uttered] all these songs and mysterious words; to thee, who art a bard, have I, a sage, uttered these hymns, these poems, with meditations and praises.”

iv. 32, 12. *Avīridhanta Gotamāḥ Indra tve stoma-vāhasaḥ* |

“The Gotamas, Indra, bringing hymns to thee, have magnified thee.”

v. 11, 5. *Tubhya idam Agne madhumattamaṁ vachas tubhyam manīshā iyam astu śaṁ hṛide | Tvām giraḥ sindhum iva avanīr mahīr ā priṇanti śavasā vardhayanti cha.* |

“Agni, may this sweetest of prayers, may this mental production be pleasant to thy heart. As great rivers fill the ocean, so do the words of praise fill thee, and augment thee with strength.”

v. 22, 4. *Agne chikiddhi asya naḥ idaṁ vacchaḥ sahasya | Taṁ tvā susīpra dampate stomair vardkanti Atrato gīrbhīḥ śumbhanti Atrayaḥ |*

“Vigorous Agni, observe these our words; thee, with the beautiful nose, the lord of the house, the Atris magnify with praises, the Atris decorated with hymns.”

v. 45, 4. *Sūktebhir vo vachobhir deya-jushtair Indrā nu Agnī avase huvadhyaī |*

“Let me invoke you for help, o Indra and Agni, with well-spoken words, such as are acceptable to the gods.

vi. 38, 3. *Taṁ vo dhīyā paramayā purājām ajaram Indram abhi anūshi arkaiḥ ityādi |*

“I adore thee, the ancient, imperishable Indra with an excellent hymn and with praises.”

vii. 67, 5. *Prācīm ū devā Aśvinā dhīyam me amṛidhrām sātaye kṛitaṁ vasūyum |*

“O divine Aśvins, bring to fulfilment my unwearied prayer which supplicates wealth.”

vii. 85, 1. *Punīṣhe vām arakshasam manīshām somam Indrāya Varuṇāya juhvat | ghrīta-pratikām Ushasāṁ na devīm ityādi |*

“Offering soma to Indra and Varuna, I prepare for you twain the sincere hymn, like the goddess Ushas, with glittering face.”<sup>21</sup>

viii. 5, 18. *Asmākam adya vām ayaṁ stoma vāhishṭho antamaḥ | yuvābhyaṁ bhātu Aśvinā |*

“May this hymn of ours approach near to you, to-day, o Aśvins, and be effectual in bearing you hither.”

viii. 8, 8. *Kim anye paryāsate asmat stomebhir Aśvinā | putraḥ Kaṇvasya vām rīshir gīrbhīr Vatsa avīṛidhat |*

“Aśvins, do others than we sit round you with songs? Vatsa, the son of Kaṇva, has magnified you by his hymns.”

viii. 27, 8. *Ā pra yāta Maruto Vīshno Aśvinā Pūshan mākīnayā dhīyā | 11. Idā hi vaḥ upastutīm idā vāmasya bhaktaye upa vo viśva-vedaso namasyur āśṛikṣi |*

<sup>21</sup> Compare vi. 8, 1. *Vaiśvānarāya matir navyasī śuchīḥ somah iva pavate chāru Agnaye |* “A new and bright hymn is purified, like beautiful soma, for Agni Vaiśvānara.”

“8. Come, o Maruts, Vishnu, Aśvins, Pūshan, at my hymn. 11. For now, possessors of all riches, now, in order to obtain wealth, have I, full of reverence, sent forth to you a hymn.”

viii. 44, 2. *Agne stomañ jushasva me varāhasva anena manmanā | prati sūktāni harya naḥ |* 22. *Uta tvā dhītayo mama giro varddhantu viśvahā | Agne sakhyasya bodhi naḥ |* 26. *Yuvānañ rāspatiñ kaviñ viśvadam puru-vepasam | Agniñ sumbhāmi manmabhiḥ |*

“2. Agni, receive my hymn: grow by this product of my thought: rejoice in our beautiful words. 22. And may my thoughts and words always augment thee; Agni, think of our friendship. 26. With my mental productions I adorn Agni, the young, the lord of the people, the sage, the all-devouring, the very restless.”

x. 42, 1. *Astā iva supratarañ lāyam asyan bhūshann iva prabhara stomam asmai | vāchā viprāstarata vācham aryo niramaya jaritaḥ some Indram |*

“Like an archer discharging his far-shooting arrow, with zeal present the hymn to Indra. Sages, by your song, overcome the song of the enemy; worshipper, arrest Indra at the soma.”

x. 63, 17. *Eva Plateḥ sūnur avīvrīhad vo viśve Ādityāḥ Adite manīshā | īśānāso naro amartyena astāvi jano divyo Gayena |*

“Thus, all ye Ādityas, Aditi, and ye ruling powers, has the wise son of Plati magnified you. The celestial race has been lauded by the immortal Gaya.”

x. 111, 1. *Manīshinaḥ prabharadhvam manīshām yathā yathā matayah santi nrīnam | Indrañ satyair ā irayāma kṛitebhiḥ sa hi viro girvanasyur vidānaḥ |*

“Sages, present the prayer, according as are the various thoughts of men. Let us by our sincere rites stimulate Indra, for he is a hero, he is wise and loves our songs.”

In the following verse, from a hymn in praise of liberality, it is said, though no doubt only figuratively, that the *true rishi* is the prince who is bountiful to the priesthood.

x. 107, 6. *Tam eva rishiñ tam ū brāhmānām āhur yajtūnyañ sāmāgām ukthāśasam | sa śukrasya tanbo veda tisro yaḥ prathamō dakshinayā rarādha |*

“He it is whom they call a rishi, a priest, a pious sacrificer, a chaunter of prayers, a reciter of hymns; he it is who knows the three bodies of the brilliant (Agni),—the man who is most prominent in bestowing gifts.”

SECT. IV.—*Passages of the Rig-veda in which a supernatural character is ascribed to the rishis or the hymns.*

In the present section I propose to collect the most distinct indications which I have noticed in the Vedic hymns of any supernatural attributes attaching, in the opinion of the authors, either to the rishis themselves, or to their compositions. We shall see in the course of this enquiry (1) that a certain superhuman character was ascribed by the later rishis, who composed the hymns, to some of their predecessors; (2) that expressions are occasionally employed by the rishis which appear to ascribe their compositions to a divine influence generally; while there is a still more numerous set of texts in which the hymns are attributed in various forms of phraseology to the agency of one or more particular and specified deities; and (3) that there is a considerable number of passages in which a mysterious or magical power is ascribed to the hymns or metres.

I proceed to furnish specimens of these several classes of quotations.

I. I adduce some passages which ascribe a superhuman character or supernatural faculties to the earlier rishis.<sup>22</sup> These are the following:

R.V. i. 179, 2. *Ye chid hi pūrve ṛitasāpaḥ āsan sākaṁ devebhir avadann ṛitāni | te chid avāsura ityādi |*

“The pious sages who lived of old, and who conversed about sacred truths with the gods, led a conjugal life,” etc.

vii. 76, 4. *Te id devānām sadhamādaḥ āsann ṛitāvānaḥ kavayaḥ pūrvyāsaḥ | gūḷhaṁ jyotiḥ pitaro anuvindān satyamantrāḥ ajānayan ushāsam |*

“They were the associates of the gods, those ancient pious sages. The fathers found out the hidden light; with true hymns they generated the dawn.”

x. 14, 15. *Yamāya madhumattamaṁ rājne havyaṁ juhātana | idaṁ namaḥ ṛishibhyaḥ pūrvajebhyaḥ pūrvēbhyaḥ patkikṛidbhyaḥ |*

“Offer to king Yama a most sweet oblation. (Let) this reverence (be paid) to the rishis born of old, who were the earliest guides.”

<sup>22</sup> Compare A.V. x. 7, 14, quoted above in p. 3.

The sixty-second hymn of the tenth Maṇḍala contains the following passage regarding the Angirases (see above, p. 223) :

1. *The Angirases.*—x. 62, 1, 3. *Ye yajnena dakṣiṇayā samaktāḥ Indrasya sakhyam amṛitatvam ānaśa | tebhyo bhudram Angirasṣ vah astu prati gribhṇīta mānavāṃ sumedhasaḥ | 3. Ye ṛitena sūryam arohayan divi aprathayan pṛithivīm mātaram vi ityādi |*

“1. Blessings be on you, Angirases, who, sanctified by sacrifice and liberality, attained the friendship of Indra and immortality. Do ye, o sages, graciously receive the man (who addresses you). 3. Ye who by sacrifice caused the sun to ascend the sky; and spread out our mother earth,” etc.

This is succeeded by the following verses :

x. 62, 4. *Ayaṃ Nābhā vadati valguvo grihe deva-putrāḥ ṛishayas tat śrinotana . . . | 5. Virūpāsaḥ id ṛishayas te id gambhīra-vepasaḥ | Angirasaḥ sūnavas te Agneḥ pari jajnīre |*

“This Nābhan addresses you, brilliant beings, within the house. Hear this, ye rishis, sons of the gods. . . 5. The Virūpas are rishis, profound in emotion; they are the sons of Angiras; they have been born from Agni.”

(The fifth verse is quoted in the Nirukta, xi. 17. See Roth's illustrations of the passage.)<sup>23</sup>

2. *Vasishṭha.*—A supernatural character is attributed to Vasishṭha also in the following passage (which has been already quoted and illustrated in Vol. I. pp. 318 ff.).

vii. 33, 7 ff. *Trayaḥ kṛiṇvanti bhuvanasya retas tisraḥ prajāḥ āryāḥ jyotir-agrāḥ | trayo gharmūsaḥ ushasāṃ sachante sarvān it tān anu vidur Vasishṭhāḥ | 8. Sūryasyeva vaḥshatho jyotir eshāṃ samudrasyeva mahimā gabhīraḥ | vātasyeva prajavo na anyena stomo Vasishṭhāḥ anu etave vah |*

<sup>23</sup> The next verse (which, with the sequel, is quoted in my article “On the relations of the priests to the other classes of Indian society in the Vedic age,” Journ. Roy. As. Soc. for 1866, p. 276) is as follows: 6. *Ye Agneḥ pari jajnīre Virūpāso divas pari | Navugvo nu Dasagvo Angirastamaḥ sachā deveṣu māṃḥatē |* “The Virūpas who were produced from Agni, from Dyaus,—the Navagva, the Dasagva, who is a most eminent Angiras, lavishes gifts along with the gods.” Here the Virūpas would seem rather to be princes than rishis: and the same is the case in the following passage also: iii. 53, 6. *Ime bhojāḥ Angiraso Virūpāḥ divas putrāso asurasya virāḥ | Viśvāmītrūya dadato maghāni sahasrasāve pra tiranta āyuh |* “These liberal Virūpas of the race of Angiras, heroic sons of the divine Dyaus (the sky), bestowing gifts on Viśvāmītra at the ceremony with a thousand libations, have prolonged their lives.” (See Vol. I. p. 341 f.)



9. *Te id ninyam hridayasya praketaih sahasra-valsam abhi sancharanti | yamena tatam paridhiṁ vayantaḥ apsarasaḥ upa sedur Vasishṭhāḥ | 10. Vidyuto jyotiḥ parisanjihānam Mitrā-Varuṇā yad apaśyatām tvā | tat te janma uta ekaṁ Vasishṭha Agastyo yat tvā viśaḥ ājabhāra | 11. Utāsi Maitravaruṇo Vasishṭha Urvaśyāḥ brahman manaso 'dhi jātaḥ | drapsaṁ skannam brahmṇā daivyena viśve devāḥ pushkare tvṣ adadanta | 12. Sa praketaḥ ubhayasya pravivān sahasra-dānaḥ uta vā sadānaḥ | yamena tatam paridhiṁ vyishyan apsarasaḥ pari jāne Vasishṭhaḥ | 13. Satre ha jātāv iśhitā namobhiḥ rumbhe retaḥ sisichituḥ śamānam | tato ha Mānaḥ udiyāyā madhyāt tato jātam rishim Jhur Vasishṭnam |*

“7. Three [gods] create the fecundating principle in (all) existences; [there exist] three excellent productions of which light is the first: three fires attend upon the dawn: all these the Vasishṭhas know. 8. The splendour of these [sages] is like the full glory of the sun; their grandeur is profound as that of the ocean; like the swiftness of the wind, your hymns, o Vasishṭhas, cannot be followed by any other bard. 9. Through the intuitions of their hearts they seek out the mystery with a thousand branches. Weaving the envelopment extended by Yama [Agni? see R.V. i. 66, 4] the Vasishṭhas sat near the Apsaras. 10. When Mitra and Varuṇa saw thee quitting the gleam of the lightning, that was thy birth, Vasishṭha, and [thou hadst] one [other], when Agastya brought thee to the people. 11. And, Vasishṭha, thou art the son of Mitra and Varuṇa, born, o priest, from the mind of Urvaśi; all the gods placed thee—the drop fallen through divine contemplation—in the vessel. 12. He the wise, knowing both [worlds?], with a thousand gifts, or with gifts, Vasishṭha, being about to weave the envelopment extended by Yama, was produced from the Apsaras. 13. Born at the sacrifice, and impelled by adorations, they [Mitra and Varuṇa] let the same equal procreative energy fall into the jar; from the midst of this Māna (Agastya) issued forth; from this men say the rishi Vasishṭha was produced.”

Two of these verses are quoted in the Nirukta, verse 8, in xi: 20, and verse 11, in v. 14. See also Prof. Roth's Illustrations of that work, p. 64, where he states his opinion that the foregoing verses which describe the miraculous birth of Vasishṭha in the style of the epic mythology, are a later addition to an older hymn. See the note in p. 321 of the First Volume of this work.

The two following passages also have reference to knowledge super-naturally communicated, or favours divinely conferred on Vasishṭha. See Vol. I. p. 325 ff.

vii. 87, 4. *Uvācha me Varuṇo medhirāya tvih sapta nāṃa aghnyā bibhartti | vidvān padasya guhyā na vochaḍ yugāya vipraḥ uparāya śikshan |*

“Varuṇa said to me, the intelligent, ‘the cow has thrice seven names.’ The wise [god], though he knows them, has not declared the mysteries of the word, which he desires to reveal to a later generation.”

vii. 88, 4. *Vasishṭhāṃ ha Varuṇo nāvi ā adhūḍ ṛishim chakāra svapāḥ mahobhiḥ | stotāram vipraḥ sudinatve ahnām yād nu dyāvas tatanan yād ushasaḥ |*

“Varuṇa took Vasishṭha into the boat; by his mighty acts, working skilfully he (Varuṇa) has made him a rishi; the wise (god) has made him to utter praises in an auspicious time, that his days and dawns may be prolonged.” (See Vol. I. p. 325 f.; and compare R.V. x. 101, 2, and x. 116, 9, in pp. 234 and 240, above.)

3. *Viśvāmitra*.—In one or more of the texts which I shall next produce, a superhuman character is ascribed to Viśvāmitra, if not to the Kuśikas.

iii. 29, 15. *Amitrāyudho marutām iva prayāḥ prathamajāḥ brahmaṇo viśvam id viduḥ | dyumnavad brahma Kuśikāsaḥ erire ekaḥ eko dame Agniṃ samīdhire |*

“Combating their foes, like hosts of Maruts, (the sages) the first-born of prayer are masters of all knowledge; the Kuśikas have uttered an enthusiastic prayer; each of them has kindled Agni in his house.” (See Vol. I. p. 347.)

iii. 43, 5. *Kuvid mā gopāṃ karase janasya kuvid rājānam Maghavann ṛijishan | kuvid mā ṛishim papivūṃsaṃ sutasya kuvid me vāsvaḥ amṛitasya śikshāḥ |*

“Dost thou not make me a shepherd of the people? dost thou not make me a king, o impetuous Maghavan? dost thou not make me a rishi, a drinker of the soma? wilt thou not bestow upon me imperishable wealth?” (See Vol. I. p. 344.)

iii. 53, 9. *Māhan ṛishir devajāḥ devajūtaḥ astabhnāt sindhum arṇavaṃ ṛichakshāḥ | Viśvāmitro yad avahat Sudāsam apriyūyata Kuśikebhir Indrah !*

“The great rishi (Viśvāmitra), leader of men, god-born, god-impelled, stemmed the watery current. When Viśvāmitra conducted Sudās, Indra was propitiated through the Kuśikas.” (See Vol. I. pp. 342. Indra himself is called a Kauśika in R.V. i. 10, 11. See Vol. I. p. 347.)

According to ix. 87, 3, of which Uśanas is the traditional rishi, certain mysterious knowledge is said to have been possessed by that personage:

*Rishir viprah pura-ētā janānām rībhur dhīrah Uśanā kāvyena | sa  
chid viveda nihitaṁ yad āsām apichyaṁ guhyaṁ nāma gonām |*

“A wise rishi, a leader of men, skilful, and prudent, is Uśanas, through his insight a seer; he has known the hidden mysterious name applied to these cows.”

Again in ix. 97, 7, it is said: *Pra kāvyam Uśaneva bruvāno devo  
devānām janimā vivakti |*

“Uttering, like Uśanas, the wisdom of a sage, the god (Soma) declares the births of the gods.”

In a hymn of the tenth Maṇḍala, the rishis are spoken of as “seeing” the objects of their contemplation in a way which seems to imply a supernatural insight (see above, pp. 116, 118, 125 ff.); in this hymn, x. 72, 1, 2, it is said:

*Devānām nu vayaṁ jānā pravochāma vipanyayā | uktheshu śasyamā-  
neshu yaḥ paśyād uttare yuge | Brahmanaspatir etā saṁ karmārah iva  
adhamat | devānām pūrvye yuge asataḥ sad ajāyata |*

“Let us, from the love of praise, celebrate in recited hymns the births of the gods,—any one of us who in this later age may see them. Brahmanaspati has kindled these births, as a blacksmith [blows a flame]: in the earliest age of the gods, the existent sprang from the non-existent.”<sup>24</sup> (See Vol. I. p. 46.)

Another not less decided instance of this use of the verb *to see*, in the sense of supernatural insight, may be found in the verse of the Vālakhilya already quoted in Vol. II. p. 220, which will be cited below. See also x. 130, 6, which will be quoted further on.

The next two passages speak of the *radiance* of the rishis.

viii. 3, 3 (= S.V. i. 250, and Vāj. S. 33, 81). *Imāḥ u tvā purūvaso*

<sup>24</sup> The first of these verses is translated by Prof. Benfey in his Glossary to the Sāma-veda, p. 154.

*giro vardhantu yāḥ mama | pāvaka-varnāḥ śuchayo vipāśchitaḥ abhi stoma-  
mair anūshata |*

“Lord of abundant wealth, may these prayers of mine magnify thee !  
Pure sages of radiant appearance have celebrated thee with hymns.”

viii. 6, 10. *Aham id hi pituḥ pari medhām ṛitasya jagrabha | aham  
sūryaḥ iva ajani |*

“I have acquired knowledge of the ceremonial from [my] father ;  
I have become like the sun.” (Is Indra the father here referred to ?)

The following texts, which occur in the last book of the Rig-veda,  
speak of *tapas* (“fervour” or “austerity”) being practised by the  
rishis much in the same way as the later epic literature does. This use  
of the word is not known in the earlier books of the R.V. (See Boeht-  
lingk and Roth’s Lexicon, under the word *tapas*.)

x. 109, 4. *Devāḥ etasyām avadanta pūrve sapta ṛishayas tapase ye  
nisheduḥ |*

“The ancient gods spoke of her, the seven rishis who sat down for  
austere-fervour.” (See my article “On the priests of the Vedic age”  
in the Journ. Roy. As. Soc. for 1866, p. 270.)

x. 154, 2. *Tapasā ye anādhrīśyās tapasā ye svar yayuḥ | tapo ye cha-  
krīre mahas tāms chid eva api gachchatāt | 5. Sahasra-nīthāḥ kavayo ye  
gopāyanti sūryam ṛishīms tapasvato Yama tapojān api gachchatāt |*

“Let him (the deceased) go to those who through austere-fervour  
are invincible, who by austere-fervour have gone to heaven, who have  
performed great austerity. 5. Let him go, Yama, to the sages of a  
thousand songs who guard the sun (see Wilson, Vish. Pur. vol. ii.  
pp. 284 ff.), to the devout rishis, born from fervour.” (See my article  
“On Yama” in the Journ. Roy. As. Soc.)

x. 190, 1. *Ṛitam cha satyam cha abhīddhāt tapaso adhyajāyata | tato  
rātrī ajāyata tataḥ samudraḥ arṇavaḥ |*

“Right and truth sprang from kindled austerity ; thence sprang  
night, thence the watery ocean.”

In x. 167, 1, it is even said that Indra attained heaven by austerity :  
*Tvaṁ tapaḥ paritāpya ajayaḥ svaḥ |*

“By performing austerity thou didst conquer heaven.”

In some places the gods are said to possess in the most eminent  
degree the qualities of *rishis*, or *kavis*. This may possibly imply, *e con-  
verso*, that the rishis were conscious of a certain affinity with the divine

nature, and conceived themselves to participate in some degree in the superior wisdom and knowledge of the deities.

R.V. i. 31, 1. *Tvam Agne prathamo Angirāḥ rishir devo devānām abhavaḥ śivaḥ sakhā ityādi* | 2. *Tvam Agne prathamo Angirastamaḥ kavir devānām paribhūshasi vratam* |

"1. Thou, Agni, the earliest *rishi* Angiras, a god, hast been the auspicious friend of the gods. . . . 2. Thou, Agni, the earliest and most Angiras-like sage, administerest the ceremonial of the gods."

i. 66, 2. . . . *Rishir na stubhvā vikshu praśastah ityādi* |

"Like a *rishi*, who praises [the gods], he (Agni) is famous among the people," etc.

iii. 21, 3. . . . *Rishih śreshṭhaḥ samidhyase yajnyasya pra avitā bhava* |

"Thou, Agni, the most eminent *rishi*, art kindled; be the protector of the sacrifice."

v. 29, 1. . . . *Archanti tvā marutaḥ pūta-dakṣhās tvam eshām rishir Indra asi dhīraḥ* |

"The Maruts, endowed with pure dispositions, worship thee; thou, Indra, art their wise *rishi*." (Sāyana, however, here renders *rishi* by *drashṭā*, "beholder.")

vi. 14, 2. *Agnir id hi prachetāḥ Agnir vedhastamaḥ rishih* |

"Agni is wise; Agni is a most sage *rishi*."

viii. 6, 41. *Rishir hi pūrvajā asi ekaḥ īśanaḥ ojasū* | *Indra choshkūyase vasu* |

"Thou art an anciently-born *rishi*, who alone rulest by thy might; Indra thou lavishest riches."

viii. 16, 7. *Indro brahmā Indraḥ rishir Indraḥ puru puru-hūtaḥ* | *mahān mahibhiḥ śachibhiḥ* |

"Indra is a priest, Indra is a *rishi*, Indra is much invoked; he is great through his great powers."

ix. 96, 18 (= S.V. ii. 526). *Rishi-manū yah rishi-kṛit svarshāḥ sahasranīthaḥ padavīḥ kavīnām* |

"Soma, *nishi-minded*, *rishi-maker*, bestower of good, master of a thousand songs, the leader of sages," etc.

ix. 107, 7. . . . *Rishir vipṛo vichakshanaḥ* | *tvam kavir abhavo devavītamaḥ ityādi* |

"A *rishi*, a sage, intelligent, thou (Soma) wast a poet, most agreeable to the gods," etc.

x. 27, 22. . . . *Indrāya sunvad ṛishaye cha śikshat* |

“ . . . Let [men] present libations to Indra, and offerings to the *rishi*.”

x. 112. 9. *Ni shu sīda gaṇapate gaṇeṣhu tvām āhur vipratamañ kavī-nām* | *na ṛite tvat kriyate kinchana āre mahām arkam Maghavanś chitram archa* |

“ Sit, lord of multitudes, among our multitudes; they call thee the greatest of sages [or poets]; nothing is done without, or apart from, thee; sing, Maghavan, a great and beautiful hymn.”

x. 115, 5. *Agniḥ kaṇvetamaḥ kaṇva-sakhā ityādi* |

“ Agni is the greatest of the Kaṇvas, the friend of Kaṇva,” etc.

II. The Vedic rishi, as we have seen, expected to receive from their gods every variety of temporal blessings, strength, long life, offspring, riches, cattle, rain, food, and victory, and they also looked for forgiveness of their offences, and sometimes for exaltation to paradise, to the same benefactors. Hence it would be nothing more than we might have anticipated, if we should further find them asking their different deities to enlighten their minds, to direct their ceremonies, to stimulate their devotion, to augment their powers of poetical expression, and to inspire them with religious fervour for the composition of their hymns. I think the following passages will justify this expectation by showing that the rishis (though, as we have seen, they frequently speak of the hymns as their own work) did also sometimes entertain the idea that their prayers, praises, and ceremonies generally, were supernaturally suggested and directed. One of the modes (if not the most important) in which this idea is expressed is, as we shall discover, the personification of speech under different appellations. The following are the passages to which I refer: they are—

First, such as refer to the gods generally:

R.V. i. 37, 4. *Pra vaḥ śardhāya ghrishvaye tvesha-dyumnāya śushmine* | *brahma devattañ gāyata* |

“ To your vigorous, overpowering, energetic, host [of Maruts] sing the *god-given* prayer.”

S.V. i. 299. *Tvashṭā no daivyañ vachaḥ Parjanya Brahmanaspatiḥ* | *putrair bhrāṭṛibhir Aditir nu pātu no duṣṭaram trāmaññ vachaḥ* |

“ May Tvashṭri, Parjanya, and Brahmanaspati [prosper] our *divine* utterance: may Aditi with her [?] sons and brothers prosper our *invincible and protective* utterance.”

In the next passage, the hymn or prayer is spoken of as *inconceivable*.

R. V. i. 152, 5. *Achittam brahma jujushur yuvānaḥ ityādi* |

“The youths received with joy the incomprehensible prayer,” etc.

In R. V. x. 20, 10, *Vimada*, a rishi, is connected with the immortals:

*Agne Vimado manishām ūrjonūpād amṛitebhiḥ sajośah girah āvakshat  
sumatir iyānaḥ ityādi* |

“O Agni, son of strength, *Vimada*, united with the immortals, hastening, has brought to thee a product of thought, and beautiful hymns.”

In the two following texts the gods are said to have *generated* the hymn or prayer:

x. 61, 7. . . . *Svādhyo ajanayan brahma devāḥ Vāstoshpatiṁ vratapāṁ  
niratakshan* |

“The thoughtful gods *generated* prayer: they fashioned *Vastoshpati* the protector of sacred rites.”

x. 88, 8. *Sūkta-vākam prathamam ād id Agnim ād id havir ajana-  
yanta devāḥ* | *sa eshām yajno abhavat tanūpāḥ tam dyaur veda tam pṛi-  
thivī tam āpaḥ* |

“The gods first *generated* the hymn, then Agni, then the oblation. He was their sacrifice, the protector of their life. Him the Sky, the Earth, and the Waters know.”

In the latter of the two following verses, *Vāch* (speech) is said to be divine, and to have been *generated* by the gods. Though speech is here spoken of generally, and nothing is said of the hymns, still these may have already come to be connected with her in the minds of the Vedic bards, as they were afterwards regarded as her most solemn and important expression.

R. V. viii. 89, 10. *Yad vāg vadantī avichetanāni rāshṭrī devānām nisha-  
sāda mandrā* | *chatasrah ūrjaṁ duduhe payāṁsi kva svid asyāḥ paramaṁ  
jagāma* | 11. *Devīm vācham ajanayanta devās tāṁ viśvarūpāḥ paśavo  
vadanti* | *sū no mandrā ishām ūrjaṁ dukhānā dhenur vāg asmān upa  
sushtutā āetu* |

“When *Vāch*, speaking unintelligible things, queen of the gods, sat down, melodious, she milked forth sustenance and waters towards the four quarters: whither has her highest element departed? The gods *generated* the divine *Vāch*; animals of all kinds utter her; may this melodious cow *Vāch*, who yields us nourishment and sustenance,—approach us, when we celebrate her praises.

The last verse (as well as R.V. viii. 90, 16, which will be quoted below), derives some illustration from the following passage of the *Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad*, p. 982 (p. 251 English transl.), in which also *Vāch* is designated as a cow :

*Vāchaṁ dhenum upāsita | tasyās chatvārṣṭhā stanāḥ svāhā-kāro vashaṭ-kāro hanta-kāraḥ svadhā-kārah | tasyāḥ dvau stanau āevāḥ upajīvanti svāhā-kāram cha vashaṭ-kāraṁ cha hanta-kāram manuskyāḥ svadhā-kāram pitarāḥ | tasyāḥ prāṇaḥ rishabho mano vatsaḥ |*

“Let a man worship the cow *Vāch*. She has four udders, the formæ *svāhā*, *vashaṭ*, *hanta*, and *svadhā*. The gods live upon her two udders, *svāhā* and *vashaṭ*; men upon *hanta*; and the fathers upon *svadhā*. Breath is her bull; the mind, her calf.”

The two verses, R.V. viii. 89, 10, and 11, occur in the *Nirukta*, xi. 28, 29. Roth (in his *Illustrations of that work*), p. 152, says the unintelligible utterance of *Vāch* in verse 10, means thunder. Whether this be the case, or not, the word appears to have a more general signification in the next verse, and to refer to speech in general, personified as a divine being. The speech which all the animals utter cannot of course be thunder.

In some of the preceding verses of this hymn there is a curious reference made to some sceptical doubts regarding the existence of *Indra*; which I quote here, though unconnected with the present subject.

R.V. viii. 89, 3, 4. *Pra su stomam bhārata vājayantam Indrāya satyaṁ yadi satyam asti | na Indro asti iti nemaḥ u tvaḥ āha kaḥ im darśa kam abhi stavāma | Ayam asmi jaritaḥ paśya mā iha viśvā jātāni abhi asmi mahnā | ṛitasya mā pradiśo varddhayanti ādardiṇo bhuvanā dardarīmi |*

“Present to *Indra* a hymn soliciting food, a true [hymn] if he truly exists. ‘*Indra* does not exist,’ says some one: ‘who has seen him? whom shall we praise?’ ‘I am here, worshipper’ [answers *Indra*]; ‘behold me, I surpass all creatures in greatness; the directors of the sacrifice augment me; crushing, I destroy the worlds.’”

Second: the next set of passages which I shall bring forward either refer to *Sarasvatī*, *Vāch*, etc. (various names of the goddess of speech, or different personifications of speech, or of prayer), or at least speak of prayer as *divine*.

R.V. i. 3, 11, 12. *Chodāyitrī sūnṛitānām chetantī sumatīnām | yajnaṁ dadhe Sarasvatī | . . . dhiyo viśvā virājati |*



“Sarasvatī, who furthers our hymns, and who is cognizant of our prayers, has sustained our sacrifice. . . . She enlightens all intellects.”

i. 22, 10. *Ā gnāḥ Agne iha avāse Hotrām yavishṭha Bhāratīm | Varūtrīm Dhisṅanām vaha |*

“Bring here, youthful Agni, to our help, the wives [of the gods], Hotrā, Bhāratī, Varūtrī, and Dhisṅanā.”

(Varūtrī, “the, eligible,” may be merely an epithet of Dhisṅanā which, according to Sāyana, at least, is = *vāg-devī*, “the goddess of speech.”)

i. 31, 11. *Ilām akrinvan manushāsya śūsanīm ityādi |*

“The gods made Ilā to be the instructress of men.” (See Professor Wilson’s note on this passage, p. 82 of his translation of the R.V. vol. i.)

ii. 3, 8. *Sarasvatī sādḥayanti dhiyaṁ naḥ Ilā devī Bhāratī viśvatūrtiḥ | Tisro devīḥ svadhayā barhīr edam achhidram pāntū śaraṇām niśhadya |*

“May Sarasvatī, perfecting our hymn, may the divine Ilā, and the all-pervading Bhāratī; may these three goddesses, seated on the place of sacrifice, preserve by their power the sacrificial grass uninjured.” (See Prof. Müller’s translation of part of the verse in the Journ. Roy. As. Soc. for 1867, vol. iii. p. 224.)

iii. 18, 3. . . . *Yavad īse brahmanā vandamānaḥ imām dhiyaṁ sata-seyāya devīm |*

“Worshipping thee with a prayer according to the best of my power, in this divine hymn, to obtain unbounded wealth.”

iv. 43, 1. *Ka u śravat katamo yajniyānām vandāru devaḥ katamo jushāte | kasya imām devīm amṛiteshu preshṭhām hṛidi śreshyāma sushṭutiṁ suhavyām |*

“Who will hear us? which of all the objects of adoration? which of all the gods will be gratified by our praises? In the heart of whom among the immortals can we lodge this our divine and dearest hymn of praise and invocation?”

vii. 34, 1. *Pra śukrā etu devī manīshā asmat sutasṭo ratho na vāḥ |*

“May prayer, brilliant and divine, proceed from us, like a well-fabricated chariot drawn by steeds.”

vii. 34, 9. *Abhi vo devīm dhīyam<sup>25</sup> dadidhvam pra vo devatrā vāchaṁ kṛinudhvam |*

<sup>25</sup> Compare the same phrase *dhīyam devīm* in A.V. iii. 15, 3, and *śatvyā vāchā* in A.V. viii. 1, 3.

“Receive towards you the *divine* hymn; proclaim the song for yourselves among the gods.”

viii. 27, 13. *Devañ devaṃ huvema vājasātaye gr̥ṇanto devyā dhīyā |*

“Let us invoke each of the gods to bestow riches, praising them with a *divine* hymn.”

viii. 90, 16. *Vācho-vidaṃ vāchaṃ udīrayantīm viśvāḥir dhībhir upa-  
tishṭhamānām | devīm devebhyaḥ pari eyushīm gām ā mā avṛikta marttyo  
dabhrachetāḥ |*

“Let not any mortal of little intelligence do violence to the cow, the *divine* Vāch, who is skilled in praise, who utters her voice aloud, who arrives with all the hymns, and who has come from the gods.”

ix. 33, 5. *Abhi brahmīr anūshata yadvīr ṛitasya mātaro marmṛijyante  
divaḥ śisum |*

“The great and sacred mothers of the sacrifice have uttered praise: they decorate the child of the sky.”

x. 71, 1. *Bṛihaspate prathamam vācho agram yat prairata nāmadhe-  
yam dadhānāḥ | yad eshām śreshṭham yad aripram āsīt preṇā tad eshām  
nīhitam guhā āviḥ | 2. Saktum iva titaunā punanto yatra dhīrāḥ manasā  
vācham akrata | atra sakhāyaḥ sakhyaṇi jānate bhadrā eshām lakshmīr  
nīhitā adhi vāchi | 3. Yajnaena vāchaḥ padavīyam āyan tām anvarindann  
rishishu pravishṭam | tām abhṛitya vyadadhuh purutrā tām sapta rebhāḥ  
abhi sannavante | 4. Uta tvaḥ paśyan na dadarśa vācham uta tvaḥ śṛiṇvan  
na śṛinoti enām | uto tvasmai tanvaṃ visasre jāyeva patye usatī suvāsāḥ |  
5. Uta tvaṃ sakhye sthirapītam āhur nainam hinvanty api vājineshu |  
adhenvā charati māyayā esha vācham śusruvān aphaḷam apushpām | 6.  
Yas tityāja sachi-vidaṃ sakhāyam na tasya vāchi api bhāgo asti | yad im  
śṛinoti alakaṃ śṛinoti na hi praveda sukṛitasya panthām |*

“1. When, o Bṛihaspati, men sent forth the first and earliest utterance of Vāch (speech), giving a name (to things), then all which was treasured within them, the most excellent and spotless, was disclosed through love. 2. Wherever the wise,—cleansing, as it were, meal with a sieve,—have uttered speech with intelligence, there friends recognize [their] friendly acts; an auspicious fortune is impressed upon their speech. 3. Through sacrifice they followed the track of Vāch, and found her entered into the rishis: <sup>26</sup> taking, they divided her into many portions: her the seven poets celebrate. 4. One man, seeing, sees not

<sup>26</sup> See the use made by Śāṅkara of this text, above, p. 105.

Vāch; another, hearing, hears her not; to another she discloses her form, as an elegantly attired and loving wife displays her person to her husband. 5. They say that one man has a sure defence in [her] friendship; men cannot overwhelm him even in the conflicts (of discussion); but that man consorts with an unprofitable delusion who has [only] heard speech [Vāch] which is [to him] without fruit or flower. 6. He who has abandoned his discerning friend, has no portion in Vāch; whatever he hears he hears in vain; he knows not the path of virtue."

The second, fourth, and fifth verses of this obscure hymn are quoted in the Nirukta, iv. 10; i. 19, 20; and are explained in Professor Roth's Illustrations. Verses 2 and 4 are also quoted and interpreted in the Mahābhāshya; see pp. 30 and 31 of Dr. Ballantyne's edition. The verse which is of most importance for my present purpose, is, however, the third, which speaks of Vāch having "entered into the rishis." See the First Volume of this work, pp. 254 f. The idea of Vāch being divided into many portions will be found again below in R.V. x. 125, 3.

x. 110, 8 (=Vāj. S. 29, 33). *Ā no yajnam Bhāratī tūyam etu Ilā manushvād iha chetayanti | tisro devīr barhir ā idam syonañ Sarasvatī svapasah sadantu |*

"Let Bhāratī come quickly here to our sacrifice, with Ilā, who instructs us like Manush [or like a man], and with Sarasvatī: let these three goddesses, skilful in rites, sit down upon this beautiful sacrificial grass."

x. 125, 3. *Ahañ rāshtrī sangamanī vasūnāñ chikitushī prathamā yajniyānām | tām mā devā vyadadhuh purutrā bhūristhātrām bhūri aveśayanti | 4. Mayā so annam atti yo vipāśyati yah prāniti ya rñ śrinoti uktam | amantavo mām te upa kshiyanti śrudhi śruta śraddhivañ te vadāmi | 5. Aham eva svayam idañ vadāmi jushtañ devebhir uta mānushebhiḥ | yañ kūmaye tañ tam ugrañ kṛiṇomi tam brahmānāñ tam rishīñ tañ sumedhām |*

"3. I am the queen, the centre of riches, intelligent, the first of the objects of adoration: the gods have separated me into many portions, have assigned me many abodes, and made me widely pervading. 4. He who has insight, he who lives, he who hears [my] sayings, eats food through me. These men dwell in my vicinity, devoid of understanding. Listen, thou who art learned, I declare to thee what is worthy of belief. 5. It is even I myself who make known this which is agreeable

both to gods and men. Him whom I love I make terrible, [I make] him a priest, [I make] him a rishi, [I make] him intelligent.”<sup>27</sup>

x. 176, 2. *Pra devaṁ devyā dhiyā bharaṭa Jātavedasam havyā no vakshad ānuṣhak |*

“By divine prayer bring hither Jātavedas: may he present our oblations in order.”

x. 177, 1. *Patangam aktam asurasya māyayā hrīḍā paśyanti manasā vipāśchitaḥ | samudre antaḥ kavayo vichakṣhate marichīnām padam ichhanti vedhasaḥ |* 2. *Patango vācham manasā bibhartti tāṁ Gandharvo avadad garbhē antaḥ | tāṁ dyotamānām svaryam manīṣhām ṛitasya pade kavayo nīpānti |*

“1. Sages behold with the heart and mind the Bird illuminated by the wisdom of the Asura: the wise perceive him in the (aerial) ocean: the intelligent seek after the abode of his rays. 2. The Bird cherishes speech with his mind: the Gandharva hath uttered her in the womb: the bards preserve in the place of sacred rites this shining and celestial intellect.” (See also x. 189, 3, *vāk patangāya dhīyate.*)

Third: I shall now adduce the passages in which other Vedic deities, whether singly or in concert, are spoken of as concerned in the production of the hymns:

*Aditi.*—In R.V. viii. 12, 14, Aditi is mentioned as fulfilling this function:

*Yad uta svarāje Aditiḥ stomam Indrāya jījanat puru-prasastam ūtaye ityādi |*

“When Aditi generated for the self-resplendent Indra a hymn abounding in praises, to supplicate succour,” etc.

*Agni.*—R.V. i. 18, 6, 7.—*Sadasaspatim adbhutam priyam Indrasya kāmyam | sanim medhām ayāsisham | yasmād ṛite na siddhyati yajno vipāśchitās chana | sa dhīnām yogam invati |*

“6. I have resorted, for wisdom, to Sadasaspati (Agni), the wonderful, the dear, the beloved of Indra, the beneficent; (7) without whom

<sup>27</sup> This passage, which is commonly understood of Vāch, occurs also in the Atharvaveda, iv. 30, 2 ff., but with some various readings, as *āvesayantaḥ* for *āvesayantīm*, and *śraddheyam* for *śraddhivam*, etc. The hymn is translated by Mr. Colebrooke, Ess. i. 32, or p. 16 of Williams and Norgate’s edition. Professor Whitney, as I learn from a private communication with which he has favoured me, is of opinion that there is nothing in the language of the hymn which is specially appropriated to Vāch, so as to justify the ascription of it to her as the supposed utterer.

the sacrifice of the wise does not succeed: he promotes the course of our hymns."

iv. 5, 3. *Sāma dvi-barhāḥ mahi tigma-bhrishṭiḥ sahasra-retāḥ vṛishabhas tuviśhmān † padañ na goḥ apagūlhañ vividvān Agnir mahyañ pra id u vohad manīshām | 6. Idam me Agne kiyate pāvaka aminate gurum bhārañ na manma | Bṛihad dadhātha dhṛiḥatā gabhīrañ yahvam pṛishṭham prayāsā saptadhātu. |*

"Agni, occupying two positions, the fierce-flaming, the infinitely prolific, the vigorous, the powerful, who knows the great hymn, mysterious as the track of a [missing] cow, has declared to me the knowledge [of it]. 6. To me who am feeble, though innoxious, thou, o Agni, the luminous, hast given, as a heavy load, this great, profound, and extensive Pṛishṭha hymn, of seven elements, with efficacious oblations."

iv. 6, 1. *Tvañ hi viśvam abhi asi manma pra vedhasāḥ chit tirasi manīshām |*

"Thou presidest over all thoughts [or prayers]; thou augmentest the intelligence of the sage."

iv. 11, 3. *Tvad Agne kāvyā tvad manīshās tvad ukthā jāyante rūdhyāni |*

"From thee, Agni, are generated poetic thoughts; from thee the products of the mind; from thee effective hymns."

x. 21, 5. *Agnir jāto Atharvanā vidad viśvāni kāvyā |*

"Agni, generated by Atharvan, is acquainted with all wisdom."

x. 91, 8. . . . *Medhākārañ vidathasya prasādhanam Agnim ityādi |*

"Agni, the giver of understanding, the accomplisher of sacrifice."

x. 4, 5. *Yad vo vayam pramināmo vratāni vidushāñ devāḥ avidusta-rāsaḥ | Agnis tad viśvam aprināti vidvān yebhir devān ṛitubhiḥ kalpayāti | Yat pākatrā manasā dāna-dakshāḥ na yajnasya manvate martyāsaḥ | Agnis tad hotā kratuvid vijānan yajishṭho devān ṛitūso yajāti |*

"When, o [ye] gods, we, the most unwise among the wise, transgress the ordinances of your worship, the wise Agni completes them all, at the stated seasons which he assigns to the gods. When men, devoted to sacrifice, do not, from their ignorance, rightly comprehend the mode of worship, Agni, the skilful sacrificer, and most eminent of priests, knowing the ceremonial, worships the gods at the proper seasons."

(Aṣṭ rites and hymns were closely united in the practice of the early Indians, the latter finding their application at the former; if Agni was

supposed to be the director of the one, viz., the oblations, he might easily come to be also regarded as aiding in the production of the other—the hymns. Verse 4 occurs also in the A.V. xix. 59, 1, 2, where, however, *āprīnātu* is read instead of *āprīnāti*, and in place of the words *yebhir devān*, etc., at the close of the verse, we have, *somaś cha yo brāhmaṇān ā viveśa* ! “and Soma, who entered into the priests.”)

*Brahmaṇaspati*.—R.V. i. 40, 5, 6. *Prā nūnam Brahmaṇaspatir mantram vadati ukthyam | yasmim. Indro Varuṇo Mitraḥ Aryamū devāḥ okāṃsi chakrīre | Tam iā vochema vidatheshu sambhavam mantram devāḥ anehasam ityādi |*

“Brahmaṇaspati (abiding in the worshipper’s mouth, according to the scholiast) utters the hymn accompanied with praise, in which the gods, Indra, Varuṇa, Mitra, and Aryaman, have made their abode. Let us utter, gods, at sacrifices, that spotless hymn, conferring felicity.” (Roth in his Lexicon considers *okas* to mean “good pleasure,” “satisfaction.” See also his Essay on Brahma and the Brāhmins, Journal of the Germ. Or. Soc. i. 74.)

*Bṛihaspati*.—R.V. ii. 23, 2. *Uśrāḥ iva sūryo jyotishā maho viśveshām ij janitā brahmaṇām asi |*

“As the sun by his lustre instantly generates rays, so art thou (Bṛihaspati) the *generator* of all prayers.”

x. 36, 5. *Ā Indro barhiḥ sīdatu pinvatām Iḷā Bṛihaspatiḥ sāmabhir rikvo archatu |*

“Let Indra sit upon the sacred grass; let Iḷā abound in her gifts; let the bard Bṛihaspati offer praise with hymns.”

*Gandharva*.—According to Professor Roth (see under the word in his Lexicon) the Gandharva is represented in the Veda as a deity who knows and reveals the secrets of heaven, and divine truths in general; in proof of which he quotes the following texts :

R.V. x. 139, 5. *Viśvāvasur abhi tad no grīnātu divyo Gandharvo rajaso vimānaḥ | Yad vā ghā satyam uta yad na vidma dhiyo hinvāno dhiyaḥ id naḥ avyāḥ*

“May the celestial Gandharva Viśvāvasu, who is the measurer of the atmosphere, declare to us that which is true, or which we know not. May he stimulate our hymns, and may he prosper our hymns.

A.V. ii. 1, 2. *Pra tad voched amṛitasya vidvān Gandharvo dhāmā paramam guhā yat |*

“May the Gandharva, who knows the (secret of) immortality, declare to us that supreme and mysterious abode.”

*Indra.*—R.V. iii. 54, 17. *Mahat tad vaḥ kavayaś chāru nāma yad ha devāḥ bhavatha viśve Indre | sakhā Ribhubhiḥ puruhūta priyebhir imām dhiyañ sātaye takshata naḥ |*

“Great, o sage deities, is that cherished distinction of yours, that ye are all associated with Indra. Do thou, much invoked (Indra), our friend, with the beloved Ribhus, *fabricate* (or dispose) this hymn for our welfare.” (This may merely mean that Indra was asked to give a favourable issue to the prayer of the worshipper, not to *compose* his hymn for him. See Roth’s Lexicon, under the word *taksh*, 3.)

vi. 62, 3. *Tvañ kavīñ chodayaḥ arkasātāv ityādi |*

“Thou (Indra) didst stimulate the poet in the composition of his hymns,” etc. (Sāyana renders *arkasātāv*, “for the sake of finding food.”)

vi. 18, 15. *Kṛishva kṛitno akṛitañ yat te asti ukthañ navīyo janyasva yajñaiḥ |*

“Energetic (Indra), do what thou hast never yet done; *generate* a new hymn with the sacrifices.”

vi. 34, 1. *Sam cha tve jagmur giraḥ Indra pūrvīr vi cha tvad yanti vibhvo manīshāḥ |*

“Many hymns are congregated in thee, o Indra, and numerous products of the mind issue from thee.” (This half-verse has been already quoted in p. 227.)

vi. 47, 10. *Indra mṛīḷa mahyañ jīvātum ichcha chodāya dhiyam ayaso na dhārām | Yat kincha ahañ tvāyur idañ vadāmi taj jushasva kṛidhi mā devavantam |*

“O Indra, gladden me, decree life for me, *sharpen my intellect* like the edge of an iron instrument. Whatever I, longing for thee, now utter, do thou accept; give me divine protection.” (Compare with the word *chodaya* the use of the word *prachodayāt* in the Gāyatrī, R.V. iii. 62, 10, which will be given below.)

vii. 97, 3. *Tam u namasā havirbhiḥ suśevam Brahmanaspatiñ grīñīshe | Indrañ śloko mahi daivyaḥ siśhaḥtu yo brahmano devakṛitasya rājā | 5. Tam ā no arkam amṛitāya jushṭam ime dhāsura amṛitāsaḥ purūjāḥ ityādi |*

“3. I invoke with reverence and with offerings the beneficent Brahmanaspati. Let a great and *divine* song celebrate Indra, who is king

of the prayer *made by the gods*. 5. May these ancient immortals make this our hymn acceptable to "the immortal," etc.

viii. 13, 7. *Pratna-vaj janaya girah sṛinudhi jaritur havam |*

"As of old, generate hymns; hear the invocation of thy worshipper."

viii. 52, 4. *Sa pratnathā kavi-vṛiḍhaḥ Indro vākasya vakshaniḥ |*

"Indra was of old the promoter of the poet, and the augments of the song."

viii. 78, 6. *Yaj jāyathā apūrya Maghavan Vṛittrā-hatyāya, | 'tat pṛithivīm aprathayas tad astabhnāḥ uta dyām | 7. 'Tat te yajno ajāyata tad arkaḥ uta haskṛitiḥ | tad viśvam abhibhūr asi yaj jātaṁ yach cha jantvam |*

"When, o unparalleled Maghavan, thou wast born to slay Vṛittra, thou didst then spread out the earth (the broad one) and sustain the sky: then thy sacrifice was produced, then the hymn, and the haskṛiti: (since) then thou surpassest everything that has been, or shall be, born."

Here therefore the hymn is asserted to be as old as Indra; though nothing more need be meant than that hymns then began to be produced. The hymn in which this verse occurs is not necessarily meant.

x. 112, 9. *Ni shu sīda gaṇapate gaṇeshu tvām āhur vipratamañ kavīnām | na rite tvat kriyate kinchana āre mahām arkam Maghavan chitram archa |*

"Lord of assemblies, sit amid our multitudes; they call thee the wisest of poets. *Nothing is done without, or apart from thee; sing, o Maghavan, a great and beautiful hymn.*" (Already quoted in p. 252.)

*Indra and Vishṇu.*—R.V. vi. 69, 2. *Yā viśvāsām janitārā matinām Indrā-Vishṇū kalaśā soma-dhānā | Pra vām girah śasyamānāḥ avantu pra stomāso gīyamānāsaḥ arkaiḥ |*

"Indra and Vishṇu, ye who are the generators of all hymns, who are the vessels into which soma is poured, may the praises which are now recited gratify you, and the songs which are chaunted with encomiums."

*Indra and Varuna.*—The following passage is not, properly speaking, a portion of the Rig-veda, as it is part of one of the Vālakhilyas or apocryphal additions (described in Vol. II. p. 210), which are found inserted between the 48th and 49th hymns of the 8th Maṇḍala. From its style, however, it appears to be nearly as old as some parts of the R.V.

xi. 6. *Indrāvarunā yad ṛishibhyo manīshām vācho matiñ śrutam adattam agre | yāni sthānāny asṛijanta dhīrāḥ yajnañ tanvānās tapasā bhyapaśyam |*



“Indra and Varuṇa, I have *seen* through austere-fervour that which *ye formerly gave* to the rishis, wisdom, understanding of speech, sacred lore, and all the places which the sages created, when performing sacrifice.” (See Vol. II. p. 220.)

*The Maruts.*—R.V. viii. 78, 3. *Pra vaḥ Indrāya bṛihate Maruto brahma archata |*

“Sing, Maruts, your hymn to the great Indra.” (Compare verse 1, of the same hymn, and the words *brahmakṛitā Mārutena gaṇena* in iii. 32, 2.)

*Pūshan.*—R.V. x. 26, 4. *Maṁsīmahi tvā vayam asmākaṁ deva Pūshan matinām cha sādhanam viprānām cha ādhavaṇ |*

“We have called thee to mind, divine Pūshan, the accomplisher of our hymns, and the stimulator of sages.” (The first clause of this, however, may merely mean that the god gives effect to the wishes expressed in the hymns. Compare vi. 56, 4: *Yad adya tvā puruṣṭuta bravāma dasra mantumaḥ | tat su no manma sādahaya |* “Accomplish for us the (objects of the) hymn, which we utter to thee to-day, o powerful and wise god.”

*Savitṛi.*—R.V. iii. 62 (= S.V. ii. 812, and Vāj. S. iii. 35). *Tat Savitur varenyam bhargo devasya dhīmahi | dhiyo yo naḥ prachodayāt |*

“We have received that excellent glory of the divine Savitṛi; may he stimulate our understandings [or hymns, or rites].”

(This is the celebrated Gāyatrī, the most sacred of all the texts in the Veda. See Colebrooke’s Misc. Ess. i. pp. 29, 30, 127, and 175; or pp. 14, 15, 78, and 109 of Williams and Norgate’s ed. Benfey (S.V. p. 277) translates the Gāyatrī thus: “May we receive the glorious brightness of this, the generator, of the god who shall prosper our works.” On the root from which the word *dhīmahi* is derived, and its sense, see also Böhtlingk and Roth’s Lexicon, *s.v.* *dhā* and *dhī*; and compare my article “On the Interpretation of the Veda,” Journ. Roy. As. Soc. p. 372.

The Linga Purāṇa (Part II. sec. 48, 5 ff., Bombay lithographed ed.) gives the following “varieties” of the Gāyatrī, adapted to modern Śaiva worship:

*Gāyatrī-bhedāḥ | Tatpuruṣhāya vidmahe vāg-viśuddhāya dhīmahi | Tan naḥ S'ivāḥ prachodayāt | Gaṇāṁdikāyai vidmahe karma-siddhyai cha dhīmahi | Tan no Gaurī prachodayāt | Tatpuruṣhāya vidmahe Mahā-*

*devāya dhīmahi | Tan no Rudrah prachodayāt | Tatpurushāya vidmahe Vakratuṅḍāya dhīmahi | Tan no Dantiḥ prachodayāt | Mahāsenāya vidmahe vāg-viśuddhāya dhīmahi | Tan naḥ Skandah prachodayāt | Tīkshṇaśṛṅgāya vidmahe Vedapādāya dhīmahi | Tan no Vṛishah prachodayād ityādi |*

“1. We contemplate That Purusha, we meditate<sup>28</sup> him: who is pure in speech; may That Sīva stimulate<sup>c</sup> us. 2. We contemplate Gaṇāmbikā, and we meditate Karmasiddhi (the accomplishment of works); may That Gaurī stimulate us. 3. We contemplate That Purushā, and we meditate Mahādeva; may that Rudra stimulate us. 4. We contemplate That Purushā, and we meditate Vakratuṅḍa (Ganeśa); may That Danti (the elephant) stimulate us. 5. We contemplate Mahāsenā (Kārtikeya, and we meditate him who is pure in speech; may That Skanda stimulate us. 6. We contemplate Tīkshṇaśṛṅga (the sharp-horned), and we meditate the Veda-footed; may Vṛisha (the bull) stimulate us.”

*Soma.*—R.V. vi. 47, 3. *Ayam me pītaḥ udiyartti vācham ayam manīshām usatim ajīgaḥ |*

“This [soma], when drunk, stimulates my speech [or hymn]; this called forth the ardent thought.”

It may be said that this and the other following texts relating to Soma, should not be quoted as proofs that any idea of divine inspiration was entertained by the ancient Indian bards, as they can mean nothing more than that the rishis were sensible of a stimulating effect on their thoughts and powers of expression, produced by the exhilarating draughts of the juice of that plant in which they indulged. But the rishis had come to regard Soma as a god, and apparently to be passionately devoted to his worship. See the Second Volume of this work, pp. 470 ff., and especially pp. 474, 475; and my account of this deity in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1865, pp. 135 ff.

Compare what is said of the god Dionysus (or Bacchus) in the Bacchæ of Euripides, 294 :

Μάντις δ' ὁ δαίμων ἄξει· τὸ γὰρ βακχεύσιμον  
 Καὶ τὸ ρανιώδες μαντικὴν πολλὴν ἔχει.  
 "Ὅταν γὰρ ὁ θεὸς εἰς τὸ σῶμ' ἔλθῃ πολὺς,  
 Λέγει τὸ μέλλον τοὺς μεμνηότας ποιεῖ.

<sup>28</sup> I retain here this sense of the word, which is probably the most commonly received.

“And this deity is a prophet. For Bacchic excitement and raving have in them much prophetic power. For when this god enters in force into the body, he causes those who rave to foretell the future.”

R.V. viii. 48, 3. *Apāṃ somam amṛitāḥ abhūma aganma jyotir avi-  
dāma devān | kiṃ nūnam asmān kṛiṇavad arātiḥ kim u dhṛttir amṛita  
martyasya |*

“We have drunk the soma, we have become immortal, we have entered into light, we have known the gods; what can an enemy now do to us? what can the malice of any mortal effect, o immortal god?”<sup>29</sup>

(This passage is quoted in the commentary of Gauḍapāda on the Sāṅkhya Kārikā, verse 2, and is translated (incorrectly as regards the last clause), by Prof. Wilson, in p. 13 of his English version.)

A curious parallel to this last Vedic text is to be found in the satirical drama of Euripides, the Cyclops, 578 ff.; though there, of course, the object is merely to depict the drunken elevation of the monster Polyphemus:

‘Ο δ’ οὐρανός μοι συμμεμιγμένος δοκεῖ  
Τῆ γῆ φέρεσθαι, τοῦ Διός τε τὸν θρόνον  
Λεύσσω τὸ πᾶν τε δαιμόνων ἄγρον σέβας.

“The sky, commingled with the earth, appears  
To whirl around; I see the throne of Jove,  
And all the awful glory of the gods.”

R.V. ix. 25, 5. *Arusho janayan girah Somah pavate ayushag Indraṃ  
gachchan kavikratuh |*

“The ruddy Soma, generating hymns, with the powers of a poet (or with the understanding of a sage), united with men, is purified, resorting to Indra.”

ix. 76, 4. . . . *Pitā matinām asamashṭa-kāvyaḥ |*

“[Soma] father of our hymns, of incomparable wisdom.”

ix. 95, 2. *Hariḥ srijānaḥ pathyām ṛitasya iyartti vācham ariteva  
nāvam | devo devānām guhyāni nāma āviskṛiṇoti barhishi pravāche |*

<sup>29</sup> This text may be versified as follows:

We’ve quaffed the soma bright,  
And are immortal grown;  
We’ve entered into light,  
And all the gods have known.  
What foe-man now can harm,  
Or mortal vex us, more?  
Through thee, beyond alarm,  
Immortal god, we soar.

“The golden [Soma] when poured out along the path of the ceremony, sends forth his voice, as a rower propels a boat. A god, he reveals the mysterious natures of the gods to the bard upon the sacred grass.” (See R.V. ii. 42, 1, and x. 116, 9, quoted in p. 240.)

ix. 96, 5 (= S.V. ii. 293-5). *Somaḥ pavate janitā matinām janitā divo janitā prithivyēḥ | janitā Agner janitā sūryasya śjanitā Indrasya janitā uta Vishnoḥ | 6. Brahmā devānām padavīḥ kavīnām ṛishir viprānām mahisho mṛigānām | śyeno grīdhrānām svadhitiḥ, vapānām Somaḥ pavitram ati eti rebhan | 7. Prāvīvipad vāchaḥ ūsmiṁ na sindhur girah somaḥ pavamāno manīshāḥ ityādi |* “

“Soma is purified, he who is the generator of hymns, of Dyaus, of Pṛithivī, of Agni, of Sūrya, of Indra, and of Vīshṇu. 6. Soma, who is a brāhmān-priest among the gods (or priests),<sup>30</sup> a leader among the poets, a rishi among sages, a buffalo among wild beasts, a falcon among vultures, an axe amid the forests, advances to the filter with a sound. The purified Soma, like the sea rolling its waves, has poured forth songs, hymns, and thoughts,” etc. (See Benfey’s translation of this passage in his Sāma-veda, pp. 238 and 253; and Nirukta-pariśiṣṭa, ii. 12, 13.)

*Varuṇa*.—R.V. viii. 41, 5, 6. *Yo dharttā bhuvanānām yaḥ usrānām apīchyā veda nāmāni guhyā | sa kavīḥ kāvyā puru rūpam dyaur iva pushyati . . . | Yasmin viśvāni kāvyā chakre nābhīr ivi śritā ityādi |*

“He who is the upholder of the worlds (*Varuṇa*), who knows the secret and mysterious natures of the cows, he, a sage [or poet], manifests sage [or poetical] works, as the sky does many forms. . . . In him all sage works abide, as the nave within a wheel,” etc. (See R.V. vii. 87, 4, in p. 248, and ix. 95, 2, above, in this page.)

*Varuṇa, Mitra, and Aryaman*.—R.V. vii. 66, 11. *Vi ye dadhuḥ śara-dam māsam ād ahar yajnam aktuṁ cha ād ṛicham | anāpyam Varuṇo Mitraḥ Aryamā kshatraṁ rājānaḥ āśata |*

“The kings, *Varuṇa*, *Mitra*, and *Aryaman*, who made the autumn, the month, and then the day, the sacrifice, night, and then the Rich, possess an unrivalled power.”<sup>31</sup> “

<sup>30</sup> It appears from Prof. Benfey’s note on S.V. ii. 294 (=R.V. ix. 96, 6, quoted here), that the scholiast on that passage makes *devānām* = *ṛitvijām*, “priests.”

<sup>31</sup> As this verse ascribes the formation of the Rich to the gods who are named in it, my remarks, in p. 3 above, that the Purusha Sūkta contains “the only passage in

The following passage of the Rig-veda has (as we have seen above, p. 69, note 79, and p. 75) been quoted by Indian commentators and aphorists to prove the eternity of the Veda, on its own authority:

R.V. xxi. 64, 6. *Tasmai nūnam abhidyave vāchā Virūpa nityayā | vṛishṇe chodasva sushṭutim |*

“Send forth praises, Virūpa, to this heaven-aspiring and prolific Agni, with perpetual voice.” (See i. 45, 3, etc., quoted above, p. 220.)

There is, however, no reason whatever to suppose that the words *nityayā vāchā* mean anything more than *perpetual voice*. There is no ground for imagining that the rishi entertained any such conception as became current among the systematic theologians of later times, that his words were eternal. The word *nitya* is used in the same sense “perpetual” in R.V. ix. 12, 7 (= S.V. ii. 55, 2), where it is said of Soma: *nitya-stotro vanaspatir dhīnām antar ityādi |* “The monarch of the woods, continually-praised, among the hymns,” etc., as well as in the two following texts:

R.V. ix. 92, 3.—*Somaḥ punānaḥ sadaḥ eti nityam ityādi |*

“The pure Soma comes to his perpetual abode [or to his abode continually], etc.

x. 39, 14 (quoted above, p. 236). *Nityāñ na sūnuñ tanayañ dadhānāḥ |*

“Continuing the series like an unbroken line of descendants.”

The tenor of the numerous texts adduced in this Section seems clearly to establish the fact that some at least of the ancient Indian rishis conceived themselves to be prompted and directed, in the composition of their hymns and prayers, by supernatural aid, derived from various deities of their pantheon. It may add force to the proof derived from these texts, and show that I am the less likely to have misunderstood their purport and spirit, if I adduce some evidence that a similar conception was not unknown in another region of the ancient Indo-European world, and that the expressions in which the early Grecian bards laid claim to an inspiration emanating from the Muses, or from Apollo, were not mere figures of speech, but significant, originally, of a popular belief. Most of the following passages, from Hesiod the hymns of the R.V. in which the creation of the Vedas is described,” requires some qualification.

and Homer, in which this idea is enunciated, are referred to in Mr. Grote's History of Greece, i. 478.

Hesiod, Theogony, 22 :

“Αἰ νύ ποθ' Ἡσίοδον καλὴν ἐδίδαξαν ἀοιδὴν  
 Ἄρνας ποιμαίνονθ' Ἐλικῶνος ὑπο ζαθέοιο.  
 Τόνδε ἦέ με πρῶτιστα θεαὶ πρὸς μῦθον ἔειπαν,  
 Μοῦσαι Ὀλυμπιάδες, κί ὕραι Διὸς ἀγιόχοιο.  
 Ποιμένες ἄγραυλοι, κάκ' ἐλέγχεα, γαστέρες δύν,  
 Ἴδμεν ψεύδεα πολλὰ λέγειν ἐτύμοισιν ὁμίᾳ,  
 Ἴδμεν δ', ἔντ' ἐθέλωμεν, ἀληθέα μυθήσασθαι.  
 Ὡς ἔφασκ' ἑκούραι μεγάλιν Διὸς ἀρτίπειαι  
 Καί μοι σκῆπτρον ἔδον, δάφνης ἐριθηλέος ὄζον,  
 Δρέψασαι θηητόν· ἐνέπνευσαν δέ μοι ἀυδὴν  
 Θεῆην, ὡς κλείοιμι τὰ τ' ἐσόμενα, πρὸ τ' ἐόντα,  
 Καί με κέλονθ' ὑμνεῖν μακάρων γένος αἰὲν ἐόντων,  
 Σφᾶς τ' ἀντὰς πρῶτόν τε καὶ ὕστερον αἰὲν αἰεδεῖω.

“The Muses once conferred the dower  
 On Hesiod of poetic power,  
 As underneath the sacred stéep  
 Of Helicon he fed his sheep.  
 And thus they spake, ‘Inglorious race  
 Of rustic shepherds, gluttons base,  
 Full many fictions we can weave  
 Which by their truthlike air deceive;  
 But, know, we also have the skill  
 True tales to tell, whene'er we will.’  
 They spake, and gave into my hand  
 A fir luxuriant laurel wand;  
 And breathed into me speech divine,  
 That two-fold science might be mine;  
 That future scenes I might unveil,  
 And of the past unfold the tale.  
 They bade me hymn the race on high  
 Of blessed gods who never die;  
 And evermore begin my lays,  
 And end them, with the Muses' praise.”

Hesiod, Theogony, 94 :

Ἐκ γὰρ Μουσάων καὶ ἐκηβόλου Ἀπόλλωνος  
 Ἄνδρες ἀοῖδοι ἔασιν ἐπὶ χθόνα καὶ κίθαριστάι,  
 Ἐκ δὲ Διὸς βασιλῆες.

“The bards who strike the lyre and sing,  
 From Phœbus and the Muses spring:  
 From Jove's high race descends the king.”

The following are the words in which the author of the Iliad invokes the aid of the Muses, to qualify him for enumerating the generals of the Grecian host (Iliad, ii. 484):

Ἔσπετε νῦν μοι Μοῦσαι Ολύμπια δωμάτων ἔχουσαι,  
 ἡμεῖς γὰρ θεαὶ ἐστε πάρεστε τε ἴστε τε πάντα,  
 ἡμεῖς δὲ κλέος διὸν ἀκούομεν ὃδὲ τι ἴδμεν.

“Tell me the truth, ye Muses, tell,  
 Ye who on high Olympus dwell;  
 For, omnipresent, ye can scan  
 Whate’ever on earth is done by man,  
 Whilst we vague rumours only learn  
 And nothing certain can discern.”

But the Muses could also take away, as well as impart, the gift of song, as appears from *Iliad*, ii. 594 ff.:

Ἐνθα τε Μοῦσαι

Ἀντόμεναι Θάμυριν τὸν Ὀρήϊκα παῦσαν δοιδῆς·  
 Στεῦτο γὰρ ἐυχόμενος νικησέμεν, ἔπερ ἂν αὐταὶ  
 Μοῦσαι αἰδοῖεν, κοῦραι Διὸς ἀγιόχοιο.  
 Αἱ δὲ χολωσάμεναι πηρὸν θέσαν, αὐτὰρ δοιδῆν  
 Θεσπεσίην ἀφέλοντο, καὶ ἐκέλαθον κιθαριστῶν.

“’Twas there the Muses, we are told,  
 Encountered *Thamyris* of old.  
 He boasted that the minstrel throng  
 To him must yield the prize of song;  
 Yes, even although, among the rest,  
 The Muses should the palm contest.  
 Aware of his presumption, they  
 Both took his skill in song away,  
 And power to wake the tuneful lyre;—  
 And struck him blind, in vengeful ire.”

The following passages from the *Odyssey* refer to *Demodocus*, the bard who sang at the court of *Alcinous*, King of the *Phæacians* (*Odyssey*, viii. 43 ff.):

Καλέσασθε δὲ θεῖον δοιδόν,  
 Δημόδοκον· τῷ γάρ ῥα θεὸς πέρι δῶκεν αἰοιδῆν,  
 Τέρπειν, ὅππῃ θυμὸς ἐποτρύνῃσιν αἰεῖδεν.

“And go, the bard divine invite:—  
 The god hath given him skill  
 By song all others to delight,  
 Whenever he may will.”

*Odyssey*, viii. 62 ff.:

Κῆρυξ δ' ἐγγύθεν ἦλθεν ἄγων ἐριήρον αἰοιδόν·  
 Τὸν πέρι Μοῦσ' ἐφίλησε δίδου δ' ἀγαθὸν τε κακὸν τε,  
 Ὀφθαλμῶν μὲν ἄμπερσε δίδου δ' ἠδέϊαν αἰοιδῆν.

“The herald came, and within him brought  
 The bard whom all with longing sought.  
 The Muse's darling, he had good  
 As well as ill from her received;  
 With power of dulcet song endued,  
 But of his eyesight too bereaved.”

Here the Muse is described as the arbitress of the bard's destiny, in other points besides the gift and withdrawal of song.

Odyssey, viii. 73 :

Μοῦσ' ἄρ' αἰοῖδὸν ἀνῆκεν ἀειδέμεναι κλέα ἀνδρῶν κ.τ.λ.

“Stirr'd by the Muse the bard extoll'd  
In song the deeds of warriors bold.”

A little further on, Ulysses says of Demodocus (Odyssey, viii. 479 ff.) :

Πᾶσι γὰρ ἀνθρώποισιν ἐπιχθονίοισιν αἰδοῖ  
Τιμῆς ἔμμοροι εἰσι καὶ αἰδοῦς, οὐνεκ' ἄρβι σφέας  
Ἵοιμας Μοῦσ' ἐδίδαξε, φίλησε δὲ φῦλον αἰοῖδῶν.

“All mortal men with awe regard,  
And honourably treat, the bard;  
Because the Muse has taught him lays,  
And dearly loves his tuneful race.”<sup>32</sup>

And again he addresses him thus (Odyssey, viii. 487) :

Δημόδοκ', ἔξοχα δὴ σε βροτῶν ἀνίξομαι ἀπάντων.  
'Η σέ γε Μοῦσ' ἐδίδαξε Διὸς παῖς, ἣ σέ γ' Ἀπόλλων.  
Λίην γὰρ κατὰ κόσμον Ἀχαιῶν διτὸν αἰεῖδεις, κ.τ.λ.

“Demodocus, beyond the rest  
Of mortals I esteem thee blest.  
For thee, the Muse, Jove's child, has taught,  
Or Phœbus in thee skill has wrought;  
So perfectly thou dost relate  
The story of the Argives' fate.”<sup>32</sup>

Phemius, the Ithacæan minstrel, thus supplicates Ulysses to spare his life (Odyssey, xxii. 345 ff.) :

Ἄντῳ τοι μετόπισθ' ἄχος ἔσσεται, εἶκεν αἰοῖδόν  
Πέφνης, ὅς τε θεοῖσι καὶ ἀνθρώποισιν αἰείδω.  
'Αυτοδίδακτος δ' εἰμι, θεὸς δέ μοι ἐν φρεσὶν ὄϊμας  
Παντοίας ἐνέφουσιν.

“Thou soon wilt grieve, if thou the bard shouldst slay,  
To gods as well as men who pours his lay.  
Self-taught I am; and yet within my mind  
A god hath gendered strains of every kind.”

<sup>32</sup> “That is,” says Mr. Grote, “Demodocus has either been inspired as a poet by the muse, or as a prophet by Apollo, for the Homeric Apollo is not the god of song. Kalchas, the prophet, receives his inspiration from Apollo, who confers upon him the same knowledge, both of past and future, as the Muses give to Hesiod.” But does not this passage (Odyssey viii. 488) rather show that the Homeric Apollo was the god of song, as well as the bestower of prophetic intuition; and do we not learn the same from Iliad, i. 603? In any case, it is quite clear from Theog. 94, quoted above, that Hesiod regarded Apollo in this character.



The early Greeks believed that the gift of prophecy also, as well as that of song, was imparted by the gods to mortals. This appears both from Hesiod, as already quoted, and from the following passage of Homer (*Iliad*, i. 69):

Κάλχας Θεστορίδης, δειωνοπόλων ὄχ' ἄριστος,  
 \*Ὅς ἤδη τὰ τ' ἐόντα τὰ τ' ἐσσόμενα, πρό τ' ἐόντα,  
 \*Καὶ νήεσσ' ἠγήσατ' Ἀχαιοῶν Ἴλιον ἔισω,  
 \*Ἦγ διὰ μαντοσύνην, τήν δι πόρε Φοῖβος Ἀπόλλων.  
 "Of augurs wisest, Calchas knew  
 Things present, past, and future too.  
 By force of that divining skill,  
 Vouchsafed to him by Phœbus' will,  
 The Grecian fleet he safely bore  
 From Aulis' bay to Ilion's shore."

It is thus argued by Mr. Grote that the early Greeks really believed in the inspiration of their bards by the Muses (*History of Greece*, i. 477 ff.):

"His [the early Greek's] faith is ready, literal and uninquiring, apart from all thought of discriminating fact from fiction, or of detecting hidden and symbolized meaning: it is enough that what he hears be intrinsically plausible and seductive, and that there be no special cause to provoke doubt. And if indeed there were, the poet overrules such doubts by the holy and all-sufficient authority of the Muse, whose omniscience is the warrant for his recital, as her inspiration is the cause of his success. The state of mind, and the relation of speaker to hearers, thus depicted, stand clearly marked in the terms and tenor of the ancient epic, if we only put a plain meaning upon what we read. The poet—like the prophet, whom he so much resembles—sings under heavenly guidance, inspired by the goddess to whom he has prayed for her assisting impulse. She puts the words into his mouth and the incidents into his mind; he is a privileged man, chosen as her organ, and speaking from her revelations. As the Muse grants the gift of song to whom she will, so she sometimes in her anger snatches it away, and the most consummate human genius is then left silent and helpless. It is true that these expressions, of the Muse inspiring and the poet singing a tale of past times, have passed from the ancient epic to compositions produced under very different circumstances, and have now degenerated into unmeaning forms of speech; but they gained currency originally in their genuine and literal acceptance. If poets had from

the beginning written or recited, the predicate of singing would never have been ascribed to them; nor would it ever have become customary to employ the name of the Muse as a die to be stamped on licensed fiction, unless the practice had begun when her agency was invoked and hailed in perfect good faith. Belief, the fruit of deliberate inquiry, and a rational scrutiny of evidence, is in such an age unknown; the simple faith of the time slides in unconsciously, when the imagination and feeling are exalted; and inspired authority is at once understood, easily admitted, and implicitly confided in."

If we extend our researches over the pages of Homer, we shall speedily discover numerous other instances of a belief in divine interference in human affairs, not merely (1) in the general government of the world, in the distribution of good and evil, and the allotment of the diversified gifts, intellectual, moral, and physical, which constitute the innumerable varieties of human condition, but also (2) in the way of special suggestion, guidance, encouragement, and protection, afforded to individuals.

Illustrations of the general control exercised by the gods over the fortunes of mankind may be found in the following passages of the Iliad,—xiii. 730 ff., and of the Odyssey,—i. 347 f.; iv. 236 f.; vi. 188 f.; viii. 167–175; xvii. 218, 485 ff.

The following are illustrations of the special interference of the gods on behalf of their favourites: Iliad, i. 194 ff., 218; iii. 380 ff.; v. 1 ff.; vii. 272; xiii. 60 f., 435; xvi. 788 ff.:—Odyssey, i. 319 ff.; iii. 26 ff.; xiv. 216 f., 227; xvi. 159 ff.<sup>33</sup> Of the latter class of passages, I quote two specimens.

Odyssey, i. 319 ff.:

Ἡ μὲν ἄρ' ὡς εἰποῦσ' ἀπέβη γλαυκῶπις Ἀθήνη,  
 Ὀρνις δ' ὡς ἀνοπᾶια διέπτατο· τῶ δ' ἐνὶ θυμῷ  
 Θῆκε μένος καὶ θάρσος, ὑπέμνησέν τε ἔ πατρός  
 Μᾶλλον ἤ τ' ἢ τὸ πάροιθεν· ὁ δὲ φρεσὶν ἦσι νοήσας  
 Θάμβησεν κατὰ θυμόν, δῖσ' αὖτο γὰρ θεὸν εἶναι.

"As thus she spake, Athene flew  
 Aloft, and soared beyond his view.  
 His soul she filled with force and fire,  
 And stronger memory of his sire.  
 Amazed, he felt the inward force,  
 And deemed a god faust be its source."

<sup>33</sup> Compare Prof. Blackie's dissertation on the theology of Homer in the "Classical Museum," vol. vii. pp. 414 ff.

When Telemachus urges his youth and inexperience as a reason for diffidence in approaching Nestor, Minerva says to him (Odyssey, iii. 26):

Τηλέμαχ', ἄλλα μὲν αὐτὸς ἐνὶ φρεσὶ σῆσι νοήσεις,  
 Ἄλλα δὲ καὶ δαίμων ὑποθήσεται· ὃν γὰρ οἶω  
 Ὅου σε θεῶν ἀέκητι γενέσθαι τε τραφέμεν τε.

"Some things thy mind itself shall reach,  
 And other things a god shall teach;  
 For born and bred thou ne'er hadst been  
 Unless the gods had will'd, I ween.

These passages, however, afford only one exemplification of the idea which runs through, and in fact created, the entire mythology of the Greeks, viz. that all the departments of life and of nature were animated, controlled, and governed by particular deities, by whom they were represented, and in whom they were personified.

The Indian mythology,—as is evident to every reader of the Vedas, as well as (to some extent) to the student of the Purānas,—is distinguished by the same tendency as the Grecian. Indra, Agni, Vāyu, Savitṛi, Sūrya, and many other gods are nothing else than personifications of the elements, while Vāch or Sarasvatī and some other deities, represent either the divine reason by which the more gifted men were supposed to be inspired, or some mental function, or ceremonial abstraction.

In the later religious history, however, of the two races, the Hellenic and the Indian, there is in one respect a remarkable divergence. Though the priestesses of the different oracles, and perhaps some other pretenders to prophetic intuition, were popularly regarded as speaking under a divine impulse,<sup>34</sup> the idea of inspiration as attaching to poems or other compositions of a religious, didactic, or philosophical character, very soon became extinct. The Greeks had no sacred Scriptures. Although a supernatural character was popularly ascribed to Pythagoras, Epimenides, and Empedocles, the Hellenic philosophers in general spoke and wrote in dependence on their own reason alone. They rarely professed to be guided by any supernatural assistance, or claimed any divine authority for their dogmas.<sup>35</sup> Nor (unless such

<sup>34</sup> See Nägelsbach's *Nachhomerische Theologie*, pp. 173 ff., and Dr. Karl Köhler's *Prophetismus der Hebræer und die Mantik der Griechen in ihrem gegenseitigen Verhältniss*, (Darmstadt, 1860), pp. 39 ff.

<sup>35</sup> I express myself cautiously here, as a learned friend profoundly versed in the study of Plato is of opinion that there are traces in the writings of that author of a

may have been the case at a very late period) was any infallibility claimed for any of them by their successors.

In India, on the other hand, the indistinct, and perhaps hesitating, belief which some of the ancient rishis seem to have entertained in their own inspiration was not suffered to die out in the minds of later generations. On the contrary this belief grew up (as we have seen above, pp. 57-138, and 207 ff.) by degrees into a fixed persuasion that all the literary productions of those early sages had not only resulted from a supernatural impulse, but were infallible, divine, and even eternal. These works have become the sacred Scriptures of India. And in the popular opinion, if not in the estimation of the learned, most Indian works of any importance, of a religious, scientific, or philosophical kind, which were produced at a later period, have come to be regarded as inspired, as soon as the lapse of ages had removed the writers beyond familiar or traditional knowledge, and invested their names with a halo of reverence.

To return from this digression to the inquiry which was being pursued regarding the opinions of the ancient Vedic rishis on the subject of their own inspiration :

How, it will be asked, are we to reconcile this impression which the rishis manifest of being prompted by supernatural aid, with the circumstance, which seems to be no less distinctly proved by the citations made in the preceding section (pp. 232 ff.), that they frequently speak of themselves as having *made, fabricated, or generated* the hymns, without apparently betraying any consciousness that in this process they were inspired or guided by any extraneous assistance ?

In reply to this I will only suggest (1) that possibly the idea of inspiration may not have been held by the earliest rishis, but may have grown up among their successors ; or (2) that it may have been entertained by some rishis, and not by others ; or again (3), if both ideas claim to supernatural guidance, though by no means to infallibility. See also the mention made of the inspiration ascribed to Pythagoras, in Mr. Grote's *Greece*, iv. 528, 530 ; and the notices of Epimenides and Empedocles given by the same author, vol. iii. 112 ff., vol. vii. p. 174, and vol. viii. 465 f. ; and compare on the same subjects Bp. Thirlwall's *Hist. of Greece*, ii. 32 ff., and 155 ff. ; and Plato, *Legg.* i. p. 642. See also Prof. Geddes's *Phædo*, note P. p. 251, and the passages there referred to ; and the Tract of Dr. Köhler, above cited, pp. 60 and 64.

can be traced to the same author, we may suppose that the one notion was uppermost in his mind at one moment, and the other at another; or (4) that he had no very clearly defined ideas of inspiration, and might conceive that the divine assistance of which he was conscious, or which at least he implored, did not render his hymn the less truly the production of his own mind; that, in short, the existence of a human, was not incompatible with that of a superhuman, element in its composition.

The first of these suppositions is, however, attended with this difficulty, that both conceptions, viz., that of independent unassisted composition, and that of inspiration, appear to be discoverable in all parts of the Rig-veda. As regards the second supposition, it might not be easy (in the uncertainty attaching to the Vedic tradition contained in the Anukramaṇī or Vedic index) to show that such and such hymns were written by such and such rishis, rather than by any others. It may, however, become possible by continued and careful comparison of the Vedic hymns, to arrive at some probable conclusions in regard to their authorship, so far at least as to determine that particular hymns should probably be assigned to particular eras, or families, rather than to others. I must, however, leave such investigations to be worked out, and the results applied to the present subject, by more competent scholars than myself.

III. While in many passages of the Veda, an efficacy is ascribed to the hymns, which is perhaps nothing greater than natural religion teaches all men to attribute to their devotions, in other texts a mystical, magical, or supernatural power is represented as residing in the prayers and metres. (See Weber's Vājasaneyi-Sanhitā specimen, p. 61; and Vol. I. of this work, p. 242.) Some of the following texts are of the latter kind.

Thus in R. V. i. 67, 3, it is said :

*Ajo na kshāṁ dadhāra, pṛithivīm tastambha dyām mantrebhik satyair |*

“(Agni) who like the unborn, supported the broad earth, and upheld the sky by true prayers.”

The following is part of Śāyana's annotation on this verse :

*Mantrair divo dhāraṇām Taittirīye samāmnātām | “devāḥ vai ādit-  
yasya, svarga-lokasya parācho 'tipātād abibhayaḥ | taṁ chhandobhir adri-  
han dhṛityā” iti | yadvā satyair mantrair stūyamāno 'gnir dyām tas-  
tambha iti |*

“The supporting of the sky by mantras is thus recorded in the Taittirīya: ‘The gods feared lest the sun should fall down from the heaven; they propped it up by metres.’ Or the verse may mean that Agni, being lauded by true mantras, upheld the sky.”

See also R.V. i. 96, 2, quoted above, in p. 225, and Ait. Br. ii. 33, cited in the First Volume of this work, p. 180.

i. 164, 25. *Jagatā sindhuṃ divi astabhāyad rathantare sūryam pari apaśyat | gāyatrasya samidhas tisraḥ āhus tato mahānā pra rīrīthe mahitvā |*

“By the Jagatī metre he fixed the waters in the sky; he beheld the sun in the Rathantara (a portion of the Sāma-veda): there are said to be three divisions of the Gāyatra; hence it surpasses [all others] in power and grandeur.”

iii. 53, 12. *Viśvāmītrasya rakshati brahma idam Bhārataṃ janam |*

“The prayer of Viśvāmītra protects this tribe of the Bharatas.” (See Vol. I. pp. 242 and 342.)

v. 31, 4. *Brahmāṇaḥ Indram mahayanto arkair avardhayan Ahaye hantavai u |*

“The priests magnifying Indra by their praises, have fortified him for slaying Agni.”

Compare the following texts already quoted, iii. 32, 13, p. 226; vi. 44, 13, p. 227; viii. 6, 11, p. 228; viii. 8, 8, p. 243; viii. 44, 12, p. 230; viii. 63, 8, p. 230; x. 67, 13, p. 244; and also i. 10, 5; ii. 11, 2; ii. 12, 14; iii. 34, 1, 2; v. 31, 10; viii. 6, 1, 21, 31, 35; viii. 13, 16; viii. 14, 5, 11; viii. 82, 27; and viii. 87, 8, where a similar power of augmenting, or strengthening, the gods is attributed to the hymns.

v. 40, 6. . . . *Gūḷham sūryaṃ tamasā apavratena turīyena brahmanā avindad Atriḥ |* 8. . . . *Atriḥ sūryasya divi chakshur ādhāt svarbhānor apa māyāḥ aghukshat |* 9. *Yaṃ vai sūryaṃ svarbhānuḥ tamasā avidhyad āsuraḥ | Atrayas tam anvavindan na hi anye aśknuvan |*

“Atri, by his fourth prayer, discovered the sun which had been concealed by the hostile darkness. 8. . . . Atri placed the eye of the sun in the sky, and dispelled the illusions of Svarbhānu. 9. The Atris discovered the sun, which Svarbhānu, of the Asura race, had pierced with darkness; no other could [effect this].” (See Vol. I. of this work, pp. 242 and 469.)

vi. 75, 19. . . . *Devās tañ sarve dhūrvantu brahma varma mamān-  
tarām |*

“May all the gods destroy him; the prayer is my protecting armour.”

vii. 19, 11. *Nu Indraś sūra stavamānaḥ ūti brahma-jūtas tanvā vavri-  
dhasva ityādi |*

“Heroic Indra, lauded, and impelled by our prayers, grow in body through (our) aid [or longing],” etc. (Compare viii. 13, 17, 25.)

vii. 33, 3. . . . *Even nu kañ dāsarjñe Sudāsam prāvad Indro brah-  
manā vḡ Vasishṭhāḥ |* 5. . . . *Vasishṭhasya stvataḥ Indraḥ āsrod uruṃ  
Tritsubhyah akrinod u lokam |*

“Indra has delivered Sūdas in the combat of the ten kings through your prayer, o Vasishṭhas. 5. Indra heard Vasishṭha when he praised, and opened a wide place for the Tritsus.” (See Vol. I. pp. 242 and 319.)

viii. 49, 9. *Pāhi naḥ Agne ekayā pāhi uta dvitīyayā | pāhi gīrbhis tis-  
riḥhir ūrjūmpate pāhi chatasriḥhir vaso |*

“Protect us, Agni, through the first, protect us through the second, protect us, lord of power, through three hymns, protect us through four, thou bright god.”

The following passage celebrates the numbers of the metres :

x. 114, 8, 9. *Sahasradhā panchadaśāni ukthā yāvad dyāvā-prithivī  
tāvad it tat | Sahasradhā mahimānaḥ sahasraṃ yāvad brahma viśṭhitaṃ  
tāvati vāk |* 9. *Kaś chhandasāṃ yogam āveda dhīraḥ ko dhishnyām prati  
vācham papāda | kam ritvijām aśṭamaṃ sūram āhur harī Indrasya ni  
chikāya kaḥ svit |*

8. “There are a thousand times fifteen *ukthas*; that extends as far as heaven and earth. A thousand times a thousand are their glorious manifestations; speech is commensurate with devotion. 9. What sage knows the [whole] series [or application] of the metres? Who has attained devotional speech? Whom do they call the eighth hero among priests? Who has perceived the two steeds of Indra?”

(The word *dhishnya* is said by Yāska, Nirukta, viii. 3, to be = to *dhishanya*, and that again to be = to *dhishanā-bhava*, “springing” from *dhishanā*, “speech,” or “sacred speech.”)

I conclude the series of texts relating to the power of the mantras by quoting the whole of the 130th hymn of the 10th Maṇḍala of the Rīg-veda :

1. *Yo yajno viśvatas tantubhis tataḥ ekasataṃ deva-karmebhir āyataḥ |*

*ime vayanti pitaro ye āyayuh pra vaya apa vaya āsate tate | 2. Pūmān enam tanute utkrīṇatti pumāy vi tatne adhi nāke asmim | ime mayūkhāḥ upa shedur ū sadaḥ sāmāni chakrus tāsarāni otave | 3. Kā āsit pranā pratimā kiṁ nidānam ājyam kim āsit paridhiḥ | kā āsit | chhandaḥ kim āsit prūgaṁ kim uktham yad devāḥ devaṁ ayajanta viśve | 4. Agner gāyatrī abhavat sayajvā ushṇihayā Savitā sambabhūv | anushṭubhā Somaḥ ukthair mahasvān Bṛihaspāter bṛihatī vāchaṁ āvat | 5. Virāj Mitrāvaruṇayor abhīrīr Indrasya trisṭub iha bhāgāḥ aṇnah | Viśvān devān jagatī āviveśa tena chāklīpre ṛishayo mantushyāḥ | 6. Chāklīpre tena ṛishayo manushyāḥ yajne jāte pitarāḥ naḥ purāne | paśyan manye manasā chakshasā tān ye imāṁ yajnam ayajanta pūrve | 7. Saha-stomāḥ saha-chhandasaḥ āvritāḥ saha-pramāḥ ṛishayaḥ saḥa daivyāḥ | pūrveshām panthām anudriśya dhīrāḥ anvālebhire rathyo na rāsmīn |*

“1. The [web of] sacrifice which is stretched on every side with threads,<sup>36</sup> which is extended with one hundred [threads], the work of the gods,—these fathers who have arrived weave it; they sit where it is extended, [saying] ‘weave forwards, weave backwards.’ 2. The Man stretches it out and spins it, the Man has extended it over this sky. These rays approached the place of sacrifice; they made the Sāma verses the shuttles for the woof. 3. What was the measure [of the ceremonial], what the form, what the type, what the oblation, what the enclosing fuel, what the metre, what the *prūga*, and what the *uktha*, when all the gods sacrificed to the god? 4. The *gāyatrī* was associated with *Āgni*; *Savitṛi* was conjoined with the *ushṇihā*; and *Soma*, gladdening (us) through hymns (*ukthas*), with the *anushṭubh*; the *bṛihatī* attached itself to the speech of *Bṛihaspati*. 5. The *virāj* adhered to *Mitra* and *Varuṇa*; the *trisṭubh*, a portion of the day (?), [accompanied] *Indra*. The *jagatī* entered into the *Viśvedevas*. By this means human *rishis* were successful. 6. By this means our human fathers the *rishis* were successful, when this ancient sacrifice

<sup>36</sup> In R.V. x, 57, 2, we find the same word *tantu* occurring: *Yo yajnasya prasādhanas tantur deveshu ātatas tam āhutaṁ naśīmahi |* “May we obtain him [Agni] who is offered, who is the fulfiller of sacrifice, who is the thread stretched to the gods.” (Comp. the versions given by Prof. Müller in the Journ. R. A. S. for 1866, pp. 449, and 457.) Prof. Roth quotes under the word *tantu* the following text from the *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa*, ii. 4, 2, 6: *Ā tantum Agnir divyaṁ tatāna | tvāṁ nas tantur uta setur Agne tvam panthāḥ bhavasi deva-yānaḥ |* “Agni has stretched the divine thread. Thou, Agni, art our thread and bridge; thou art the path leading to the gods.”



was celebrated. I believe that I behold with my mind, [as] with an eye, those ancients who performed this sacrifice. 7. The seven wise and divine rishis, with hymns, with metres, [with] ritual forms, and according to the prescribed measures, contemplating the path of the ancients, have followed it, like charioteers seizing the reins."

I shall not attempt to explain the meaning and purport of this obscure and mystical hymn, which has been translated by Mr. Colebrooke (Essays, i. 34, 35, or p. 18 of Williams and Norgate's ed.). My object in quoting the verses is to show how the various metres are associated with the different deities, in this primeval and mysterious rite, and how a certain sanctity is thus imparted to them. In verse 7, it will be observed, the rishis are spoken of as seven in number, and as divine. The Atharva-veda (x. 7, 43, 44) gives the second verse somewhat differently from the Rig-veda, as follows: *Pumān enad vayati udgrinatti pumān enad vi jabhāra adhi nāke | ime mayūkhāḥ upa tastabhur divaṁ sāmāni chakrus tatarāṇi vātave* | "The Man weaves and spins this: the Man has spread this over the sky. These rays have propped up the sky; they have made the Sāma-verses shuttles for the woof."

IV. But whatever may have been the nature or the source of the supernal illumination to which the rishis laid claim, it is quite clear that some among them at least made no pretensions to anything like a perfect knowledge of all subjects, human and divine, as they occasionally confess their ignorance of matters in which they felt a deep interest and curiosity. This is shown in the following texts:

R.V. i. 164, 5. *Pākaḥ prichchhāmi manasā avijānan devānām enā nihitā padāni | vatse bashkaye adhi sapta tantūn vi tatnīre kavayaḥ otavai ū* | 6. *Achikītvān chikītasāś chīd ātra kavīn prichchhāmi vidmane na vidvān | vi yas tastambha śkal imā rajāṁsi ajasya rūpe kim api svid ekam* | 37. *Na vi jānāmi yad iva idam asmi nīnyāḥ sannaddho manasā charāmi | yadā mā āgan prathamajāḥ rītasya ād id vāchaḥ āsnuve bhāgam asyāḥ* |

"5. Ignorant, not knowing in my mind, I enquire after these hidden abodes of the gods; the sages have stretched out seven threads for a woof over the yearling calf [or over the sun, the abode of all things]. 6. Not comprehending, I ask those sages who comprehend this matter; unknowing, [I ask] that I may know; what is the one thing, in the form of the uncreated one, who has upheld these six

worlds? 37. I do not recognize if I am like this; I go on perplexed and bound in mind. When the first-born sons of sacrifice [or truth] come to me, then I enjoy a share of that word."

I do not attempt to explain the proper sense of these dark and mystical verses. It is sufficient for my purpose that they clearly express ignorance on the part of the speaker. Prof. Wilson's translation of the passages may be compared. Prof. Müller, *Anç. Ind. Lit.* p. 567, renders verse 37 as follows: "I know not what this is that I am like; turned inward I walk, chained in my mind. When the first-born of time comes near me, then I obtain the portion of this speech."

x. 31, 7. *Kiñ svid vanañ kaḥ u sa vrikshah āsa yato dyāvā-prithivī nishṭatakshuḥ | santasthāne ajare itautī ahāni pūrvir ushaso jaranta |*

"What was the forest, what the tree, out of which they fashioned heaven and earth, which continue to exist undecaying, whilst days, and many dawns have passed away?"

Compare x. 81, 4, where the first of these lines is repeated and is followed by the words: *Manishino manasū prichhata id u tad yad adhyatishṭhad bhuvanāni dhārayan |* "Ask in your minds, ye intelligent, what that was on which he took his stand when upholding the worlds;" and see verse 2 of the same hymn.

i. 185, 1. *Katarā pūrvā katarā aparā ayoḥ kathā jāte kavayo ko vi veda |*

"Which of these two (Heaven and Earth) is the first? which is the last? How were they produced? Who, o sages, knows?"

x. 88, 18. *Kati agnayaḥ kati sūrjasaḥ kati ushasaḥ kati u svid āpaḥ | na upaspijam vaḥ pitaro vadāmi prichchhāmi vaḥ kavayo vidmane kam |*

"How many fires are there? how many suns? how many dawns? how many waters? I do not, fathers, say this to you in jest; I really ask you, sages, in order that I may know."

Compare x. 114, 9, above, p. 227.

x. 129, 5. *Tirāschino vitato raśmir eshām adhaḥ svid āsīd upari svid āsīt | retodhāḥ āsan mahimānaḥ āsan svadhā avastat prayatiḥ parastāt |*

6. *Kaḥ addha veda kaḥ iha pravochat kutaḥ ājātī kutaḥ iyañ visrishtih | arvāg devāḥ asya visarjanena atha ko veda yataḥ ābabhūva |* 7. *Iyañ visrishtir yataḥ ābabhūva yadi vā tadhe yadi vā na | yaḥ asya adhyakshah parama vyoman sa anga veda yadi vā na veda |*

5. "Their ray [or cord], obliquely extended, was it below, or was it above? There were generative sources, and there were great powers,

svadhā (a self-supporting principle) below, and effort above. 6. Who knows, who hath here declared, whence this creation was produced, whence [it came]? The gods were subsequent to the creation of this universe; who then knows whence it sprang? 7. Whence this creation sprang, whether any one formed it or not,—he who, in the highest heavens, is the overseer of this universe,—he indeed knows, or he does not know.”

See the translation of the whole hymn by Mr. Colebrooke in his *Essays*, i. 33, 34, or p. 17 of Williams and Norgate's ed. See also Prof. Müller's version and comment in pp. 559–564 of his *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*; and my own rendering in the article on the “progress of the Vedic religion towards abstract conceptions of the Deity,” in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for 1865, pp. 345 f.

We have seen (above, p. 62) that a claim is set up (by some unspecified writer quoted by Sāyana) on behalf of the Veda that it can impart an understanding of all things, past and future, subtle, proximate, and remote; and that according to Sankara Āchāryya (on the *Brahma-sūtras*, i. 1, 3) as cited above, p. 106, the knowledge which it manifests, approaches to omniscience. All such proud pretensions are, however, plainly enough disavowed by the rishis who uttered the complaints of ignorance which I have just adduced. It is indeed urged by Sāyana (see above, p. 64) in answer to the objection, that passages like R. V. x. 129, 5, 6, can possess no authority as sources of knowledge, since they express doubt,—that this is not their object, but that their intention is to intimate by a figure of speech the extreme profundity of the divine essence, and the great difficulty which any persons not well versed in the sacred writings must experience in comprehending it. There can, however, be little doubt that the authors of the passages I have cited did feel their own ignorance, and intended to give utterance to this feeling. As, however, such confessions of ignorance on the part of the rishis, if admitted, would have been incompatible with the doctrine that the Veda was an infallible source of divine knowledge, it became necessary for the later theologians who held that doctrine to explain away the plain sense of those expressions.

It should, however, be noticed that these confessions of ignorance and fallibility are by no means inconsistent with the supposition that the rishis may have conceived themselves to be animated and directed in

the composition of their hymns by a divine impulse. But although the two rivals, Vasishṭha and Viśvāmitra, whether in the belief of their own superhuman insight, or to enhance their own importance, and recommend themselves to their royal patrons, talk proudly about the wide range of their knowledge (see above, pp. 246 ff.), it is not necessary to imagine that, either in their idea or in that of the other ancient Indian sages, inspiration and infallibility were convertible or co-extensive terms. The rishis may have believed that the supernatural aid which they had received enabled them to perform what they must otherwise have left unattempted, but that after all it communicated only a partial illumination, and left them still liable to mistake and doubt.

I must also remark that this belief in their own inspiration which I imagine some of the rishis to have held, falls very far short of the conceptions which most of the later writers, whether Vaiśeshika, Mīmāṃsaka, or Vedāntist, entertain in regard to the supernatural origin and authority of the Veda. The gods from whom the rishis supposed that they derived their illumination, at least Agni, Indra, Mitra, Varuṇa, Soma, Pūshan, etc., would all fall under the category of productions, or divinities created in time. This is clearly shown by the comments of Śankara on the Brahma Sūtras, i. 3, 28, (above, pp. 101 ff.); and is otherwise notorious (see my "Contributions to a knowledge of the Vedic Theogony and Mythology" in the *Jl. R. A. S.* for 1864, p. 63). But if these gods were themselves created, and even (as we are told in the Rig-veda itself, x. 129, 6, cited in p. 280) produced subsequently to some other parts of the creation, the hymns with which they inspired the rishis, could not have been eternal. The only one of the deities referred to in the Rig-veda as sources of illumination, to whom this remark would perhaps not apply, is Vāch or Sarasvatī, who is identified with the supreme Brahma in the passage of the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad quoted above (p. 208, note 179); though this idea no doubt originated subsequently to the era of the hymns. But it is not to created gods, like Agni, Indra, and others of the same class, that the origin of the Veda is referred by the Vaiśeshikas, Mīmāṃsakas, or Vedantists. The Vaiśeshikas represent the eternal Īśvara as the author of the Veda (see the passages which I have quoted in pp. 118 ff. and 209). The Mīmāṃsakas and Vedantists, as we have seen (pp. 70 ff., 99 ff. and 208),

either affirm that it is uncreated, or derive it from the eternal Brahma. And even those writers who may attribute the composition of the Veda to the personal and created Brahmā (see pp. 69, 105 f. and 208), with the Naiyāyikas who merely describe it as the work of a competent author (see pp. 116 f. and 209), and the Sāṅkhyas (see pp. 135 and 208), concur with the other schools in affirming its absolute infallibility. Their view, consequently (unless we admit an exception in reference to Vāch), differs from that of the Vedic rishis themselves, who do not seem to have had any idea, either of their hymns being uncreated, or derived from the eternal Brahma, or of their being infallible.

As regards the relation of the rishis to deities like Indra, it is also deserving of notice that later mythologists represent the former, not only as quite independent of the latter, and as gifted with an inherent capacity of raising themselves by their own austerities to the enjoyment of various superhuman faculties, but even as possessing the power of rivalling the gods themselves, and taking possession of their thrones. See the stories of Nahusha and Viśvāmitra in the First Volume of this work, particularly pp. 310 ff. and 404. Compare also the passages from the Rig-veda, x. 154, 2, and x. 167, 1, quoted above, p. 250, where the rishis are said to have attained to heaven, and Indra to have conquered it, by austere-fervour (*tapas*).

SECT. V.—*Texts from the Upanishads, showing the opinions of the authors regarding their own inspiration, or that of their predecessors.*

I shall now adduce some passages from different Upanishads, to show what opinions their authors entertained either in regard to their own inspiration, or that of the earlier sages, from whom they assert that their doctrine was derived by tradition.

I. S'vetāśvatara Up., v. 2 (already quoted above, p. 184). *Yo yoniṁ yonim adhiśiṣṭhaty eka viśvāni rūpāni yonīs cha sarvāḥ | rishim pra sūtaṁ Kapilaṁ yas tam agre jñānair bibhartti jāyamānaṁ cha paśyet |*

“He who alone presides over every place of production, over all forms, and all sources of birth, who formerly nourished with various knowledge that rishi Kapila, who had been born, and beheld him at his birth.”

II. Svetāśvatara Up. vi. 21. *Tapah-prabhāvād veda-prasādāch cha Brahma ha Svetāśvataro 'tha vidvān | atyāśramibhyaḥ paramam pavitram provācha samyag ṛishi-sangha-jushṭam |*

“By the power of austere-fervour, and by the grace of the Veda, the wise Svetāśvatara declared perfectly to the men in the highest of the four orders, the supreme and holy Brahma, who is sought after by the company of rishis.” (Dr. Rōer's translation, p. 68, follows the commentator in rendering the first words of the verse thus: “By the power of his austerity, and the grace of God.” This, however, is not the proper meaning of the words *veda-prasādāch cha*, if the correctness of that reading, which is given both in the text and commentary (Bibl. Ind. p. 372), be maintained. Sankara interprets the words thus: “*Veda-prasādāch cha*” | *kaivalyam uddīśya tad-adhikāra-siddhaye bahunjanmasu samyag ārādhita-parameśvarasya prasādāch cha* | “By the grace of the Veda:” by the grace of the supreme God who had been perfectly adored by him during many births in order to acquire the prerogative of (studying) it (the Veda) in reference to *kaivalya* (isolation from mundane existence);” and thus appears to recognize this reading.

In the 18th verse of the same section of this Upanishad the Vedas are said to have been given by the supreme God to Brahmā :

*Yo Brahmānaṁ vidadhāti pūrvaṁ yo vai vedāṁś cha prahīnoti tasmai | taṁ ha devam ātma-buddhi-prakāśam mumukshur vai śaranam aham prapadye |*

“Seeking after final liberation, I take refuge with that God, the manifestor of the knowledge of himself, who at first created Brahmā and gave him the Vedas.”

III. Muṇḍaka Up. i. 1 ff. (quoted above, p. 30, more at length). *Brahmā devānāṁ prathamāḥ sambabhūsa viśvasya karttā bhuvanasya goptā | Sa brahma-vidyāṁ sarva-vidyā-pratishṭhām Atharvāya jyeshṭha-putrāya prāha |*

“Brahmā was born the first of the gods, he who is the maker of the universe and the supporter of the world. He declared the science of Brahma, the foundation of all the sciences, to Atharva, his eldest son.”

IV. The Chhāndogya Up. viii. 15, 1, p. 625 ff. concludes as follows :

*Tad ha etad Brahmā Prajāpataye uvācha Prajāpatir Manave Manuḥ prajābhyaḥ | āchāryya-kulād vedam adhitya yathā vidhānaṁ guroḥ kar-mātīshene 'abhisamvṛiṭṭya kuṭumbe śuchau deśe svādhyāyam adhīyāno*

*dhārmikān vidādhad ātmani sarvendriyāni sampratishthāpya ahimsan sarva-bhūtāni anyatra tīrthebhyah sa khalv evaṁ varttayan yavad-āyusham Brahma-lokam abhisampadyate na cha punar āvarttate na cha punar āvarttate |*

“This [doctrine] Brahmā declared to Prajāpati, Prajāpati declared it to Manu, and Manu to his descendants. Having received instruction in the Veda from the family of his religious teacher in the prescribed manner, and in the time which remains after performing his duty to his preceptor; and when he has ceased from this, continuing his Vedic studies at home, in his family, in a pure spot, communicating a knowledge of duty [to his pupils], withdrawing all his senses into himself, doing injury to no living creature, away from holy places,—thus passing all his days, a man attains to the world of Brahma, and does not return again, and does not return again [*i.e.* is not subjected to any future births].”

I quote the commencement of Sankara's comment on this passage :

*Tad ha etad ātma-jnānaṁ sopakaranam om ity etad aksharam ity-ādyaḥ saha upāsanaḥ tad-vāchakena granthena ashtādhyāya-lakshanena saha Brahmā Hiranyagarbhaḥ Paramēśvaro vā tad-dvāreṇa Prajāpataye Kaśyapāya uvācha | asāv api Manave sva-putrāya | Manuḥ prajābhyah | ity evam śrutya-ārtha-sampradāya-paramparayā āgatam upanishad-vijnānam adyāpi vidvatsv avagamyate |*

“This knowledge of soul, with its instruments, with the sacred monosyllable *Om* and other formulæ of devotion, and with the book distinguished as containing eight chapters, which sets forth all these topics, [viz. the Chhândogya Upanishad itself] was declared by Brahmā Hiranyagarbha, or by Paramēśvara (the supreme God), through his agency, to the Prajāpati Kaśyapa. The latter in his turn declared it to his son Manu, and Manu to his descendants. In this manner the sacred knowledge contained in the Upanishads, having been received through successive transmission of the sense of the Veda from generation to generation, is to this day understood among learned men.”

In an earlier passage of the same Upanishad iii. 11, 3 f. (partly quoted in the First Volume of this work, p. 195), we find a similar statement in reference to a particular branch of sacred knowledge (the *madhu-jnāna*):

3. *Na ha vai asmai udeti na nimlochati sakṛid divā ha ēva asmai bha-*

*vati yaḥ etām evam brahmopaniṣhadaṁ veda | 4. Tad ha etad Brahmā Prajāpataye uvācha Prajāpatir Manave Manuḥ prajābhyaḥ | tad etad Uddālakāya Ārunaye jyeshthāya putrāya pitā brahma uvācha | 5. Idaṁ vāva taj-jyeshthāya putrāya pitā brahmā prabrūyāt pnāyāyāya vā antavāsine (6) na anyasmāi kasmaichapa | yadyapy asmai imām adbhīḥ parigrīhītām dhanasya pūrṇām dadyāt. etad eva tato bhūyaḥ ity etad eva tato bhūyaḥ iti |*

“3. For him who thus knows this sacred mystery, the sun neither rises nor sets, but one day perpetually lasts. 4. This (*Madhu-jūṇa*) was declared by Brahmā to Prajāpati, by Prajāpati to Manu, and by Manu to his descendants. This sacred knowledge was further declared to Uddālaka Āruṇi by his father. 5. Let a father expound it to his eldest son, or to a capable pupil, but to no one else. 6. If any one were to give him this entire earth, which is surrounded by water, full of wealth, this sacred knowledge would be more than that, yes, would be more than that.”

Compare Manu, xi. 243, where that Code is said to have been created by Prajāpati (First Volume of this work, p. 394); and Bhagavad Gītā iv. 1, where the doctrine of that treatise is said to have been declared by Kṛishṇa to Vivasvat (the Sun), by Vivasvat to Manu, by him to Ikshvāku, and then handed down by tradition from one royal rishi to another (Vol. I. p. 508).



## APPENDIX.

*Page 4, line 5.*

I have omitted here the verse from the Atharva-veda, xi. 7, 24 (quoted by Professor Goldstücker in his *Paṇini*, p. 70): *Richaḥ sāmāni chhandāmsi purānaṁ yajushā saha | uchchhishṭāj jājnire sarve divi devāḥ divīśritāḥ* | “From the leavings of the sacrifice sprang the Rich- and Sāman-verses, the metres, the Purāna with the Yajush, and all the gods who dwell in the sky.”

Professor Aufrecht has favoured me with the following amendments in my translations in pp. 7 and 8 :

*Page 7, line 13.*

For “the text called *sāvitrī* [or *gāyatrī*]” he would substitute “the verse dedicated to Savitrī.”

*Page 7, line 16.*

For “the mouth of Brahma” he proposes “the beginning of the Veda.” (Sir W. Jones translates “the mouth, or *principal part* of the Veda.”)

*Page 8, line 8.*

For “from Vāch (speech) as their world” he proposes “out of the sphere (or compass) of speech.”

*Page 8, line 8.*

For “Vāch was his: she was created” he proposes “For in creating the Vedas, he had also created Vāch.”

*Page 8, line 13.*

For “He gave it an impulse” he proposes “He touched it.”

Page 8, line 16.

For "Moreover it was sacred knowledge, which was created from that Male in front" he proposes "For even from that Male (not only from the waters) Brahma was created first."

Page 9, line 16.

This passage of the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upaniṣad corresponds to Satapatha Brahmana x. 6, 5, 5.

Page 10, line 2.

"May the brilliant deity," etc., Professor Aufrecht would prefer to translate the second line of the verse, beginning *sudevah* (p. 9, l. 6 from the foot), "Goodness (the good god) only knows where they put the earth which was thrown up (*nirvapaṇa*)."

Page 20, line 17.

See Āśvalāyanas Gṛihya Sūtras, pp. 155, and 157 ff.

Page 22, line 13, note 25.

I quote two verses from Manu, of which the second confirms the correctness of the rendering I have given of the words *ā ha eva sa nakhāgrebhyas tapyate*, and the first illustrates the text of the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka cited in the note: Manu ii. 166. *Vedaṃ eva sadā 'bhyasyet tapas tapsyan dvijottamaḥ | vedābhyāso hi viprasya tapaḥ param ihochyate |* 167. "*Ā haiva sa nakhāgrebhyas*" *paramaṃ "tapyate" tapaḥ | yaḥ sragvy api dvijo 'dhīte svādhyāyaṃ śaktito 'nvaham |* "Let a good Brāhman who desires to perform tapas constantly study the Veda; for such study is a Brāhman's highest tapas. 167. That twice-born man who daily studies the Veda to the utmost of his power, even though (luxuriously) wearing a garland of flowers (really) performs the highest tapas to the very extremities of his nails." This verse, it will be observed, quotes verbatim one of the phrases of the Brāhmaṇa, and gives definiteness to its sense by adding the words *paramaṃ tapaḥ*. Verses 165 ff. of the same book of Manu prescribe the abstemious mode of life which the student (*brahmachārin*) is to follow whilst living in his teacher's house. The Mahābhārata, Udyoga-parvan, 1537, thus states the conditions of successful study in general; *Sukhārthinaḥ kuto vidyā nāsti vidyārthinaḥ sukham |*

*suḥāṛthī vā tyajed vidyāṃ vidyārthī vā tyajet sukham* | “How can one who seeks ease acquire science? Ease does not belong to him who pursues science. Either let the seeker of ease abandon science, or the seeker of science abandon ease.”

Page 30, line 17.

Compare the lines quoted by the Commentator on Sāṅḍilya's Bhakti-sūtra, 83, p. 60, from the Mahābhārata, Sāntiparvan, Moksha-dharma, verses 13, 551 ff. : *Sahopaniśhādo vedān ye viprāḥ samyag āsthitāḥ | paṭhanti vidhim āsthāya ye chāpi yat-dharmināḥ | tato viśiṣṭāṃ jānāmi gatim ekāntinām nṛinām* | “I regard the destination of Ekāntins (persons devoted to the One as their end) as superior to that of Brāhmans who perfectly study the Vedas, including the Upanishads, according to rule, as well as to that of those who follow the practices of ascetics (*yatis*).”

Page 34, line 1.

Perhaps this was scarcely a suitable passage to be quoted as depreciatory of the Veda, as in such a stage of transcendental absorption as is here described all the ordinary standards of estimation have ceased to be recognized.

Page 43, line 10.

With the expression *hṛid-ākāśa*, “the æther of the heart,” compare the passage quoted from the Veda in Sankara's commentary on Brahma Sūtra iii. 2, 35 (p. 873): “*Yo 'yam vahirdhā purushād ākāśo yo 'yam antaḥ-purushe ākāśo yo 'yam antar-hṛidaye ākāśaḥ* | “This æther which is external to a man, this æther which is within a man, and this æther which is within the heart.” See also the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad ii. 5, 10 and iii. 7, 12.

Page 44, line 1.

See the Yoga aphorisms i. 2 ff. as cited and explained by Dr. Ballantyne.<sup>1</sup> The second aphorism defines *yoga* to be “a stoppage of the functions of the mind” (*Yogas chitta-vṛitti-nirodhaḥ*). “The mind then abides in the state of the spectator, i.e. the Soul” (*tadā drashtuḥ svarūpe'vasthānam*—Aph. 3). “At other times it takes the form of the

<sup>1</sup> Two fasciculi only, containing two Pādas and 106 Sūtras, were published at Allahabad in 1852 and 1853; but a continuation of Dr. B.'s work has been commenced in the “Pandit” for Sept. 1868.

functions" (*vṛitti-sārūpyam itaratra*—Aph. 4). These functions, or modifications (as Dr. Ballantyne translates) are fivefold, and either painful, or devoid of pain, viz. proof, or right notion (*pramāna*), mistake (*viparyyaya*), groundless imagination (*vikalpa*), sleep (*nidrā*), recollection (*smṛiti*)—Aphorisms 5–11. See also Dr. Ballantyne's Sāṅkhya Aphorisms, iii. 31 ff.

Page 57, note 61.

With the subject of this note compare the remarks in p. 108, and the quotations from Dr. Roer and Professor Müller in pp. 173, 175, and 193.

Page 62, note 65.

Professor Cowell does not think that the text is corrupt. He would translate it, "the other *pramānas*, beside *śabda*, (scil. perception and inference), cannot be even supposed in a case like this" (which refers to such a transcendental object as the existence of an eternal Veda). Sāyaṇa, in his reply to the objector, recapitulates the applicable proofs as *śruti*, *smṛiti*, and *loka-prasiddhi*,—all three only different kinds of testimony, *śabda*.

Page 63, lines 11 f., and note 68.

Compare pp. 322 f., 329 f., 334 f., and 337 of my article "On the Interpretation of the Veda," in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1866.

Page 84, note 89, and page 180, line 7.

I have been favoured by Professor Cowell with the following note on *kālātyāyāpadiṣṭa*:

"My Calcutta Pandit considered this fallacy to be the same as that more usually called *bādha* (cf. too *Bhāshāparichcheda*, śl. 70, 77; and the Bengali translation, p. 65). Its definition is *pakshe sādhyā-bhāvaḥ*. The Tarka-sangraha defines a *hetu* as *bādhitā*, 'when the absence of what it seeks to prove is established for certain by another proof,' as in the argument *vahnir ānushno dravyatvāt*. The essence of this fallacy is that you deny the *major*, and therefore it does not matter whether you accept the middle term in itself or not. It is involved in the overthrow of the major term. I should translate it the 'precluded argument,'—it might have been plausible if it had not been put out of court by something which settles

the point,—it is advanced too late (the *pre* in ‘precluded’ expresses the *kālātita* of the old name). This corresponds to the account in the Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti: *Kālasya sādhana-kālasyātyaye ’bhāve ’padishṭaḥ prayukto hetur | etena sādhyābhāvapramūlakṣhaṇārtha iti sūchitam | sādhyābhāvanirṇaye sādhanāsambhavāt | Ayam eva bādhitasādhyaka itī gīyate.* The Vṛtti goes on to say that you need not prove *vyabhichāra* (i.e. that your opponent’s *hetu* or middle term goes too far, as in *parvato dhumavān, vahneḥ* where *vahni* is a *svvyabhichāro hetuḥ*) in order to establish the *bādha*. I should therefore prefer to translate the passage from the Vedārtha-prakāśa, p. 84, ‘your alleged middle-term *vākyatva*, the possessing the properties of a common sentence, is liable to two objections,—(1) it is opposed by the fact that no author was ever perceived, and (2) it also is precluded by weighty evidence (which proves that your proposed major term is irrelevant).’ Sāyana then adds his reasons for each objection,—for the *first*, in the words from *yathā Vyāsa* down to *upalabdhaḥ*; for the *second*, in the fact that *smṛiti* and *śruti* agree in the eternity of the Veda (the *pūrvam* I suppose refers to p. 3 of the Calcutta printed text), and that even if the Supreme Spirit be the author he is not *puruṣaḥ* in the sense in which the objector uses the term. Either way, the major term of the objector’s syllogism *pauruṣeya* is precluded, *bādhitā*; or, in the technical language of the Nyāya, Sāyana establishes an absence from the minor term (*pakṣa*) of the alleged major term (*sādhyā*); and hence no conclusion can be drawn from the proposed syllogism. I may add that I have also looked into Vātsyāyana, but his explanation seems to me an instance of what my Pandit used so often to impress on me, that the modern logic (which such a late mediæval writer as Sāyana follows) is not always that of the Nyāyabhāṣya. He makes the error lie in the example, i.e. in the induction; and it is therefore, as Professor Goldstücker says, a ‘vicious generalization.’”

• Page 88, note 95.

Professor Cowell disagrees with the explanation I have hazarded of the object of the sentence in the text to which this note refers. He thinks that its purport, as shewn by the word *vyabhichārāt*, is to intimate that the former of the two alternative suppositions would prove too much, as it would also apply to such detached stanzas as the one

referred to, of which the author, although unknown to some persons, was not necessarily unknown to all, as his contemporaries no doubt knew who wrote it, and his descendants, as well as others, might perhaps still be aware of the fact. In this case, therefore, we have an instance of a composition of which some persons did not know the origin, but which nevertheless was not superhuman (*apaurusheya*). This is no doubt the correct explanation.

Page 99, line 1.

The argument in proof of the incompetence of the Sūdras for the acquisition of the highest divine knowledge is contained in Brahma Sūtras i. 3, 34-38. As the subject may possess an interest for any educated persons of this class into whose hands this book may fall in India, I extract the entire discussion of the question :

34. "Sug asya tad-anūdara-śravaṇāt tad-ādhravaṇāt sūchyate hi" | yathā manushyādadhikāra-niyamam apodya devādīnām api vīdyāsv adhikārah uktas tathaiḥ dvijāty-adhikāra-niyamāpavādena śūdrasya apy adhikārah syād ity etām āsankām nivarttayitum idam adhikāraṇam ārabhyate | tatra śūdrasya apy adhikārah syād iti tāvat prāptam arthitva-sāmarthyayoḥ sambhavāt | tasmāch "chhūdro yajne 'navakṛiptaḥ" itivach chhūdro vidyāyām anavakṛiptaḥ iti nishedhūśravaṇāt | yach cha karmasv anadhikāra-kāraṇam śūdrasya anagnitvaṁ na tad vidyāsv adhikārasya apavādakam | na hy āhavanīyādi-rahitena vidyā veditum na śakyate | bhavati cha lingam śūdrādadhikārasya upodbalakam | saṁvarga-vidyāyām hi Jānaśrutim Pautrūyaṇam śūsrūshuṁ śūdra-śabdena parāmṛśati "aha hāre tvā śūdra tava eva saha gobhir astu" iti | Viāura-prabhritayas cha śūdra-yoni-prabhavāḥ api viśiṣṭa-vijnāna-sampannāḥ smaryante | tasmād adhikriyate śūdro vīdyāsu | ity evam prāpte brūmah | na śūdrasya adhikāro vedādhyayanābhāvāt | adhīta-vedo hi vidīta-vedārtho vedārthesv adhikriyate | na cha śūdrasya vedādhyayanam asty upanayana-pūrvakatvād vedādhyayanasya upanayanasya cha varṇa-traya-vishayatvāt | yat tv arthitvaṁ na tad asati sārthīye 'dhikāra-kāraṇam bhavati | sāmarthyam api na lauḥkaṁ kevalam adhikāra-kāraṇam bhavati śāstrīye 'rthe śāstrīyasya sāmarthyasya apekshitatvāt śāstrīyasya cha sāmarthyasya adhyayana-nirākāraṇena nirākṛitatvāt | yach cha idam śūdro yajne 'navakṛiptaḥ iti tad nyāya-pūrvakatvād vidyāyām apy anavakṛiptatvaṁ dyotayati nyāyasya sūlharānatvāt | yat punaḥ saṁvarga-vidyāyām śūdra-

śabda-śravaṇaṁ lingam manyase na tal lingaṁ nyāyābhāvāt | nyāyokter hi linga-darśanaṁ, dyotakam bhavati na cha, atra nyāyo 'sti | kāmāṁ cha ayaṁ śūdra-śabdaḥ saṁvarga-vidyāyām eva ekasyūṁ śūdrām adhikuryyāt tad-vishaytvād na sarvāsu vidyāsu | arthavāda-sthatvāt na tu kvachid apy ayaṁ śūdrām adhikarttum utsahate | śakyate cha ayaṁ śūdra-śabdo 'dhikṛita-vishaye yojayitum | katham iti | uchyate | “ ‘kam u are enam etat santaṁ sayugvānam iva Rainkapī ātthā’ (Chāndogya Upanishad, iv. 1, 3.) ity asmād haṁsa-vākṣyād ātmano 'nādaraṁ śrutavato Jānaśruteḥ Pautrā-yanāsyā śug utpede tām, riṣhī Rainkaḥ śūdra-śabdena anena sūchayāmba-bhūva ātmanaḥ paroksha-jñānasyā klyāpanāya itī gamyate jāti-śūdrasya anadhikārāt | katham punaḥ śūdra-śabdena śug utpannā sūchyate iti | uchyate | tad-ādṛavanāt, śucitām abhidudrāva śuchā vā 'bhidudruve śuchā vā Rainkam abhidudrāva itī, śūdrāvayavārtha-sambhavād rūdhārthasya cha asambhavāt | drīsyate cha ayam artho 'syām ākhyāyikāyām |

35. “Kshattriyatva-gateś cha uttarattra Chaitrarathena lingāt” | Itas cha na jāti-śūdro Jānaśrutir yat-kāraṇam prakaraṇa-nirūpanena kshattriyatvam asya uttarattra Chaitrarathena Abhipratāriṇā kshattriyena samabhivyāhārāl lingād gamyate | uttarattra hi saṁvarga-vidyā-vākya-śeṣhe Chaitrarathir Abhipratārī kshattriyāḥ sankīrttyate | “atha ha S'aunakaṁ cha Kāpeyam Abhipratāriṇāṁ cha Kākshaseniṁ sūdena pari-vīśyamānau brahmachārī bibhikshe” (Chh. Up. iv. 3, 5) iti | Chaitra-rathitvaṁ cha Abhipratāriṇaḥ Kāpeya-yogād avagantavyam | Kāpeya-yogo hi Chaitrarathasya avagataḥ | “etena vai Chaitrarathaṁ Kāpeyāḥ ayājayann” iti samānānvaya-yājināṁ cha prāyena samānānvayāḥ yāja-kāḥ bhavanti | tasmāch “Chaitrarathir nāma ekaḥ kshattrā-patir ajāyata” iti cha kshattrā-jātitvāvagamāt kshattriyatvam asya avagantavyam | tena kshattriyena Abhipratāriṇā saha samānāyaṁ vidyāyām sankīrttanāṁ Jānaśruter api kshattriyatvaṁ sūchayati | samānānām eva hi prāyena samabhivyāhārāḥ bhavanti | kshattri-preshanūdy-aīśvarya-yogāch cha Jānaśruteḥ kshattriyatvāvagatiḥ | ato na śūdrasya adhikārah |

36. “Saṁskāra-parāmarśāt tad-abhāvābhilāpāch cha” | itas cha na śūdrasyū adhikāro yaā vidyā-prādeśeshu upanayanādayaḥ saṁskārāḥ parāmṛīsyante “taṁ ha upanīnye” | “adhīhi bhugavaḥ” iti ha upasa-sāda” | “brahma-parāḥ brahma-niṣṭhāḥ paraṁ Brahma anveshamānāḥ 'esha ha vai tat sarvaṁ vaksīyati' iti te ha sōmit-pānayo bhagavantam Pippalūdam upasannāḥ” iti cha “tān nā anupanīya eva” ity api pra-darśitū eva upanayana-prāptir bhavati | śūdrasya cha saṁskārābhāvo

'bhilapyate "śūdrāś chaturtho varṇaḥ ekajātir" ity ekajātitva-smaraṇena  
"na śūdre pātakaṁ kinchid ra cha saṁskāram arhati" ity-ādibhiś cha |

37. "Tad-abhāva-nirdhāraṇe cha pravṛtiteḥ" | Itas cha na śūdrasya  
adhikāro yat satya-vachanena śūdratvābhāve nirdhārite Jābālīm Gauta-  
maḥ upanetum anuśāsituṁ cha pravavṛite "na etad abrahmano vivaktum  
arhati | samidham scmya āhara upa tvā neshye na satyād agāḥ" (Chh.  
Up. iv. 4, 5) iti śruti-lingāt |

38. "Śravanādhyayanārtha-pratishedhāt smṛiteś cha" | Itas cha na  
śūdrasya adhikāro yad asya smṛiteḥ śravanādhyayanārtha-pratishedho bha-  
vati | veda-śravaṇa-pratishedho vedādhayana-pratishedhas tad-artha-jñā-  
nānushthānayoś cha pratishedhaḥ śūdrasya smaryate | śravaṇa-pratish-  
edhas tāvad atha asya "vedam upaśrinvatas tṛc-jatubhyām śrotra-prati-  
pūraṇam" iti "padyu ha vai etat śmaśānīm yat śūdras tasmāt śūdra-  
samīpe na adhyetavyam" iti cha | ataḥ eva adhyayana-pratishedhaḥ |  
yasya hi samīpe 'pi na adhyetavyam bhavati sa kathaṁ śrutim adhyāyata |  
bhavati cha uchchhāraṇe jīhvā-chhedo dhāraṇe śarīra-bhedaḥ iti | ataḥ eva  
cha arthād artha-jñānānushthānayoḥ pratishedho bhavati | "na śūdrāya  
matim dadyād" iti "dvijātīnām adhyayanaṁ ijjā dānam" iti cha |  
yeshām punaḥ pūrva-kṛita-saṁskāra-vaśād Vidura-dharma-vyādha-pra-  
bhṛitīnām jñānotpattis teshām na śakyate phala-prāptiḥ pratibaddhuṁ  
jñānasya ekāntika-phalavāt | "śrāvayech chaturo varṇān" iti cha iti-  
hāsa-purānādhigame chaturvarṇyādhikāra-smaraṇāt | veda-pūrvakas tu  
nāsty adhikārah śūdrānām iti sthitam |

34. "In the word 'Sūdra' reference is made to his vexation on  
hearing that disrespectful expression, and to his running up."

"This section is commenced to silence the doubt whether in the same  
way as it had been denied (above) that the prerogative of acquiring  
divine knowledge is restricted to men, and affirmed that it extends to  
the gods, etc., also, the limitation of the same prerogative to twice-  
born men may not also be questioned, and its extension to Sūdras  
maintained. The grounds alleged in favour of the Sūdra having this  
prerogative are that he may reasonably be supposed to have both (a)  
the desire and (b) the power of acquiring knowledge, and that accord-  
ingly (c) the Veda contains no text affirming his incapacity for know-  
ledge, as it confessedly has texts directing his exclusion from sacrifice :  
and further (d) that the fact of the Sūdra's not keeping up any sacred  
fire, which is the cause of his incapacity for sacrifice, affords no reason



for denying to him the prerogative of gaining knowledge; since it cannot be maintained that it is impossible for a man who is destitute of the āhavanīya and other fires to acquire knowledge. There is also (e) in a Vedic text a sign which confirms the Sūdra's prerogative. For in the passage which treats of the knowledge of the Saṁvarga (Chhāndogya Upanishad, chapter iv. section 1-3) a speaker designates Jānaśruti, descendant of Janaśruta in the third generation, who was desirous of performing service, by the term Sūdra: 'Keep to thyself, o Sūdra, thy necklace and chariot<sup>2</sup> with thy cattle.' (Chh. Up. iv. 2, 2.) And further (f) Vidura and others are spoken of in the Smṛiti as possessed of distinguished knowledge, although they were of Sūdra descent. Consequently the Sūdra enjoys the prerogative of acquiring various sorts of divine knowledge. To this we reply: The Sūdra has no such prerogative, because he cannot study the Veda. For it is the man that studies the Veda, and obtains a knowledge of its contents, who enjoys the prerogative of [access to] those contents. But a Sūdra does not study the Veda, for such study must be preceded by initiation, which again is confined to the three upper castes. As regards (a) the desire of knowledge,—that, in the absence of power, confers no prerogative. And (b) mere secular power does not suffice for the purpose; since scriptural power is necessary in a matter connected with Scripture; and such scriptural power is debarred by the debarring of study. And (c) the passage which declares that a 'Sūdra is incapacitated for sacrifice,' demonstrates his incapacity for knowledge also; since that follows

<sup>2</sup> Such is the sense given to *hāretvā* by the Commentators, who make it out to be a compound of the words *hāra*, "necklace," and *itvā*, "a chariot;" but although *itvā* might be the nominative of *itvan*, "going," no such word appears in the lexicons with the sense of "chariot." Besides, the compound seems a very awkward one. Perhaps the word should be separated into *ha are tvā*; but then there would be no nominative to *astu*, and it would be difficult to construe *tvā*, "thee."—Since the above was written, I have been favoured with a note on the passage by Professor Goldstücker. He conjectures that the words should be divided as follows: *ahaha are tvā Sūdra tava eva saha goḥhir astu*; that *tvā* may be the nominative singular feminine of the Vedic pronoun *tva*, meaning "some one," and then the sense might be as follows: "O, friend, some woman belongs to thee, Sūdra! Let her be (*i.e.* come) along with the cows." And Jānaśruti would appear to have understood the word *tvā* in this sense here supposed, for we find that on hearing the reply of Raikva, he took his daughter to the latter, along with four hundred additional cows and the other gifts; and that on seeing the damsel, Raikva expressed his satisfaction and acceded to the request of her father.—The author of these puzzling words, it seems, intended a pun; and S'ankara perhaps gave only one solution of it.

from the rule, which is of general application. As regards the circumstance that in the Vedic text regarding the knowledge of the Saṁvarga, the word Sūdra occurs, which you regard as a sign in favour of your view; it is (*d*) no sign; because in that passage no rule is laid down. For the discovery of a sign indicates that a rule has been laid down; but in the passage in question there is no such rule. And although it were conceded that [if it were found in a precept regarding the Saṁvarga] the word Sūdra would confer on a man of that caste a prerogative in regard to that particular knowledge alone, (from its being intended for him), although not to all sorts of knowledge, yet as the word occurs [not in precept, but] in an illustrative narrative (*arthavāda*) it cannot confer on him a prerogative in regard to any knowledge whatever. And in fact this word Sūdra can be applied to a person [of a higher caste] who possessed the prerogative. How? I explain: Vexation (*śuk*) arose in the mind of Jānaśruti when he heard himself disrespectfully spoken of in these words of the swan: 'Who is this that thou speakest of as if he were Rainka yoked to the chariot?'<sup>3</sup> (Chh. Up. iv. 1, 3). And since a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of acquiring knowledge, we conclude that it is to this vexation (*śuk*) that the rishi Rainka referred, for the purpose of shewing his own knowledge of things imperceptible by sense, when he made use of this word Sūdra (Chh. Up. iv. 2, 2, see above). But again, how is it indicated by the word Sūdra that vexation (*śuk*) arose in his mind? We reply: by 'the running to it [or him]' (*tad-ādravanāt*); *i.e.* either 'he ran to vexation,' or 'he was assailed by vexation,' or 'in his vexation he resorted to Rainka.' We conclude thus because the sense afforded by the component parts of the word Sūdra is the probable one,<sup>4</sup> whilst the conventional sense of the word Sūdra is here inapplicable. And this is seen to be the meaning in this story.

<sup>3</sup> This appears to allude to the person referred to being found sitting under a chariot (Chh. Up. iv. 1, 8). See p. 67 of Babu Rājendralāl Mitra's translation. This story is alluded to by Professor Weber in his *Ind. Stud.* ix. 45, note, where he treats Sayugvan as a proper name, and remarks "The Vedānta Sūtras (i. 3, 34, 35), indeed, try to explain away this" (the circumstance of Jānaśruti being called a Sūdra) and of course S'ankara in his commentary on them does the same, as well in his explanation of the Chhāndogya Upanishad." I am not, however, by any means certain that the epithet "Sūdra," applied to Jānaśruti by Rainka, is not merely meant as a term of abuse.

<sup>4</sup> The meaning of this is that the word Sūdra is derived from *śuch*, "vexation,"

Sūtra 35. "And that Jānaśruti was a Kshattriya is afterwards indicated by what is said of Abhipratārin of the race of Chaitraratha."

"That Jānaśruti was not a Sūdra appears also from this, that by examining the context he is afterwards found to be a Kshattriya by the sign that he is mentioned along with Abhipratārin of the family of Chaitraratha. For in the sequel of the passage regarding the knowledge of the Saṁvarga mention is made in these words of Abhipratārin Chaitrarathi, a Kshattriya: 'Now a Brahmachārin asked alms of Saunaka of the race of Kapi, and Abhipratārin the son of Kakshaśena who were being served at a meal' (Chh. Up. iv. 3, 5). And that Abhipratārin belonged to the family of Chaitraratha is to be gathered from his connection with the Kāpeyas; for the connection of Chaitraratha with the latter has been ascertained by the text: 'The Kāpeyas performed sacrifice for Chaitraratha.' Priests of the same family in general officiate for worshippers belonging to the same family. From this, as well as from the text: 'From him a lord of Kshat-

and *dru*, "to run." (See the First Volume of this work, p. 97, note 192.) Even the great S'ankara, it seems, was unable to perceive the absurdity of such etymologies. In his commentary on the Chhāndogya Upanishad the same writer tells us that various explanations had been given of the employment of the word Sūdra in this passage: *Nanu rājā 'sau kshattri-sambandhāt | "Sa ha kshattāram uvācha" (iv. 1, 5) ity uktam | vidyā-grahaṇāya cha brāhmaṇa-samīpogagamāt | śūdrasya cha anadhikārāt | katham idam ananurūpān Raikveṇa uchyate "śūdra" iti | tatra āhur āchāryyāḥ | haṁsa-vachana-sravanāt sug enam āviveśa | tena asau śuchā s'rutvā Raikvasya mahimānān vā dravati iti | rishir ātmanaḥ parokshajnatām darśayan "śūdra" ity āha | śūdra-vad bādhanena eva enam vidyā-grahaṇāya upajagāma na śuśrūshayā | na tu jātya eva śūdraḥ iti | apare punar āhur alpaṁ dhanam āhṛitam iti rushā eva enam uktavān "śūdra" iti |* "But is not Jānaśruti shewn to have been a king, (a) from his name being connected with a charioteer in the passage 'He said to his charioteer,' (b) from his resorting to a Brāhman to obtain knowledge, and (c) from a Sūdra possessing no such prerogative? How then did Raikva address to him an appellation inconsistent with this in the words 'o Sūdra?' Learned teachers reply: 'Vexation (*śuk*) took possession of him on hearing the words of the swan: in consequence of which, or of hearing (*s'rutvā*) of the greatness of Raikva, he ran up [*Sūdra* is here derived either from *śuchā + dravati*, or from *s'rutvā + dravati*]; and the rishi, to shew his knowledge of things beyond the reach of the senses, called him Sūdra. He had approached to obtain knowledge from the rishi by annoying him like a Sūdra, and not by rendering him service; while yet he was not by birth a Sūdra. Others again say that the rishi angrily called him a Sūdra because he had brought him so little property." This passage is also translated by Bābu Rājendralāl (Chh. Up. p. 68, note), who renders *bādhanena* (which I have taken to mean "annoying") by "paying" for instruction; but I cannot find any authority for this sense of the word.

triyas named Chaitrarathi was descended,' which proves that his family were Kshattriyas, we may gather that Abhipratārin belonged to this class. And the circumstance that Jānaśruti is mentioned in connection with the same branch of knowledge as Abhipratārin, the Kshattriya, shews that the former also was a Kshattriya. For it is in general men of the same class who are mentioned together. And from the fact of Jānaśruti sending a charioteer (Chh. Up. iv. 1, 5-7), and his other acts of sovereignty also, we learn that he was a Kshattriya. Hence (we conclude that) a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of divine knowledge.

Sūtra 36. "From reference being made to initiation, and from a Sūdra being declared to be excluded from it."

"And that a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of acquiring divine knowledge, may be further inferred from the fact that investiture with the sacred cord and other rites are referred to in passages where science is the subject in question. For the fact that the seekers after such knowledge obtained initiation, is shewn by such passages as the following: 'He invested him;' 'He came to him, saying, teach me, Sir' (Chh. Up. vii. 1, 1?); 'Devoted to Brahma, resting in Brahma, seeking after the highest Brahma, they approached the venerable Pippalāda with firewood in their hands, (saying) 'he will declare all this' (Prašna Up. i. 1); and 'having invested them,' etc. And that a Sūdra receives no initiation is shewn by the text of the Smṛiti which pronounces him to be but once-born, viz. 'the Sūdra is the fourth class, and once-born;' and by such other passages as this: 'There is no sin in a Sūdra, and he is not entitled to initiation.'"<sup>5</sup>

Sūtra 37. "And because he acted after ascertaining that it was not a Sūdra [who had come to him]."

"That a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of acquiring knowledge appears also from this that [according to the Chhāndogya Upanishad] Gautama proceeded to invest and instruct Jābāla after ascertaining by his truth-speaking that he was not a Sūdra: 'None but a Brāhman could distinctly declare this: bring, o fair youth, a piece of fuel; I will invest thee; thou hast not departed from the truth' (Chh. Up. iv. 4, 5)."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>5</sup> This last verse has been already quoted in Vol. I. p. 138, note 244.

<sup>6</sup> I shall quote in full the earlier part of the passage from which these words are

• Sūtra 38. “And because, according to the Smṛiti, a Sūdra is forbidden to hear, or read, or learn the sense.”

• “And that a Sūdra does not possess the prerogative of acquiring divine knowledge, appears from this that, according to the Smṛiti, he is forbidden to hear it, or read it, or learn its sense: *i.e.* it is declared in the Smṛiti that he is forbidden either to hear the Veda, or read the Veda, or to learn its contents, or to practise its injunctions. Hearing is forbidden to him in these texts: ‘If he listens to the reading of the Veda, his ears are to be filled with [melted] lead and lac;’ and ‘The Sūdra is a walking cemetery; therefore no one must read in his vicinity.’ And consequently the reading of it is prohibited to him: for

taken, both for the sake of explaining the allusion, and for the illustration which it affords of ancient Indian manners: Chh. Up. iv. 4, 1. *Satyakāmo ha Jābālo Jabālām mātaram āmantrayānehakre “brahmacharyyam bhavati vivatsyāmi kiṃ-gotro nv aham asmi” iti | 2. Sā ha enam uvācha “na aham etad veda tāta yad-gotras tvam asi | bahv ahañ charantī parichāriṇī yawane tvām alabhe | sā ’ham etad na veda yad-gotras tvam asi | Jabālā tu nāma aham asmi Satyakāmo nāma tvam asi | sa Satyakāmaḥ eva Jābālo ’bravīthāḥ” iti |* “Satyakāma, the son of Jabālā, addressed his mother Jabālā, saying, ‘I wish, mother, to enter on the life of a religious student. To what family (*gotra*: see Müller’s Anc. Sansk. Lit. pp. 378 ff.) do I belong?’ 2. She answered, ‘I do not know, my son, to what family thou belongest. Much consorting [with lovers] and roving (or serving), in my youth, I got thee. I know not of what family thou art. But my name is Jabālā, and thine Satyakāma. Say, ‘I am Satyakāma son of Jabālā.’” He accordingly goes to Hāridrumata of the race of Gotama, and asks to be received as a student. The teacher enquires to what family he belongs and the youth repeats verbatim the answer he had received from his mother, and says he is Satyakāma the son of Jabālā. The teacher replies in the words quoted by S’ankara “No one other than a Brāhman could distinctly declare this,” etc. The interpretation of paragraph 2, above given, seems to convey its correct sense. Jabālā apparently means to confess that her son was *nullius filius*: and that he must be content to call himself her son, as she did not know who his father was. The explanation of the words *bahv ahañ charantī parichāriṇī yawane tvām alabhe* given by the Commentators and followed by Bābu Rājendralāl Mitra, that she was so much occupied with attending to guests in her husband’s house, and so modest that she never thought of enquiring about her son’s *gotra*, and that her husband died early, is founded mainly on the word *parichāriṇī*, and would not account for Jabālā’s ignorance of her husband’s name (which she does not mention) or even of her husband’s lineage. In regard to the sense of *charantī* see the passage from the S’atapatha Brāhmaṇa, ii. 5, 2, 20, quoted in the First Volume of this work, p. 136, note 242. S’ankara was either ignorant of the laxity of ancient morals, or wished to throw a veil over the spurious origin of a sage like Satyakāma who had attained divine knowledge and become a teacher of it (see Chh. Up. iv. 10, 1). In his preface, however, p. 30, as I observe, Bābu Rājendralāl speaks of Satyakāma as a natural son in these words: “Although a natural born son whose father was unknown, and recognized by the contemptuous soubriquet of Jabālā from the designation of his mother Jabālā,” etc.

how can he, in whose neighbourhood even the Veda is forbidden to be read, read it himself? And if he utters it, his tongue is to be cut; and if he retains it in his memory, his body is to be slit. And it results from the meaning of the terms that he is prohibited from learning its contents, or practising its injunctions, according to the texts, 'Let no one impart intelligence to a Sūdra;' and 'reading, sacrifice, and liberality are the duties of twice-born men.' As regards (f) Vidura, Dharma, Vyādha, and others in whom knowledge was produced in consequence of their recollection of acts performed in a former birth, their enjoyment of its results cannot be prevented, from the transcendent character of the effects of knowledge; and because in the text 'Let the four castes be made to hear them,' the Smṛiti declares that the four castes possess the prerogative of learning the Itihāsas and Purānas [by means of which Sūdras may attain perfection]. But it has been established that Sūdras do not possess the prerogative of acquiring divine knowledge derived [directly] from [the study of] the Veda."

The Bhagavad Gītā affirms a different doctrine in the following verses, x. 32 f., where Kṛiṣṇa says :

*Mām hi Pārtha vyapāsṛitya ye 'pi syuḥ pāpa-yonayaḥ | striyo vaiśyās tathā sūdras te 'pi yānti parām gatim | 33. Kim punar brāhmaṇāḥ punyāḥ bhaktāḥ rājarshayaḥ tathā |*

"Those who have faith in me, even though they be of base origin, women, Vaiśyas, and Sūdras, attain to the most transcendent state. How much more pure Brāhmins and devout royal rishis."

Sankara could scarcely have been ignorant that his principle was not in harmony with this text; but he has thought proper to ignore this discrepancy of views, as he probably shrank from directly contradicting a work held in such high estimation.

See also the account of the views entertained on the same subject by Sāṅḍilya which I have stated above, p. 178.

Page 105, line 24.

The following quotation continues the discussion of this subject; and will also serve to illustrate pp. 6 and 16, above, as well as p. 60 of the First Volume :

Brahma Sūtra i. 3, 30. "Samāna-nāma-rūpatvāccha āvṛittāv apy

*avirodho darśanāt smṛites cha*” | *athāpi syāt* | *yadi paśv-ādi-vad deva-*  
*vyaktayo 'pi santātyā eva utpadjyeran nirūdhyaerāṁś cha tato 'bhidhānā-*  
*bhidheyābhidhātṛi - vyavahārāvichhedāt sambandha - nityatvena virodhaḥ*  
*śabde prakriyeta* | *yadā tu khalu sakalaṁ trilokyam parityakta-nāma-*  
*rūpaṁ nirlepam pratīyate prabhavati cha abhinavam iti śruti-smṛiti-vādāḥ*  
*vadanti tadā katham avirodhaḥ iti* | *tattra idam abhidhīyate “samāna-*  
*nāma-rūpatvād” iti* | *tadā 'pi saṁsārasya anāditvaṁ tāvad abhyupagan-*  
*tavyaṁ* | *pratipāddyīshyati cha ūchāryyaḥ saṁsārasya anāditvam “upa-*  
*padyate cha apy upalabhyate cha” iti* (Brahma Śūtra ii. 1, 36) | *anādu*  
*cha saṁsāre yathā svāpa-prabodhayoḥ pralaya-prabhava-śṛgvaṇe 'pi pūrva-*  
*prabodha-vad uttara-prabodhe 'pi vyavahārād na kaśchid virodhaḥ* | *evaṁ*  
*kalpāntara-prabhava-prādūyayor api iti drashṭavyam* | *svāpa-prabodhayoś*  
*cha pralaya-prabhavaḥ śṛjyete* | *“yadā suptaḥ svapnaṁ na kanchana*  
*paśyaty atha asmin prāṇaḥ eva ekadhā bhavati tadā enaṁ vāk sarvair*  
*nāmbhiḥ saha apyeti chakṣuḥ sarvaiḥ rūpaiḥ saha apyeti śrotraṁ sar-*  
*vaiḥ śabdaiḥ saha apyeti manaḥ sarvair dhyānaiḥ saha apyeti* | *sa yadā*  
*pratibudhyate yathā 'gner jvalataḥ sarvāḥ diśo visphulingāḥ vipratish-*  
*therann evam eva etasmād ātmanaḥ sarve prāṇāḥ yathāyatanaṁ vipratish-*  
*ṭhante prāṇebhyo devāḥ devebhyo lokāḥ* (Kaush. Br. Utt. A. 3, 3) *iti* | *syād*  
*etat* | *svāpe purushāntara-vyavahārāvichhedāt svayaṁ cha sushupta-pra-*  
*buddhasya pūrva-prabodha-vyavahārānusandhāna-sambhavād aviruddham* |  
*mahāpralaye tu sarva-vyavahārochhedāj janmāntara-vyavahāra-vach cha*  
*kalpāntara-vyavahārasya anusandhātum aśakyatvād vaishamyam iti* | *na*  
*esha doshaḥ* | *saty api sarva-vyavahārochhedini mahāpralaye Paramēśva-*  
*rānugrahād īśvarānāṁ Hiranyagarbhādīnāṁ kalpāntara-vyavahārānu-*  
*sandhānopapatteḥ* | *yadyapi prakṛitāḥ prāṇino na janmāntara-vyava-*  
*hāram anusandhānāḥ dṛśyante iti na tat prakṛita-vad īśvarānāṁ bhavi-*  
*tavyam* | *yathā hi prāṇitvāśeṣe 'pi manushyādi-stamba-paryyanteshu*  
*jñānaiśvaryyādi-pratibandhaḥ pareṇa pareṇa bhūyān bhavan dṛśyate*  
*tathā manushyādīshv eva Hiranyagarbha-paryānteshu jñānaiśvaryyādy-*  
*abhivyaktir api pareṇa pareṇa bhūyaś bhavati ity etat śruti-smṛiti-*  
*vādeshv aśakṛid eva aṁkalpādau prādurbhavatām pāramaiśvaryyam śrū-*  
*yamānaṁ na śakyaṁ nāsti iti vaditum* | *tataś cha atīta - kalpānushṭhita-*  
*prakṛiṣṭa-jñāna-karmanāṁ īśvarānāṁ Hiranyagarbhādīnāṁ varttamāna-*  
*kalpādau prādurbhavatām Paramēśvarānugrihitānāṁ supta-pratibuddha-*  
*voś kalpāntara-vyavahārānusandhānopapattiḥ* | *tathā cha śrutir “yo*  
*Brahmānaṁ vidadhāti pūrvaṁ yo vai vedāṁś cha prahinoti tasmāi* | *taṁ*

*ha devam ātma-buddhi-prakāśam mumukshur vai śaraṇam aham prapadye*"  
 (Śvetāśvatara Upanishad, vi. 18) *iti* | *smaranti cha Saunakādayo Ma-*  
*dhuchhandah-prabhṛtibhir dāsatahyo drishṭāḥ iti* | *prativedaṃ cha evam*  
*eva kṇḍarshy-ādayah smaryante* | *śrutir apy ṛishi-jñāna-pūrvakam*  
*eva mantreṇa anuśṭhānaṃ darśayati* "yo ha vai aviditārsheya-chhando-  
 daivata-brāhmaṇena mantreṇa yājayati vā adhyāpayati vū sthānuṃ cha  
 richhati garttaṃ vā prapadyate" *ity upakramya* "tasmād etāni mantre  
 vidyād" *iti* | *prāninām cha sukha-prāptaye dharmo vidhīyate dukkha-*  
*parihārāya adharmaḥ pratishidhyate* | *drishṭāntśravika-dukkha-sukha-*  
*vishayau cha rāga-dveshau bhavato nā vilakṣhaṇa-vishayāv ity ato dhar-*  
*mādharmā-phalā-bhūtottarottarā śriṣṭir nishpadyamānā pūrva-śriṣṭi-*  
*sadrīśy eva nishpadyate* | *smṛitiś cha bhavati* "toshāṃ ye yāni karmāni  
 prak-śriṣṭyām pratipedire | tāny eva te prapadyante sriyamānāḥ punaḥ  
 punaḥ | hīmsrāhiṃsre mṛidu-krūre dharmādharmāv ṛitāṅṛite | tad-bhā-  
 vitāḥ prapadyante tasmāt tat tasya rochate" | *iti* | *pralīyamānam api cha*  
*idaṃ jagat śakty-avaśesham eva pralīyate śakti-mūlam eva cha prabhavati*  
*itarathā ākasmikatva-prasangāt* | *na cha anekākārāḥ śaktayaḥ śakyāḥ*  
*kalpayitum* | *tataś cha vichhidya vichhidya apy udbhavatām bhūr-ādi-*  
*loka-pravāhānām deva-tiryāṅ-manushya-lakṣhaṇānām cha prāni-ni-*  
*kāya-pravāhānām varṇāśrama-dharma-phalā-vyavasthānām cha anūdau*  
*saṃsāre niyatatvam indraya-vishaya-sambandha-niyatatva-vat pratyeta-*  
*vyam* | *na hi indriya-vishaya-sambandhāder vyavahārasya prati sargam*  
*anyathātvaṃ shashṭhendriya-vishaya-kalpaṃ śakyam utprekshitum* | *ataś*  
*cha sarva-kalpānām tulya-vyavahāratvāt kalpāntara-vyavahārānusand-*  
*dhāna-kshamatvāch cha īśvarānām samāna-nāma-rupāḥ eva pratisargaṃ*  
*viśeshāḥ prādurbhavanti samāna-nāma-rūpatvāch cha āvṛittāv api mahā-*  
*sarga-mahāpralaya-lakṣhaṇāyām jagato* 'bhūyupagamyanāyām na kaś-  
 chich chhabda-prāmānyādi-virodhaḥ | *samāna-nāma-rūpatām cha-śruti-*  
*smṛiti darśayataḥ* "sūryā-chandramasau dhātū yathā-pūrvam akalpayat |  
 divaṃ cha pṛithivīm chāṅtarīksham atho svaḥ" | *iti* | *yathā pūrvasmīn*  
*kalpe sūryā-chandramah-prabhṛiti jagat kṛiptaṃ tathā* 'smīn api kalpe  
 Paramēśvaro kalpayat *ity arthaḥ* | *tathā* "Agnir vai akāmyata 'an-  
 nādo devānām syām' *iti* sa evam agnaye kṛittikābhyaḥ puroḍāśam aṣṭa-  
 kapālāṃ niravapat" *iti* nākshatreshṭi-vidhau yo 'gnir niravapat yasmāi  
 vā 'gnaye niravapat tayoḥ samāna-nāma-rūpatām darśayati *ity evam-*  
*jātīyakā śrutir Adāharttavyā* | *smṛitir api* "ṛishīnām nāmadheyāni yās  
 cha vedeshu drishṭayaḥ | śarparyy-ante prasūtānām tāny evaibhyo dadāty



*ajāḥ | yathartāv ritu-lingāni nānā-rūpāni paryāyē | drīṣyante tāni tāny eva tathā bhāvāḥ yugādīṣhu | yathā 'bhīmānīno' tītās tulyās te sāmpratāir iha | devāḥ devair atitair hi rūpāir nāmabhir eva cha" ity evaṃ-jātyiḥ drashṭavyaḥ |*

“Brahma Sūtra, i. 3, 30. ‘And though there be a recurrence of creation, yet as (the new creation) has the same name and form’ (as the old) there will be no contradiction in regard to the words of the Veda; since this is proved both by the intuition of rishis and by the Smṛiti.’ And further, let it be so that if a series of individual gods, as of animals, etc., is born and disappears in unbroken continuity, the alleged contradiction in regard to the words of the Veda (viz. that as they are connected with objects which are not eternal, they cannot themselves be eternal) will be removed by the perpetuity of connection arising from the continuity of practice regarding the designation of things, the things to be designated, and the designator. But when, as texts of the Śruti and Smṛiti inform us, the entire three worlds, losing name and form,<sup>8</sup> are utterly annihilated and afterwards produced anew, how can the contradiction be avoided? [The meaning of this is: How can there be an eternal connection between the words of the Veda and objects which how long soever they may have existed, must yet have come into being at the new creation following after the total (not merely the partial) destruction of the universe? and if such a connection does not exist, how can the words of the Veda be eternal, when before this new creation they represented nothing existent? see above, p. 102.] A reply to this is given in the words, ‘Yet as (the new creation) has the same name and form as the old,’ etc. Even then the world must be admitted to have been without a beginning. This eternity of the world will be declared by our teacher in the words (of

<sup>7</sup> Professor Goldstücker is of opinion that here, as elsewhere, these words (*nāma-rūpa*) should be rendered “substance and form.” See the note on the subject furnished by him in M. Burnouf’s Introduction à l’histoire du Bouddhisme Indien, p. 502.

<sup>8</sup> Govinde Ānanda remarks on the Sūtra before us, and Ś’ankara’s comment: *‘Nānu mahā-pralaye jāter apy asattvūt śabdārtha-sāmbandhānityaivam ity āśankya āha “samāna” iti | sūtraṃ nīrasya āśankām āha “athāpi” iti | vyakti-santatyā jātinām avāntara-pralaye sattvūt sambandhas tishṭhati vyavahārāvichhedaj jñāyeta cha iti vedasya anapekshatvena pramāṇye na kaśchid virodhaḥ syāt | nīrlepa-pralaye tu sambandhānāsūt punaḥ śriṣṭau kenachit puṁsā sanketā kartavyaḥ iti pūcusha-buddhi-sāpekshatvena vedasya apramāṇyam adhyāpakasya āśrayasya nāsād āśritasya anityatvaṃ cha prāptam ity arthaḥ | mahāpralaye ’pi nīrlepa-layo ’siddhaḥ sat-kāryya-ṇūdāt |*

Brahma Sūtra, ii. 1, 36), 'It is agreeable to reason, and it is ascertained.' And the world being eternal, although the Veda declares that its dissolution and reproduction take place during the sleep, and at the waking (of the creator), still as the practice continues the same in the later, as in the previous, waking condition, there is no contradiction (of the sort pretended). And it is to be considered that the same must be the case in regard to the dissolutions and creations of another Kalpa (see Vol. I. p. 43 f.). Now dissolutions and creations are said in the Veda to take place during (the creator's) sleep, and at his waking. 'When the sleeper does not see any vision, and when his breath is concentrated in him, then the voice with all names enters into him, the eye with all forms enters into him, the ear with all sounds enters into him, the mind with all thoughts enters into him. When he wakes, just as sparks shoot out in all directions from blazing fire, so do all breaths according to their several seats issue from this Soul; from the breaths spring deities; and from the deities worlds' (Kaushītaki Brāhmaṇa, latter part, 3, 3). But be it so, that [in the circumstances referred to] there is no contradiction of the kind alleged, because during the

*tathā cha saṃskārātmanā śabdārtha-tat-sambandhānām satām eva punaḥ śriṣṭāv abhivyakter na anityatvam | abhivyaktānām pūrva-kalpīya-nāma-rūpa-samānatvād na sanketaḥ kenachit kāryyaḥ | vishama-śriṣṭāu hi sanketāpekṣhā na tulya-śriṣṭāv iti pariharati "tatra idam" ity-ādinaḥ |* "But since in a great dissolution even species cease to exist, will it not result that the connection of words with the objects they denote is not eternal? In reference to this doubt the aphorist says, 'as the name and form are the same,' etc. Waving the authority of the Sūtra, the Commentator expresses a doubt in the words 'And further,' etc. It is true that the connection subsists in consequence of the continuity of individuals owing to the existence of species during the intermediate dissolutions, and this connection will be known because the previous practice continues uninterrupted. And so from the independence of the Veda, there will be no contradiction in regard to its authority. But since in a total dissolution all such connection is lost, and some intimation (of what had existed before) must be given by some person at the new creation, the Veda will be dependent on the understanding of such person, and consequently its unauthoritativeness, as well as the non-eternity of the dependent object, owing to the extinction of the instructor on whom it depended, will result. But even in a great dissolution an absolute annihilation is unproved, according to the doctrine that effects exist in their causes. And so, as words, the objects which they denote, and the connection between both, (all of which things previously existed), are manifested at the new creation as reminiscences of a previous existence, they are not non-eternal. As the objects thus manifested have the same names and forms as in the previous Kalpa, there is no necessity for any intimation (of what had existed before) being given by any person. For such an intimation would, indeed, be required in a dissimilar creation, but not in one which is similar. It is, thus that the commentator removes the objection in the words 'a reply to this is given,' etc."

sleep (of one person) the practice of others continues uninterruptedly, and even the person who has been in a deep sleep can ascertain the action which took place in his former waking state. But this is inapplicable to a great dissolution, because then there is an absolute annihilation of all practice, and because the practice which prevailed in another Kalpa, like that of another birth, cannot be ascertained. This objection, however, does not hold; for although all practice is annihilated by a great dissolution, still it is proved that through the favour of the supreme Lord, the lords Hiranyagarbha (Brahmā), etc., can ascertain the practice of the preceding Kalpa. Although ordinary creatures are not observed to, evince the power of discovering the practice of a former birth, the limitation which is true of them will not attach to the great lords in question. For just as in the series of beings commencing with men, and ending with posts, although all the creatures included in it without distinction possess the attribute of life, yet, as we descend the scale, the obstructions to knowledge and to power are perceived to go on gradually increasing; so too, in the series beginning with men and culminating in Hiranyagarbha, there is an ever greater and greater manifestation of knowledge and of power, etc.; and thus the transcendent faculties which are declared in texts of the Śruti and Smṛiti to belong to the beings who again and again come into existence at the beginning of the successive Kalpas cannot be denied to be real. And consequently it is established that the lords Hiranyagarbha and others who during the past Kalpa had manifested distinguished knowledge and powers of action, and who again came into existence at the beginning of the present Kalpa, and enjoyed the favour of the supreme Lord, were able, like a person who has been asleep and awakes again, to ascertain the practice of the previous Kalpa. And accordingly the Śruti says: 'Seeking final liberation, I take refuge with that God, shining by the light of his own intellect, who in the beginning creates Brahmā and reveals to him the Vedas' (Śvetāśv. Upan. vi. 18). And Śaunaka and others record in their Smṛitis that the hymns in the ten Maṇḍalas of the Rig-veda were seen by Madhūchhandas and other rishis. In the same way the Kāṇḍarshis, etc., of each of the Vedas are specified in the Smṛitis. The Śruti, too, in the passage commencing 'Any priest who in sacrificing for another person, or in teaching a pupil, employs a text of which he does not know, the rishi, metre, deity,

and proper application, is turned into a post, or falls into a pit,' and ending, 'Wherefore let him ascertain all these points regarding every text;' — declares that a knowledge of the rishi by whom it was seen should precede the ceremonial use of every text.<sup>9</sup> Further, righteousness is prescribed and unrighteousness is forbidden, with a view to promote the happiness and obviate the misery of living beings: and love and dislike have for their objects nothing but the happiness and misery which are perceptible by sense or are scripturally revealed. 'Consequently each succeeding creation which is effected, forming, as it does, the recompense of righteousness and unrighteousness, is constituted perfectly similar to each of those which preceded it. And the Smṛiti, too, declares: 'These creatures, as they are reproduced time after time, perform, respectively, the very same actions as they had performed in the previous creation.'<sup>10</sup> They so act under the influence of (their previous tendencies) whether noxious or innoxious, mild or cruel, righteous or unrighteous, to truth or to falsehood; and it is from this cause that they are disposed to one or another course of conduct.' Besides, even when this world is destroyed, a residuum of its force (*śakti*) continues, and it is reproduced only because it has this force for its basis: for any other supposition would involve the difficulty of the world having no cause. And as we cannot conceive that there are many forms of force (*śakti*), we must believe that, as the relations between the senses and their objects are invariable, so too, in a world which had no commencement, the successions of earths and other worlds, and of different classes of living beings distinguished as gods, animals, and men, (although separated from each other in the period of their production,) as well as the ordinations of castes, orders, duties, and recompences are invariable. For we cannot imagine that such conditions as the re-

<sup>9</sup> The object of these remarks of S'ankara regarding the rishis is thus explained by Govinda Ānanda: *Kincha mantrāṇām rishy-ādi-jñānāvāsyakatva-jñōpikū śrutir mantra-dṛig-riṣhīṇām jñānātisāyam darśayati ity āha* | . . . *tathā cha jñānādhikair kalpāntaritam vedaṁ smṛitvā vyavahārasya pravartitātīd vedasya anāditvam anapekshatvaṁ cha aviruddham iti bhāvah* | "In these words S'ankara intimates that the S'ruti which declares the necessity of knowing the rishis, etc., thereby manifests the transcendent knowledge of the rishis who saw the mantras. . . . And so from the fact that these rishis, distinguished by eminent knowledge, recollected the Veda which had existed in a different Kalpa, and [again] gave currency to the [ancient] practice [of its precepts], it is shewn that the eternity and independence of the Veda is not in contradiction [to any fact]—such is the purport."

<sup>10</sup> See the First Volume of this work, p. 60.

lations between the senses and their objects, etc., should vary in every creation, in such a way, for example, as that there should exist objects for a sixth sense. Hence, as all Kalpas exist under the same conditions, and as the lords (Hiranyagarbha, etc.) are able to ascertain the conditions which existed in another Kalpa, varieties (of beings) having the same name and form are produced in every creation; and in consequence of this sameness of name and form, even though a revolution of the world in the form of a great creation and a great dissolution is admitted, no contradiction arises affecting the authority of the words of the Veda, etc. Both Śruti and Smṛiti shew us this sameness of name and form. Here such texts of the Śruti as these may be adduced: 'The creator formed as before the sun and moon, the sky and the earth, the air and the heaven.' This means that in this Kalpa the supreme Lord fashioned the sun, the moon, and the rest of the world in the same way as they had been fashioned in the former Kalpa.' Again: Agni desired, 'May I be the food-eater of the gods.' He offered to Agni [as the deity presiding over] the Kṛittikās<sup>11</sup> (the Pleiades) a cake in eight platters.' In this passage the Śruti shews that the two Agnis, he who in the ceremony of sacrifice to the constellation offered the oblation, and he to whom it was offered, had the same name and form. And such Smṛitis, too, as the following should be examined: 'The Unborn Being gives to those born at the end of the night (*i.e.* of the dissolution<sup>12</sup>) the names of the rishis and their intuitions into the Vedas.<sup>13</sup> Just as on the recurrence of each of the seasons of the year its various characteristics are perceived to be the very same (as they had been before), so too are the things produced at the beginning of the yugas; and the past gods presiding over different objects resemble those who exist at present, and the present (resemble the) past in their names and forms.'"

I shall quote a part of Śankara's remarks on the Brahma Sūtra, ii. 1, 36, referred to in the earlier part of the preceding quotation, in which the eternity of the world is affirmed:

<sup>11</sup> Kṛittikā-nakshatrābhimāni-devāya Agnaye—Govinda Ānanda.

<sup>12</sup> S'arvaryy-ante pralayānte—Govinda Ānanda.

<sup>13</sup> The sense of the last words, which I translate literally, is not very clear. Govinda Ānanda says that in the word *vedeshu* the locative case denotes the object (*vedeshv iti vishaya-saptamī*). Compare the passages quoted above in p. 16 from the Vishṇu P. and M. Bh. which partially correspond with this verse.

<sup>14</sup> Already quoted from the Vishṇu P. in the First Volume of this work, p. 60.

ii. 1, 36. “*Upapadyate cha upalabhyate cha*” | “*upapadyate cha*”  
*saṁsarasya anūdityam | ādimattve hi saṁsārasya akasmūḍ udbhūter muk-*  
*taḥām api punaḥ saṁsārodbhūti-prasangaḥ | akriṭābhyāgama-prasangaś*  
*cha sukha-duḥkhādi-vaishamyasya nirnimittivāt | na cha īśvaro vaisha-*  
*mya-hetur ity uktam | nā cha avidyā kevalā vaishamyasya kāraṇam eka-*  
*rūpatvāt | rūgādi-kleśa-vāsanākshipṭa-karmāpekhā tv avidyā vaishamya-*  
*karī syāt | na cha karma antareṇa sarīraṁ sambhavaṭi na cha śarīram*  
*antareṇa karma sambhavati iti itaretarāśraya-dosh-prasangaḥ | anūdīte*  
*tu vijānkura-nyāyena upapatter na kaśchid dosho bhavati |*

“‘It is agreeable to reason, and it is ascertained.’ The eternity of the world is agreeable to reason. For on the supposition that it had a beginning, as it came into existence without a cause, the difficulty would arise (1) that those who had obtained liberation from mundane existence might become again involved in it; <sup>15</sup> and (2) that men would enjoy or suffer the recompense of what they had never done, as the inequalities occasioned by happiness and misery, etc., would be causeless. But God is not the cause of this inequality, as we have said (see the comment on Sūtra ii. 1, 34). Nor can ignorance alone be its cause, since ignorance is uniform (whilst conditions are varied). But ignorance, when connected with works induced by the surviving memory of desire and other sources of disquiet, may be the cause of inequality. Further, corporeal existence does not originate without works, nor works without bodily existence: so that (this hypothesis of the world having had a beginning) involves the fallacy of making each of two things depend upon the other. But on the supposition that the world had no beginning, there is no difficulty, as the two things in question may be conceived to have succeeded each other like seed and sprout from all eternity.” (See Ballantyne’s Aphorisms of the Sāṅkhya, Book i. pp. 60 and 126.)

Page 111, line 2 from the foot; and Page 113, line 11.

In the first edition, p. 78, I had translated the word *sāmayādhyu-*  
*shīte* “in the morning twilight.” When revising the translation for  
the new edition I became uncertain about the sense, and did not advert

<sup>15</sup> *i.e.* as Professor Cowell suggests, if there is no cause for the production of the world, it comes into existence at hap-hazard, and by some chance the liberated may be born again as well as the unliberated.

to the fact that the term is explained in Professor Wilson's Dictionary as denoting "a time at which neither stars nor sun are visible." Professor Cowell has since pointed out that the word occurs in the second of the following verses of Manu, where a rule is given for the interpretation of the Veda in cases such as that referred to by the commentator on the Nyāya Sūtras: ii. 14: *S'ruti-dvaidhañ tu yattra syāt tattra dharmāv ubhau smṛitau | ubhāb api hi tau dharmau samyag uktau manishibhiḥ |* 15. *Udite 'nudite chaiva, samayādhyushite tathā | sarvathā varttate yajnaḥ itīyañ vaidikī śrutih |* "14. In cases where there is a twofold Vedic prescription, both the rites are declared in the Smṛiti to be binding; since they have been distinctly pronounced by sages to be of equal authority. 15. The Vedic rule is that sacrifice may be performed in all the three ways [indicated in a particular text], viz. when the sun has risen, when it has not risen, and when neither stars nor sun appear, i.e. in the morning twilight." Kullūka says: *Sūrya-nakshatra-varjītaḥ kālah samayādhyushita-śabdena uchryate |* "a time devoid of sun and stars is denoted by the word *samayādhyushita*."

Page 142, lines 14 and 16.

The first of these quotations is from the Bṛihad Āraṇyaka Upanishad, i. 4, 10; and the second from the Chhandogya Upanishad, viii. 7, 2.

Page 149, line 6.

For *śabdādīkshiter* read *śabdād īkshiter*.

Page 154, note 140.

Professor Cowell observes on the close of this note that the Sāṅkhya opponent maintains that the metaphor is in every case a real one.

Page 157, line 18.

Professor Cowell remarks that the meaning of the phrase *śabda-pramāṇake 'rthe* is not correctly rendered by the translation here given, viz. "where the (proper sense) is established by the words." The author is laying down the general rule that in cases where there is nothing in the purport of any passage in which a particular word occurs to lead the reader to suppose that it is figuratively used, and where consequently the word itself is the only index to the sense, it must be understood in its primary signification. The proper rendering, therefore, is: "Where the sense can only be determined by the word itself."

Page 160, line 18.

For *punar-utpattir* read *pūnar-anutpattir*.

Page 181, lines 7 and 11 from the foot.

I learn from Professors Cowell and Goldstücker that *vimatā smṛitiḥ* should be rendered not "the variously understood Smṛiti" but "the Smṛiti which is here the subject of dispute."

Page 183, note 160, line 1.

With R.V. i. 179, 2, compare R.V. vii. 76, 4, quoted in p. 245.

Page 201, line 21.

The commentator thus explains this verse of the Vishṇu Purāṇa (I am indebted to Dr. Hall for a collation of the best MSS. in the India Office Library): *Ete cha dveshopasama-prakārāḥ madhyamādhi-kārīṇām eva uktāḥ na tu uttamādhi-kārīṇām ity āha "ete" | "bhinnadṛiṣā" bheda-dṛiṣtyā | "bhinna-dṛiṣām" iī vā pāṭhaḥ | tatra bhinnadarśane "abhyupagamam" angikāraṁ kṛtvā dveshopasamopāya-bhedāḥ kathitāḥ | uktānām upāyānām paramārtha-sankshepo mama mattaḥ śrūyatām |* "In the words 'these notions,' etc.' he tells us that the methods of repressing hatred which have been hitherto declared are those which are followed by the persons who have attained only to the secondary, not to the highest, stage of knowledge. *Bhinna-dṛiṣā* is the same as *bhedadṛiṣtyā*, 'with a view which distinguishes [the Deity from themselves],' or the reading is *bhinna-dṛiṣām*, 'of persons who look [on Him] as distinct.' 'Accepting' (*abhyupagamaṁ kṛtvā*), i.e. admitting, this opinion regarding a distinctness, 'I (the speaker in the V.P.) have declared these methods of repressing hatred. Now hear from me a summary' of the highest truth in regard to these methods."

Page 225, line 21.

There is a verse in the Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā, xiii. 45, in which also Agni is connected with the creation: *Yo Agnir Agner adhi ajāyata śokāi pṛithivyāḥ uta vā divas pari | yena prajāḥ Viśvakarmā jajāna tam Agne hedāḥ pari te vṛiṇaktu |* "Agni, may thy wrath avoid that Agni who sprang from Agni, from the flame of the earth or from that of the sky, by whom Viśvakarman generated living creatures." This verse is quoted and after its fashion explained in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, vii. 5, 2, 21: *Atā dakṣhiṇaṭo, jam | "Yo Agnir Agner adhi ajāyata" ity*



*Agnir vai esha | Agner adhyajāyata | “śokāt prithivyāḥ uta vā divas pari” iti yad vai Prajāpateḥ śokād ajāyata tad divas cha prithivyai cha śokād ajāyata | “Yena prajāḥ Viśvakarmā jajāna” iti vāg vai ajo vācho vai prajāḥ Viśvakarmā jajāna ityādi | “Then [he places] a goat (āja) on the southern side, (saying): ‘That Agni who sprang from Agni:’ this goat is Agni and sprang from Agni. ‘From the flame of the earth or from that of the sky:’ that which sprang from the flame of Prajāpati sprang from the flame of the earth and of the sky. ‘By whom Viśvakarman generated living creatures:’ The goat, [or the Unborn], is Vāch (Speech): Viśvakarman generated living creatures from Vāch,” etc. Compare R.V. i. 67, 5, quoted above in p. 275.*

Page 235, line 9.

Add after this the following texts, in which the verbs *taksh* and *jan* are applied to the composition of the hymns:

R.V. i. 67, 4. *Vindanti m atra naro dhiyaṁ-dhāḥ hṛidā yat tashṭān mantrān asaṁsan | “Meditative men find him (Agni) here, when they have uttered hymns of praise fashioned by the heart.”*

i. 109, 1. *Vi hy akhyam manasā vasyaḥ icchann Indrāgnī jnūsaḥ uta vā sajātān | nānyā yuvat pramatir asti mahyaṁ sa vām dhiyaṁ vājanṣim ataksham | 2. Aśravaṁ he bhūri-dāvattarā vām vijāmatur uta vā syālāt | atha somasya prayatī yuvabhyām Indrāgnī stomaṁ janayāmi navyam | “1. Seeking that which is desirable, I beheld [in you], o Indra and Agni, relations or kinsmen. I have no other counsellor than you,—I who have fabricated for you a hymn supplicating food. 2. For I have heard that you are more bountiful than an ineligible son-in-law (who has to purchase his bride), or than a bride’s brother; so now, while presenting a libation of Soma, I generate for you a new hymn.”*

Page 253, line 15.

Insert after this the following verse: R.V. x. 66, 5. *Sarasvān dhībhir Varuṇo dhṛita-vrataḥ Pūshā Viśhṇur mahimā Vāyur Aśvinā | brahma-kṛito amṛitāḥ viśva-vedasaḥ śarmā no yaṁsan trivarūtham aṁhasaḥ | “May Sarasvat with thoughts, may Varuṇa whose laws are fixed, may Pūshan, Vishṇu the mighty, Vāyu, the Aśvins,—may these makers of prayers, immortal, possessing all resources, afford us triple-cased protection from calamity.”*

*Supplementary Note on Kālātyayāpadishṭa.*—See page 84, note 89,  
and page 290.

I am indebted to Professor Goldstücker for the following additional remarks on this expression :

The Tarkasangraha, quoted by Professor Cowell in his interesting note which you kindly communicated to me, differs materially from the Bhāshāparichchheda in its interpretation of the fallacy called by them *bādha*; and I might add that the Tarkasangraha-dīpikāprakāśa offers even a third explanation of the same Vaiśeshika term. But I do not think that the *bādha* of the Vaiśeshikas is the same as the *kālātīta* of the Naiyāyikas. For when we find that the Bhāshāparichchheda in its enumeration at v. 70 applies to the fifth *hetvābhāsa* the epithet *kālātyayopadishṭa* (probably the same as the *kālātyayāpadishṭa* of the Nyāya-sūtra i. 50) yet in its explanation of v. 77 does not call it *kālātīta*, as the Nyāya does, but *bādha*, such a variation in terms seems pointed; and when we find moreover that its interpretation of *bādha* differs from Vātsyāyana's interpretation of *kālātīta*, there seems to be a still greater probability that the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika disagree on the question of the fifth *hetvābhāsa*.

For that there is *no* real difference between the Nyāyabhāshya and the Nyāyavṛitti is still my opinion. Both commentaries, I hold, agree in stating that the fallacy *kālātīta* arises when a reason assigned exceeds its proper sphere (*sādhanakāla*), and neither, I think, can have taken *kāla* in its literal sense of "time." This might have been the case if, as Professor Cowell seems to suggest, "plausibility" of an argument were the subject of the Sūtra; but as, in my opinion, the *hetu* is always intended to be a valid and good *hetu*, I do not see how such a *hetu* can become a bad one simply by being advanced too late. It would, however, become bad by being applied to a time, *i.e.* to a case to which it properly does not belong.

The circumstance that the Vṛitti and Bhāshāparichchheda are probably works of the same author, does not invalidate my opinion; it would seem on the contrary to confirm it, since the object of both these works is a different one: the former being intended as an exposition of the Nyāya, and the latter as one of the Vaiśeshika.

## INDEX TO PRINCIPAL NAMES AND MATTERS.

### A

Abhipratārin, 297  
 Abhyupagama-vāda, 201  
 Accentuation, 31  
 Achāryya, 92  
 Achyuta, 14, 45  
 Aditi, 225, 252, 258  
 Ādityas, 102, 234  
 Adharārāni, 47  
 Adhokshaja, 43, 47  
 Adhvaryu, 5, 53, 54 f.  
 Ādhvarya (Yajur) Veda, 212  
 Adṛiṣṭa, 132, 135  
 Æther, whether eternal or not, 70, 106, 164  
 Agastya, 247  
 Agni, 5 f., 46 f., 219 and passim  
 Agni a source of inspiration, 258 f.  
 Agni Sāvitra, 17  
 Agniṣṭoma, 11  
 Āhankāra, 195  
 Aila (Purūravas), 47  
 Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 5, 225  
 Aitareya Upanishad, i. 1, —65  
 Ajā, 166  
 Akshapāda (Gotama), 199  
 Akshara, 164  
 Alcinous, 269  
 Ānanda Giri, 157  
 Anga, 53  
 Angis, 31  
 Angiras, 31, 34, 219 f.  
 Angirases, 246  
 Anukramaṇī, 85, 275  
 Anuṣṭubh, 11, 278

Anuvākhyānas, 205  
 Āpaḥ (waters), 8  
 Āpāntaratamas, 40  
 Āpastamba, 62, 179  
 Apollo, 267, 270  
 Apsaras, 247  
 Āpta, 114 ff., 124, 128  
 Aptoryāman, 11  
 Āranyakas, 1, 26  
 ——— superior to rest of Veda, 31  
 Argives, 270  
 Arka, 224  
 Arthavādas, 64  
 Aryaman, 266  
 Āsmaka, 53  
 Asridh, 225  
 Astronomy, 31  
 Asura, the, 258  
 Asuras, 49  
 Āsuri, 192  
 Āśvalāyana, 179  
 Āśvalāyana's Gṛihya Sūtras, 288  
 Āśvattha, 46  
 Āśvins, 228, 236  
 Ātirātra, 11  
 Atharvan, priest, 55  
 Atharvan, sage, 31, 220, 259, 284  
 Atharvan (the Veda), 11  
 Atharvāngirases, 3, 9, 21, 42, 205  
 Atharva Parīṣiṣṭa, 54 f.  
 Ātharvanas, 54  
 Atharva-veda, quoted—  
   ii. 1, 2,—260  
   iv. 35, 6,—4  
   vii. 54,—1  
   x. 7, 14, 20,—3

Atharva-veda *continued*—

x. 7, 43, 44,—279  
 xi. 7, 24,—287  
 xiii. 4, 38,—4  
 xix. 54, 3,—4  
 — 59, 1, 2,—260  
 Athene, 272  
 Atri, 34, 220, 276  
 Atris, 243  
 Auddālaki, 77  
 Aufrecht, Prof., Cat. of Bodl. Sansk. MSS., 27 f., 30, 39  
 ——— aid from him acknowledged, 9, 15, 20, 54, 219, 221, 287 f.  
 Āupamanyava, 213  
 Avyakta, 161, 173  
 Āyāsa, 240  
 Āyātayāma, 51  
 Āyu, 222, 225  
 Āyur-veda, 114 f., 116 f., 132, 135

### B

Babara Pravāhiṇi, 77 ff.  
 Bacchus, 264  
 Bādārāyana, 64, 69, 141, and passim  
 ——— controverts opinions of Jaimini, 141 ff.  
 ——— of the Sāṅkhyas, 150 ff.  
 Bādari, 145  
 Bahvrichas, 54  
 Ballantyne's Aphorisms of the Mīmāṃsa, 70 ff.  
 ——— Aphorisms of the Nyāya, 10 ff., 201

- Ballantyne's Aphorisms of the Sāṅkhya, 133, 168  
 — Aphorisms of the Vedānta, 107  
 — Aphorisms of the Yoga, 201, 289  
 — Christianity contrasted with Hindu Philosophy, 104, 214  
 — Mahābhāshya, 104  
 — Siddhānta-muktāvali, 133  
 — Synopsis of Science, 203  
 Banerjea, Rev. Prof. K.M., 12  
 — his Dialogues on Hindu Philosophy, 31, 93 f., 115, 118, 133  
 Baudhdhas, 181  
 Baudhāyana, 179  
 Benfey, Prof., his Sāma-veda, 103, 221, 231, 238, 266  
 Bhadrāsena, 156, 170  
 Bhaga, 225  
 Bhagavad-gītā, quoted—  
 ii. 42 ff.,—37  
 x. 32,—300  
 xv. 15,—97  
 — referred to, 193  
 Bhāgavata Purāṇa, equal to the Veda, 30  
 — why composed, 42  
 — quoted—  
 i. 3, 10,—192  
 — 4, 14 ff.,—41  
 — 7, 6 ff.—42  
 ii. 8, 28,—30  
 iii. 12, 34, and 37 ff.—11  
 — 39,—207  
 iv. 29, 42 ff.,—34  
 ix. 8, 12 f.,—192  
 ix. 14, 43 ff.,—46  
 xii. 6, 37 ff.,—43  
 Bhāgavatas, doctrine of the, 177  
 Bhākta, or figurative sense of words, 108  
 Bhakti Sūtras, 177  
 Bharadvāja, 17, 31  
 Bharadvājas, 221  
 Bharatas, 276  
 Bhārati, 255, 257  
 Bhārgava, 55  
 Bhāshā-parichchēda, 133, 150, 290  
 Bhoja-rāja, 201  
 Bhūh, 5, 7, 14, 104  
 Bhuvah, 5, 7, 14, 104  
 Bhṛigu, 34, 219  
 Bhṛigu, 233, 237  
 Bird, the, 258  
 Blackie, on the Theology of Homer, 272  
 Boehtlingk and Roth, Sanskrit Dictionary, 20, 15 f., 201, 236, 240 f., 263  
 Brahmā, 8, 21, 24, 33, 43, and passim  
 — Brahmā, 3, 10, 12 f., 28, 31, 34, 45, and passim  
 Brahmā composed of the Rig-veda, 27  
 Brahma-kāṇḍa, 65  
 Brahma-mīmāṃsā, its object, 139 (see Vedānta)  
 Brahman (prayer) 224  
 Brahmanaspati, 234, 249, 260 f.  
 Brahmarāta, 50, 52  
 Brahma Sūtras, 69, 93, and passim  
 Brahma-vādis, 195  
 Brahma-veda, 55  
 Brahma-vaivarta-purāṇa, i. 48, quoted, 30  
 — corrector of Veda, 30  
 Brīhad Āraṇyaka Upanishad, quoted—  
 i. 2, 4,—104  
 — 2, 5,—9  
 — 4, 10,—142  
 — 5, 5,—9  
 ii. 2, 3,—166  
 — 4, 10,—8, 204  
 iii. 8, 11,—164  
 iv. 1, 2,—208  
 — 3, 22,—33  
 v. 8,—254  
 Brihaspati, 221, 256, 260  
 Brihatī, 15, 278  
 Buddha, 202  
 Butler (Bp.), his sermons on the love of God, 107  
 C  
 Calchas, 271  
 Caste, originally but one, 47 f.  
 Chaitra, 92  
 Chaitraratha and Chaitrarathi, 297  
 Chāndāla, 34, 178  
 Chhandoga Brāhmāṇa, 103  
 Charaṇa, 53  
 Charaṇavyūha, 56  
 Charakas, 52 ff.  
 Charakāchāryya, 53  
 Charakādhvaryus, 51  
 Chārvākas, 202  
 Chhandas, 206  
 Chhandogas, 54  
 Chhāndogya Brāhmaṇa, 181  
 Chhāndogya Upanishad, quoted—  
 iv. 1, 3,—294  
 — 2, 2,—293  
 — 3, 5,—296  
 — 17, 1,—5  
 vi. 2, 1, 3 f.,—151, 154  
 — 3, 2,—155  
 — 4, 1,—167  
 — 8, 6 f.,—155, 176  
 — 14, 6,—156  
 — 16, 2,—157  
 vii. 1, 1—5,—32, 143, 207, 298  
 — 25, 2,—178  
 viii. 7, 2,—142  
 — 15, 1,—284  
 Colebrooke, Miscellaneous Essays, 6, 57, 74, and passim  
 Commentary, 31  
 Commentators on the Veda, their proofs of its authority, 57 ff.  
 Cowell, Prof. E. B., his translation of the Kushmanjali, 128  
 — his aid acknowledged, 201, 290 f., 308  
 D  
 Dadhyanch, 220  
 Daityas, 201  
 Daksha, 34, 225  
 Danti, 264  
 Dasagva, 246  
 Demodocus, 269 f.  
 Dharma, 300  
 Dhī, 224  
 Dhishana, 202  
 Dhishanā, 255

Dhṛti, 224  
 Dhruvā, 20  
 Dionysus, 264  
 Dissolution of the Uni-  
 verse, 96, 303  
 Dushkrīta, 53  
 Dvāpāyana, see Krishna  
 Dvāpara age, 37, 41, 45,  
 48 f.  
 Dyaus, 246, 266

## E

Egyptians, 183 f.  
 Ekāntin, 289  
 Ekavīmśa, 11.  
 Empedocles, 273  
 Epimenides, 273  
 Euripides, 264 f.

## F

Freedom of Speculation in  
 India in early times, 57

## G

Gāthā, 23  
 Gaṇāmbikā, 264  
 Gandharva, 258, 260 f.  
 Gandharvas, 46 ff.  
 Gaṇeśa, 264  
 Gārgī, 164  
 Gauḍapāda, 265  
 Gauna, or figurative sense  
 of words, 108  
 Gaurī, 264  
 Gaya, 244  
 Gāyatra, 11, 276  
 Gāyatrī, 7, 11, 13 f., 263  
 — varieties of, 263  
 — mother of the Ve-  
 das, 12  
 Girīśa, 34  
 Gir, 224  
 Gods, capable of acquiring  
 divine knowledge, 99,  
 141  
 Goldsticker, Prof., his  
 Dictionary referred to,  
 201  
 — Mānava-kalpa-sū-  
 tra quoted, 95 ff.  
 — his aid acknow-  
 ledged, 84, 93, 97, 295,  
 303, etc.  
 Gotama, author of Nyāya  
 Sūtras, 111, 113

Gotama, rishi, 235  
 Gotamas, 232, 238, 241  
 Grammar, 31  
 Gṛitsamadās, 233, 235  
 Grote's History of Greece,  
 258, 270 ff.  
 Guṇas, 12, 32, 44, 150,  
 165, 195  
 Guru, 91, 180  
 Goviṇḍa Ānanda quoted,  
 103, 155, 157, 164, 190,  
 and passim

## H

Hall, Dr., aid from him  
 acknowledged, 12, 52  
 — Sāṅkhya Sāra,  
 185, 193  
 Harita, 254  
 Haridāsa Bhaṭṭāchāryya,  
 128  
 Hāridrumata, 299  
 Halivāṃśa quoted—  
 47,—12  
 11,516,—12  
 11,665 ff.—13  
 12,425 ff.—14  
 Haug, Prof., on the signi-  
 fication of the word  
*brahma*, 233 f.  
 Hellenic race, its differ-  
 ence from the Indian,  
 273  
 Herodotus quoted, 183,  
 210  
 Hesiod quoted, 183, 268  
 Hiranyagarbha, 13, 136,  
 163, 285, 305  
 Homer, 269 ff.  
 Hotrā, 255  
 Hymns, distinguished as  
 new and old, 224 ff., see  
 Mantras

## I

Ignorance, 164  
 Ikshvāku, 286  
 Inferior science, 31, 206  
 Ilā, 255  
 Indra, 4, 99, 103, 142,  
 220, and passim  
 — sceptical doubts,  
 regarding Indra, 254  
 — source of inspira-  
 tion, 261 f.

Inspiration, its nature, 125  
 Intuition of rishis, 125 ff.,  
 183  
 Īśa, 45  
 Isaiah referred to, 224  
 Itihāsas, 2, 9, and passim,  
 see Smṛiti

## J

Jabālā, 299  
 Jābāla, 298 f.  
 Jagatī metre, 11, 276, 278  
 Jaimini, 39, 40, 42, 45, 93,  
 98, 141  
 — controverts opin-  
 ions of Bādarāyana,  
 141 ff.  
 Jalada, 55  
 Jan (to generate), 232, 237  
 Janaka, 56  
 Janamejaya, 53  
 Janasrūta, 295  
 Jānasruti, 295 ff.  
 Jaradgava, 80  
 Jātavedas, 237, 241  
 Jayanārāyana Tarkapan-  
 chānana, 120, 175  
 John (St.), his First  
 Epistle, 239  
 — his Gospel, 239  
 Journal of the Royal Asia-  
 tic Society referred to,  
 2, 57, 118, 264, 290  
 Juhū, 20

## K

Kaiyyata, 95 ff.  
 Kakshasena, 297  
 Kalanja, 68  
 Kalāpa, 91, 132  
 Kalāpas, 96  
 Kālāpa, 91  
 Kālāpaka, 79, 132  
 Kālātyayāpadishṭa, 84,  
 290, 312  
 Kalchas, 270 f.  
 Kali-yuga, 49  
 Kālidāsa, 69 f., 83 f., 89  
 Kalpa sūtras, 180, 206  
 Kanāda, 106 and passim  
 Kāṇḍarshis, 304  
 Kaṇva, 220  
 Kaṇvas, 229  
 Kāpeya, 297

Kapi, 297  
 Kapila, 37, and passim  
 — how treated by  
 S'ankara, 184 ff.  
 Kapinjala, 241  
 Karmakāṇḍa, 64  
 Karma-mīmāṃsā, see Pūr-  
 va-mīmāṃsā  
 Karmasiddhi, 264  
 Kārtikeya, 264  
 Kaśyapa, 285  
 Katha (sage), 77, 83, 91,  
 132  
 Kathas, 96  
 Katha Upanishad quoted,  
 i. 3, 3, and 10—162  
 — 3, 11,—161  
 ii. 23,—36  
 iii. 3, 10 f.,—158 ff.  
 Kāthaka, 76 f., 79, 83, 91,  
 132  
 Kātyayana, 179  
 Kātyayana's S'rauta Sū-  
 tras, 47  
 Kaurma-purāṇa, 200  
 Kausika, 249  
 Kaushītākī Br., 5, 304  
 Kaushītākīns, 56  
 Kautuma, 76 f., 83  
 Kavi, 218  
 Keśava, 28  
 Kīkaṭas, 79, 215  
 Köhler, Prophetismus der  
 Hebræer, 173 f.  
 Kratu, 34  
 Kṛi, (to make), 232  
 Kṛishṇa, 29, 42, 286  
 Kṛishṇa Dvaipāyana, 38 f.  
 Kṛita-yuga, 37, 40, 47 ff.  
 Kṛittikās, 307  
 Kullūka on Manu, 6, 14,  
 23, 26, 180  
 Kumārila, 95  
 Kuṃvyā, 23  
 Kuśikas, 233, 247  
 Kusumājali quoted, 128 ff.  
 Kusurubinda, 77  
 Kuthumi, 77, 83  
 Kutsa, 213

L

Lassen, In. Ant., 38  
 Laukāyatikas, 199  
 Linga-purāṇa, 263  
 Lokāyata, 95  
 Lomaharṣana, c. 1

## M

Mādhava, author of Nyā-  
 ya-mālā-vistara, 82  
 — author of the Sar-  
 va-darśana-sangraha, 86  
 — author of the Ve-  
 dārtha-prakāsa, on T.S.,  
 quoted, 66 ff.  
 Madhuchhandas, 305  
 Madhuvidyā, 141, 286  
 Madhusūdana Sarasvatī,  
 194  
 Madras, 81  
 Mahābhārata, origin of  
 the name, 29  
 — is a Veda relating  
 to Kṛishṇa, 29  
 — equal to the Veda,  
 29  
 — composed by Nā-  
 rāyaṇa, 39  
 — why composed, 42  
 — quoted—  
 Ādi-parvan—  
 258,—31  
 261, 264 f.,—29  
 645,—29  
 2298,—29  
 2314,—29  
 2417,—38  
 4236,—38  
 Vana-parvan—  
 13432,—12  
 Udyoga-parvan—  
 1537,—288  
 Bhīshma-parvan—  
 3019,—14  
 S'ānti-parvan—  
 7660,—85, 101  
 8505,—49  
 8533 ff.,—16, 69  
 12920,—14  
 13088 ff.,—48  
 13432,—12  
 13475,—49  
 12551,—289  
 13678,—40  
 Svargārohanika-parvan  
 200 ff.,—29  
 Mahābhāshya, 95  
 Mahāśāla S'aunaka, 31  
 Mahāsenā (Kārtikeya),  
 264  
 Mahat, 154, 172 f.  
 Mahēshvara, 16

Mahādhara on the Vāj.  
 San. quoted, 39  
 Maitreya, 37  
 Maitrī Upanishad—  
 vi. 22,—176  
 Mālatī Mādhava, 90  
 Māna (Agastya), 247  
 Mānas, 233  
 Mānava dharma - śāstra  
 quoted—  
 i. 21 ff.,—6  
 — 85 f.,—48  
 ii. 10 ff.,—24  
 — 76 ff.,—7  
 — 97,—25  
 — 166 f.,—288  
 iv. 123 f.,—25  
 vi. 82 ff.,—24  
 xi. 243,—85  
 xii. 91,—190  
 — 94 ff.,—23  
 — 106,—24, 181  
 Māndhātṛi, 229  
 Mānava-kalpa-sūtra, 95  
 Manishā, 224  
 Manman, 224  
 Mantras, 1, 33, 62 ff., 115,  
 224  
 — magical power  
 ascribed to, 275 ff.  
 Manu, 181 f., 190, 220,  
 285  
 Manvantaras, 38  
 Marīchi, 34  
 Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa, 102,  
 1 ff., quoted, 11  
 Maruts, 102, 226, 263  
 Matī, 224  
 Matsya Purāṇa, iii. 2 ff.  
 quoted, 28  
 Mauda, 55  
 Māyā, 164, 195, 202  
 Medhātithi, 6  
 Medhāvī, 218  
 Meru, 50, 52  
 Mitra, 225, 227  
 Mīmāṃsā, see Pūrva-mi-  
 māṃsā, 28  
 Mīmāṃsakas, their alleged  
 atheism, 94 f.  
 Mīmāṃsa-vārttika, 95  
 Minerva, 273  
 Moksha-dharma quoted,  
 199 f.  
 Mudakas, 96  
 Mukhya, or proper senes  
 of words, 107

- Müller, M., Profr. aid received from 237  
 ——— Ancient Sanskrit Lit., 1, 2, 36, 53, 56 f., 175, 280 f.  
 ——— Chāṅs, etc., 48  
 ——— Jour. R. A. S., 230, 236, 255  
 ——— Jour. of Ger. Or. Soc., 20, 104, 127, 183  
 Mundaka Upanishad—  
 i. 1, 1-5,—30, 204, 284  
 ii. 1, 4, and 6,—30  
 iii. 1, 1,—176  
 Muni, 219  
 Muses, 267 ff.
- N
- Nābhāka, 230  
 Nābhāka, 229  
 Nābhan, 246  
 Nägelsbach's Nachomerische Theologie, 273  
 Nāgōjibhaṭṭa, 95 ff.  
 Nahusha, 283  
 Naichasākha, 79  
 Nāka Maudgalya, 22  
 Name and Form, 152, 155, 163, 167, 302, etc.  
 Nāsatvas (Asvins), 240  
 Nārada, 32, 34  
 Nārāyana, 47.  
 Nārāyana-tīrtha, 128  
 Nārāśansis, 215  
 Navagva, 221, 246  
 Nestor, 273  
 Nigada, 45  
 Nigama, 180  
 Nirukta, quoted—  
 i. 20,—118, 213  
 iii. 11,—213  
 iv. 6,—212  
 vii. 1, 3,—211  
 — 16,—219  
 viii. 3,—277  
 x. 32,—213  
 — 42,—212  
 ——— referred to, 180, 206, 247  
 Nītha, 224  
 Nivid, 224  
 Nodhas, 235  
 Nṛimedha, a rishi, 213  
 Nyāya, whether theistic or not, 133  
 Nyāya Sūtras quoted, 108 ff.  
 Nyāya-māla-vistara, quoted, 82, 179, 181  
 Nyāya-sūtra-vṛitti, 108
- O
- Odana oblation, 4  
 Odyssey, 269, 272 f.  
 Omkāra, 44  
 Oracles, 273
- P
- Padma-purāna quoted, 27  
 Paila, 39, 41 f., 45  
 Paingins, 56  
 Paippalāda, 55  
 Pañchadāsa-stoma, 11  
 Pañchajanāh, 168  
 Pāniṇi, 56, 91  
 Pānka, 15  
 Pārs'ara, 38, 40 f., 45, 199 f.  
 Parā'sara Upapurāna, 199  
 Parjanya, 252  
 Paruchhepa, a rishi, 212  
 Pāsupata system, 202  
 Pāsupatas, 195  
 Pātanjalas, 195  
 Patanjali, Mahābhāshya, 56, 95 f.  
 ——— Yoga, 198  
 Paulkasa, 34  
 Paurusheya, 9, 90, 134  
 Paurusheyatva, 90  
 Pavana, 5  
 Pertsch, alphabetical list of initial words of *rich*-verses, 103  
 Phemiis, 270  
 Phæacians, 269  
 Philosophical systems, their mutual relations, 194 ff.  
 Pippalāda, 298  
 Pippalādakas, 96  
 Pitāmaha, 28  
 Plati, 244  
 Plato quoted, 183  
 ——— his ideas on inspiration, 273  
 Polyphemus, 265  
 Prabhākara, 91, 180  
 Pradhāna, 150, etc.  
 Prakṛiti, 164, 166  
 Pramaganda, 79  
 Praskaṇva, 220  
 Prasna Upanishad, Comm. on, 191  
 ——— i. 1,—297  
 Prasthāna-bheda, 194 f.  
 Praudhi-vada, 201  
 Praūga, 278  
 Pṛithivī, 266  
 Priyamedha, 220  
 Prosody, 31  
 Psalms, 224  
 Pulastya, 34  
 Pulaha, 34  
 Puṇḍarikāksha, 89  
 Purānas, 2, 27, and passim, see Smṛiti  
 ——— created before the Vedas, 27 f.  
 ——— eternal, 28  
 ——— form with the Iti-hāsas a fifth Veda, 33, 42  
 Purūravas, 45 ff., 205  
 Purusha, 3, 4, and passim  
 Purusha-medha, 35  
 Purusha-sūkta (R. V. x. 90, 1, 9), 3, 61, 69, 89  
 Pūrva-mimānsa Sūtras quoted, 70 ff.  
 Pūrva-mimānsā, its object, 139  
 Pūshan, 226, 263  
 Pythagoras, 273
- R
- Raghunandana, 68  
 Raghuvansa, 77  
 Rahūgaṇas, 241  
 Raikva and Rainka, 296 f.  
 Rājās, 12, 32, 48, 150  
 Rājāsūya sacrifice, 184  
 Rajendra Lal Mitra, his translation of the Upanishad, 167, 296 f., 299  
 Rakshases, 55  
 Rāmānujas, 195  
 Rāmāyana, i. 1, 94 quoted 29  
 ——— equal to the Veda, 30  
 Rathantara, 276  
 Rationalistic treatises, 24  
 Ri (to move, send forth), 240

Ribhus, 237, 261  
 Rich, 224  
 Rich-verses, 11, 12, 15  
 Rig-veda, quotations from,  
 First Mandala—  
 1, 2,—219  
 3, 11, 12,—254  
 12, 11,—224  
 18, 6, 7,—258  
 20, 1,—232  
 22, 10,—255  
 27, 4,—225  
 31, 1, 2,—251  
 — 11,—255  
 — 18,—232  
 32, 1,—212  
 37, 4,—252  
 40, 5, 6,—260  
 45, 3, 4,—220  
 47, 2,—232  
 48, 14,—220  
 60, 3,—225  
 — 5,—242  
 61, 2,—241  
 — 4,—241  
 — 16,—232  
 62, 13,—235  
 66, 2,—251  
 67, 3,—275  
 — 4,—311  
 77, 5,—242  
 78, 5,—242  
 80, 16,—220  
 89, 3,—225  
 91, 11,—242  
 94, 1,—241  
 96, 2,—225  
 102, 1,—242  
 109, 1, 2, 4,—311  
 116, 1,—240  
 117, 25,—233  
 118, 3,—220  
 130, 6,—235  
 — 10,—225  
 131, 6,—220  
 139, 9,—220  
 143, 1,—225  
 152, 5,—253  
 164, 5, 6,—279  
 — 20,—176  
 — 25,—276  
 — 37,—279  
 169, 3,— 59  
 171, 2,—235  
 175, 6,—220  
 179, 2,—182. 245  
 183, 6,—153

Rig-veda continued—  
 First Mandala—  
 184, 5,—232  
 185, 1,—280  
 Second Mandala—  
 3, 8,—255  
 17, 1,—225  
 18, 3,—225  
 19, 8,—235  
 23, 2,—260  
 24, 1,—226  
 35, 2,—235  
 39, 8,—233  
 Third Mandala—  
 1, 20,—226  
 2, 1,—237  
 18, 3,—255  
 21, 3,—251  
 29, 15,—248  
 30, 20,—233  
 32, 13,—226  
 39, 1, 2,—226  
 43, 5,—248  
 53, 9,—248  
 — 12,—276  
 — 14,—215  
 54, 17,—261  
 58, 3,—220  
 62, 7,—226  
 — 10,—263  
 Fourth Mandala—  
 3, 16,—242  
 5, 3,—259  
 — 6,—259  
 6, 1,—259  
 — 11,—233  
 11, 3,—259  
 16, 20, 21,—233  
 20, 5,—220  
 32, 12,—242  
 43, 1, 2,—255  
 50, 1,—221  
 Fifth Mandala—  
 2, 11,—235  
 11, 5,—242  
 22, 4,—243  
 29, 1,—251  
 29, 15,—235  
 31, 4,—276  
 40, 6,—276  
 42, 6,—220  
 — 13,—226  
 44, 8,— 59  
 45, 4,—243  
 55, 3,—227  
 73, 10,—236

Rig-veda continued—  
 Sixth Mandala—  
 14, 2,—251  
 16, 47,—236  
 17, 13,—227  
 18, 15,—261  
 19, 4,—221  
 21, 5,—221  
 — 8,—221  
 22, 2,—221  
 — 7,—227  
 26, 3,—261  
 32, 1,—236  
 34, 1,—227, 261  
 38, 3,—243  
 44, 13,—227  
 47, 3,—264  
 — 10,—261  
 48, 11,—227  
 49, 1,—227  
 50, 6,—227  
 — 15,—221  
 52, 2,—233  
 62, 4,—228  
 69, 2,—262  
 75, 19,—277  
 Seventh Mandala—  
 7, 6,—236  
 15, 4,—237  
 18, 1,—222  
 19, 11,—277  
 22, 9,—237  
 26, 1,—238  
 29, 4,—222  
 31, 11,—238  
 33, 3,—277  
 — 7-13,—246  
 34, 1,—255  
 — 9,—255  
 35, 14,—234  
 37, 4,—234  
 53, 1,—222  
 — 2,—228  
 56, 23,—228  
 59, 4,—228  
 61, 2,—240  
 — 6,—228  
 64, 4,—236  
 66, 11,—266  
 67, 5,—243  
 76, 4,—222  
 85, 1,—243  
 87, 4,—248  
 88, 4,—248  
 91, 1,—222  
 93, 1,—228  
 94, 1, 2,—238



Rig-veda continued—  
Seventh Mandala—

97, 3, 5,—261

— 9,—234

104, 15,—212

## Eighth Mandala—

3, 3,—249

5, 18,—243

5, 24,—228

6, 10,—250

— 11,—228

— 33,—236

— 41,—251

— 43,—229

8, 8,—243

12, 10,—229

— 14,—258

— 31,—240

13, 7,—262

— 26,—240

16, 7,—251

19, 5, 6,—3

20, 19,—229

23, 14,—229

25, 24,—229

27, 11,—243

— 13,—256

36, 7,—222

39, 6,—229

40, 4, 5,—230

— 12,—229

41, 2,—229

— 5, 6,—266

43, 2,—238

44, 12,—230

48, 3,—265

49, 9,—277

51, 4,—234

52, 4,—262

55, 11,—230

63, 7, 8,—230

64, 6,—69, 267

65, 5, 6, 12,—230

77, 4,—238

78, 3,—263

— 6, 7,—262

79, 3,—234

84, 4, 5,—238

88, 4,—253

89, 3, 4,—254

— 10, 11,—253

90, 16,—256

## Ninth Mandala—

9, 8,—231

12, 7,—267

25, 5,—265

33, 5,—256

Rig-veda continued—  
Ninth Mandala—

42, 2,—231

62, 1,—103

73, 2,—239

76, 4,—265

87, 3,—249

91, 5,—231

92, 3,—267

95, 1,—239

— 2,—265

96, 5-7,—266

— 11,—222

— 18,—251

99, 4,—231

107, 7,—251

119, 7,—223

114, 2,—234

## Tenth Mandala—

4, 5,—259

4, 6,—231

7, 2,—239

14, 15,—223

20, 10,—253

21, 5,—259

23, 5-7,—239

26, 4,—263

27, 22,—252

31, 7,—280

34, 13,—212

36, 5,—260

39, 14,—236, 267

42, 1,—244

54, 3,—221

— 6,—234

57, 2,—278

— 3,—229

61, 7,—253

62, 1, 3,—246

— 4, 5,—246

63, 17,—244

66, 5,—311

66, 14,—223

67, 1,—239

71, 1-6,—256

71, 3,—105

72, 1, 2,—249

80, 7,—237

81, 4,—280

88, 8,—253

— 18,—280

89, 3,—231

— 5,—59

90, 1,—61

— 9,—3, 61, 89

91, 8,—259

— 13,—231

Rig-veda continued—  
Tenth Mandala—

— 14,—240

95, 14,—212

96, 5,—223

— 11,—231

98, 9,—223

101, 2,—234

106, 6,—59

107, 6,—244

109, 4,—250

110, 8,—257

111, 1,—244

112, 9,—252, 262

114, 8, 9,—277

115, 5,—252

116, 9,—240

117, 6,—212

125, 3-5,—257

129, 2,—212

— 5,—59

— 5-7,—280

— 6,—60

130, 1-7,—277 f.

139, 5,—260

154, 2, 5,—250

160, 5,—231

167, 1,—250

176, 2,—258

177, 1,—258

190, 1,—250

Rishis, nature of their inspiration, 125, 183

— "seers" of the hymns, 211

— distinguished as new and old, 218 ff.

— speak of themselves as authors of hymns, 232 ff.

— supernatural character ascribed to, 245 ff.

— conscious of divine inspiration, 252 ff.

— their opposite views how reconcilable, 274 f.

— their confession of ignorance, 279 ff.

— their idea of inspiration different from that of later writers, 281 f.

— rival the gods, 283

Ritual, 31

Röer, Dr. E., his translations and introductions to the Upanishads, 36, 185, 193, 254, 284  
 — his Bhāshā-parichheda, 133  
 — his German translation of the Vaiśeṣhika aphorisms, 118, 120  
 — his remarks on the doctrine of the Upanishads, 173  
 — his remarks on the Sāṅkhya, 193  
 Romaharshaṇa, 39  
 Roth, Illustrations of Nirukta, 47, 230, 246 f.  
 Rudra, 64, 234  
 — composed of the Sāma-veda, 27  
 Rudras, 102, 234

## S

S'abara, Svāmin, 70, 80  
 Sacrifices, the five great, 20  
 Sacrifice eternal, 6  
 Sadasaspati, 258  
 Sādhyas, 6, 12  
 Sagara, sons of, 190, 192  
 S'ākhās of the Veda, 37, 42, 56  
 S'akti, 164, 173, 306  
 Sāma-rathantara, 11  
 Sāma-veda, impurity of its sound, 26 f.  
 — i. 299 quoted, 252  
 Sāman, 224  
 Sāman-verses, 11  
 S'amī wood, 46  
 Sāmīdhenīs, 213  
 S'amīsa, 224  
 Saṁvarga-vidyā, 295 ff.  
 Sanaka, 34  
 Sanatkumāra, 32 f.  
 S'āṅḍilya, an ancient sage, 178  
 — author of the Bhakti Sūtras quoted, 177 f.  
 S'āṅkāra Āchārya's commentary on the Brahma Sūtras quoted, 62, 98 ff., 106, 108, 140 ff., 177, 182, 185 ff., 203, 289, 291 ff.

S'āṅkāra Achārya's commentary on the Br. Ār. Up. quoted, 34, 204  
 — his comm. on the Chhāndogya Up., 296  
 — his comm. on the Prasna Up. quoted, 191  
 — on the Taitt. Up. quoted, 191  
 S'āṅkāra Mīśra comm. on Vaiśeṣhika, 120, 125  
 Sāṅkhya aphorisms, 133, 168  
 Sāṅkhya-kārikā, 138, 166  
 Sāṅkhya-prācchana-bhāshya, 196 ff.  
 S'antanu, 45  
 Saptadasa-stoma, 11  
 Sarasvati, goddess, 14, 254 f., 257, 282  
 — mother of the Vedas, 14  
 — the river, 41  
 S'ārīraka - mīmāṃsā - bhāshya, 98 See S'āṅkāra Āchārya  
 S'ārīraka sūtras, 98  
 Sarva-darsana-sangraha-86 ff.  
 S'atapatha Brāhmaṇa, quoted—  
 iii. 4, 1, 22,—47  
 iv. 1, 2, 19,—53  
 vi. 1, 1, 8,—7  
 — 1, 2, 19,—5  
 vii. 5, 2, 52,—9  
 ix. 4, 4, 4,—223  
 x. 3, 5, 12,—31  
 — 4, 2, 21,—14  
 — 6, 5, 4,—104  
 xi. 5, 1, 1,—48  
 — 5, 6, 1—7, 10,—18  
 — 5, 8, 1,—4  
 xiv. 4, 3, 12,—9  
 — 5, 4, 10,—8  
 — 7, 1, 22,—33  
 Sattva guna, 12, 32, 150  
 Sātvata-sāṁhitā (the Bhāgavata Pur.) 42  
 Satyakāma, 293  
 Saṭyavāha, 31  
 Saṭyavati, 45  
 S'aunaka, 297, 305  
 S'aunakas, 55  
 Savitṛi, 263  
 Sāvitrī, 7, 14

Sāyana, his Vedārtha-prākāśa, or commentaries on R.V. quoted, 58 ff., 76, 78, 80, 105, 206, 215, 219  
 Sayugvan, 296  
 Siddhānta-muktāvali, 133  
 S'ikshā, 206  
 Skambha, 3  
 Skanda, 264  
 S'lokas, 9, 205  
 Smṛiti, 24, 181, and passim  
 Smritis, extent and conditions of their authority, 181 ff.  
 Sobhari, 229  
 Soma, god, 8, 223  
 — source of inspiration, 264 ff.  
 Somaśarma, 92  
 Soul, unity of, 190, 203  
 Souls, diversity of, 169, 175  
 Sound, eternity of, affirmed, 71 ff., 90 ff.  
 — denied, 89, 109, 137  
 Species or Genera eternal, 102  
 Sphoṭa, 44, 104 f., 136 f.  
 S'rāmaṇa, 34  
 S'ruti, 24  
 Sruva, 20  
 Stoma, 224  
 Stuti, 224  
 Sudās, 277  
 S'ūdras, unfit for study of Veda, 42, 68, 99, 292 ff.  
 — may attain the highest bliss, 178  
 S'uka, 43  
 Sumati, 224  
 Sumantu, 39, 40, 42, 45  
 Superior science, 31, 206  
 Sushṭuti, 224  
 Sūrya, 5 f., 266  
 Sūta, 39, 43  
 Svadhā, 20, 254  
 Svāhā, 254  
 Svar, 5, 7, 14  
 Svarbhānu, 276  
 Svāyambhuva manvantara, 39 f.  
 S'vetaketu, 155  
 S'vetāvatara, sage, 284

S'vātasvatara Upanishad  
quoted—

- iv. 5,—165  
— 10,—164  
v. 2,—184, 188 ff., 283  
vi. 6,—176  
— 11,—171  
— 18,—304  
— 21,—284

## S'yāvāśva, 222

## T

## Taittirīyas, 51

Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, vii.  
8,—22Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa [?],  
275

quoted—

- ii. 3, 10, 1,—8  
— 4, 2, 6,—278  
— 8, 8, 5,—10, 234  
iii. 3, 9, 1,—10  
— 10, 11, 3,—16  
— 12, 9, 1,—15

## Taittirīya Sāmhita quoted,

- i. 2, 1, 1,—59f.  
ii. 5, 8, 3,—212  
vii. 3, 1, 4,—17

Taittirīya Upanishad, 65  
— comm. on, 191

## Tamas, 12, 32, 150, 202

## Tāmasa works, 202

## Tapas, 250

Tarka-sangraha, 127, 133,  
150Taksh (to fabricate), 232,  
235

## Telemachus, 273

## Thamyris, 269

Thirlwall, Bp., his history  
of Greece, 274

## Tikshṇasringa, 264

## Time, 4

## Tiraśchī, 238

## Tittiri, 77, 83

## Tretā-yuga, 37, 45, 47

## Triple science, 8

## Trisarvī, 53

## Trishtubh, 278

## Trita, 212

## Tritsus, 277

## Trivṛit, 11

## Tvashṭri, 252

## U

## Udayanā Āchāryya, 128

## Uddālaka Āruni, 286

## Uktha, 224, 278

## Ukthya, 11

## Ulysses, 270

## Unborn Female, 165, 171

## Unborn Male, 165

## Upabāṛit, 20

Upanishads, 1, 2, 138, and  
passim

— superior to other

parts of the Veda, 31

— their doctrines uni-

form according to S'an-

kara, but really various,

108, 175

## Upapurānas, 30

## Urvāśī, 45 ff., 205, 247

## Uśanas, 249

## Uśas, 243

## Uśnas, 44

## Ushnih metre, 11, 278

## Uttarārāṇi, 47

## V

Vāch, 8, 10, 104f., 253f.,  
256 f., 282

## Vachas, 224

## Vājasaneyins, 53

## Vājasaneyi ritual, 53

— Sāmhita quoted—

iii. 53,—229

v. 2,—46

xiii. 53,—9

xvi. 53,—60

xviii. 52,—223

xxx. 18,—53

## Vājins, 51 f.

## Vairūpa, 11

Vaisampāyana, 39, 40, 42,  
45, 50ff.

## Vaiseshika, 106, 175

## Vaishnavas, 195

## Vaisvānara (Agni), 237

Vaivasvata Manvantara,  
31 f., 45

## Vaktratunda (Ganesa), 264

## Vālakhilya xi. 6,—262

## Vālmiki, 77

Varuṇa, 227, 243, 247 f.,  
262

— source of inspira-  
tion, 262, 266

## Varūtri, 255

## Vāsavyā, 41

## Vashat, 254

## Vashaṭkāra, 14, 21

## Vasishṭha, 34, 246 ff.

## Vasishṭhas, 223, 246

## Vāstoshpati, 253

## Vasus, 102, 226, 234

## Vatsa, 243

## Vātsyāyana quoted, 115

## Vāyu, 5 f., 222

Vāyu Purāna, 27 f., 39,  
51Vedāntas, 1, see Upani-  
shads

## Vedānta Sūtras, 98 ff.

Vedārtha-prakāśa on R.V.  
quoted, 58 ff., 80

— on T.S., 83 ff.

Vedas, general account of,  
1 f.

— division into Man-  
tra and Brāhmaṇa, 1, 62

— sprang from sacri-  
fice of Purusha, 3

— from Skambha, 3

— from Indra, 4

— from Time, 4

— from the Odana-  
oblation, 4

— objects of worship  
and supplication, 4

— sprang from Agni,  
Vāyu, and Sūrya, 4f., 61

— their eternity af-  
firmed, 6, 18, 71, 76, 78,  
105, 303

— their eternity de-  
nied, 109, 117, 119, 130  
134

— their superhuman  
character (*apauruṣheya-*  
*tva*), 6

— sources of the  
names, forms, and func-  
tions of creatures, 6, 16,  
104

— created by Prajā-  
pati and from the waters,  
8, 14

— the breathing of  
the great Being, 8, 135,  
205

— created by means  
of speech and soul, 9

— created with speech,  
mind, and breath, 9

Vedas dug from the mind-ocean, 10  
 — are the hair of Prajapati's beard, 10  
 — the offspring of Vāch, 10  
 — created separately from Brahmā's mouths, 10 f.  
 — characterized severally by the different guṇas, 12  
 — created by Brahmā, 12  
 — the Gāyatrī their mother, 12 f.  
 — created from different parts of Brahmā's body, 13  
 — created by Achyuta, 14  
 — Sarasvatī their mother, 14  
 — all things comprehended in them, 15  
 — sources respectively of form, motion, and heat, 15  
 — breathings of Mahes'vara, 16  
 — infinite in extent, 17  
 — Vishṇu composed of them, 18, 27  
 — study of, a sacrifice, 20  
 — study of, its benefits, 21  
 — encomiums on study of, 21 ff.  
 — useless to the depraved, 25  
 — recollecting and repeating them removes sin, 25  
 — the energy and body of Vishṇu, and severally the substance of Brahmā, Vishṇu, and Rudra, 27  
 — created after the Purānas, 27  
 — insufficient without the Itihāsas and the Purānas, 29  
 — corrected by Brahma-vaivartta Purāna, 30

Vedas voice of Brahma, 30.  
 — their hymns form the inferior science, 31  
 — classed with other s'āstras, 31, 33  
 — their ceremonial part decried in the Bhagavad Gīta, Chhāndogya Upanishat, and Bhāgavata Purāna, 32 ff.  
 — in the state of profound sleep are no Vedas, 34  
 — Soul not known through them, 36  
 — originally one, 37 ff., 47  
 — division of 37 ff.  
 — their original extent, 38, 40  
 — necessity for their division, 40 f.  
 — cannot be heard by women, S'ūdras, etc., 42, 299  
 — discrepant account of their division, 47  
 — carried off by two Asuras but recovered by Brahmā, 49  
 — form the eye of Brahmā, 49  
 — their periodical disappearance, 49  
 — mutual hostility of adherents of different Vedas, 49 ff.  
 — schism among adherents of Yajur-veda, and its separation into white and black, 50 ff.  
 — vindication of them against objections, and defence of their authority, by their commentators, 57 ff.  
 — arguments of the Mīmānsakas in favour of their eternity and authority, 70 ff.  
 — "seen" by the ris'is, 85, 212.  
 — reasonings of the Vedantists on their eternity and authority, 98 ff.  
 — sprang from Brahma, 106

Vedas, how interpreted by theologians, 107  
 — arguments of the adherents of the Nyāya, Vaiśeshika, and Sāṅkhya in support of their authority, but against their eternity, 108 ff.  
 — texts of, interpreted variously by different philosophers, 138 ff.  
 — distinguished from all other S'āstras by being independent and infallible, 179 ff.  
 — recapitulation of arguments in support of their authority, with remarks, 207 ff.  
 — ideas of the rishis regarding the origin of their hymns, 217 ff.  
 — hymns of, distinguished as old and new, 224 ff.  
 — hymns of, made, fabricated, or generated, by the rishis, 232 ff.  
 — hymns of, ascribed to the inspiration of the gods, 252 ff.  
 — hymns of, a magical power attributed to, 275 ff.  
 — sprang from the leavings of the sacrifice, 287  
 Vedhas, 219  
 Verbal brahma, 35  
 Videha, 56  
 Vidhi, 64  
 Vidura, 295, 300  
 Vidvan - moda - taranginī, 208  
 Vijnāna Bhikshu, 133, 172, 196, and passim  
 Vidyā, 205  
 Vimada, 239 f., 253  
 Vimadas, 239  
 Vipas'chit, 219  
 Vipra, 218  
 Virāj metre, 11, 278  
 Virochana, 142  
 Virūpa, 69, 75, 220, 246, 267  
 Vishnu, 37, 40, 53, 244, 262, 266

Vishnu, composed of the  
Veda, 18, 127  
Vishnu Purāna quoted—  
i. 2, 13,—4  
— 5, 48 ff.,—10  
— 5, 58,—16  
— 17, 54,—201  
ii. 11, 5 ff.,—26  
iii. 2, 12,—49  
— 2, 18 ff.,—37  
— 3, 4 ff.,—37  
— 3, 19 ff.,—18  
— 4, 1 ff.,—38  
— 5, 2 ff.,—49  
— 6, 22 f.,—18  
— 18, 22,—128  
iv. 6,—47  
- Visvāmītra, 247 f., 276,  
283  
Visvanātha Bhaṭṭāchārya,  
108, 217  
Viśvāvasu, 260  
Visvedevas, 102  
Vivasvat, 286  
Viyukta, 126

Vrihaduktha, 234  
Vrihat-sāma, 11  
Vrihaspati, heretical  
teacher, 202  
Vrihaspati, author of a  
smṛiti, 181  
Vriśha, 264  
Vritra, 228  
Vyāhritis, 44  
Vyādha, 300  
Vyākhyānas, 205  
Vyāsa, 37, 77, 89

## W

Weber, Prof., Ind. Zeit.,  
53  
— Ind. Stud., 22, 47,  
53 ff., 193 f., 296, and  
passim  
— Vāj. San. Spec.,  
275  
Whitney, Prof., his opin-  
ion referred to, 258

Wilson, Prof. H. H., 2  
— translation of Vish-  
nu Purāna, 11, 52, 193,  
and passim  
— translation of Rig-  
veda, 2  
— Sāṅkhya-kārikā, 44  
Women unfit for the study  
of the Veda, 42, 68

## Y

Yajnadatta, 102  
Yājña-peribhāshā, 62  
Yājñavalkya, 50 ff.  
Yajush, 224  
Yajush-verses, 11  
Yama (Agni?), 247  
Yama, 245, 250  
Yaska, see Nirukta  
Yoga aphorisms, 184, 201  
Yogas, 137  
Yogins, 126  
Yukta, 126

THE END.



## CATALOGUE OF IMPORTANT WORKS,

IN ALL DEPARTMENTS OF

## LITERATURE AND SCIENCE,

PUBLISHED BY

TRÜBNER &amp; CO.

60, PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON.

ADDRESS OF THE ASSEMBLED STATES OF SCHLESWIG TO HIS MAJESTY  
THE KING OF DENMARK. 8vo. pp. 32. 1861. 1s.

Adler.—THE SECOND DAYS OF THE FESTIVALS. A Sermon delivered  
at the New Synagogue, Great St. Helen's, on the second day of Passover, 5628,  
by the Rev. Dr. Adler, Chief Rabbi. Printed by request. 8vo., pp. 16, sewed.  
1868. 6d.

ADMINISTRATION (THE) OF THE CONFEDERATE STATES. Correspondence  
between Hon. J. A. Campbell and Hon. W. H. Seward, all of which was  
laid before the Provisional Congress, on Saturday, by President Davis. 8vo.  
sewed, pp. 8. 1861. 1s.

Æsop.—THE FABLES OF ÆSOP. With a Life of the Author, Illustrated  
with 111 Engravings, from Original Designs by Herrick, handsomely  
printed on toned paper. 8vo. pp. xiii. and 311. 1865. Cloth, extra gilt edges.  
10s. 6d.

Agassiz.—AN ESSAY ON CLASSIFICATION. By Louis Agassiz. 8vo.  
pp. viii. and 381. Cloth. 1859. 12s.

Agassiz.—METHODS OF STUDY IN NATURAL HISTORY. By L. Agassiz.  
12mo. pp. 319. Cloth. 1864. 5s. 6d.

Agassiz.—GEOLOGICAL SKETCHES. By L. Agassiz. With portrait  
and numerous Illustrations. 1 Vol., crown 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 311. 1866.  
10s. 6d.

Agassiz.—JOURNEY IN BRAZIL. By Professor and Mrs. Louis  
Agassiz. In 1 large 8vo. vol. with numerous Illustrations, 8vo. pp. xx. 540.  
1868. 21s.

Agassiz.—SEA-SIDE STUDIES IN NATURAL HISTORY. By Elizabeth  
C. and Alexander Agassiz. With numerous Illustrations. 8vo. pp. vi. and  
155. 1865. 12s.

Agüero.—BIOGRAFÍAS DE CUBANOS DISTINGUIDOS. Por P. De  
Agüero. I. Don José Antonio Saco. En 8vo. mayor, 88 páginas, con retrato.  
1860. 6s.

Agüero.—LA GUERRA DE ITALIA, y la Paz de Villafranca, con todos  
sus incidentes y sus complicaciones y consecuencias políticas hasta la nueva  
constitucion de la Peninsula. Coleccion de artículos publicados en varios Periódicos  
de Europa y América. Por P. de Agüero. Un tomo en 8vo. mayor, de  
138 páginas. 1859. 12s.

- Ahn.**—Dr. F. AHN'S PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF THE GERMAN LANGUAGE. A New Edition. By Dr. Dawson Turner, Head Master of Royal Institution School, Liverpool. Crown 8vo. pp. cxii. and 430. Cloth. 1866. 5s.
- Ahn.**—NEW, PRACTICAL, AND EASY METHOD OF LEARNING THE GERMAN LANGUAGE. By Dr. F. Ahn. First and Second Course. Bound in one vol. 12mo. cloth, pp. 86 and 120. 1866. 3s.
- Ahn.**—KEY to Ditto. 12mo. sewed, pp. 40. 8d.
- Ahn.**—MANUAL OF GERMAN AND ENGLISH CONVERSATIONS, or Vade Mecum for English Travellers. 12mo. cloth, pp. 130. 1861. 2s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—GERMAN COMMERCIAL LETTER WRITER, with Explanatory Introductions in English, and an Index of Words in French and English. By Dr. F. Ahn. 12mo. cloth, pp. 248. 1861. 4s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—NEW, PRACTICAL, AND EASY METHOD OF LEARNING THE FRENCH LANGUAGE. By Dr. F. Ahn. First Course and Second Course, 12mo. cloth, each 1s. 6d. The Two Courses in one vol. 12mo. cloth, pp. 114 and 170. 1865. 3s.
- Ahn.**—NEW, PRACTICAL, AND EASY METHOD OF LEARNING THE FRENCH LANGUAGE. Third Course, containing a French Reader, with Notes and Vocabulary. By H. W. Ehrlich. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 125. 1866. 1s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—MANUAL OF FRENCH AND ENGLISH CONVERSATIONS, FOR THE USE OF SCHOOLS AND TRAVELLERS. By Dr. F. Ahn. 12mo., pp. viii. and 200. Cloth. 1862. 2s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—FRENCH COMMERCIAL LETTER WRITER, on the same Plan. By Dr. F. Ahn. 12mo. cloth, pp. 228. 1866. 4s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—NEW, PRACTICAL, AND EASY METHOD OF LEARNING THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE. By Dr. F. Ahn. First and Second Course. 12mo. pp. 198. 1863. 3s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—KEY to Ditto. 12mo. sewed, pp. 22. 1865. 1s.
- Ahn.**—NEW, PRACTICAL, AND EASY METHOD OF LEARNING THE DUTCH LANGUAGE, being a complete Grammar, with Selections. By Dr. F. Ahn. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 166. 1862. 3s. 6d.
- Ahn.**—AHN'S COURSE. Latin Grammar for Beginners. By W. Ihne, Ph. D. 12mo. pp. vi. and 184, cloth. 1864. 3s.
- Alcock.**—A PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF THE JAPANESE LANGUAGE. By Sir Rutherford Alcock, Resident British Minister at Jeddo. 4to. pp. 62, sewed, 18s.
- Alcock.**—FAMILIAR DIALOGUES IN JAPANESE, with English and French Translations, for the Use of Students. By Sir Rutherford Alcock. 8vo. pp. viii. and 40, sewed. 1863. 5s.
- Alger.**—A CRITICAL HISTORY OF THE DOCTRINE OF A FUTURE LIFE. With a complete Bibliography of the Subject. By William Rounseville Alger. 4th Edition, thoroughly revised. 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 914. 1866. 18s.
- Alger.**—THE FRIENDSHIPS OF WOMEN. By William Rounseville Alger. 12mo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 416. 1867. 8s.



**Alger.**—THE GENIUS OF SOLITUDE. The Solitudes of Nature and of Man, or the Loneliness of Human Life. By Rev. W. R. Alger. 16mo. pp. 412, cloth. 1867. 9s.

**Alger.**—THE POETRY OF THE ORIENT. By William Rounseville Alger. 12mo., pp. xii. and 337, cloth. 1867. 9s.

**Allibone.**—A CRITICAL DICTIONARY OF ENGLISH LITERATURE, AND BRITISH AND AMERICAN AUTHORS, FROM THE EARLIEST ACCOUNTS TO THE MIDDLE OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY. By S. Austin Allibone. Vol. I. royal 8vo. pp. 1,006, cloth. 1859. £1 4s. (Vol. II. nearly ready).

**Althaus.**—A TREATISE ON MEDICAL ELECTRICITY, THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL. By Julius Althaus, M.D. 8vo. pp. viii. and 352. 1859. 7s. 6d.

**Althaus.**—THE SEAS OF EUROPE. By Julius Althaus, M.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. 516. 1862. 12s.

"This is decidedly the most elaborate and complete work on mineral waters which has hitherto appeared in the English language."—*British Medical Journal*.

"A book of research and authority, written by one who is a master of his subject, and which we can confidently recommend to the reader."—*Lancet*.

"The book is well timed and well done."—*Cornhill Mag.*

"We can recommend Dr. Althaus's work as by far the best that has been written in our language, with a medical object in view."—*Athenæum*.

**Althaus.**—ON THE VALUE OF GALVANISM IN THE TREATMENT OF PARALYSIS, NEURALGIA, LOSS OF VOICE, RHEUMATISM, AND OTHER DISEASES. By Julius Althaus, M.D. Fourth Edition. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 236. 1866. 3s. 6d.

**American Bible Union.**—REVISED VERSION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES, viz.:—

**BOOK OF JOB.** The common English Version, the Hebrew Text, and the Revised Version. With an Introduction and Notes. By T. J. Conant. 4to. boards, pp. xxx. and 166. 1859. 7s. 6d.

**GOSPEL BY MATTHEW.** The Common English Version and the Received Greek Text; with a Revised Version, and Critical and Philological Notes. By T. J. Conant, D.D. Pp. xl. and 172. With an APPENDIX on the Meaning and Use of Baptizein. Pp. 106. 4to. boards. 8s.

**GOSPEL ACCORDING TO MARK.** Translated from the Greek, on the Basis of the Common English Version, with Notes. 4to. boards, pp. vi. and 134. 1858. 5s.

**GOSPEL BY JOHN.** Ditto. 4to. boards, pp. xv. and 172. 1859. 5s.

**ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.** Ditto. 4to. boards, pp. iv. and 224. 1858. 6s.

**EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS.** Ditto. 4to. boards, pp. vi. and 40. 1857. 3s. 6d.

**EPISTLES OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS.** Ditto. 4to. boards, pp. viii. and 74. 1858. 4s. 6d.

**EPISTLES OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY AND TITUS.** Ditto. 4to. boards, pp. vi. and 78. 1860. 2s. 6d.

**EPISTLE OF PAUL TO PHILEMON;** Ditto. 4to. sewed, pp. 404. 1s. 6d. 12mo. cloth, 2s. 1860.

**EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS.** 4to. boards, pp. iv. and 90. 1857. 4s.

**SECOND EPISTLE OF PETER, EPISTLES OF JOHN AND JUDE, AND THE REVELATION.** Ditto. 4to. pp. 254. 5s.

**THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR, JESUS CHRIST.** Forty-fifth Thousand. 32mo. cloth, pp. 488. 1866. 1s. 6d.

Ditto. Thirty-eighth Thousand. 12mo. cloth, pp. 488. 1866. 4s. 6d.

Ditto. Demy 8vo. cloth, pp. 488. 1866. 7s. 6d.

**American Bible Union.**—IL NUOVO TESTAMENTO. Traduzione dal Greco per Cura di G. Achilli. Post 8vo. roan, pp. 343. New York, 1854. 7s. 6d.

**Americans (The) Defended.** By an American. Being a Letter to one of his Countrymen in Europe, in answer to inquiries concerning the late imputations of dishonour upon the United States. 8vo. sewed, pp. 38. 1844. 1s.

**Anderson.**—**PRACTICAL MERCANTILE CORRESPONDENCE.** A collection of Modern Letters of Business, with Notes, Critical and Explanatory, and an Appendix, containing a Dictionary of Commercial Technicalities, pro forma Invoices, Account Sales, Bills of Lading, and Bills of Exchange; also an explanation of the German Chain Rule. 17th Edition, revised and enlarged. By William Anderson. 12mo. cloth, pp. 288. 1866. 5s.

**Anderson and Tugman.**—**MERCANTILE CORRESPONDENCE,** containing a collection of Commercial Letters, in Portuguese and English, with their translation on opposite pages, for the use of Business Men and of Students in either of the Languages, treating in modern style of the system of business in the principal Commercial Cities of the World. Accompanied by pro forma Accounts, Sales, Invoices, Bills of Lading, Drafts etc. With an Introduction and copious Notes. By William Anderson and James E. Tugman. 12mo. cloth, pp. xi. and 193. 1867. 6s.

**Andrews.**—**A DICTIONARY OF THE HAWAIIAN LANGUAGE,** to which is appended an English-Hawaiian Vocabulary, and a Chronological Table of remarkable Events. By Lorrin Andrews. 8vo, cloth, pp. xvi. and 560. Honolulu, 1865. £1 11s. 6d.

**Anglicus.**—**A VOICE FROM THE MOTHERLAND,** answering Mrs. H. Beecher Stowe's Appeal. By Civis Anglicus. 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1863. 1s.

**Anthropological Review, THE.** Vol. I. 1863. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxxiv. and 499. 18s.

Ditto	Ditto, Vol. II.	1864.	8vo. cloth, pp. 347 and cccxii.	18s.
Ditto	Ditto, „	III.	1865.	Ditto pp. 378 and cccxviii. 18s.
Ditto	Ditto, „	IV.	1866.	Ditto pp. 408 and ccxlv. 18s.
Ditto	Ditto, „	V.	1867.	Ditto pp. 376 and ccxxii. 18s.

**Anthropological Society.**—**INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS ON THE STUDY OF ANTHROPOLOGY,** delivered before the Anthropological Society of London, on the 24th of February. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., President. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 20. 1863. 6d.

**Anthropological Society.**—**MEMOIRS** read before the Anthropological Society of London, 1863—1864. In one vol., 8vo. cloth, pp. 542. 21s.

**CONTENTS.**—I. On the Negro's Place in Nature. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., F.A.S.L., President of the Anthropological Society of London.—II. On the Weight of the Brain in the Negro. By Thomas B. Peacock, M.D., F.R.C.P., F.A.S.L.—III. Observations on the Past and Present Populations of the New World. By W. Bollaert, Esq., F.A.S.L.—IV. On the Two Principal Forms of Ancient British and Gaulish Skulls. By J. Thurnam, Esq., M.D., F.A.S.L. With Lithographic Plates and Woodcuts.—V. Introduction to the Palaeography of America; or, Observations on Ancient Picture and Figurative Writing in the New World; on the Fictitious Writing in North America; on the Quipu of the Peruvians, and Examination of Spurious Quipus. By William Bollaert, Esq., F.A.S.L.—VI.—Viti and its Inhabitants. By W. T. Pritchard, Esq., F.R.G.S., F.A.S.L.—VII. On the Astronomy of the Red Man of the New World. By W. Bollaert, Esq., F.A.S.L.—VIII. The Neanderthal Skull: its peculiar formation considered anatomically. By J. Barnard Davis, M.D., F.S.A., F.A.S.L.—IX. On the Discovery of large Kist-vaens on the "Muckle Heog," in the Island of Unst (Shetland), containing Urns of Chloritic Schist. By George E. Roberts, Esq., F.G.S., Hon. Sec. A.S.L. With Notes on the Hurrah Remains. By C. Carter Blake, Esq., F.A.S.L., F.G.S.—X. Notes on some Facts connected with the Dahoman. By Capt. Richard F. Burton, V.P.A.S.L.—XI. On certain Anthropological Matters connected with the South Sea Islanders (the Samoans). By W. T. Pritchard, Esq., F.R.G.S., F.A.S.L.—XII. On the Phallic Worship of India. By Edward Sellon.—XIII. The History of Anthropology. By T. Bendyshe, M.A., F.A.S.L., Vice-President A.S.L.—XIV. On the Two Principal Forms of Ancient British and Gaulish Skulls. Part II. with Appendix of Tables of Measurement. By John Thurnam, M.D., F.S.A., F.A.S.L.—APPENDIX. On the Weight of the Brain and Capacity of the Cranial Cavity of the Negro. By Thomas B. Peacock, M.D., F.R.C.P., F.A.S.L.

**Anthropological Society.**—MEMOIRS read before the Anthropological Society of London, 1855—1866. Vol. II. 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 464. 1866. 21s.

CONTENTS.—I. The Difference between the Larynx of the White Man and Negro. By Dr. Gibb.—II. On the Dervishes of the East. By Arminius Vambéry.—III. Origin and Customs of the Gallinas of Sierra Leone. By J. Meyer Harris.—IV. On the Permanence of Anthropological Types. By Dr. Beddoe.—V. The Maya Alphabet. By Wm. Bollaert.—VI. The People of Spain. By H. J. C. Bevan.—VII. Genealogy and Anthropology. By G. M. Marshall.—VIII. Simious Skulls. By C. Carter Blake.—IX. A New Goniometer. By Dr Paul Broca.—X. Anthropology of the New World. By Wm. Bollaert.—XI. On the Psychological Characteristics of the English. By Luke Owen Pike.—XII. Iconography of the Skull. By W. H. Wesley.—XIII. Orthographic Projection of the Skull. By A. Higgins.—XIV. On Hindu Neology. By Major S. R. I. Owen.—XV. The Rocks of Orkney. By George F. Rie.—XVI. Ancient Caithness Remains. By Jos. Anderson.—XVII. Description of Living Microcephale. By Dr. Shortt.—XVIII. Notes on a Microcephaloid. By Captain Burton.—XIX. On the Sacti Puja. By E. Sellon.—XX. Resemblance of Inscriptions on British and American Rocks. By Dr. Seemann.—XXI. Sterility of the Union of White and Black Races. By R. B. N. Walker.—XXII. Analogous Forms of Flint Implements. By H. M. Westropp.—XXIII. Explorations in Unst, Brassay, and Zetland. By Dr. Hunt, President.—XXIV. Report of Expedition to Zetland. By Ralph Tate.—XXV. The Head-forms of the West of England. By Dr. Beddoe.—XXVI. Explorations in the Kirkhead Cave at Ulverstone. By J. P. Morris.—XXVII. On the Influence of Feet on the Human Body. By Dr. Hunt.—XXVIII. On Stone Inscriptions in the Island of Brassay. By Dr. Hunt.—XXIX. The History of Ancient Slavery. By Dr. John Bower.—XXX. Blood Relationship in Marriage. By Dr. Arthur Mitchell.

**Anthropology.**—ANTHROPOLOGY AND THE BRITISH ASSOCIATION. Reprinted from The Anthropological Review for October, 1865. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 22. 1865. 6d.

**Anthropological Society.**—ANNIVERSARY ADDRESSES, 1863, 1864, and 1865. Each 1s.

**Apel.**—PROSE SPECIMENS FOR TRANSLATION INTO GERMAN, with copious Vocabularies and Explanations. By H. Apel. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 246. London, 1862. 4s. 6d.

**Arago.**—LES ARISTOCRATIES. A Comedy in Verse. By Etienne Arago. Edited, with English Notes and Notice on Etienne Arago, by the Rev. P. H. Brette, B.D., Head Master of the French School, Christ's Hospital, Examiner in the University of London. Fcap. 8vo. pp. 244, cloth. 1868. 4s.

**Asher.**—ON THE STUDY OF MODERN LANGUAGES in general, and of the English Language in particular. An Essay. By David Asher, Ph. D. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 80. 1859. 2s.

**Asiatic Society.**—JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND, from the Commencement to 1863. First Series, complete in 20 Vols. 8vo., with many Plates. Price £10; or in single Numbers, as follows:—Nos. 1 to 14, 6s. each; No. 15, 2 Parts, 4s. each; No. 16, 2 Parts, 4s. each; No. 17, 2 Parts, 4s. each; No. 18, 6s. These 18 Numbers form Vols. I. to IX.—Vol. X., Part 1, op.; Part 2, 5s.; Part 3, 5s.—Vol. XI., Part 1, 6s.; Part 2 not published.—Vol. XII., 2 Parts, 6s. each.—Vol. XIII., 2 Parts, 6s. each.—Vol. XIV., Part 1, 5s.; Part 2 not published.—Vol. XV., Part 1, 6s.; Part 2, with Maps, 10s.—Vol. XVI., 2 Parts, 6s. each.—Vol. XVII., 2 Parts, 6s. each.—Vol. XVIII., 2 Parts, 6s. each.—Vol. XIX., Parts 1 to 4, 16s.—Vol. XX., 3 Parts, 4s. each.

**Asiatic Society.** JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND. New Series. Vol. I. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32 and 490. 16s.

CONTENTS.—I. Vajra-chhediká, the "Kin Kong King," or Diamond Sūtra. Translated from the Chinese by the Rev. S. Beal, Chaplain, R.N.—II. The Páramitá-hridaya Sūtra, or, in Chinese, "Mo-ho-pó-ye-po-lo-mih-to-sin-king," i.e. "The Great Páramitá Heart Sūtra." Translated from the Chinese by the Rev. S. Beal, Chaplain, R.N.—III. On the Preservation of National Literature in the East. By Colonel F. J. Goldsmid.—IV. On the Agricultural, Commercial, Financial, and Military Statistics of Ceylon. By E. R. Power, Esq.—V. Contributions to a

Knowledge of the Vedic Theogony and Mythology. By J. Muir, D.C.L., LL.D.—VI. A Tabular List of Original Works and Translations, published by the late Dutch Government of Ceylon at their Printing Press at Colombo. Compiled by Mr. Mat. P. J. Vandaatje, of Colombo.—VII. Assyrian and Hebrew Chronology compared, with a view of showing the extent to which the Hebrew Chronology of Ussher must be modified, in conformity with the Assyrian Canon. By J. W. Bosanquet, Esq.—VIII. On the Existing Dictionaries of the Malay Language. By Dr. H. N. van der Tuuk.—IX. Bilingual Readings: Cuneiform and Phœnician. Notes on some Tablets in the British Museum, containing Bilingual Legends (Assyrian and Phœnician). By Major-General Sir H. Rawlinson, K.C.B., Director R.A.S.—X. Translations of Three Copper-plate Inscriptions of the Fourth Century A.D., and Notices of the Châlukya and Gurjara Dynasties. By Professor J. Dowson, Staff College, Sandhurst.—XI. Yama and the Doctrine of a Future Life, according to the Rig-Yajur-, and Atharva-Vedas. By J. Muir, Esq., D.C.L., LL.D.—XII. On the Jyotisha Observation of the Place of the Colesures, and the Date derivable from it. By William D. Whitney, Esq., Professor of Sanskrit in Yale College, New Haven, U.S.—Note on the preceding Article. By Sir Edward Colebrooke Bart., M.P., President R.A.S.—XIII. Progress of the Vedic Religion towards Abstract Conceptions of the Deity. By J. Muir, Esq., D.C.L., LL.D.—XIV. Brief Notes on the Age and Authenticity of the Work of Aryabhata, Varāhamihira, Brahmagupta, Bhātopala, and Bhāskarāchārya. By Br. Bhāu Dāji, Honorary Member R.A.S.—XV. Outlines of a Grammar of the Malagasy Language. By H. N. Van der Tuuk.—XVI. On the Identity of Xandrames and Krananda. By Edward Thomas, Esq.

Vol. II. In Two Parts. pp. 522. Price 16s.

CONTENTS.—I. Contributions to a Knowledge of Vedic Theogony and Mythology. No. 2. By J. Muir, Esq.—II. Miscellaneous Hymns from the Rig- and Atharva-Vedas. By J. Muir, Esq.—III. Five Hundred Questions on the Social Condition of the Natives of Bengal. By the Rev. J. Long.—IV. Short account of the Malay Manuscripts belonging to the Royal Asiatic Society. By Dr. H. N. Van der Tuuk.—V. Translation of the Amitābha Sūtra from the Chinese. By the Rev. S. Beal, Chaplain Royal Navy.—VI. The initial coinage of Bengal. By Edward Thomas, Esq.—VII. Specimens of an Assyrian Dictionary. By Edwin Norris, Esq.—VIII. On the Relations of the Priests to the other classes of Indian Society in the Vedic age. By J. Muir, Esq.—IX. On the Interpretation of the Veda. By the same.—X. An Attempt to Translate from the Chinese a work known as the Confessional Services of the great compassionate Kwan Yin, possessing 1,000 hands and 1,000 eyes. By the Rev. S. Beal, Chaplain Royal Navy.—XI. The Hymns of the Gaupaṣyanas and the Legend of King Asamāti. By Professor Max Müller, M.A., Honorary Member Royal Asiatic Society.—XII. Specimen Chapters of an Assyrian Grammar. By the Rev. E. Hincks, D.D., Honorary Member Royal Asiatic Society.

Asiatic Society.—TRANSACTIONS OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND. Complete in 3 vols. 4to., 80 Plates of Facsimiles, etc., cloth. London, 1827 to 1835. Published at £9 5s.; reduced to £1 11s. 6d. The above contains contributions by Professor Wilson, G. C. Haughton, Davis, Morrison, Colebrooke, Humboldt, Dorn, Grotefend, and other eminent oriental scholars.

Atharva VEDA PRĀTIṢĀKHYA, THE, OR ÇĀUNAKĪYĀ ÇATURĀDHYĀYIKĀ. Text, Translation and Notes. By William D. Whitney, Professor of Sanskrit in Yale College. 8vo., pp. 286. Boards. 1862. 12s.

Atkinson.—CHANGE OF AIR considered with regard to Atmospheric Pressure and its Electric and Magnetic Concomitants, in the Treatment of Consumption and Chronic Disease; with a General Commentary on the most Eligible Localities for Invalids. By J. C. Atkinson, M.D. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 142. 1867. 4s. 6d.

Atkinson and Martineau.—LETTERS ON THE LAWS OF MAN'S NATURE AND DEVELOPMENT. By Henry George Atkinson, F.G.S., and Harriet Martineau. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 390. 1851. 5s.

Auctores Sanscriti. Edited for the Sanskrit Text Society, under the supervision of Theodor Goldstücker, Vol. I., containing the Jaiminiya-Nyāya-Mâlā-Vistara. Parts I. to V., large 4to. sewed, pp. 400. 1863. 10s. each.

Augier.—DIANE. A Drama in Verse. By Émile Augier. Edited with English Notes and Notice on Augier. By Theodore Karcher, LL.B., of the Royal Military Academy and the University of London. 12mo. cloth, pp. xiii. and 146. 1867. 2s. 6d.

Austin.—A PRACTICAL TREATISE on the Preparation, Combination, and Application of Calcareous and Hydraulic Limes and Cements. To which is added many useful Recipes for various Scientific, Mercantile, and Domestic Purposes. By James G. Austin, Architect. 12mo. cloth, pp. 192. 1862. 5s.

**Awās I Hind; or, A VOICE FROM THE GANGES.** Being a Solution of the true Source of Christianity. By an Indian Officer. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xix. and 222. 1861. 5s.

**Baconi, Francisci, VERULAMIENSIS SERMONES FIDELES, sive interiora rerum, ad Latinam orationem emendatiorem revocavit philologus Latinus.** 12mo. cloth, pp. xxvi. and 272. 1861. 3s.

**Bader.**—THE NATURAL AND MORBID CHANGES OF THE HUMAN EYE, and their Treatment. By C. Bader, Ophthalmic Assistant-Surgeon to Guy's Hospital. Medium 8vo. cloth. pp. viii. and 506. 1868. 16s.

**Bader.**—PLATES ILLUSTRATING THE NATURAL AND MORBID CHANGES OF THE HUMAN EYE. By C. Bader, Ophthalmic Assistant-Surgeon to Guy's Hospital. Six Chromo-Lithographic Plates, each containing the figures of six Eyes, and four Lithographed Plates with figures of Instruments. With an explanatory text of 32 pages. Medium 8vo. in a Portfolio. 21s.  
Price for Text and Atlas taken together, 32s.

**Baitāl Pachisi (The); or TWENTY-FIVE TABLES OF A DEMON.** A New Edition of the Hindi text, with each word expressed in the Hindustāni character immediately under the corresponding word in the Nāgarī; and with a perfectly literal English interlinear translation, accompanied by a free translation in English at the foot of each page, and explanatory notes. By W. Burckhardt Barker, M.R.A.S., Oriental Interpreter and Professor of the Arabic, Turkish, Persian, and Hindustāni languages at Eton. Edited by E. B. Eastwick, F.R.S., Professor of Oriental Languages, and Librarian in the East India College. 8vo., pp. viii. and 370. Cloth. 1855. 12s.

**Baker.**—LIPIDHĀRĀ. A Murathi Primer, compiled expressly for the use of accepted candidates for the Bombay Civil Service, by F. P. Baker formerly Superintendent of Government Murathi and Canarese Schools in the Bombay Presidency, and lithographed under his supervision. 8vo., pp. 60, sewed. 1868. 5s.

**Ballantyne.**—ELEMENTS OF HINDI AND BRAJ BHAKHA GRAMMAR, Compiled for the use of the East India College at Haileybury. By James R. Ballantyne. Second Edition. Crown 8vo., pp. 38. Cloth. 1868. 5s.

**Barlow.**—FRANCESCA DA RIMINI, HER LAMENT AND VINDICATION; with a brief notice of the Malatesti, e'l Mastin Vecchio, e'l nuovo da Verrucchio. By Henry Clark Barlow, M.D., Academico Corrispondente de Quiritti di Roma etc., etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 52. 1859. 1s. 6d.

**Barlow.**—IL GRAN RIFIUTO, WHAT IT WAS, WHO MADE IT, AND HOW FATAL TO DANTE ALLIGHIERI. A dissertation on Verses 58 to 65 of the Third Canto of the Inferno. By H. C. Barlow, M.D., Author of "Francesca da Rimini, her Lament and Vindication"; "Letteratura Dantesca," etc., etc., etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 22. 1862. 1s.

**Barlow.**—IL CONTE UGOLINO E L'ARCIVESCOVO RUGGIERI, a Sketch from the Pisan Chronicles. By H. C. Barlow, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1862. 1s.

**Barlow.**—THE YOUNG KING AND BERTRAND DE BORN. By H. C. Barlow, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. 35. 1862. 1s.

**Barnstorff.**—A KEY TO SHAKSPEARE'S SONNETS. By D. Barnstorff. Translated from the German by T. J. Graham. 8vo. cloth, pp. 216. 1862. 6s.

- Bartlett.**—**DICTIONARY OF AMERICANISMS.** A Glossary of Words and Phrases colloquially used in the United States. By John Russell Bartlett. Second Edition, considerably enlarged and improved. 1 vol. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxxii. and 524. 1860. 16s.
- Barton.**—**THE REALITY, BUT NOT THE DURATION OF FUTURE PUNISHMENT, IS REVEALED.** An Appeal to Scripture. By John Barton, M.A. 8vo. sewed, pp. 40. 1866. 1s. 6d.
- Beal.**—**THE TRAVELS OF THE BUDDHIST PELGRIM FAH HIAN,** translated from the Chinese, with Notes and Prolegomena. By S. Beal, a Chaplain in H. M.'s Fleet, a member of the Royal Asiatic Society, and formerly of Trinity College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo.
- Beeston.**—**THE TEMPORALITIES OF THE ESTABLISHED CHURCH AS THEY ARE AND AS THEY MIGHT BE;** collected from authentic Public Records. By William Beeston. 8vo. sewed, pp. 36. 1850. 1s.
- Beigel.**—**THE EXAMINATION AND CONFESSION OF CERTAIN WITCHES AT CHELMSFORD, IN THE COUNTY OF ESSEX, ON THE 26TH DAY OF JULY, 1556.** Communicated and Prefaced by Hermana Beigel, M.D. Small 4to., pp. 49. 1864. 10s. 6d.
- Bell.**—**VISIBLE SPEECH.** The Science of Universal Alphabets; or, Self-Interpreting Physiological Letters, for the Writing of all Languages in One Alphabet. Illustrated by Tables, Diagrams, and Examples. By Alexander Melville Bell, F.E.I.S., F.R.S.S.A., Professor of Vocal Physiology, Lecturer on Elocution in University College, London; Author of "Principles of Speech and Cure of Stammering," "Elocutionary Manual," "Standard Elocutionist." "Emphasized Liturgy," "Reporter's Manual," etc., etc. Inaugural Edition. 4to. cloth, pp. 126. 1867. 15s.
- Bell.**—**ENGLISH VISIBLE SPEECH FOR THE MILLION,** for communicating the Exact Pronunciation of the Language to Native or Foreign Learners, and for Teaching Children and illiterate Adults to Read in a few Days. By Alexander Melville Bell, F.E.I.S., F.R.S.S.A., Lecturer on Elocution in University College, London. 4to. sewed, pp. 16. 1867. 1s.
- Bell.**—**THE ENGLISH IN INDIA.** Letters from Nagpore. Written in 1857-8. By Captain Evans Bell. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 202. 1859. 5s.
- Bell.**—**THE EMPIRE IN INDIA; Letters from Madras and other Places.** By Major Evans Bell. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 412. 1864. 8s. 6d.
- "We commend the letters of Major Bell to every friend of India. He is not only an ardent lover of justice in the abstract, but he has gone deeply into the questions which he discusses, and reasons on them with a force of argument quite irresistible."—*Athenæum*.
- Bell.**—**REMARKS ON THE MYSORE BLUE BOOK,** with a Few Words to Mr. R. D. Mangles. By Major Evans Bell. 8vo. sewed, pp. xi. and 74. 1866. 2s.
- Bell.**—**THE MYSORE REVERSION.** By Major Evans Bell. Second Edition. With Remarks on the Parliamentary Papers, and a few Words to Mr. R. D. Mangles. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 292. London, 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Bell.**—**RETROSPECTS AND PROSPECTS OF INDIAN POLICY.** By Major Evans Bell, late of the Madras Staff Corps, author of "The Empire in India," "The Mysore Reversion," etc. 8vo. pp. vi. and 344, cloth, 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Bellew.**—A DICTIONARY OF THE PUKKHTO OR PUKSHTO LANGUAGE, in which the Words are traced to their Sources in the Indian and Persian Languages. With a Reversed Part, or English and Pukkhto. By Henry Walter Bellew, Assistant Surgeon, Bengal Army. Small 4to., pp. 356. 1867. 42s.

**Bellew.**—A GRAMMAR OF THE PUKKHTO OR PUKSHTO LANGUAGE, on a New and Improved System, combining Brevity with practical Utility, and including Exercises and Dialogues, intended to facilitate the Acquisition of the Colloquial. By Henry Walter Bellew, Assistant Surgeon, Bengal Army. Small 4to., pp. 155. London, 1867. 1*l.* 1s.

**Bellows.**—ENGLISH OUTLINE VOCABULARY for the use of Students of the Chinese, Japanese, and other Languages. Arranged by John Bellows. With Notes on the Writing of Chinese with Roman Letters. By Professor Summers, King's College, London. 1 vol. crown 8vo., pp. vi. and 368, cloth. 1867. 6s.

**Bellows.**—OUTLINE DICTIONARY FOR THE USE OF MISSIONARIES, EXPLORERS, AND STUDENTS OF LANGUAGE. By Max Müller, M.A., Taylorian Professor in the University of Oxford. With an Introduction on the proper use of the ordinary English Alphabet in transcribing Foreign Languages. The Vocabulary compiled by John Bellows. Crown 8vo. limp morocco, pp. xxxi. and 368. 1867. 7s. 6*d.*

**Bellows.**—TOUS LES VERBES. Conjugations of all the Verbs in the French and English Languages. By John Bellows. Revised by Professor Beljame, B.A., LL.B. of the University of Paris, and Official Interpreter to the Imperial Court, and George B. Strickland, late Assistant French Master, Royal Naval School, London. Also a New Table of Equivalent Values of French and English Money, Weights, and Measures. 32mo. sewed, 76 Tables. 1867. 1s.

**Bellows.**—THE NEW DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES, showing both divisions on the same page, distinguishing the genders at sight by different types, and giving Conjugations of all the Irregular Verbs in French, each Irregular Preterite and Past Participle, and the accent of every word in English, the respective Prepositions to be used, etc. By John Bellows, Gloucester. Revised and corrected by Professor Beljame, B.A. and LL.B. of the University, Official Interpreter to the Imperial Court, Paris; G. Beauchamp Strickland, late French Préceptor at the Royal Naval School, London. Dedicated by special permission to Prince Louis Lucien Bonaparte. [*In the Press.*]

**Bellows.**—TWO DAYS' EXCURSION FROM GLOUCESTER TO LLANTHONY ABBEY AND THE BLACK MOUNTAINS. By John Bellows. Fcap. 8vo. pp. 32 sewed, Illustrated. 1868. 6*d.*

**Benedix.**—DER VETTER. Comedy in Three Acts. By Roderich Benedix. With Grammatical and Explanatory Notes by F. Weinmann, German Master at the Royal Institution School, Liverpool, and G. Zimmermann, Teacher of Modern Languages. Post 8vo., pp. 128, cloth. 1863. 2s. 6*d.*

**Benfey.**—A PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF THE SANSKRIT LANGUAGE, for the use of Early Students. By Theodor Benfey, Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Göttingen. Second, revised and enlarged, edition. Royal 8vo., pp. viii. and 296, cloth. 1868. 10s. 6*d.*

**Benisch.**—TRAVELS OF RABBI PETACHIA OF RATISBON: who, in the latter end of the twelfth century, visited Poland, Russia, Little Tartary, the Crimea, Armenia, Assyria, Syria, the Holy Land, and Greece. Translated from Hebrew, and published together with the original on opposite pages. By Dr. A. Benisch; with Explanatory Notes, by the Translator and William F. Ainsworth, Esq., F.S.A., F.G.S., F.R.G.S. 12mo. cloth, pp. vii. and 106. 1856. 5s.

- Benjamin.**—**SPEECH OF HON. J. P. BENJAMIN**, of Louisiana, on the Right of Secession, delivered in the Senate of the United States, Dec. 31st, 1860. Royal 8vo. sewed, pp. 16. 1860. 1s.
- Benjumea.**—**GIBRALTAR TO SPAIN**; or, the Important Question of the Cession of that Fortress by England, as recently brought before the Spanish Public. Being an Accurate Translation of a Pamphlet just published at Madrid, and written by Nicolas Diaz Benjumea, Esq. 8vo. sewed, pp. 92. 1863. 1s. 6d.
- Bentham.**—**THEORY OF LEGISLATION**. By Jeremy Bentham. Translated from the French of Etienne Dumont by R. Hildreth. Post 8vo., pp. xv. and 472. Cloth. 1864. 7s. 6d.
- Bentham.**—**ANALYSIS OF JEREMY BENTHAM'S THEORY OF LEGISLATION**. By G. W. H. Fletcher, LL.B. 12mo. cloth, pp. ix. and 86. 1864. 2s. 6d.
- Bethune.**—**EARLY LOST, EARLY SAVED**; or, Consolation for Bereaved Parents. By the Rev. George W. Bethune, D.D., LL.D., of New York, Author of "Lectures on the Heidelberg Catechism," &c. Edited by the Rev. A. Pope, late of Leamington. In 1 vol. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 173. 1866. 3s.
- Beurmann.**—**VOCABULARY OF THE TIGRÉ LANGUAGE**. Written down by Moritz von Beurmann. Published with a Grammatical Sketch. By Dr. A. Merx, of the University of Jena. pp. viii. and 71, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.
- Bible.**—**THE HOLY BIBLE**. First division, the Pentateuch, or Five Books of Moses, according to the authorised version, with Notes, Critical, Practical, and Devotional. Edited by the Rev. Thomas Wilson, M.A., of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge. 4to. Part I. pp. vi. and 84; part II. pp. 85 to 176; part III. pp. 177 to 275, sewed. 1853—4. Each pt. 5s., the work complete 20s.
- Biblia Hebraica Secundum Editiones J. Athiæ, Joannis Leusdeni, J. Simonis, aliorumque.** Imprimis E. Van der Hooght, recensuit Augustus Hahn. 8vo. bound, pp. 1396. 1868. 6s.
- Bibliomane, Le.**—**REVUE DE LA BIBLIOGRAPHIE ANTIQUAIRE**. Texte et gravures par J. Ph. Berjeau. Nos. 1 and 2. 8vo. pp. 20 and 42, sewed. 1861. 1s. each part.
- Bibliophile, Le.**—**REVUE DE LA BIBLIOGRAPHIE ANTIQUAIRE**, Texte et gravures par J. Ph. Berjeau. Nos. 1, 2, 3. 8vo. pp. 16, 32, and 48, sewed. 1861. 1s. each part.
- Bicknell.**—**IN THE TRACK OF THE GARIBALDIANS THROUGH ITALY AND SICILY**. By Algernon Sidney Bicknell. Cr. 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 344. 1861. 10s. 6d.
- Bigandet.**—**THE LIFE OR LEGEND OF GAUDAMA**, the Budha of the Burmese, with Annotations. The ways to Neibban, and Notice on the Phongyies, or Burmese Monks. By the Right Reverend P. Bigandet, Bishop of Ramatha, Vicar Apostolic of Ava and Pegu. 8vo. sewed, pp. xi., 538, and v. 1866. 18s.
- Bigelow.**—**AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF BENJAMIN FRANKLIN**. Edited from his manuscript, with Notes and an Introduction. By John Bigelow. With a portrait of Benjamin Franklin. Post 8vo., pp. 410. Cloth. 1868. 10s.



**Biglow Papers (The).**—By James Russell Lowell. Newly Edited, with a Preface, by the Author of "Tom Brown's School Days." In 1 vol. crown 8vo. cloth, pp. lxxviii. and 140. 1861. 2s. 6d.

Ditto. People's Edition. 12mo. sewed, fancy cover. 1865. 1s.

**Biglow Papers (The)**—**MELIBÆUS-HIPPONAX.** The Biglow Papers, Second Series. With a Portrait of the Author. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. lxxiii. and 190. 1867. 3s. 6d.

"Masterpieces of satirical humour, they are entitled, as such, to a permanent place in American, which is English Literature."—*Daily News*.

"No one who ever read the *Biglow Papers* can doubt that true humour of a very high order is within the range of American gift."—*Gleaner*.

"The book undoubtedly owed its first vogue to party feeling; but it is impossible to ascribe to that cause only, so wide and enduring a popularity as it has now."—*Spectator*.

**Blasius.**—**A LIST OF THE BIRDS OF EUROPE.** By Professor I. H. Blasius. Reprinted, from the German, with the Author's Corrections. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1862. 1s.

**Bleek.**—**A COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR OF SOUTH-AMERICAN LANGUAGES.** By Dr. W. H. I. Bleek. Will be completed in Four parts. Part I., sewed, pp. 104. 1862. 5s.

**Bleek.**—**FORMENLEHRE DER LATEINISCHEN SPRACHE ZUM ERSTEN UNTERRICHT,** Von W. H. I. Bleek. 8vo. pp. 68, sewed. 1863. 1s.

**Bleek.**—**REYNARD THE FOX IN SOUTH AFRICA;** or, Hottentot Fables and Tales, chiefly translated from Original Manuscripts in the Library of His Excellency Sir George Grey, K.C.B. By W. H. I. Bleek, Ph.D. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xxvi. and 94. 1864. 3s. 6d.

**Blyth and Speke.**—**REPORT ON A ZOOLOGICAL COLLECTION FROM THE SOMALI COUNTRY.** By Edward Blyth, Curator of the Royal Asiatic Society's Museum, Calcutta. Reprinted from the Twenty-fourth volume of the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal; with Additions and Corrections by the Collector, Capt. J. H. Speke, F.R.G.S., etc. 8vo. pp. 16. One Coloured Plate. 1860. 2s. 6d.

**Bohlen, Von.**—**HISTORICAL AND CRITICAL ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FIRST PART OF GENESIS,** from the German of Professor Von Bohlen. Edited by James Heywood, M.A., F.R.S. Revised. 2 vols. 8vo., pp. xxxii. and 336, iv. and 298. Cloth. 1868. 6s.

**Bojesen.**—**A GUIDE TO THE DANISH LANGUAGE.** Designed for English Students. By Mrs. Maria Bojesen. 12mo, cloth, pp. 250. 1863. 5s.

**Boke of Nurture (The);** OR, **SCHOOLE OF GOOD MANERS,** for Men-Servants, and Children, with stans puer ad mensam. Newly corrected, very necessary for all youth and children. Compyled by Hugh Rhodes of the Kinges Chappell, born and bred in Devonshyre, p. 13 and ii. Imprinted at London in Fleetestreete, beneath the Conduite, at the sign of S. John Euauangelist. By H. Jackson, 1577. 4to., pp. xxx. and 56. Cloth. London, 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Bollaert.**—**ANTIQUARIAN, ETNOLOGICAL, AND OTHER RESEARCHES,** in New Granada, Equador, Peru, and Chili; with Observations on the Pre-Incarial, Incarial, and other Monuments of Peruvian Nations. With numerous Plates. By William Bollaert. 8vo. cloth, pp. 279. 1860. 15s.

**Bollaert.**—**THE EXPEDITION OF PEDRO DE URSUA AND LOPE DE AGUIRRE IN SEARCH OF EL DORADO AND A MACA IN 1560-1.** Translated from Fray Pedro Simon's "Sixth Historical Notice of the Conquest of Tierra Firme." By William Bollaert, Esq., F.R.G.S. With an Introduction by Clements R. Markham, Esq. 8vo. cloth, pp. 237. 1861. 10s. 6d.

**Boltz.**—A NEW COURSE OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE, after a New Practical and Theoretical Method, by T. Robertson. For the use of schools and for private tuition, with numerous analogies of English words, with the corresponding French or German expressions. Translated from his fourth German edition into Russian by Dr. August Boltz, Professor of the Russian, the English, the Spanish, etc., Languages at the Royal Military Academy and the Royal Navy Institution at Berlin. 2 vols. Post 8vo., pp. 166 and 160, cloth. 1865. 7s.

**Book of God.** THE APOCALYPSE OF ADAM OANNES. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 648. 1867. 12s. 6d.

**Book of God.** An Introduction to the Apocalypse. In 1 vol. crown 8vo. pp. iv and 752, cloth. 14s.

**Bowditch.**—SUFFOLK SURNAMENES. By N. L. Bowditch. Third Edition. 8vo. cloth. pp. xxvi, and 758. 1861. 7s. 6d.

**Bowles.**—LIFE'S DISSOLVING VIEWS. By G. C. Bowles. 12mo., pp. 108. 1865. 3s.

**Bowring.**—ON RELIGIOUS PROGRESS BEYOND THE CHRISTIAN PALE. An Address delivered at St. Martin's Hall, London, by Sir John Bowring, LL.D., F.R.S., etc., on Sunday, 14th January, 1866. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 16. 1866. 3d.

**Bowring.**—SIAM AND THE SIAMESE. A Discourse delivered by Sir John Bowring at St. Martin's Hall, on February 17th, 1867. Also the Introductory Address of J. Baxter Langley, Esq., M.R.S., F.L.S. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1867. 2d.

**Boyce.**—A GRAMMAR OF THE KAFFIR LANGUAGE. By William B. Boyce, Wesleyan Missionary. Third Edition, augmented and improved, with Exercises, by William J. Davis, Wesleyan Missionary. 12mo., pp. xii. and 164, cloth, 8s.

**Bracton AND HIS RELATION TO THE ROMAN LAW.** A Contribution to the History of the Roman Law in the Middle Ages. By Carl Güterbock, Professor of Law in the University of Königsberg. Translated by Brinton Coxé. 8vo., pp. 182, cloth. 1866. 9s.

**Brazil,** THE EMPIRE OF, at the Paris International Exhibition of 1867. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 139. Rio de Janeiro. 1867. 2s. 6d.

**Ditto,** Ditto, with Maps and Catalogue of the Articles sent to the Universal Exhibition at Paris, in 1867. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 139, iii. and 197. Rio de Janeiro. 1867. 7s. 6d.

**Brentano.**—HONOUR: OR, THE STORY OF THE BRAVE CASPAR AND THE FAIR ANNERL. By Clemens Brentano. With an Introduction, and a Biographical Notice of the Author. By T. W. APPELL. Translated from the German. 12mo. cloth, pp. 74. 1847. 2s. 6d.

**Bretschneider.**—A MANUAL OF RELIGION AND OF THE HISTORY OF THE Christian Church, for the use of upper classes in public schools in Germany, and for all educated men in general. By Karl Gottlieb Bretschneider. Translated from the German. 12mo. cloth, pp. 296. 1857. 2s. 6d.

**Brice.**—A ROMANIZED HINDUSTANI AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY, designed for the Use of Schools and for Vernacular Students of the Language. Composed by Nathaniel Brice. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. 366, 1864. 8s.

**Bridges.**—THE UNITY OF COMTE'S LIFE AND DOCTRINE: A Reply to Strictures on Comte's Later Writings, addressed to J. S. Mill, Esq., M.P. By Dr. J. H. Bridges, Translator of Comte's General View of Positivism. 8vo., sewed, pp. 70. 1866. 2s.

**Brinton.**—THE MYTHS OF THE NEW WORLD. A Treatise on the Symbolism and Mythology of the Red Race of America. By Daniel G. Brinton, A.M., M.D. Crown 8vo., pp. viii. and 308. Cloth. 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Brown.**—THE DERVISHES; OR, ORIENTAL SPIRITUALISM. By John P. Brown, Secretary and Dragoman of the Legation of the United States of America at Constantinople. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. viii. and 416, with 24 Illustrations. 1868. 14s.

**Buchner.**—FORCE AND MATTER. By Dr. Louis Buchner. Edited from the Eighth Edition of "Kraft and Stoff," by J. Frederick Collingwood, F.R.S.L., F.G.S. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 320. 1865. 4s. 6d.  
"The work is valuable on account of its close and logical reasoning, and the profound and in many cases striking views taken of the subjects discussed."—*Observer*.

**Buckle.**—HISTORIA DE LA CIVILIZACION EN ESPAÑA POR ENRIQUE TOMAS BUCKLE. Capitulo I<sup>o</sup> del segundo tomo de la historia de la civilizacion en Inglaterra. Traducido de la primera edicion Inglesa por F. G. y T. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. xvi. and 188. 1861. 2s. 6d.

**Bumstead.**—THE PATHOLOGY AND TREATMENT OF VENEREAL DISEASES. By F. J. Bumstead, M.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 640. 1866. 21s.

**Bunsen.**—MEMOIR ON THE CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHTS OF THE DUCHIES OF SCHLESWIG AND HOLSTEIN, presented to Viscount Palmerston, by Chevalier Bunsen, on the 8th of April, 1848. With a Postscript of the 15th of April. Published with M. de Gruber's Essay, on the Danish Question, and all the official Documents, by Otto Von Wenkster. Illustrated by a Map of the Two Duchies. 8vo., sewed, pp. 166. 1848. 2s. 6d.

**Burgess.**—THE PHOTOGRAPHIC MANUAL. A Practical Treatise containing the cartes-de-visite process, and the method of taking stereoscopic pictures, including the Albumen process, the dry Collodion process, the Tanning process, the various Alkaline Toning baths, etc., etc., etc. To which is added an Appendix containing all the recent improvements in the art. By N. G. Burgess. 12mo. cloth, pp. 233. 1865. 6s.

**Burgh.**—THE MANUFACTURE OF SUGAR AND THE MACHINERY EMPLOYED FOR COLONIAL AND HOME PURPOSES. Read before the Society of Arts, Adelphi, London, April 4th, 1866. By N. P. Burgh, Engineer. 8vo. sewed, pp. 31. 1866. 1s.

**Burgh.**—THE PRINCIPLES THAT GOVERN THE FUTURE DEVELOPMENT OF THE MARINE BOILER, ENGINE, AND SCREW PROPELLER. Read before the Society of Arts, Adelphi, London, December 18th, 1867. By N. P. Burgh, Engineer. 8vo., sewed, pp. 30. 1868. 2s.

**Burton.**—CAPTAIN RICHARD F. BURTON'S HANDBOOK FOR OVERLAND EXPEDITIONS: being an English Edition of the "Prairie Traveller," a Handbook for Overland Expeditions; with Illustrations and Itineraries of the Principal Routes between the Mississippi and the Pacific, and a Map. By Captain Randolph B. Marcy (now General and Chief of the Staff, Army of the Potomac). Edited (with Notes) by Captain Richard F. Burton. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. 279. Numerous Woodcuts, Itineraries, and Map. 1863. 6s. 6d.

**Busch.**—GUIDE FOR TRAVELLERS IN EGYPT AND ADJACENT COUNTRIES SUBJECT TO THE PASHA. Translated from the German of Dr. Moritz Busch. By W. C. Wrangmore. Square 12mo., cloth, pp. xxxviii. and 182, with 14 Illustrations, a Travelling Map, and Plan of Cairo. 1858. 7s. 6d.

- Busch.**—**MANUAL OF GERMAN CONVERSATION:** A choice and comprehensive collection of sentences on the ordinary subjects of every-day life, with a copious Vocabulary on an entirely new and simple plan. By Dr. Oscar Busch, Teacher of Ancient and Modern Languages at the establishment of Dr. Krause at Dresden. 12mo., cloth, pp. x. and 340. 1861. 4s.
- Butchers.**—**A WAIF ON THE STREAM.** By S. M. Butchers. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 200. London, 1866. 3s. 6d.
- Calvert.**—**LECTURES ON COAL-TAR COLOURS AND ON RECENT IMPROVEMENTS AND PROGRESS IN DYEING AND CALICO PRINTING.** Embodying Copious Notes taken at the International Exhibition of 1862, and Illustrated with numerous specimens of Aniline and other colours. By Dr. F. Grace Calvert, F.R.S. 8vo. sewed, pp. 64. 2s.
- Callaway.**—**IZINGANEDWANE, NENSUMANSUMANE, NEZINDABA ZABANTU** (Nursery Tales, Traditions, and Histories of the Zulus. In their own words.) With a Translation into English and Notes. By the Rev. Canon Callaway, M.D. Volume I. 8vo. pp. vii. and 390. cloth. Springvale (Natal), Pietermaritzburg (Natal) and London. 1865. 16s.
- Camerini.**—**L'ECO ITALIANO; A PRACTICAL GUIDE TO ITALIAN CONVERSATION.** By E. Camerini. With a Vocabulary. 12mo. cloth, pp. 98. 1860. 4s. 6d.
- Campbell.**—**NEW RELIGIOUS THOUGHTS.** By Douglas Campbell. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 425. 1860. 6s. 6d.
- Canones LEXICOGRAPHICI:** or Rules to be observed in editing the New English Dictionary of the Philological Society, prepared by a Committee of the Society. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1860. 6d.
- Canticum Canticorum,** reproduced in facsimile, from the Scriverius copy in the British Museum. With an Historical and Bibliographical Introduction by I. Ph. Berjeau. Folio, pp. 36, with Sixteen Tables of Illustrations. Vellum. 1860. £2 2s.
- Carey.**—**THE SLAVE TRADE, DOMESTIC AND FOREIGN, WHY IT EXISTS AND HOW IT MAY BE EXTINGUISHED.** By H. C. Carey, Author of "Principles of Political Economy," "The Past, the Present, and the Future," etc., etc. 8vo. cloth, pp. 426. 1853. 6s.
- Carey.**—**THE PAST, THE PRESENT, AND THE FUTURE.** By H. C. Carey. Second Edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. 474. 1856. 10s. 6d.
- Carey.**—**PRINCIPLES OF SOCIAL SCIENCE.** By H. C. Carey. In Three Volumes. 8vo. cloth, pp. 474, 480, and 511. 1858—1867. 42s.
- Cape Town.**—**PICTORIAL ALBUM OF CAPE TOWN,** with Views of Simon's Town, Port Elizabeth, and Graham's Town, from original Drawings by T. W. Bowler. With Historical and Descriptive Sketches by W. R. Thomson. Oblong 4to. With Twelve Plates, pp. 44. 1866. 25s.
- Carpenter.**—**THE LAST DAYS IN ENGLAND OF THE RAJAH RAMMOHUN ROY.** Edited by Mary Carpenter, of Bristol. With Illustrations. 8vo. cloth, pp. v. and 255. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Catherine II., MEMOIRS OF THE EMPRESS.** Written by herself. With a Preface by A. Herzen. Translated from the French. 12mo., boards, pp. xvi. and 352. 1859. 7s. 6d.

**Catherine II., MÉMOIRES DE L'IMPÉRATRICE.** Ecrits par elle-même et précédés d'une préface, par A. Herzen. Seconde édition. Revue et augmentée, de huit lettres de Pierre III., et d'une lettre de Catherine II. au Comte Ponia-towsky. 8vo., pp. xvi. and 370. 1859. 10s. 6d.

**Catholic, THE NEW CHURCH.** Second Edition. 8vo., sewed, pp. 15. 1867. 6d.

**Catlin.—THE BREATH OF LIFE.** By G. Catlin. 8vo., with Illustrations. Pp. 76. 1864. 2s. 6d.

**Catlin.—O-KEE-PA. A Religious Ceremony, and other Customs of the Mandans.** By George Catlin. With Thirteen coloured Illustrations. Small 4to. cloth, pp. vi. and 52. 1867. 14s.

**Cavour.—CONSIDERATIONS ON THE CONDITION OF IRELAND, AND ITS FUTURE.** By the late Count Cavour. Translated by W. B. Hodgson, LL.D.

**Caxton.—THE GAME OF CHESS.** A reproduction of William Caxton's Game of Chess, the first work printed in England. 4to. 1862. In cloth, £1 1s. Ditto, full morocco antique, £2 2s.

Frequently as we read of the works of Caxton, and the early English Printers, and of their black letter books, very few persons have ever had the opportunity of seeing any of these productions, and forming a proper estimate of the ingenuity and skill of those who first practised the "Noble Art of Printing."

This reproduction of the first work printed by Caxton at Westminster, containing 23 woodcuts, is intended, in some measure, to supply this deficiency, and bring the present age into somewhat greater intimacy with the *Father of English Printers*.

The type has been carefully imitated, and the cuts traced from the copy in the British Museum. The paper has also been made expressly, as near as possible like the original.

**Cazeaux.—A THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL TREATISE ON MIDWIFERY.** By J. Cazeaux. Translated by W. R. Bullock. 4th edition, royal 8vo. Pp. 988. 1866. Cloth. 24s.

**Centoniana.—REVUE ANALYTIQUE DES OUVRAGES ÉCRITS EN CENTONS, DEPUIS LES TEMPS ANCIENS, JUSQU'AU XIXIEME SIECLE.** Par un Bibliophile Belge. Small 4to., pp. 508. 1868. 30s.

**Chalmers.—THE ORIGIN OF THE CHINESE.** An Attempt to trace the connection of the Chinese with Western Nations in their Religion, Superstitions, Arts, Language, and Traditions. By John Chalmers, A.M. Fcap. 8vo., pp. 80, cloth. 1868. 2s. 6d.

**Chalmers.—THE SPECULATIONS ON METAPHYSICS, POLITY, AND MORALITY OF "THE OLD PHILOSOPHER" LAU-TSZE.** Translated from the Chinese, with an Introduction by John Chalmers, M.A. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 62. 1868. 4s. 6d.

**Channing.—SELF-CULTURE.** By William E. Channing. Post 8vo. Cloth. Pp. 56. 1844. 1s.

**Chapman.—GEORGE CHAPMAN'S TRAGEDY OF ALPHONSUS, EMPEROR OF GERMANY.** Edited with an Introduction and Notes, by Karl Elze, Ph. D., Hon. M.R.S.L. 12mo. sewed, p. 152. 1867. 3s. 6d.

**Chapman.—THE COTTON AND COMMERCE OF INDIA, considered in relation to the Interests of Great Britain: with Remarks on Railway Communication in Bombay Presidency.** By John Chapman, Founder of the Great India Peninsula Railway Company. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvii. and 412. 1851. 6s.

- Chapman.**—BARODA AND BOMBAY; their Political Morality. A Narrative drawn from the Papers laid before Parliament in relation to the Removal of Lieut.-Col. Outram, C.B., from the Office of Resident at the Court of the Gaekwar. With Explanatory Notes, and Remarks on the Letter of L. R. Reid, Esq., to the Editor of the *Daily News*. By J. Chapman. 8vo. sewed, pp. iv. and 174. 1853. 3s.
- Chapman.**—INDIAN POLITICAL REFORM. Being Brief Hints, together with a Plan for the Improvement of the Constituency of the East India Company, and the Promotion of Public Works. By John Chapman. 8vo. sewed pp. 36. 1853. 1s.
- Chapman.**—REMARKS ON THE LEGAL BASIS REQUIRED BY IRRIGATION IN INDIA. By John Chapman. 8vo. sewed, pp. 20. 1854. 1s.
- Chapman.**—CHLOROFORM AND OTHER ANÆSTHETICS; their History and Use during Childbed. By John Chapman, M.E. 8vo. sewed, p. 52. 1859. 1s.
- Chapman.**—CHRISTIAN REVIVALS; THEIR HISTORY AND NATURAL HISTORY. By John Chapman, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. 53. 1860. 1s.
- Chapman.**—FUNCTIONAL DISEASES OF WOMEN. Cases illustrative of a New Method of Treating them through the Agency of the Nervous System, by means of Cold and Heat. With Appendix, containing Cases illustrating a New Method of Treating Epilepsy, Infantile Convulsions, Paralysis, and Diabetes. By John Chapman, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. xviii. and 74. 1863. 2s. 6d.
- Chapman.**—SEA-SICKNESS: ITS NATURE AND TREATMENT. By John Chapman, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. 72. 1864. 2s. 6d.
- Chapman.**—DIARRHOEA AND CHOLERA; their NATURE, ORIGIN, AND TREATMENT THROUGH THE AGENCY OF THE NERVOUS SYSTEM. By John Chapman, M.D., M.R.C.P., M.R.C.S. 2nd edition. Enlarged. 8vo. cloth, pp. xix. and 248. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Charnock.**—VERBA NOMINALIA: or Words derived from Proper Names. By Richard Stephen Charnock, Ph.D., F.S.A., F.R.G.S., etc. 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 357. London. 1866. 14s.
- Charnock.**—LUDUS PATRONYMICUS; or, The Etymology of Curious Surnames. By Richard Stephen Charnock, Ph.D., F.S.A., F.R.G.S. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 182. 1868. 7s. 6d.
- Chauvenet.**—A MANUAL OF SPHERICAL AND PRACTICAL ASTRONOMY, embracing the general problems of Spherical Astronomy, the special applications to Nautical Astronomy, and the theory and use of fixed and portable Astronomical Instruments. With an Appendix on the method of least squares. By William Chauvenet, Professor of Mathematics and Astronomy. Library edition, revised and corrected. 2 vols. 8vo., pp. 708 and 632. With fourteen plates. Cloth. 1864. £2 16s. 0d.
- Chess.**—ONE HUNDRED CHESS GAMES, played between Mr. J. F. Emmett and Mr. Vivian Fenton, during the Winter of 1864. Small 4to. sewed, pp. 60. Boulogne and London. 1865. 2s.
- Chess-Strategy.**—A Collection of the Most Beautiful Chess Problems, composed by "J. B. of Bridport," and contributed by him to the chief Chess Periodicals during the last fifteen years. Illustrated by Diagrams, and accompanied by Solutions. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 118. 1865. 5s.

**Chess World (THE).**—Volumes 1, 2, and 3, each 12s. 1865, 1866, 1867. Continued in monthly numbers at 1s. each.

**Childe.**—INVESTIGATIONS IN THE THEORY OF REFLECTED RAY-SURFACES, AND THEIR RELATION TO PLANE REFLECTED CAUSTICS. Also, in the Appendix, A THEORY OF PLANE CAUSTIC CURVES, IDENTIFIED WITH THE EVOLUTE OF THE AUXILIARY CURVE OF EQUIANGULAR INTERSECTION. By Rev. G. F. Childe, M.A., Mathematical Professor in the South African College, Cape of Good Hope. 8vo., Boards. Pp. 140. 1857. 7s.

**Chronique DE ABOU-DJAFAR-MOHAMMED BEN-DJARIR BEN-YEZID TABARI.** Traduite par Monsieur Hermann Zotenberg. Volume I., 8vo., pp. 608, sewed. 7s. 6d. 1847. (to be completed in four volumes).

**Claim (THE) OF ENGLISHWOMEN TO THE SUFFRAGE CONSTITUTIONALLY CONSIDERED.** Printed by permission from the *Westminster Review*, for January, 1867. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 19. London. 1867. 6d.

**Clayton and Bulwer CONVENTION, OF THE 19TH APRIL, 1850, BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND AMERICAN GOVERNMENTS, CONCERNING CENTRAL AMERICA.** 8vo. Pp. 64, sewed. 1856. 1s.

**Clegg.**—A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE MANUFACTURE AND DISTRIBUTION OF COAL GAS, ITS INTRODUCTION AND PROGRESSIVE IMPROVEMENT. Illustrated by Engravings from Working Drawings, with General Estimates. By Samuel Clegg, Jun., M. Inst. C.E., F.G.S. Fifth Edition. Greatly enlarged, and with numerous Additional Engravings. 4to. Pp. xii. and 412, cloth. 1868. 21s.

**Cobbe.**—FEMALE EDUCATION, AND HOW IT WOULD BE AFFECTED BY UNIVERSITY EXAMINATIONS. A Paper read at the Social Science Congress, London, 1862. By Frances Power Cobbe. Third Edition. 18mo. sewed, pp. 20. 1862. 2d.

**Cobbe.**—FRIENDLESS GIRLS AND HOW TO HELP THEM. Being an Account of the Preventive Mission at Bristol. From a Paper read at the Social Science Congress in Dublin, 1861. By Frances Power Cobbe. Fourth Thousand. 18mo. sewed, pp. 14. 1862. 2d.

**Cobbe.**—THE WORKHOUSE AS AN HOSPITAL. By Frances Power Cobbe. 18mo. sewed, pp. 16. 1862. 2d.

**Cobbe.**—THE RELIGIOUS DEMANDS OF THE AGE. A Reprint of the Preface to the Collected Works of Theodore Parker. By Frances Power Cobbe. 8vo. sewed, pp. 36. 1863. 1s.

**Cobbe.**—THANKSGIVING. A Chapter of Religious Duty. By Frances Power Cobbe. 18mo. pp. 40, cloth. 1863. 6s.

**Cobbe.**—THE CITIES OF THE PAST. By Frances Power Cobbe. 12mo. cloth, pp. 216. 1864. 3s. 6d.

**Cobbe.**—AN ESSAY ON INTUITIVE MORALS. Being an attempt to popularise Ethical Science. By Frances Power Cobbe. Part I. Theory of Morals. New Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 289. 1864. 5s.

**Cobbe.**—ITALICS: Brief Notes on Politics, People, and Places in Italy, in 1864. By Frances Power Cobbe. 8vo. cloth, pp. 534. 1864. 12s. 6d.

**Cobbe.**—RELIGIOUS DUTY. Second Edition. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. vi. and 332. 1864. 7s. 6d.

- Cobbe.**—**BROKEN LIGHTS.** A Survey of the Religious Controversies of our Times. By Frances Power Cobbe. Second Edition. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. ix. and 192. 1865. 5s.
- Cobbe.**—**STUDIES, NEW AND OLD, ON ETHICAL AND SOCIAL SUBJECTS.** By Frances Power Cobbe. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 446. 1865. 10s. 6d.
- CONTENTS.—I. Christian Ethics and the Ethics of Christ.—II. Self-Abnegation and Self-Development.—III. The Sacred Books of the Zoroastrians.—IV. Hades.—V. The Philosophy of the Poor Laws.—VI. The Rights of Man and the Claims of Brutes.—VII. The Morals of Literature.—VIII. The Hierarchy of Art.
- Cobbe.**—**HOURS OF WORK AND PLAY.** By Frances Power Cobbe. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. 374. 1867. 6s.
- Cobden.**—**RICHARD COBDEN, ROI DES BELGES; par un ex-Colonel de la Garde Civique. Dédié aux blessés de Septembre.** Deuxième Edition. 12mo. sewed, pp. 62. 1865. 2s. 6d.
- Coleção de VOCABULOS E FRASES usados na Provincia de S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul no Brazil.** 16mo., pp. 32, sewed, 2s. 6d.
- Ditto ditto, large paper, small 4to. 1856. 5s.
- Coleccion DE DOCUMENTOS ineditos relativos al Descubrimiento y á la Historia de las Floridas.** Los ha dado á luz el Señor Don Buckingham Smith, segun los manuscritos de Madrid y Sevilla. Tomo primero, folio, pp. 216, con retrato del Rey D. Fernando V. 1851. 28s.
- Colenso.**—**FIRST STEPS IN ZULU-KAFIR: An Abridgement of the Elementary Grammar of the Zulu-Kafir Language.** By the Right Rev. John W. Colenso, Bishop of Natal. 8vo., pp. 86, cloth. Ekukanyeni, 1859. 4s. 6d.
- Colenso.**—**ZULU-ENGLISH DICTIONARY.** By the Right Rev. John W. Colenso, Bishop of Natal. 8vo., pp. viii. and 552, sewed. Pietermaritzburg, 1861. 15s.
- Colenso.**—**FIRST ZULU-KAFIR READING BOOK, two parts in one.** By the Right Rev. John W. Colenso, Bishop of Natal. 16mo., pp. 44, sewed. Natal. 1s.
- Colenso.**—**SECOND ZULU-KAFIR READING BOOK.** By the same. 16mo. pp. 108, sewed. Natal. 3s.
- Colenso.**—**FOURTH ZULU-KAFIR READING BOOK,** By the same. 8vo. pp. 160, cloth. Natal, 1859. 7s.
- Colenso.**—**THREE NATIVE ACCOUNTS OF THE VISITS OF THE BISHOP OF NATAL, IN SEPTEMBER AND OCTOBER, 1859, TO UPMANDE, KING OF THE ZULUS.** With Explanatory Notes and a Literal Translation, and a Glossary of all the Zulu words employed in the same. Designed for the use of Students of the Zulu Language. By the Right Rev. John W. Colenso, Bishop of Natal. 16mo., pp. 160. Stiff cover. Maritzburg, Natal. 1860. 4s. 6d.
- Colenso.**—**TWO SERMONS Preached by the Lord Bishop of Natal, in St. Paul's, D'Urban, on Sunday, November 12, 1865; and in the Cathedral Church of St. Peter's, Maritzburg, on Sunday, November 19, and Sunday, November 26, 1865.** 8vo., sewed, pp. 12. 1866. 6d.
- Colenso.**—**THE PREFACE AND CONCLUDING REMARKS OF PART V. OF THE PENTATEUCH AND BOOK OF JOSHUA CRITICALLY EXAMINED.** By the Right Rev. John William Colenso, D.D., Bishop of Natal. Printed separately by request. 8vo., sewed, pp. xlvi. and pp. 305 to 320. 1865. 1s.



- Colenso.—ON MISSIONS TO THE ZULUS IN NATAL AND ZULULAND. A Lecture by the Right Rev. J. W. Colenso, D.D., Bishop of Natal. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1866. 6*d*.
- Colenso.—NATAL SERMONS. A Series of Discourses Preached in the Cathedral Church of St. Peter's, Maritzburg. By the Right Rev. John William Colenso, D.D., Bishop of Natal. 8vo., cloth, pp. viii. and 373. 1866. 7*s*. 6*d*.
- Colenso.—NATAL SERMONS. The Second Series, Preached in the Cathedral Church of St. Peter's, Maritzburg. By the Right Reverend John William Colenso, D.D., Bishop of Natal. Crown 8vo. 1868. 5*s*.
- Coleridge.—A GLOSSARIAL INDEX to the Printed English Literature of the Thirteenth Century. By Herbert Coleridge. 8vo. cloth. Pp. 104. 1859. 2*s*. 6*d*.
- Collet.—GEORGE JACOB HOLYOAKE AND MODERN ATHEISM. A Biographical and Critical Essay. By Sophia Dobson Collet. 12mo., pp. 54, sewed. 1855. 1*s*.
- Comte.—THE POSITIVE PHILOSOPHY OF AUGUSTE COMTE. Translated and Condensed. By Harriet Martineau. 2 Vols. Large post 8vo. Cloth. Vol. 1, pp. xxxvi. and 480. Vol. 2, pp. xvi. and 561. 1853. 16*s*.
- Comte.—THE CATECHISM OF POSITIVE RELIGION. Translated from the French of Auguste Comte. By Richard Congreve. 12mo. cloth. Pp. vi. and 428. 1858. 6*s*. 6*d*.
- Comte.—A GENERAL VIEW OF POSITIVISM. By Auguste Comte. Translated by Dr. J. H. Bridges. Crown 8vo. cloth. Pp. xi. and 426. 1865. 8*s*. 6*d*.
- Conant.—THE MEANING AND USE OF BAPTIZEIN PHILOLOGICALLY AND HISTORICALLY INVESTIGATED. By T. J. Conant, D.D. 8vo. cloth. Pp. 164. 1861. 2*s*. 6*d*.
- Confessions (The) of a Catholic Priest. Post. 8vo. cloth. Pp. v. and 320. 1858. 7*s*. 6*d*.
- Congreve.—THE ROMAN EMPIRE OF THE WEST. Four Lectures delivered at the Philosophical Institution, Edinburgh, February, 1855, by Richard Congreve, M.A. 8vo. pp. 176, cloth. 1855. 4*s*.
- Congreve.—INDIA. By Richard Congreve. 8vo. sewed. Pp. iv. and 35. 1857. 1*s*.
- Congreve.—THE CATECHISM OF POSITIVE RELIGION. Translated from the French of Auguste Comte. By Richard Congreve, M.A. 12mo. cloth, pp. 428. 1858. 6*s*. 6*d*.
- Congreve.—THE NEW RELIGION IN ITS ATTITUDE TOWARDS THE OLD. A Sermon. By Richard Congreve. 12mo. sewed, pp. 34. 1859. 3*d*.
- Congreve.—ITALY AND THE WESTERN POWERS. By Richard Congreve. 8vo. sewed, pp. 18. 1860. 6*d*.
- Congreve.—THE PROPAGATION OF THE RELIGION OF HUMANITY. A Sermon preached at South Fields, Wandsworth, 19th January, 1860, on the Anniversary of the Birth of Auguste Comte, 19th January, 1798. By Richard Congreve. 8vo. sewed, pp. 22. 1860. 1*s*.

- Congreve.—THE LABOUR QUESTION. By Richard Congreve. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1861. 4*d*.
- Congreve.—ELIZABETH OF ENGLAND. Two Lectures delivered at the Philosophical Institution, Edinburgh, January, 1862. By Richard Congreve. 8mo. sewed. Pp. 114. 1862. 2*s*. 6*d*.
- Congreve.—GIBRALTAR; OR, THE FOREIGN POLICY OF ENGLAND. By Richard Congreve, M.A. Second Edition. 8vo., pp. 70, sewed. 1864. 1*s*. 6*d*
- Congreve.—IRELAND. By Richard Congreve, M.A., M.R.C.P.L. 8vo. pp. 40, sewed. 1868. 1*s*.
- Contopoulos.—A LEXICON OF MODERN GREEK-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH MODERN GREEK. By N. Contopoulos. First Part, Modern Greek-English, 8vo., pp. 460, cloth. 1868. 12*s*.
- Constitution of the United States, with an Index to each Article and Section. By a Citizen of Washington. 8vo. Pp. 64, sewed. 1830. 2*s*.
- Cornelia.—A NOVEL. Post 8vo., pp. 250. Boards. 1863. 1*s*. 6*d*.
- Cornet.—A MANUAL OF RUSSIAN AND ENGLISH CONVERSATION. By Julius Cornet. 12mo. Boards. Pp. 424. 1858. 3*s*. 6*d*.
- Cornwallis.—SELECTIONS FROM THE LETTERS OF CAROLINE FRANCES CORNWALLIS, Author of "Pericles," "Small Books on Great Subjects," etc. Also some Unpublished Poems, Original and Translated. 1 Vol. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 482. 1864. 12*s*.
- Cotta, Von.—GEOLOGY AND HISTORY. A popular Exposition of all that is known of the Earth and its inhabitants in pre-historic times. By Bernhard Von Cotta, Professor of Geology at the Academy of Mining, Freiberg, in Saxony. 12mo., pp. iv. and 84, cloth. 1865. 2*s*.
- Cotton.—THE FAMINE IN INDIA. Lecture by Major-General Sir Arthur Cotton, R.E., K.C.S.I. (late Chief Engineer, Madras). Read at the Social Science Congress, at Manchester, October 12, 1866, and printed at the request of a Special Committee by the Cotton Supply Association. 8vo. sewed. Pp. 46. 1866. 1*s*.
- Coupland.—SHALL WE NOT GO FORWARD? A Discourse delivered in the Unitarian Chapel, Bridgewater. By William Chatterton Coupland, B.A., B.Sc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 20. 1865. 1*s*.
- Coupland.—INCENTIVES TO A HIGHER LIFE. Discourses by William Chatterton Coupland, B.A., B.Sc. Fcap, 8vo. cloth. Pp. xi. and 148. 1866. 2*s*. 6*d*.
- Courtenay.—RELIGIOUS PERSECUTION. Report of the Prosecution at Bow Street. The Queen *versus* Dumergue. From the shorthand Notes of John Kelley Courtenay. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1867. 2*d*.
- Cousin.—ELEMENTS OF PSYCHOLOGY: included in a Critical Examination of Locke's Essay on the Human Understanding, and in additional pieces. Translated from the French of Victor Cousin, with an Introduction and Notes. By Caleb S. Henry, D.D. Fourth improved Edition, revised according to the Author's last corrections. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. 568. 1864. 7*s*.
- Cousin.—THE PHILOSOPHY OF KANT. Lectures by Victor Cousin. Translated from the French. To which is added a Biographical and Critical Sketch of Kant's Life and Writings. By A. G. Henderson. Large post 8vo., cloth, pp. xciv. and 194. 1864. 4*s*.

**Cowan.**—**CURIOUS FACTS IN THE HISTORY OF INSECTS.** By Frank Cowan. Crown 8vo., pp. 396. Cloth. 1865. 7s. 6d.

**Cowell.**—**PRAKRITA-PRAKASA**; or, the Prakrit Grammar of Vararuchi, with the Commentary (Manorama) of Bhamaha; the first complete Edition of the Original Text, with various Readings from a collection of Six MSS. in the Bodleian Library, at Oxford, and the Libraries of the Royal Asiatic Society and the East India House; with Copious Notes, an English Translation, and Index of Prakrit Words, to which is prefixed an Easy Introduction to Prakrit Grammar. By Edward Byles Cowell, of Magdalen Hall, Oxford. Professor of Sanskrit at Cambridge. Cloth. New Edition, with New Preface, Additions, and Corrections. Second Issue. 8vo., pp. xxxi. and 204. Cloth. 1868. 14s.

**Cowper.**—**POPERY AND COMMON SENSE.** A Poem. By William Cowper. Post-8vo., sewed, pp. 8. 1866. 6d.

**Cox.**—**A MONOGRAPH OF AUSTRALIAN LAND SHELLS.** By James S. Cox, M.D. Univ. Edin., F.R.C.S. Edin., Corresponding Member of the Zoological Society of London, Correspondent of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia, Member of Royal Medical Society of Edinburgh, Royal and Entomological Societies of New South Wales. 8vo. pp. v. and 112. Illustrated by 18 plates, sewed. 1868. £2 2s.

**Croft.**—**ESSAYS, POLITICAL AND MISCELLANEOUS.** By Barnard Croft, M.A., Trinity College, Cambridge. Reprinted from various sources. Two Volumes. Crown 8vo., pp. xvi. and 322, pp. xvi. and 320, cloth. 21s.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I.

The Session of 1866.  
The State of Affairs in January, 1867.  
Analysis of the House of Commons in 1867.  
The Session of 1867.

SOCIAL ARTICLES:—

Magnanimity.  
Work.  
Praise.  
Vanity.  
The Talent of looking like a Fool with propriety.  
Jealousy.  
Hatred.  
Cruelty.  
Intellectual Playfulness.  
Englishmen's Arguments.  
Manners.  
Private Theatricals.  
County Balls.  
Landladies and Laundresses.  
Man and Bee.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

The Jews of Western Europe.  
Arabian Nights.  
Greek Anthology.  
Ovid as a Satirist.  
Plautus.  
Translation at Cambridge.  
On a Translation of Tacitus.  
Professor Conington's Horace.  
Professor Conington's Æneid.  
Hiawatha translated into Latin.  
Sir Kingston James' Tasso.  
M. Karcher's Rienzi.  
The Etching Club.  
Macaronicæ.  
Professor Tyndall on Heat.  
Professor Tyndall on Sound.  
Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy.  
Dreamthorp.  
Mr. Forsyth's Life of Cicero.  
The worldly Wisdom of Bacon.  
Life and Times of Sir Joshua Reynolds.  
Mr. Robert Leslie Ellis.  
Madame de Tracy.  
Madame de Sevigné.

**Cranbrook.**—**CREDIBILIA**; or, Discourses on Questions of Christian FAITH. By the Rev. James Cranbrook, Edinburgh. Reissue. Post 8vo., pp. iv. and 190, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

**Cranbrook.**—**THE FOUNDERS OF CHRISTIANITY**; or, Discourses upon the Origin of the Christian Religion. By the Rev. James Cranbrook, Edinburgh. Post 8vo., pp. xii. and 324. 1868. 6s.

**Crawford.**—**THE PLURALITY OF THE RACES OF MAN.** A Discourse delivered by John Crawford, Esq., F.R.S., President of the Ethnological Society at Martin's Hall, January 13th, 1867, with Explanatory Notes. Also the Inaugural Address of J. Baxter Langley, Esq., M.R.C.S., F.L.S. 8vo., sewed, pp. 12. 1867. 2d.

**Crosskey.**—A DEFENCE OF RELIGION. By Henry W. Crossley. Pp. 48. 12mo. sewed. 1854. 1s.

**Current (The) Gold and Silver Coins of all Countries, their Weight and Fineness, and their Intrinsic Value in English Money, with Facsimiles of the Coins.** By Leopold C. Martin, of Her Majesty's Stationery Office, and Charles Trübner. In one volume, medium 8vo., 141 Plates, printed in Gold and Silver, and representing about 1,000 Coins, with 160 pages of Text, handsomely bound in embossed cloth, richly gilt, with Emblematical Designs on the Cover, and gilt edges. 1863. £2 2s.

This work, which the Publishers have much pleasure in offering to the Public, contains a series of the Gold and Silver Coins of the whole world current during the present century. The collection amounts, numerically, to nearly a thousand specimens, comprising, with their reverses, twice that number; and the Publishers feel confident that it is as nearly complete as it was possible to make it.

It seems almost superfluous to allude to the utility of the work. It is evident that it must become a highly valuable Handbook to the Bullion-dealer and the Money-changer; and to the Merchant and Banker it will prove a sure and safe work of reference, from the extreme accuracy of its details and computations.

The elegance and splendour of the work admirably adapt it as a choice and instructive ornament to the drawing room table; the amusement to be found in the comparison of the taste of different countries as exemplified in their Coins, may chase away many a half-hour's ennui.

In the valuation of the substantial Coins, and the notation of their relative worth in English money, the minutest accuracy has been observed, as also in the statements of their relative purity, which are given according to the legal regulations of each country. In exceptional cases only, where official information was not to be obtained of the weight and fineness of the Coins, assays as found at different places, are reported.

The exact weight of the Coins is expressed both in English troy grains and in French grammes, and the fineness by the English technical terms as well as in French millièmes; the general tendency of our time towards the decimal metrical system making such a notation almost indispensable. For easier reference, tables of British reports for millièmes of gold and silver have been affixed.

**Da Costa.**—MEDICAL DIAGNOSIS: with Special References to Practical Medicine. By J. M. Da Costa, M.D. 2nd edition revised. 8vo. cloth, pp. 784. 1866. 24s.

**Dadabhai.**—THE EUROPEAN AND ASIATIC RACES. Observations on Mr. Crawford's Paper read before the Ethnological Society. By Dadabhai Navroji. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1866. 1s.

**Dalton.**—A TREATISE ON HUMAN PHYSIOLOGY. For the Use of Students and Practitioners of Medicine. By John C. Dalton, Jun., M.D. Third Edition, revised and enlarged. 8vo. cloth, pp. 706. 1866. 21s.

**Dana.**—A TEXT-BOOK OF GEOLOGY, designed for Schools and Academies. By J. D. Dana, LL.D. Illustrated by 375 Woodcuts. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. vi. and 354. 1864. 7s. 6d.

**Dana.**—MANUAL OF GEOLOGY; treating of the Principles of the Science, with Special Reference to American Geological History. For the Use of Colleges, Academies, and Schools of Science. By James D. Dana, M.A., LL.D. Illustrated by a Chart of the World, and over One Thousand Figures, mostly from American Sources. 8vo. cloth, pp. 798. 1866. 21s.

**Dana.**—MANUAL OF MINERALOGY; including Observations on Mines, Rocks, Reduction of Ores, and the Applications of the Science to the Arts; designed for the Use of Schools and Colleges. By James D. Dana. New edition, revised and enlarged. With 260 Illustrations. 12mo., pp. xii. and 456. 1867. 7s. 6d.

Dana.—A SYSTEM OF MINERALOGY, DESCRIPTIVE MINERALOGY, comprising the most recent Discoveries. By James Dwight Dana and George Jarvis Brush. Fifth edition. 1 vol. 8vo., pp 874. 1868. £1 16s.

Darby.—RUGGIERO VIVALDI and other Lays of Italy. By Eleanor Darby. 8vo. cloth. pp. viii. and 208. 1865. 5s.

Day.—THE LAND OF THE PERMAULS, or Cochin, its Past and its Present. By Francis Day, Esq., F.L.S. 8vo. cloth, pp. 577. 1863. 25s.

Deichmann.—NEW TABLES to facilitate the Practice of Great Circle Sailing, together with an Application of the Theory of the great Circle on the Globe to the sailing, and an Appendix, containing some mathematical demonstrations. Accompanied by a scale of great circles on a blank chart, to determine without calculation the great circle which passes through two given places, and to show the places at which the spherical courses expressed in fourths of the point, take place on the great circle's arc between the two given places. By A. H. Deichmann. 8vo. boards. pp. viii. and 88. 1857. 5s.

Delepierre.—HISTOIRE LITTÉRAIRE DES FOUS. Par Octave Delepierre. 184. 1860. 5s.

Delepierre.—ANALYSE DES TRAVAUX DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES PHILOBIBLON DE LONDRES. Par Octave Delepierre. Small 4to., pp. viii. and 134, bound in the Roxburghe style. 1862. 10s. 6d.

"It is probably not generally known, that among the numerous learned associations of the British metropolis there exists one called the Philobiblon Society. This somewhat exclusive union of bibliographic philosophers was established in 1853, under the auspices of the late Prince Consort, and after the model of the French Academy—it being one of the fundamental rules of the Society never to depass in number the immortal Forty. . . . The statutes of the Philobiblon provided for the annual issue of a volume of historical, biographical, critical, and other essays, contributed by any of the forty members, and printed in a very limited edition—not a single book to be disposed of for money. To enhance the value of the works thus published, it was arranged that every member should receive only two copies of each volume, to be signed by the president and secretary of the society, and with the name of the possessor on the title-page. . . . The contents of this half-a-dozen semi-mysterious and rare works have just been revealed in a curious little book published by Messrs. Trübner and Co., and got up in exact imitation of the products of Caxton's press. The work is dedicated by M. Octave Delepierre, the author, to the Duke D'Aumale, the patron of the Philobiblon since the decease of Prince Albert, and one of the leading members from the beginning."—*Spectator*.

"Two unpretending but very useful books have been lately compiled by M. Delepierre and Mr. Nichols. The former, whose 'History of Flemish Literature' has already been noticed in these columns, has printed an abstract of the multifarious works issued by the Philobiblon Society of London, of which, by the way, he is the honorary secretary. . . . How great a boon such catalogues as these are to historical and literary enquirers can only be estimated by those who have experienced the want of them. . . . The gentlemen whose works we have named at the head of this paper, have done, in their way and degree, a service to literature which may be compared with those rendered by the compilers of the Calendars of the State Papers."—*Saturday Review*.

"M. Delepierre, the secretary, is also a very important contributor. By way of tautalizing the public he issues this 'Analyse,' which is a descriptive catalogue of the precious rarities collected by the society."—*Literary Budget*.

"The account which M. Delepierre gives of these volumes, makes us regret that their contents have remained, as he tells us, almost unknown to the public, since many of the contributions appear to be of much interest."—*Parthenon*.

Delepierre.—MACARONEANA ANBRA; overum Nouveaux Mélanges de Litterature Macaronique. Par Octave Delepierre. Small 4to., pp. 180, printed by Whittingham, and handsomely bound in the Roxburghe style. 1862. 10s. 6d.

This Volume, together with the one published by the Author in 1852, form the completest collection of that peculiar form of poetry in existence.

- Deliberation or Decision?** being a Translation from the Danish, of the Reply given by Herr Raaslöff to the accusations preferred against him on the part of the Danish Cabinet; together with an Introductory Article from the Copenhagen "Dagbladet," and Explanatory Notes. 8vo., pp. 40, sewed. 1861. 1s.
- Delpech.**—**THE BEGINNER'S COMPREHENSIVE FRENCH BOOK.** By J. Delpech, French Master at Christ's Hospital? Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 326. 1866. 4s. 6d.
- Demarteau.**—**GALVANIZED IRON, AND ITS APPLICATION: A Treatise** by A. Demarteau on J. and G. Winniwarter's Galvanizing and Lead Works at Gumpoldskirchen. Oblong royal 8vo., pp. viii. 42. 1862. 2s. 6d.
- Dennys.**—**THE TREATY PORTS OF CHINA AND JAPAN.** A complete Guide to the open Ports of those Countries, together with Peking, Yedo, Hongkong, and Macao. Forming a Guide Book and *Vale Meeum* for Travellers, Merchants, and Residents in general. With 29 Maps and Plans. With Index to Hong Kong, Canton, Macao, Swatow, Amoy, Foochow, Formosa (General), Takao, Taiwanfoo, Tamsui, Kelung, Ningpo, Shanghai, Yangtz River, Chinkiang, Nanking, Kinkiang, Hankow, Chefoo, Taku, Tientsing, Peking, Newchang, Japan (General), Nagasaki, Yokohama, Yedo, Hakodadi and Hiogo. Appendices, viz., Means of Transport between England, France, and America, and China and Japan. French Mail Steam Ships, *Compagnie des Services Maritimes des Messageries Impériales*. Extract from Handbook of Information. Overland Route to India, China, and Japan. The Pacific Mail Steamship Company. Alfred Holt's Line of Steamers from Liverpool to China, via the Cape of Good Hope. Distances in Nautical Miles from Shanghai to Towns on the Yang-tse-Kiang, and Catalogue of Books, etc., in China and Japan. By William Frederick Mayers, F.R.G.S., Her Majesty's Consular Service, N. B. Dennys, late Her Majesty's Consular Service, and Charles King, Lieutenant Royal Marine Artillery. Compiled and Edited by N. B. Dennys. 8vo. Half bound. pp. 668, xlviii. and 26. 1867. 42s.
- De Tracy.**—**ESSAIS DIVERS, LETTRES ET PENSÉES de Madame de Tracy.** 3 volumes. 12mo., paper covers, pp. iv. 404, 360, and 388. 1852, 1854, and 1855. 17. 1s.
- De Veitelle.**—**MERCANTILE DICTIONARY; a Complete Vocabulary of the Technicalities of Commercial Correspondence, Names of Articles of Trade, and Marine Terms in English, Spanish, and French.** With Geographical Names, Business Letters, and Tables of the Abbreviations in Common Use in the three Languages. By J. De Veitelle. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 302. 1864. 7s.
- De Vere.**—**STUDIES IN ENGLISH; or, Glimpses of the Inner Life of our Language.** By M. Schele de Vere, LL.D., Professor of Modern Languages in the University of Virginia. 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 365. 1867. 10s. 6d.
- Dewey.**—**AMERICAN MORALS AND MANNERS.** By Orville Dewey, D.D. 8vo., pp. 32, sewed. 1844. 1s.
- Diary of a Poor Young Gentlewoman.** Translated from the German, by M. Anna Childs. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 224. 1860. 3s. 6d.
- Dickinson's, (John), Pamphlets relating to Indian Affairs.**
- THE FAMINE IN THE NORTH-WEST PROVINCES OF INDIA: How we might have prevented it, and may prevent another.** 8vo. pp. 36, sewed. 1861. 1s.
- OBSTRUCTIONS TO TRADE IN INDIA.** A Letter to P. C. Brown, Esq., of Tellicherry. With his Reply. Edited by John Dickinson. 8vo. pp. 15, sewed. 1861. 6d.

DICKINSON'S (JOHN), Pamphlets relating to Indian Affairs—(continued).

ADDRESS TO THE MEMBERS OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS on the Relation between the Cotton Crisis and Public Works in India. 8vo. pp. 39, sewed. 1862. 6d.

OBSTRUCTIONS TO TRADE IN INDIA. A Letter. By F. C. Brown, Esq., of Tellicherry. Edited by John Dickinson. 8vo. pp. 20, sewed. 1862. 6d.

REMARKS ON THE INDIAN RAILWAY REPORTS PUBLISHED BY THE GOVERNMENT, and Reasons for a Change of Policy in India. 8vo. pp. 32, sewed. 1862. 6d.

A LETTER TO LORD STANLEY, M.P., etc., etc., on the Policy of the Secretary of State for India. By John Dickinson. 8vo. pp. 40, sewed. 1863. 6d.

DHAR NOT RESTORED, in Spite of the House of Commons and of Public Opinion. By John Dickinson. 8vo. pp. 110, cloth. 1864. 1s.

SEQUEL TO "DHAR NOT RESTORED," and a Proposal to Extend the Principle of Restoration. By John Dickinson. 8vo. sewed, pp. 35. 1865. 1s.

LETTERS TO MALCOLM MOSS, Esq., President of the Manchester Chamber of Commerce. By John Dickinson, F.R.A.S., etc., etc., and John Malcolm Ludlow, Barrister at Law, author of "British India, its Races and its History," "The War in Oude," etc., etc. 8vo. pp. 16, sewed. 1866. 6d.

RESULTS OF IRRIGATION WORKS IN GODAVERY DISTRICT, and Reflections upon them. By Major-General Sir Arthur Cotton, R.E. Part I. 8vo. pp. 15, and Appendix, sewed. 1866. 6d. Part II. 8vo. pp. 11, sewed. 1866. 6d.

DICTIONARY AND COMMERCIAL PHRASEOLOGY in the German, Dutch, English, French, Italian, and Spanish Languages, including a complete Catalogue of Goods, and Five Tables of References in the above Languages. Compiled by Prof. Dr. Brutzer, Prof. Dr. Binder, Messrs. J. Bos Iz, M. W. Brasch and others. 8vo. pp. 544, cloth. 1868. 10s.

DIREKINCK-HOLMFELD.—ATTIC TRACTS ON DANISH AND GERMAN MATTERS. By Baron C. Direkinck-Holmfeld. 8vo. sewed, pp. 116. 1861. 1s.

DIREKS.—THE CENTURY OF INVENTIONS, written in 1655; by Edward Somerset, Marquis of Worcester. Now first translated into French from the first edition, London, 1663. Edited by Henry Direks, C.E., LL.D., F.R.S.E., M.R.S.L., etc., Author of "The Life of the Marquis of Worcester," "Worcesteriana," etc., etc. Crown 8vo. sewed, pp. 62. 1868. 1s.

DISCUSSION (A) AMONG UPWARDS OF 250 THEOLOGICAL INQUIRERS ON THE UNITY, DUALITY, AND TRINITY OF THE GODHEAD. With Discussions on the Creation, Fall, Incarnation, Atonement, Resurrection, Infallibility of Scripture, Inspiration, Miracles, Future Punishment, Revision of the Bible, etc. 8vo. cloth, pp. 206. 1864. 6s.

DOHERTY.—ORGANIC PHILOSOPHY; or, Man's True Place in Nature. Vol. I. Epicosmology. By Hugh Doherty, M.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. 408. 1864. 10s.

DOHERTY.—ORGANIC PHILOSOPHY. Volume II. Outlines of Ontology, Eternal Forces, Laws, and Principles. By Hugh Doherty, M.D. 8vo. pp. vi. and 462. 1867. 12s.

DOHERTY.—PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION. By Hugh Doherty, M.D. 8vo. sewed, pp. 48. 1865. 1s.

DOHNE.—THE FOUR GOSPELS IN ZULU. By the Rev. J. L. Dohne, Missionary to the American Board C. F. M. 8vo, pp. 208, cloth. Pietermaritzburg, 1866. 5s.

- Dohne.—A ZULU-KAFIR DICTIONARY, etymologically explained, with copious illustrations and examples, preceded by an introduction on the Zulu-Kafir Language. By the Rev. J. L. Dohne. Royal 8vo. pp. xlii. 418. sewed. Cape Town, 1867. 21s. c
- Dolgoroukow.—LA VÉRITÉ SUR LE PROCÈS du Prince Pierre Dolgoroukow, par un Russe. 32mo. sewed. pp. 144. 1862. 8s.
- Dolgoroukow.—LA FRANCE SOUS LE RÉGIME BONAPARTISTE, par le Prince Pierre Dolgoroukow, 2 volumes. 12mo. paper, pp. 478. 1864. 10s.
- D. O. M.—THE TRIUNE; or, the New Religion. By Scrutator. 8vo. cloth, pp. ii. and 50. 1837. 2s.
- Dominiquey's HISTORY OF THE ARGENTINE REPUBLIC. Volume I. (1492 to 1807), Translated from the Spanish. By J. W. Williams. Royal 8vo. sewed, pp. vii. and 149. Buenos Ayres. 1865. 9s.
- D'Orsey.—COLLOQUIAL PORTUGUESE; or, Words and Phrases of Every-day Life. Compiled from Dictation and Conversation. For the Use of English Tourists in Portugal, Brazil, Madeira, etc. By A. J. D. D'Orsey. Third Edition, enlarged. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 126. 1868. 3s. 6d.
- D'Orsey.—A PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH, exhibiting in a Series of Exercises, in Double Translation, the Idiomatic Structure of both Languages, as now written and spoken. Adapted to Ollendorff's System by the Rev. Alexander J. D. D'Orsey, of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, and Professor of the English Language in that University. Third edition. In one vol. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 296. 1868. 7s. 6d.
- D'Orsey.—A PORTUGUESE-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-PORTUGUESE DICTIONARY. By Rev. Alex. J. D. D'Orsey. [*In preparation.*]
- Dour and Bertha. A Tale. 18mo. pp. vi. and 72, sewed. 1848. 1s.
- Drummond.—PRESIDENT LINCOLN AND THE AMERICAN WAR. A Funeral Address, delivered on Sunday, April 30th, 1865. By Robert Blackley Drummond, B.A. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1865. 3d.
- Duncanson.—THE PROVIDENCE OF GOD MANIFESTED IN NATURAL LAW. By John Duncanson, M.D. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. v. and 354. 1861. 7s.
- Dunglison.—MEDICAL LEXICON. A Dictionary of Medical Science, containing a concise explanation of the various subjects and terms of Anatomy, Physiology, Pathology, Hygiene, Therapeutics, Pharmacology, Pharmacy, Surgery, Obstetrics, Medical Jurisprudence, and Dentistry. Notices of Climate and of Mineral Waters. Formulæ for Official, Empirical, and Dietetic Preparations, with the accentuation and etymology of the terms, and the French and other Synonymes, so as to constitute a French as well as English Medical Lexicon. By Robley Dunglison, M.D., LL.D., Professor of the Institute of Medicine, etc., in the Jefferson Medical College of Philadelphia. New edition, thoroughly revised, and very greatly modified and augmented. Roy. 8vo. cloth, pp. 1048. 1866. 24s.
- Dunlop.—BRAZIL AS A FIELD FOR EMIGRATION. Its Geography, Climate, Agricultural Capabilities, and the Facilities afforded for Permanent Settlement. By Charles Dunlop. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1866. 6d.
- Dwight.—MODERN PHILOLOGY; its Discoveries, History and Influence. With Maps, Tabular Views, and an Index. By Benjamin W. Dwight. First Series. Third edition, revised and corrected. 8vo. cloth, pp. xviii. and 360. 1864.
- Second Series. 8vo. cloth, pp. 504. 1864. 2 vols. 8vo. 24s.



**Early English Meals and Manners.** — John Russell's Boke of Nurture, Wynkyn de Worde's Boke of Kervynge, the Boke of Curtasye, R. Weste's Booke of Demeanor, Seager's Schoole of Vertue, the Babee's Book, Aristotle's A B C, Urbanitatis, Stans Puer ad Mensam, the Lytyle Childrenes Lytil Boke, for to serve a Lord, Old Symon, the Bircbed School-Boy, etc., etc. With some Forewords on Education in Early England. Edited by Frederick J. Furnivall, M.A., Trinity Hall, Cambridge. 4to., pp. c. and 388. With 16 tables of Illustrations. Cloth. 1868. 42s.

**Early English Text Society's Publications.**

1864.

1. **EARLY ENGLISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS.** In the West-Midland Dialect of the Fourteenth Century. Edited by R. Morris, Esq., from an unique Cottonian MS. 16s.
2. **ARTHUR** (about 1140 A.D.). Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., from the Marquis of Bath's unique M.S. 4s.
3. **ANE COMPENDIOUS AND BREVE TRACTATE CONCERNYNG YE OFFICE AND DEWTIE OF KYNGIS,** etc. By William Lauder. (1556 A.D.) Edited by F. Hall, Esq., D.C.L. 4s.
4. **SIR GAWAYNE AND THE GREEN KNIGHT** (about 1320-30 A.D.). Edited by R. Morris, Esq., from an unique Cottonian M.S. 10s.

1865.

5. **OF THE ORTHOGRAPHIE AND CONGRUITIE OF THE BRITAN TONGUE;** a treatise, noe shorter than necessarie, for the Schooles, be Alexander Hume. Edited for the first time from the unique MS. in the British Museum (about 1617 A.D.), by Henry B. Wheatley, Esq. 4s.
6. **LANCELOT OF THE LAKE.** Edited from the unique M.S. in the Cambridge University Library (about 1500), by the Rev. Walter W. Skeat, M.A. 8s.
7. **THE STORY OF GENESIS AND EXODUS,** an Early English Song, of about 1250 A.D. Edited for the first time from the unique MS. in the Library of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, by R. Morris, Esq. 8s.
8. **MORTE ARTHURE;** the Alliterative Version. Edited from Robert Thornton's unique MS. (about 1440 A.D.) at Lincoln. By the Rev. George Perry, M.A., Prebendary of Lincoln. 7s.
9. **ANIMADVERSIONS UPON THE ANNOTACIONS AND CORRECTIONS OF SOME IMPERFECTIONS OF IMPRESSIONES OF CHAUER'S WORKES,** reprinted in 1598; by Francis Thynne. Edited from the unique MS. in the Bridge-water Library. By G. H. Kingsley, Esq., M.D. 4s.
10. **MERLIN, OR THE EARLY HISTORY OF KING ARTHUR.** Edited for the first time from the unique MS. of the Cambridge University Library (about 1450 A.D.). By Henry B. Wheatley, Esq. Part I. 2s. 6d.
11. **THE MONARCHE,** and other Poems of Sir David Lyndesay. Edited from the first edition by Johne Skott, in 1552. By Fitzedward Hall, Esq., D.C.L. Part I. 3s.
12. **THE WRIGHT'S CHASTE WIFE,** a Merry Tale, by Adam of Cobsam (about 1642 A.D.), from the unique Lambeth MS. 306. Edited for the first time by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 1s.

1866.

13. **SEINTE MARIHERETE, YE MEIDEN ANT MARTYR.** Three Texts of about 1200, 1310, 1330 A.D. First edited in 1862. By the Rev. Oswald Cockayne, M.A., and now re-issued. 2s.
14. **KYNG HORN,** with fragments of Floriz and Blanucheflur, and the Assumption of the Blessed Virgin. Edited from the MS. in the Library of the University of Cambridge and the British Museum. By the Rev. J. Rawson Lumby. 3s. 6d.
15. **POLITICAL, RELIGIOUS, AND LOVE POEMS,** from the Lambeth MS., No. 306, and other sources. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 7s. 6d.
16. **A TRETICE IN ENGLISH** breuely drawe out of þ book of Quintis essencijs in

## EARLY English Text Society's Publications—(continued).

- Latyn, þ Hermys þ prophete and king of Egipt after þ flood of Noe, fader of Philosophris, hadde by reuelacioun of an aungil of God, to him sente. Edited from the Sloane MS. 73. By F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 1s.
17. PARALLEL EXTRACTS from 29 Manuscripts of PIERS PLOWMAN, with Comments, and a Proposal for the Society's Three-text edition of this Poem. By the Rev. W. Skeat, M.A. 1s.
18. HALL MEIDENHEAD, about 1200 A.D. Edited for the first time from the MS. (with a translation) by the Rev. Oswald Cockayne, M.A. 1s.
19. THE MONARCHE, and other Poems of Sir David Lyndesay. Part II., the Complaynt of the King's Papingo, and other minor Poems. Edited from the first edition by F. Hall, Esq., D.C.L. 3s. 6d.
20. SOME TREATISES BY RICHARD ROLLE DE HAMPOLE. Edited from Robert of Thornton's MS. about 1440 A.D. By the Rev. George G. Perry, M.A. 1s.
21. MERLIN, OR THE EARLY HISTORY OF KING ARTHUR. Part II. Edited by Henry B. Wheatley, Esq. 4s.
22. THE ROMANS OF PARTENAY, OR LUSIGNEN. Edited for the first time from the unique MS. in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s.
23. DAN MICHEL'S AYENBITE OF INWYT, OR Remorse of Conscience, in the Kentish dialect, 1340 A.D. Edited from the unique MS. in the British Museum, by Richard Morris, Esq. 10s. 6d.
- 1867.
24. HYMNS OF THE VIRGIN AND CHRIST; THE PARLIAMENT OF DEVILS, and Other Religious Poems. Edited from the Lambeth MS. 853, by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 3s.
25. THE STACIONS OF ROME, and the Pilgrim's Sea-Voyage and Sea-Sickness, with Clene Maydenhod. Edited from the Vernon and Porkington MSS., etc. By F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 1s.
26. RELIGIOUS PIECES IN PROSE AND VERSE. Containing Dan Jon Gaytrigg's Sermon; The Abbaye of S. Spirit; Sayne Jon, and other pieces in the Northern Dialect. Edited from Robert of Thornton's MS. (about 1460 A.D.) by the Rev. George G. Perry, M.A. 2s.
27. MANIPULUS VOCABULORUM: a Rhyming Dictionary of the English Language, by Peter Levens (1570). Edited, with an Alphabetical Index, by Henry B. Wheatley. 12s.
28. THE VISION OF WILLIAM CONCERNING PIERS PLOWMAN, together with Vita de Dowel, Dobet et Doðest. 1362 A.D. By William Langland. The earliest or Vernon Text; Text A. Edited from the Vernon MS., with full Collations. By Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 7s.
29. ENGLISH GILDS, their Statutes and Customs, with an Introduction and an Appendix of translated Statutes. Edited from the MSS. 1389 A.D. By Toulmin Smith, Esq. [In the press.]
30. PIERCE THE PLOUGHMAN'S CREDE (about 1394). Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 2s.
- 1868.
31. INSTRUCTIONS FOR PARISH PRIESTS. By Jónn Myrc. Edited from Cotton MS. Claudius A. II. By Edward Peacock, Esq., F.S.A., etc., etc. 4s.
32. THE BABEES BOOK, Aristotle's A B C, Urbanitatis, Stans Puer ad Mensam, The Lyttille Childrenes Lyttil Boke. The Bokes of Nurture of Hugh Rodes and John Russell, Wynnyng de Worde's Boke of Keryngge, the Booke of Demeanor, the Boke of Curtasye, Seager's Schoole of Vertue, etc., etc. With some French and Latin Poems on like subjects, and some Forewords on Education in Early England. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Trinity Hall, Cambridge. 15s.
33. THE BOOK OF THE KNIGHTS DE LA TOUR LANDRY, 1372. A Father's Book for his Daughters. Edited from the Harleian MS. 1764. By Thomas Wright, Esq., M.A., and Mr. William Rossiter. 8s.

- Eastwick.**—**KHIRAD AFROZ** (the Illuminator of the Understanding). By Maulavi Hafizud-din. A New Edition of the Hindustani Text, carefully revised, with Notes, Critical and Explanatory. By Edward B. Eastwick, F.R.S., F.S.A., M.R.A.S., Professor of Hindustani at Haileybury College. Imperial 8vo. cloth, pp. xiv, and 319. Re-issue, 1867. 48s.
- Echo (Deutsches).**—**THE GERMAN ECHO.** A Faithful Mirror of German Conversation. By Ludwig Wolfram. With a Vocabulary. By Henry P. Skelton. Post 8vo., pp. 130 and 70. Cloth. 1863. 3s.
- Echo Français.**—**A PRACTICAL GUIDE TO CONVERSATION.** By Fr. de la Fruston. With a complete Vocabulary. By Anthony Maw Border. Post 8vo., pp. 120 and 72. Cloth. 1860. 3s.
- Eco-Italiano (L').**—**A PRACTICAL GUIDE TO ITALIAN CONVERSATION** By Eugène Camerini. With a complete Vocabulary. By Henry P. Skelton. Post 8vo., pp. vi., 128 and 98. Cloth. 1860. 4s. 6d.
- Eco de Madrid.**—**THE ECHO OF MADRID.** A Practical Guide to Spanish Conversation. By J. E. Hartzenbusch, and Henry Lemming. With a complete Vocabulary, containing Copious Explanatory Remarks. By Henry Lemming. Post 8vo., pp. xii., 144 and 83. Cloth. 1860. 5s.
- Edalji.**—**A DICTIONARY, GUJARATÍ AND ENGLISH.** By Shápurjí Edalji. Second edition. 8vo. pp. xxiv. 874, cloth. 1868. £1 1s.
- Edalji.**—**A GRAMMAR OF THE GUJARATÍ LANGUAGE.** By Shapurjí Edalji. Crown, 8vo. cloth, pp. 127. 1867. 10s. 6d.
- Edda SÆMUNDAR HINNS FRODA.** The Edda of Sæmund the Wise. Translated from the Old Norse, with a Mythological Index. Part First. Mythological. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 152. 1866. 3s. 6d.
- Edda SÆMUNDAR HINNS FRODA.** The Edda of Sæmund the Learned. From the Old Norse or Icelandic. Part II., Historical. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 170. London, 1866. 4s.
- Edda SÆMUNDAR HINNS FRODA.** The Edda of Sæmund the Learned. Translated from the Old Norse, by Benjamin Thorpe. Complete in 1 vol. fcap. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. 152, and pp. viii. 170. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Edgar.**—**MODERN TIMES, THE LABOUR QUESTION, AND THE FAMILY.** A Brief Statement of Facts and Principles. By Henry Edgar. 12mo. sewed, pp. 24. 3d.
- Edgar.**—**THE POSITIVIST'S CALENDAR; OR, Transitional System of Public Commemoration, instituted by Auguste Comte, Founder of the Positive Religion of Humanity.** With a Brief Exposition of Religious Positivism. By Henry Edgar. 12mo. sewed, pp. 103. 1856. 2s. 6d.
- Edge.**—**MAJOR-GENERAL McCLELLAN AND THE CAMPAIGN ON THE YORKTOWN PENINSULA.** By Frederick Milnes Edge. With a map of the Peninsula, drawn expressly for this work, by James Wyld, Geographer to the Queen. 12mo. pp. iv. and 204. 1865. 4s.
- Edwards.**—**MEMOIRS OF LIBRARIES, together with a Practical Handbook of Library Economy.** By Edward Edwards. 2 vols. roy. 8vo. Numerous illustrations. Cloth. Vol. 1, pp. xxviii. and 801. Vol. 2, pp. xxxvi. and 1104. 1859. £2 8s.
- Ditto, large paper, imperial 8vo. cloth. £4 4s.

- Edwards.**—CHAPTERS OF THE BIOGRAPHICAL HISTORY OF THE FRENCH ACADEMY. 1629—1863. With an Appendix relating to the Unpublished Chronicle "Liber de Hyda." By Edward Edwards, Esq. 1 vol. 8vo., pp. 186. cloth. 1864. 6s.  
Ditto, large paper. Roy. 8vo. 10s. 6d.
- Edwards.**—LIBRARIES AND FOUNDERS OF LIBRARIES. By Edward Edwards. 8vo. cloth, pp. xix. and 506. 1865. 18s.  
Ditto, large paper, imperial 8vo. cloth. £1 10s.
- Edkins.**—A GRAMMAR OF THE CHINESE COLLOQUIAL LANGUAGE, COMMONLY CALLED THE MANDARIN DIALECT. By Joseph Edkins. 8vo., pp. viii. and 266, sewed. 1857. 20s.
- Edkins.**—PROGRESSIVE LESSONS IN THE CHINESE SPOKEN LANGUAGE, with Lists of Common Words and Phrases, and an Appendix, containing the laws of tones in the Peking dialect. 8vo., pp. vi. and 104, sewed. 1852. 12s.
- Eger and Grime.**—AN EARLY ENGLISH ROMANCE. Edited from Bishop Percy's Folio Manuscripts, about 1650 A.D. By John W. Hales, M.A., Fellow and late Assistant Tutor of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Frederick J. Furnivall, M.A., of Trinity Hall, Cambridge. 2to. large paper. Half bound, Roxburgh style, pp. 64. 1867. 10s. 6d.
- Elder.**—BIOGRAPHY OF ELISHA KENT KANE. By William Elder. 8vo. pp. 416. Cloth. 1858. 12s.
- Ellet.**—THE MISSISSIPPI AND OHIO RIVERS: containing Plans for the Protection of the Delta from inundation, and Investigations of the Practicability and Cost of Improving the Navigation of the Ohio, and other Rivers, by means of Reservoirs. With an Appendix on the Bars at the Mouths of the Mississippi. By Charles Ellet, Junior, Civil Engineer. 8vo. pp. 368. Cloth. 1853. 16s.
- Elliott.**—THE HISTORY OF INDIA AS TOLD BY ITS OWN HISTORIANS. The Muhamhadan Period. Edited from the Posthumous Papers of the late Sir H. M. Elliott, K.C.B., East India Company's Bengal Civil Service. By Professor John Dowson, M.R.A.S., Staff College, Sandhurst. Vol. I. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxxii. and 541. 1867. 18s. To be completed in three volumes.
- Elliott.**—MEMOIRS ON THE HISTORY, PHILOLOGY, AND ETHNIC DISTRIBUTION OF THE RACES OF THE NORTH-WEST PROVINCES OF INDIA: being an amplified Edition of the Glossary of Indian Terms. By the late Sir H. M. Elliott, K.C.B. Arranged from M.S. materials collected by him, and Edited by Reinhold Rost, Ph. D., Secretary to the Royal Asiatic Society. 2 vols. 8vo. In the press.
- Emerson.**—THE YOUNG AMERICAN. A Lecture. By Ralph Waldo Emerson. 8vo., pp. 24. 1844. 1s.
- Emerson.**—REPRESENTATIVE MEN. Seven Lectures. By R. W. Emerson. Post 8vo., pp. 215, cloth. 1850. 5s.
- Emerson.**—ESSAYS. By Ralph Waldo Emerson. First Series, embodying the Corrections and Editions of the last American edition; with an Introductory Preface, by Thomas Carlyle, reprinted by permission, from the first English Edition. Post 8vo. pp. viii. and 192, sewed. 1853. 2s.
- Emerson.**—ESSAYS. By Ralph Waldo Emerson. Second Series, with Preface by Thomas Carlyle. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 190, 1858. 3s. 6d.

**EMERSON.—POEMS.** By Ralph Waldo Emerson. 16mo. cloth. Blue and Gold Series, pp. 254. With portrait. 1865. 5s.

**EMERSON.—ESSAYS.** By Ralph Waldo Emerson. First and Second Series. Blue and Gold Edition. 16mo. cloth, gilt edges, pp. iv. and 515. 5s.

**EMPEROR OF AUSTRIA VERSUS LOUIS KOSSUTH.** A few words of Common Sense. By an Hungarian. 8vo. pp. 28. 1861. 1s.

**EPISTLE, AN.** In Familiar Verse. To a Young Statesman. By a Loyal Subject. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 11. 1867. 6d.

**ETHNOLOGICAL JOURNAL.**—A Monthly Record of Ethnological Research and Criticism. Edited by Luke Burke. July, 1865, to March, 1866. Nos. 1 to 7, 1s. each; 8 and 9, 4d. each.

**ETHNOLOGICAL JOURNAL.—A MAGAZINE OF ETHNOGRAPHICAL AND ANTIQUARIAN SCIENCE.** Edited by Luke Burke. New Series. No. 1. January, 1854. 8vo. pp. 90, sewed. 3s. 6d. (No more published.)

**EVERETT.—SELF GOVERNMENT IN THE UNITED STATES.** By the Hon. Edward Everett. 8vo., pp. 47, sewed. 1860. 1s.

**EVERETT.—THE QUESTIONS OF THE DAY.** An Address. By Edward Everett. Royal 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1861. 1s. 6d.

**EWBANK.—A DESCRIPTIVE AND HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF HYDRAULIC AND OTHER MACHINES FOR RAISING WATER,** Ancient and Modern, with Observations on various Subjects connected with the Mechanic Arts: including the progressive Development of the Steam Engine; Descriptions of every variety of Bellows, Piston, and Rotary Pumps; Fire Engines, Water Rams, Pressure Engines, Air Machines, Eolipiles, etc.; Remarks on Ancient Wells, Air Beds, Cog Wheels, Blow Pipes, Bellows of various People, Magic Goblets, Steam Idols, and other Machinery of Ancient Temples. To which are added, Experiments of Blowing and Spouting Tubes, and other original Devices, Natures, Modes, and Machinery for raising Water; Historical Notices respecting Siphons, Fountains, Water Organs, Clepsydræ, Pipes, Valves, Cocks, etc. In Five Books, illustrated by nearly 300 Engravings. 15th edition, with additional matter. By Thomas Ewbank. 8vo. cloth, pp. 624. 1864. 21s.

**EXPOSITION (AN), OF SPIRITUALISM;** comprising Two Series of Letters, and a review of the *Spiritual Magazine*, No. 20. As published in the *Star and Dial*. With Introduction, Notes, and Appendix. By Sceptic. Crown 8vo. sewed, pp. xiv. and 314. Cloth. 1862. 6s.

**FALKENER.—A DESCRIPTION OF SOME IMPORTANT THEATRES AND OTHER REMAINS IN CRETE.** From a MS. History of Candia, by Onorio Belli, in 1586. Being a Supplement to the "Museum of Classical Antiquities." Illustrations and nine Plates. By Edward Falkener. Pp. 32, royal 8vo. cloth. 1854. 5s. 6d.

**FARM (HOW TO GET A) AND WHERE TO FIND ONE.** Showing that Homesteads may be had by those desirous of securing them, with the Public Law on the subject of Free Homes, and suggestions from Practical Farmers, together with numerous successful experiences of others, who, though beginning with little or nothing, have become the owners of ample farms. By the Author of "Ten Acres Enough." Second edition, pt. 8vo. pp. 345. Cloth. 6s.

**Faulkner.**—A DICTIONARY OF COMMERCIAL TERMS, WITH THEIR SYNONYMS IN VARIOUS LANGUAGES. By Alexander Faulkner, Assistant Commissioner of Customs, Salt and Opium. Author of the "Orientalist's Grammatical Vade-Mecum," etc. 12mo., pp. iii. and 158, and vii. Half-bound. 1866. 4s.

**Fay.**—GREAT OUTLINE OF GEOGRAPHY FOR HIGH SCHOOLS AND FAMILIES. By Theodore S. Fay. With an Atlas of 8 plates in folio. 12mo., pp. viii. and 238. Boards. 1867. 16s.

**Felton.**—SELECTIONS FROM MODERN GREEK WRITERS, in Prose and Poetry. With Notes. By Dr. C. C. Felton. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 216. 1857. 6s.

**Felton.**—GREECE, ANCIENT AND MODERN. Lectures delivered before the Lowell Institute. By C. C. Felton, LL.D., late President of Harvard University. Two vols., 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. 511, and iv. 549. 1867. 28s.

**Feuerbach.**—THE ESSENCE OF CHRISTIANITY. By Ludwig Feuerbach. Translated from the Second German Edition, by Marian Evans, translator of Strauss's "Life of Jesus." Large post 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 340. 1864. 10s. 6d.

**Fichte.**—THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PRESENT AGE. By Johann Gottlieb Fichte. Translated from the German by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xi. and 271. 1847. 6s.

"We accept these lectures as a true and most admirable delineation of the present age; and on this ground alone we should bestow on them our highest recommendation; but it is because they teach us how we may rise above the age, that we bestow on them our most emphatic praise.

"He makes us think, and perhaps more sublimely than we have ever formerly thought, but it is only in order that we may the more nobly act.

"As a majestic and most stirring utterance from the lips of the greatest German prophet, we trust that the book will find a response in many an English soul, and potently help to regenerate English society."—*The Critic*.

**Fichte.**—THE VOCATION OF A SCHOLAR. By Johann Gottlieb Fichte. Translated from the German by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth. Pp. 78, sewed, 1847. 2s.

"The Vocation of a Scholar . . . is distinguished by the same high moral tone, and manly, vigorous expression' which characterise all Fichte's works in the German, and is nothing lost in Mr. Smith's clear, unembarrassed, and thoroughly English translation."—*Douglas Jerrold's Newspaper*.

"We are glad to see this excellent translation of one of the best of Fichte's works presented to the public in a very neat form . . . No class needs and earnest and sincere spirit more than the literary class; and therefore the 'Vocation of the Scholar,' the 'Guide of the Human Race,' written in Fichte's most earnest, most commanding temper, will be welcomed in its English dress by public writers, and be beneficial to the cause of truth."—*Economist*.

**Fichte.**—THE VOCATION OF MAN. By Johann Gottlieb Fichte. Translated from the German by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 198. 1848. 4s.

"In the progress of my present work, I have taken a deeper glance into religion than ever I did before. In me the emotions of the heart proceed only from perfect intellectual clearness; it cannot be but the clearness I have now attained on this subject shall also take possession of my heart."—*Fichte's Correspondence*.

"The Vocation of Man' is, as Fichte truly says, intelligible to all readers who are really able to understand a book at all; and as the history of the mind in its various phases of doubt, knowledge, and faith, it is of interest to all. A book of this stamp is sure to teach you much because it excites thought. If it rouses you to combat his conclusions, it has done a good work; for in that very effort you are stirred to a consideration of points which have hitherto escaped your indolent acquiescence."—*Foreign Quarterly*.

"This is Fichte's most popular work, and is every way remarkable."—*Atlas*.

"It appears to us the boldest and most emphatic attempt that has yet been made to explain to man his restless and unconquerable desire to win the True and the Eternal."—*Sentinel*.

**Fichte.**—ON THE NATURE OF THE SCHOLAR, AND ITS MANIFESTATIONS.

By Johann Gottlieb Fichte. Translated from the German by William Smith. Second Edition. Cloth. Post 8vo. Pp. vii. and 131. 1848. 3s.

"With great satisfaction we welcome this first English translation of an author who occupies the most exalted position as a profound and original thinker; as an irresistible orator in the cause of what he believed to be the truth; as a thoroughly honest and heroic man. . . . The appearance of any of his works in our language is, we believe, a perfect novelty. . . . These orations are admirably fitted for their purpose; so grand is the position taken by the lecturer, and so irresistible their eloquence."—*Examiner*.

"This work must inevitably attract the attention of the scientific physician, by the grand spirituality of its doctrines, and the pure morality it teaches. . . . Shall we be presumptuous if we recommend these views to our professional brethren? or if we say to the enlightened, the thoughtful, the serious. This—if you be true scholars—is *your* vocation? We know not a higher morality than this, or more noble principles than these: they are full of truth."—*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*.

**Fichte.**—MEMOIR OF JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. By William Smith. Second Edition. Post 8vo. Cloth. Pp. 168. 1848. 7s.

" . . . . A Life of Fichte, full of nobleness and instruction, of grand purpose, tender feeling, and brave effort! . . . the compilation of which is executed with great judgment and fidelity."—*Prospective Review*.

"We state Fichte's character as it is known and admitted by men of all parties among the Germans, when we say that so robust an intellect, a soul so calm, so lofty, so massive, and immovable, has not mingled in philosophical discussion since the time of Luther. . . . Fichte's opinions may be true or false; but his character as a thinker can be slightly valued only by such as know it ill; and, as a man, approved by action and suffering, in his life and in his death, he ranks with a class of men who were common only in better ages than ours."—*State of German Literature, by Thomas Carlyle*.

**Fichte.**—THE WAY TOWARDS A BLESSED LIFE; OR, THE DOCTRINE OF RELIGION. By Johann Gottlieb Fichte. Translated by William Smith. Post 8vo. Cloth. Pp. viii. and 221. 1849. 5s.**Fichte.**—THE POPULAR WORKS OF JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, with a Memoir of the Author, by William Smith. 2 vols. Post 8vo. Cloth. Pp. 554, and pp. viii. and 529. 1859. 20s.**Fichte.**—THE SCIENCE OF KNOWLEDGE. By J. G. Fichte. Translated from the German by A. E. Krøger. Crown 8vo., pp. 378. Cloth. 1868. 8s.**Filippo Malincontri; OR, STUDENT LIFE IN VENETIA.** An Autobiography. Edited by Girolamo Volpe. Translated from the unpublished Italian MS. by C. B. Cayley, B.A. Two vols., post 8vo. Pp. xx. and 646. 1861. 18s.**Fitzgerald.**—THE BOSTON MACHINIST. Being a Complete School for the Apprentice as well as the Advanced Machinist, showing how to make and use every tool in every branch of the business, with a Treatise on Screw and Gear Cutting. By Walter Fitzgerald, Inventor and Mechanical Engineer. 12mo. cloth, pp. 80. 1866. 2s. 6d.**Fletcher.**—ANALYSIS OF BENTHAM'S THEORY OF LEGISLATION. By G. W. H. Fletcher, LL.B., of the Civil Service Commission. 12mo. cloth, pp. ix. and 86. 1864. 2s. 6d.**FOX.**—THE SERVICE IN COMMEMORATION OF WILLIAM JOHNSON FOX, late M.P. for Oldham, and Minister at South Place, Finsbury. At Finsbury Chapel, on Sunday Morning, June 12, 1864. By M. D. Conway. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 23. 1864. 6d.

- FOX.**—MEMORIAL EDITION OF COLLECTED WORKS, by W. J. FOX:—  
 Vol. 1. Lectures, Lessons, etc., prior to 1824. 8vo. cloth, pp. 390. 1865. 5s.  
 Vol. 2. Christ and Christianity. 8vo. cloth, pp. 355. 1865. 5s.  
 Vol. 3. Miscellaneous Lectures and Sermons, and Twenty Sermons on Principles of Morality Inculcated in Holy Scripture. 8vo. cloth, pp. 350. 1865. 5s.  
 Vol. 4. Anti-Corn Law Speeches and occasional Speeches. 8vo. cloth, pp. 378. 1866. 5s.  
 Vol. 5. Letters on the Corn Laws. By a Norwich Weaver Boy, and Extracts from Letters by Publicola. 8vo. cloth, pp. 325. 1866. 5s.  
 Vol. 6. Miscellaneous Essays, Political, Literary, Critical, and Biographical. From the *Retrospective Review*, *Westminster Review*, *Monthly Repository*, *Morning Chronicle*, etc. 8vo. cloth, pp. 424. 1867. 5s.  
 Vol. 7. Reports of Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury. 8vo. cloth, pp. 312. 1865. 5s.  
 Vol. 8. Reports of Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury. 8vo. cloth, pp. 321. 1865. 5s.  
 Vol. 9. Reports of Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury, supplementary to the Course on the Religious Ideas. 8vo. cloth, pp. 323. 1867. 5s.  
 Vol. 10. Reports of Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury, supplementary to the Course on the Religious Ideas, and Miscellaneous Lectures. 8vo. cloth, pp. 314. 1867. 5s.  
 Vol. 11. Reports of Miscellaneous Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury. 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 322. 1868. 5s.  
 Vol. 12. Reports of Miscellaneous Lectures at South Place Chapel, Finsbury. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 358. 1868. 5s.
- FOXTON.**—THE PRIESTHOOD AND THE PEOPLE. By Frederick J. Foxton, A.B., Author of "Popular Christianity," etc. 8vo., pp. 58, sewed. 1862. 1s. 6d.
- FOXTON.**—POPULAR CHRISTIANITY; ITS TRANSITION STATE, AND PROBABLE DEVELOPMENT. By Frederick J. Foxton, A.B., formerly of Pembroke College, Oxford, and Perpetual Curate of Stoke Prior and Docklow, Herefordshire. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. ix. and 226. 1849. 5s.
- FRANCIS.**—LOWELL HYDRAULIC EXPERIMENTS. Being a selection from experiments on Hydraulic Motors, on the Flow of Water over Weirs, in Open Canals of Uniform Rectangular Section and through Submerged Orifices and Diverging Tubes, made at Lowell, Massachusetts. By James B. Francis, Civil Engineer, Member of the American Society of Civil Engineers and Architects, Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, Member of the American Philosophical Society, etc. Second Edition. Revised and enlarged. With many new experiments and additional illustrations. 4to., pp. 250, 23 plates. Cloth. 1868. £3 3s.
- FRANKLIN.**—LIFE AND TIMES OF BENJAMIN FRANKLIN. By James Parton. With Steel Portraits. Two vols. 8vo., pp. 1,336. 1864. 21s.
- Free Press (Publications of the):**  
 REASONS FOR DEMANDING INVESTIGATIONS INTO THE CHARGES AGAINST LORD PALMERSTON. 8vo., pp. 19. 1840. 1s.  
 THE CRISIS—FRANCE IN FACE OF THE FOUR POWERS. With Supplement, by David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 58. 1840. 1s.  
 THE SULPHUR MONOPOLY. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 8. 1840. 3d.  
 THE EDINBURGH REVIEW AND THE AFGHAN WAR. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 61. 1843. 6d.  
 A FRAGMENT OF THE HISTORY OF SERVIA, 1843. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 96. 6d.  
 AN APPEAL AGAINST FACTION. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 56. 1843. 1s.



FREE PRESS (Publications of the)—*continued.*

- CANADA UNDER SUCCESSIVE ADMINISTRATIONS. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 100. 1844. 1s.
- THE CHANNEL ISLANDS—NORMAN LAWS AND MODERN PRACTICE. 8vo., pp. 32. 1844. 6d.
- PUBLIC OPINION AND ITS ORGANS. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 94. 1855. 6d.
- THE SERF AND THE COSSACK. By Francis Marx. 8vo., pp. 60. 1855. 6d.
- TUCKER'S POLITICAL FLY SHEETS. 8vo. 1855. 3s. Containing:—Palmerston and Poland; Palmerston, what has he done? England's Part in Turkey's Fall; War for Russia—not against Russia; Louis Napoléon, Russia, Circassia; the Invasion of the Crimea; the Words of Palmerston; the Spider and the Fly; the Horns Face of the Four Points.
- THE FREE PRESS SERIALS. 8vo. 1855-56. Containing:—The Nation Cheated out of its Food; Visit of David Urquhart to the Hungarian Exiles at Kufayah; Contradictions of Lord Clarendon in reference to Corn; The Story of the Life of Lord Palmerston; the Affghan War; the Will of Peter the Great.
- PARLIAMENTARY USURPATIONS in reference to Money Cognizance and Suppression of Treason by leading Statesmen and Diplomats; Betrayal of Denmark to Russia; the Chartist Correspondence; Selections from the Blue Books as Materials for Study, by Gustavus; the Danger of the Political Balance of Europe; Crimes of Louis Philip; Report of the Newcastle Committee on the Union of the Principalities.
- REPORTS OF COMMITTEES OF THE BIRMINGHAM CONFERENCE, ON THE RIGHT OF SEARCH AND NEWSPAPER FOLIO. 6d.
- THE PROPOSED BASIS OF PACIFICATION KNOWN AS THE FOUR POINTS. 1855. 1s.
- NEWCASTLE COMMITTEE REPORTS, ON THE LIMITATION OF THE SUPPLY OF GRAIN, AND CONSTITUTIONAL REMARKS. 8vo., pp. 48. 1855. 6d.
- FAMILIAR WORDS AS AFFECTING ENGLAND AND THE ENGLISH. 8vo., pp. 350. 1856. 2s.
- THE TURKISH BATH, WITH A VIEW TO ITS INTRODUCTION INTO THE BRITISH DOMINIONS. 8vo., pp. 68. 1856. 1s.
- THE QUEEN AND THE PREMIER. 8vo., pp. 32. 1857. 6d.
- THE REBELLION OF INDIA. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 46. 1s.
- THE HOSTILITIES AT CANTON. By Augustus G. Stapleton. 8vo., pp. 16. 1857. 6d.
- THE IMMEDIATE CAUSE OF THE INDIAN MUTINY. By G. Crawshay. 8vo., pp. 28. 1857. 6d.
- THE REPORT OF THE EAST INDIAN COMMITTEE OF THE COLONIAL SOCIETY ON THE MILITARY OPERATIONS IN CHINA. 8vo., pp. 67. 1857. 6d.
- THE REPORT OF THE BRADFORD COMMITTEE WHAT CONSTITUTES LAWFUL WAR. 8vo., pp. 24. 1857.
- THE SRADDHA, THE KEYSTONE OF THE BRAHMINICAL, BUDDHISTIC, AND ARIAN RELIGIONS. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 43. 1858. 1s.
- THE GROWTH OF RUSSIAN POWER, CONTINGENT ON THE DECAY OF THE BRITISH CONSTITUTION. 8vo., pp. 18. 1858. 6d.
- PROSELYTISM DESTRUCTIVE OF CHRISTIANITY, 8vo., pp. 44. By G. Crawshay. 1858. 1s.
- CATASTROPHE OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY. By G. Crawshay. 8vo., pp. 24. 1858. 6d.
- KOSSUTH AND URQUHART. Estratto di una Corrispondenza. 8vo., pp. 40. 1859. 1s.
- HOW RUSSIA TRIES TO GET INTO HER HANDS THE SUPPLY OF CORN OF THE WHOLE OF EUROPE. 8vo., pp. 24. 1859. 6d.
- THE EUROPEAN COMPLICATION EXPLAINED. By G. Crawshay. 8vo., pp. 10. 1859. 6d.

FREE PRESS (Publications of the)—*continued.*

DAVID URQUHART ON THE ITALIAN WAR. To which is added a Memoir of Europe, drawn up for the Instruction of the present Emperor of Russia. 8vo., pp. 40. 1859. 1s.

THE RUSSO-DUTCH QUESTION. Obligations of England to Russia contracted to ensure the maintenance of the Kingdom of Poland, and paid for its Suppression. 4to., pp. 15. 6d.

A LETTER ON THE DANGER TO ENGLAND OF AUSTRIA'S SUBJUGATION. 8vo. pp. 8. 1859. 6d.

THE AFGHAN PAPERS. Report and Petition of the Newcastle Foreign Affairs Association. 8vo., pp. 32. 1860. 6d.

THE INVASION OF ENGLAND. By David Urquhart. 8vo., pp. 13. 3d.

THE DUKE OF COBURG'S PAMPHLET. THE DESPOTS AS REVOLUTIONISTS. 8vo. pp. 31. 1s.

PALMERSTON UNMASKED. Answer to Ismail's Reply to the Duke of Coburg's Pamphlet. By Edward Fischel. 8vo., pp. 51. 1s.

SUCCESSION TO THE CROWN OF DENMARK. Speech of Lord R. Montague. 8vo. pp. 24. 1861. 1s.

THE PACIFIC AND THE AMAAR. By Francis Mark. 8vo., pp. 28. 1s.

THE DEFENCE OF ENGLAND. Nine Letters by a Journeyman Shoemaker. 8vo., pp. 34. 1862. 6d.

CIRCASSIA. Speech of S. E. Rolland at Preston. 8vo., pp. 34. 1862. 1s.

THE RIGHT OF SEARCH. Two Speeches, by David Urquhart. January 20 and 27. 8vo., pp. 103. 1862. 1s.

THE CIRCASSIAN WAR AND POLISH INSURRECTION. SECRET OF RUSSIA IN THE CASPIANA EUXINE. 8vo., pp. 102. 1863. 1s.

THE EXPEDITION OF THE CHESAPEAKE TO CIRCASSIA. 8vo., pp. 18. 1864. 6d.

THE NEW HERESY—PROSELYTISM SUBSTITUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS. By David Urquhart. 4to., pp. 19. 1862. 6d.

THE REASON FOR ABROGATING THE TREATY OF LONDON OF MAY 8TH, 1852. Presented by a Deputation from the Lancashire Foreign Affairs Committee. 4to., pp. 15. 6d.

THE STORY OF THE CRIMEAN WAR. From the *Times* and *Herald* Correspondents, and the evidence before the Sebastopol Committee. 4to., pp. 24. 3d.

DEBATES ON THE MOTION FOR PAPERS, WITH A VIEW TO THE IMPEACHMENT OF VISCOUNT PALMERSTON. 4to., pp. 59. 1s. 6d.

Friedrich.—PROGRESSIVE GERMAN READER, with Copious Notes to the First Part. By P. Friedrich. Crown 8vo., pp. 166. Cloth. 1868. 4s. 6d.

Froembling.—GRADUATED GERMAN READER, consisting of a selection from the most popular writers, arranged progressively; with a complete Vocabulary for the first part. By Friedrich Otto Froembling. 12mo., pp. viii. and 256. Cloth. 1867. 3s. 6d.

Froembling.—GRADUATED EXERCISES FOR TRANSLATION INTO GERMAN. Consisting of Extracts from the best English Authors, arranged progressively; with an Appendix, containing Idiomatic Notes. By Friedrich Otto Froembling, Ph.D., Principal German Master at the City of London School. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. xiv. and 322. With Notes, pp. 66. 1867. 4s. 6d. Without Exercises, 4s.

- Froude.—THE BOOK OF JOB. By J. A. Froude, M.A., late Fellow of Exeter College, Oxford. Reprinted from the *Westminster Review*. New Series, No. 7. 8vo., sewed, pp. 38. 1853. 8d.
- Fruston.—ECHO FRANÇAIS. A Practical Guide to French Conversation. By F. de la Fruston. With a Vocabulary. 12mo., pp. vii and 192. Cloth. 3s.
- Fulton.—THE FACTS AND FALLACIES OF THE SABBATH QUESTION CONSIDERED SCRIPTURALLY. By Henry Fulton. 12mo., limp cloth, pp. 108. 1858. 1s. 6d.
- Furnivall.—EDUCATION IN EARLY ENGLAND. Some Notes used as forewords to a Collection of Treatises on "Manners and Meals in Olden Times," for the Early English Text Society. By Frederick J. Furnivall, M.A. 8vo., sewed, pp. 4 and lxxiv. 1867. 1s.
- Furnivall.—A CONCISE MIDDLE-ENGLISH DICTIONARY FOR THE PERIOD, 1250—1526, THE BEGINNING OF EARLY ENGLISH TO THE DATE OF THE FIRST ENGLISH NEW TESTAMENT. Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. 8vo.
- Galitzin.—EMANCIPATION-FANTASIA. Dedicated to the Russian people. By Prince George Galitzin. Partition to Orchestra and Piano Duet. Fol. pp. 38, sewed. 1861. 5s.
- Galitzin.—THE HERZEN VALSE, for two performers on the piano-forte. Composed by Prince George Galitzin. Folio, pp. 20, sewed. 5s.
- Gavazzi.—LECTURE. By Signor Gavazzi, on "Garibaldi," delivered at the Liverpool Institute, October 3rd, 1864. 12mo., sewed, pp. 20. 1864. 2d.
- Geiger.—JUDAISM AND ITS HISTORY. By Dr. Abraham Geiger, Rabbi of the Israelitish Congregation at Frankfort. Translated by M. Mayer. Vol. I. Closing with the Destruction of the Second Temple. To which is added an Appendix. "Strauss and Rénan." 8vo., half-bound, pp. x. and 344. 1866. 10s. 6d.
- Geological Magazine (The); OR MONTHLY JOURNAL OF GEOLOGY, with which is incorporated "The Geologist." Edited by Henry Woodward, F.G.S., F.Z.S., Honorary Member of the Geological Societies of Glasgow and Norwich; Corresponding Member of the Natural History Society of Montreal. Assisted by Professor John Morris, F.G.S., etc., etc., and Robert Etheridge, F.R.S.E., F.G.S. Volume III. 8vo. pp. 592, cloth. January to December, 1866. 20s. Volume IV. 8vo. pp. iv. and 584, cloth. January to December, 1867. 20s. Continued monthly.
- Germany and Italy.—ANSWER TO MAZZINI'S "ITALY AND GERMANY." By Robertus, De Berg, and L. Bucher. 8vo., pp. 20, sewed. 1861. 1s.
- Gervinus.—THE MISSION OF THE GERMAN CATHOLICS. By G. G. Gervinus, Professor of History in the University of Heidelberg. Translated from the German. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. iv. and 66. 1846. 1s.

- Gesenius.—**HEBREW GRAMMAR.** Translated from the 17th edition by Dr. T. J. Conant, including the corrections and additions of Dr. E. Rödiger, with Grammatical Exercises and Chrestomathy, by the Translator. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 297. Exercises, pp. 20. Chrestomathy, pp. 64. 1864. 10s. 6d.
- Gesenius.—**HEBREW AND ENGLISH LEXICON OF THE OLD TESTAMENT,** including the Biblical Chaldee. Translated by Edward Robinson, with corrections and additions by the Author. 14th Edition. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. ix. and 1160. 1855. 25s.
- Gessner.—**LE DROIT DES NEUTRES SUR MER.** Par L. Gessner. 8vo. Paper covers, pp. 437. 1865. 7s.
- Ghose.—**THE OPEN COMPETITION FOR THE CIVIL SERVICE OF INDIA.** By Manomohan Ghose, of the Calcutta University and Lincoln's Inn. 8vo., sewed, pp. 68. 1866. 1s. 6d.
- Giles.—**HEBREW RECORDS.** An Historical Enquiry concerning the Age, Authorship, and Authenticity of the Old Testament. By Rev. Dr. Giles, late Fellow of Corpus Christi College, Oxford. Second Edition. 8vo. pp. 356, cloth. 1853. 10s. 6d.
- Gillespie.—**A TREATISE ON LAND-SURVEYING;** comprising the Theory developed from Five Elementary Principles; and the Practice with the Chain alone, the Compass, the Transit, the Theodolite, the Plain Table, etc. Illustrated by 400 Engravings and a Magnetic Chart. By W. M. GILLESPIE, LL.D., C.E. 8vo., cloth, pp. 424 and 84. 8th Edition. 1867. 16s.
- Gillespie.—**A MANUAL OF THE PRINCIPLES AND PRACTICE OF ROAD MAKING;** comprising the Location, Construction, and Improvement of Roads (common, Macadam, paved, planked, etc.) and Railroads. By W. M. Gillespie, LL.D., C.E. Ninth Edition, with Additions. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. 372. 1867. 9s.
- Gillmore.—**ENGINEER AND ARTILLERY OPERATIONS** against the Defences of Charleston Harbour in 1863, comprising the Descent upon Morris Island, the Demolition of Fort Sumter, the Reduction of Forts Wagner and Gregg, with Observations on Heavy Ordnance, Fortifications, etc. By G. A. Gillmore. Illustrated by 76 Plates and Engraved Views. 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 354. 1865. 45s.
- Glennie.—**KING ARTHUR;** or, the Drama of the Revolution. By John S. Stuart Glennie, M.A., F.S.A., F.R.A.S., etc. Volume I., Prologue and Overture. 12mo. cloth, pp. vi. and 279. 1867. 1s. 6d.
- Gliddon.—**ANCIENT EGYPT.** Her monuments, hieroglyphics, history, and archæology, and other subjects connected with hieroglyphical literature. By George R. Gliddon, late United States Consul at Cairo. Fifteenth edition. Revised and corrected, with an Appendix. 4to, pp. 68, sewed. 2s. 6d.
- God's COMMANDMENTS, according to Moses, according to Christ, and according to our present knowledge. A Sketch suggestive of a New Westminster Confession of Faith. For the Laity of the 19th Century. Addressed to all who deem it their highest duty, as well as right, to think for themselves. 8vo., sewed, pp. 24. 1867. 6d.

Goethe.—FEMALE CHARACTERS OF GOETHE. From the original Drawings of Williard Kaulbach. With explanatory text, by George Henry Lewes. Folio, 21 full page steel engravings. Cloth, gilt. 1868. £7 7s.

Goethe's CORRESPONDENCE WITH A CHILD. 8vo., pp. viii. and 498. 1860. 7s. 6d.

Golden, A. B. C.—Designed by Gustav König Engraved by Julius Thater. Oblong, cloth. 5s.

Goldstücker.—A COMPENDIOUS SANSKRIT-ENGLISH DICTIONARY, for the Use of those who intend to read the Easier Works of Classical Sanskrit Literature. By Theodore Goldstücker. Small 4to., pp. 900, cloth. [In preparation.

Goldstücker.—A COMPENDIOUS GRAMMAR OF THE SANSKRIT LANGUAGE FOR BEGINNERS. By Theodore Goldstücker. 8vo. [In preparation.

Goldstücker.—A DICTIONARY, SANSKRIT AND ENGLISH, extended and improved from the second edition of the Dictionary of Professor H. H. Wilson, with his sanction and concurrence; together with a Supplement, Grammatical Appendices, and an Index, serving as a Sanskrit-English Vocabulary. By Theodore Goldstücker. Parts I. to VI. pp. 480. 1854-1864. Each 6s.

Goldstücker.—PANINI: His Place in Sanskrit Literature. An Investigation of some Literary and Chronological Questions which may be settled by a study of his Work. By Theodore Goldstücker. A separate impression of the Preface to the Facsimile of M.S. No. 17 in the Library of Her Majesty's Home Government for India, which contains a portion of the Manava-Kalpa-Sutra, with the Commentary of Kumarila-Swamin. Imperial 8vo., pp. 268, cloth: 1861. 12s.

Goldstücker.—MANAVA-KALPA-SUTRA; being a portion of this ancient work on Vaidik Rites, together with the Commentary of Kumarila-Swamin. A Facsimile of the MS. No. 17 in the Library of Her Majesty's Home Government for India. With a Preface by Theodore Goldstücker. Oblong folio, pp. 268, of letter press, and 121 leaves of facsimiles. Cloth. 1861. £4. 4s.

Goldstücker.—AUCTORES SANSKRITI. Edited for the Sanskrit Text Society, under the supervision of Theodore Goldstücker. Vol. I., containing the Jaiminiya-Nyâya-Mâlâ-Vistara. Parts I. to V. pp. 400, large 4to., sewed. 1865-7. 10s. each.

Golovin.—THE NATIONS OF RUSSIA AND TURKEY, AND THEIR Destiny. By Ivan Golovin, author of "The Caucasus." 2 vols. crown 8vo. pp. xvi. and 172; xvi. and 170. Cloth. 1854. 10s.

Gooroo Simple.—Strange Surprising Adventures of the Venerable G. S. and his Five Disciples, Noodle, Doodle, Wisacre, Zany, and Fozzle; adorned with Fifty Illustrations, drawn on wood, by Alfred Crowquill. A companion Volume to "Münchhausen" and "Owlglass," based upon the famous Tamul tale of the Gooroo Paramartan, and exhibiting, in the form of a skilfully-constructed consecutive narrative, some of the finest specimens of Eastern wit and humour. Elegantly printed on tinted paper, in crown 8vo., richly gilt ornamental cover, gilt edges, pp. 223. 1861. Price 10s. 6d.

Gould.—GOOD ENGLISH, OR POPULAR ERRORS IN LANGUAGE. By Edward S. Gould, author of "Abridgment of Alison's Europe. Crown 8vo cloth, pp. v. and 228. 1867. 6s.

**Grammatography.**—A MANUAL OF REFERENCE to the Alphabets of Ancient and Modern Languages. Based on the German Compilation of F. Ballhorn. In one vol. royal 8vo. cloth. pp. 80. 1861. 7s. 6d.

The "Grammatography" is offered to the public as a compendious introduction to the reading of the most important Ancient and Modern Languages. Simple in its design, it will be consulted with advantage by the Philological Student, the Amateur Linguist, the Bookseller, the Corrector of the Press, and the diligent Composer.

## ALPHABETICAL INDEX.

Afghan (or Pushto).	German.	Nmuidian.
Amharic.	Glagolitic.	Old Slavonic (or Cyrillic).
Anglo-Saxon.	Gothic.	Palmyrenian.
Arabic.	Greek.	Persian.
Arabic Ligatures.	Greek Ligatures.	Persian Cuneiform.
Aramaic.	Greek (Archaic).	Phœnician.
Archaic Characters.	Gujerati (or Guzerattee)	Polish.
Armenian.	Hieratic.	Pushto (or Afghan).
Assyrian Cuneiform.	Hieroglyphics.	Romæic (or Modern Greek).
Beugali.	Hebrew.	Russian.
Bohemian (Czechian).	Hebrew (Archaic).	Sines.
Búrgis.	Hebrew (Rabbinical).	Samaritan.
Burmese.	Hebrew (Judæo-German).	Sanscrit.
Canarese (or Carnátaca).	Hebrew (current hand).	Servian.
Chinese.	Hungarian.	Slavonic (Old).
Coptic.	Illyrian.	Sorbian (or Wendish).
Croat-Glagolitic.	Irish.	Swedish.
Cufic.	Italian (Old).	Syriac.
Cyrillic (or Old Slavonic).	Japanese.	Tamil.
Czechian (or Bohemian).	Javanese.	Telugn.
Danish.	Lettish.	Tibetan.
Demotic.	Mantshu.	Turkish.
Estrangelo.	Median Cuneiform.	Wallachian.
Ethiopic.	Modern Greek (or Romæic).	Wendish (or Sorbian).
Etruscan.	Mongolian.	Zend.
Georgian.		

**Grattan.**—CONSIDERATIONS ON THE HUMAN MIND, its Present State and Future Destination. By Richard Grattan, Esq., M.D., ex M.P. 8vo. cloth, pp. 336. 1861. 8s.

**Grattan.**—THE RIGHT TO THINK. An Address to the Young Men of Great Britain and Ireland. By Richard Grattan, M.D. Crown 8vo. stiff covers, pp. 134. 1865. 2s. 6d.

**Gray.**—MANUAL OF THE BOTANY OF THE NORTHERN UNITED STATES, including Virginia, Kentucky, and all east of the Mississippi; arranged according to the Natural System. Third Revised Edition, with Garden Botany, etc. By Asa Gray. With six plates, illustrating the Genera of Ferns, etc. 8vo. half-bound. pp. xxviii. and 606. 1862. 10s. 6d.

**Gray.**—FIRST LESSONS IN BOTANY AND VEGETABLE PHYSIOLOGY. Illustrated by 360 wood engravings, with copious Dictionary of Botanical Terms. By Dr. Asa Gray. 8vo. half-bound, pp. xii. and 236. 1866. 6s.

**Gray.**—INTRODUCTION TO STRUCTURAL AND SYSTEMATIC BOTANY, AND VEGETABLE PHYSIOLOGY. By Dr. Asa Gray. With 1300 woodcuts. 8vo. cloth, pp. 1866. 10s. 6d.

**Gray.**—NATURAL SELECTION NOT INCONSISTENT WITH NATURAL THEOLOGY. A free examination of Darwin's treatise on the Origin of Species, and of its American reviewers. By Asa Gray, M.D., Fisher Professor of Natural Philosophy in Harvard University. 8vo. pp. 56, sewed. 1861. 1s. 6d.

**Gray.**—HOW PLANTS GROW: A Simple Introduction to Structural Botany. By Asa Gray, M.D. Square 8vo., boards. New edition. pp. 233. 1866. 6s.

**Green.**—SHAKESPEARE AND THE EMBLEM WRITERS OF HIS AGE; with Illustrations from the original Woodcuts and Engravings. By Henry Green, M.A. In one volume, demy 8vo., of about 400 pages, and upwards of 100 Illustrative Woodcuts or Engravings. [In the press.]

**Greg.**—THE CREED OF CHRISTENDOM: its Foundation and Super-structure. By William Rathbone Greg. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. pp. xx. and 280. 1863. 6s.

**Greg.**—LITERARY AND SOCIAL JUDGMENTS. By William Rathbone Greg. In One Volume, cr. 8vo.

**Grey.**—HANDBOOK OF AFRICAN, AUSTRALIAN, AND POLYNESIAN PHILOLOGY, etc., as represented in the Library of His Excellency Sir George Grey, K.C.B., Her Majesty's High Commissioner of the Cape Colony. Classified, Annotated, and Edited by Sir George Grey and Dr. H. I. Bleek.

Vol. I. Part 1.—South Africa. 8vo. pp. 186, sewed. 1858. 7s. 6d.

Vol. I. Part 2.—Africa (North of the Tropic of Capricorn). 8vo. pp. 70, sewed. 1858. 2s.

Vol. I. Part 3.—Madagascar. 8vo. pp. 24, sewed. 1859. 1s.

Vol. II. Part 1.—Australia. 8vo. pp. iv. and 44, sewed. 1859. 1s. 6d.

Vol. II. Part 2.—Papuan Languages, of the Loyalty Islands and New Hebrides, comprising those of the Islands of Nengone, Lifu, Aneitum, Tana, and others. 8vo. pp. 12, sewed, 1858. 6d.

Vol. II. Part 3.—Fiji Islands and Rotuma (with Supplement to Part II., Papuan Languages, and Part I., Australa). 8vo. pp. 34, sewed. 1859. 1s.

Vol. II. Part 4.—New Zealand, the Chatham Islands, and Auckland Islands. 8vo. pp. 76 sewed. 1858. 3s. 6d.

Vol. II. Part 4.—(Continuation).—Polynesia and Borneo, 8vo. pp. 77—154, sewed. 1859 3s. 6d.

Vol. III. Part 1.—Manuscripts and Incunables. 8vo. pp. viii. and 24. 1862. 2s.

Vol. IV. Part 1.—England. Early Printed Books. 8vo. pp. 264, sewed. 1867. 12s.

**Grey.**—MAORI MEMENTOS: being a Series of Addresses, presented by the Native People to His Excellency Sir George Grey, K.C.B., F.R.S. With Introduction, Remarks, and Explanatory Notes. To which is added a small Collection of Laments, etc. By Charles Oliver B. Davis. 8vo. Pp. 227. Auckland, 1855. 12s.

**Gross.**—A SYSTEM OF SURGERY, PATHOLOGICAL, DIAGNOSTIC, THERAPEUTIC, AND OPERATIVE. By Samuel D. Gross, M.D. Illustrated by more than 1,300 engravings. Fourth Edition, much enlarged, and carefully revised. 2 vols. 8vo. sheep, pp. xxxi. 1049, and xxviii. 1087. 1866. £3 3s.

**Grote.**—REVIEW of the Work of Mr. John Stuart Mill, entitled "Examination of Sir William Hamilton's Philosophy." By George Grote, author of "The History of Ancient Greece," "Plato, and the other Companions of Socrates," etc. 12mo. pp. 112, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

**Grout.**—THE ISIZULU. A Grammar of the Zulu Language; accompanied with a Historical Introduction, also with an Appendix. By Rev. Lewis Grout. 8vo. cloth, pp. liii. and 432. 1859. 21s.

**Grout.**—ZULU-LAND; or, Life among the Zulu-Kafirs of Natal and Zulu-Land, South Africa. With Map and Illustrations, largely from Original Photographs. By the Rev. Lewis Grout. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 352. 7s. 6d.

**Groves.**—JOHN GROVES. A Tale of the War. By S. E. De M—. 12mo. Pp. 16, sewed. London, 1846. 2d.

**Guizot.**—MÉDITATIONS SUR L'ESSENCE DE LA RELIGION CHRÉTIENNE. Par M. Guizot. 12mo. paper. Pp. 384. 1864. 4s. 6d.

**Gunderode.**—CORRESPONDENCE OF FRÄULEIN GUNDERODE and BETTINA VON ARNIM. Cr. 8vo. cloth, pp. 356. 1861. 6s.

**Gutenberg, John, FIRST MASTER PRINTER,** his Acts, and most remarkable Discourses, and his Death. From the Germán. By C. W. 8vo. cloth, pp. 141. 1860. 10s. 6d.

**Hagen.**—**NORICA**; or, Tales from the Olden Time. Translated from the German of August Hagen. Fcap. 8vo., ornamental binding, suitable for presentation. Pp. xiv. and 374. 1850. 5s.

"This pleasant volume is got up in that style of imitation of the books a century ago, which has of late become so much the vogue. The typographical and mechanical departments of the volume speak loudly for the taste and enterprise bestowed upon it. Simple in its style, pithy, reasonably pungent—the book smacks strongly of the picturesque old days of which it treats. A long study of the art-antiquities of Nürnberg and a profound acquaintance with the records, letters, and memoirs, still preserved, of the times of Albert Durer and his great brother artists, have enabled the author to lay before us a forcibly-drawn and highly-finished picture of art and household life in that wonderfully art-practising and art-reverencing old city of Germany."—*Atlas*.

"A delicious little book. It is full of a quaint garrulity, and characterised by an earnest simplicity of thought and diction, which admirably conveys to the reader the household and artistic German life of the times of Maximilian, Albert Durer, and Hans Sachs, the celebrated cobbler and 'master singer,' as well as most of the artist celebrities of Nürnberg in the 16th century. Art is the chief end and aim of this little history. It is lauded and praised with a sort of rnostentatious devotion, which explains the religious passion of the early moulders of the ideal and the beautiful; and, perhaps, through a consequent deeper concentration of thought, the secret of their success."—*Weekly Dispatch*.

"A volume full of interest for the lover of old times; while the form in which it is presented to us may incite many to think of art and look into its many wondrous influences with a curious earnestness unknown to them before. It points a moral also, in the knowledge that a people may be brought to take interest in what is chaste and beautiful as in what is coarse and degrading."—*Manchester Examiner*.

**Hall.**—**THE LAW OF IMPERSONATION AS APPLIED TO ABSTRACT IDEAS AND RELIGIOUS DOGMAS.** By S. W. Hall. Third edition, with an Appendix on the Dual Constitution of First Causation. 12mo. cloth, pp. xxiv. and 135. 1863. 4s. 6d.

**Hall.**—**A CONTRIBUTION TOWARDS AN INDEX TO THE BIBLIOGRAPHY OF THE INDIAN PHILOSOPHICAL SYSTEMS.** By Fitzedward Hall, M.A., Inspector of Public Instruction, Saugor and Nerbudda Territories, Published by order of the Government of the North Western Provinces. 8vo. sewed, pp. iv. and 236. 1859. 7s. 6d.

**Hambleton.**—**THE SONG OF SONGS; the Voice of the Bridegroom and the Voice of the Bride; divided into Acts and Scenes, with the Dialogues apportioned to the different Interlocutors, chiefly as directed by M. the Professor Ernest Renan, Membre de l'Institut.** Rendered into Verse, from the received English Translation and other Versions. By Joseph Hambleton. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 70. 1864. 2s. 6d.

**Hamilton.**—**A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON FRACTURES AND DISLOCATIONS.** By Frank H. Hamilton, M.D. 3rd edition, revised, 8vo. cloth, pp. 777. 1866. 25s.

**Hammond.**—**MILITARY MEDICAL AND SURGICAL ESSAYS.** Prepared for the United States Sanitary Commission. Edited by W. A. Hammond, M.D., Surgeon-General. 8vo. cloth, pp. 552. 1864. 15s.

**Harkness.**—**LATIN OLLENDORFF.** Being a Progressive Exhibition of the Principles of the Latin Grammar. By Albert Harkness, Ph. D. 12mo. cloth, pp. xii. and 355. 1858. 6s.

**Harris.**—**A DICTIONARY OF MEDICAL TERMINOLOGY, DENTAL SURGERY, AND THE COLLATERAL SCIENCES.** By Chapin A. Harris, M.D., D.D.S., Professor of the Principles of Dental Surgery in the Baltimore College. Third edition, carefully revised and enlarged, by Ferdinand J. S. Gorgas, M.D., D.D.S., Professor of Dental Surgery in the Baltimore College. 8vo. cloth, pp. 744, 1867. 30s.



HARRISON.—THE MEANING OF HISTORY; Two Lectures delivered by Frederic Harrison, M.A. 8vo., pp. 80, sewed. 1862. 1s.

HARRISON.—SUNDAYS and FESTIVALS. A Lecture delivered by Frederic Harrison, Esq., M.A., at St Martin's Hall, on Sunday evening, March 10th, 1867. 8vo. sewed, pp. 15. 1867. 2d.

HARTZENBUSCH, J. E., and H. LEMMING.—ECO DE MADRID: A Practical Guide to Spanish Conversation, Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 240. 1860. 5s.

HASLETT.—THE MECHANICS, MACHINISTS', AND ENGINEERS' PRACTICAL BOOK OF REFERENCE, containing Tables and Formulæ for use in superficial and solid Mensuration; Strength and Weight of Materials; Mechanics, Machinery, Hydraulics, Hydrodynamics, Marine Engines, Chemistry, and miscellaneous Recipes. Adapted to and for the use of all Practical Mechanics. Together with the Engineer's Field Book, containing Formulæ for the various Methods of running and changing Lines, locating Side-tracks and Switches, etc., etc.; Tables of Radii and their Logarithms, natural and logarithmic versed Sines and external Secants, natural Sines and Tangents to every Degree and Minute of the Quadrant, and Logarithms of natural Numbers from 1 to 10,000. By Charles Haslett, Civil Engineer. Edited by Charles W. Hackley, Professor of Mathematics. Fcap. 8vo. tuck, pp. 533. 1866. 12s.

HASTY CONCLUSIONS; OR, THE SAYINGS THAT WENT ABROAD. 16mo. sewed, pp. 20. 1866. 1s.

HAUG.—ESSAYS ON THE SACRED LANGUAGE, WRITINGS, AND RELIGION OF THE PARSEES. By Martin Haug, Dr. Phil. Superintendent of Sanskrit Studies in the Poona College. 8vo. cloth, pp. 278. 1862. 31s. 6d.

HAUG.—OUTLINE OF A GRAMMAR OF THE ZEND LANGUAGE. By Martin Haug, Ph. D. 8vo., sewed, pp. 82. 1862. 18s.

HAUG.—THE AITAREYA BRAHMANAM OF THE RIG VEDA: containing the Earliest Speculations of the Brahmans on the meaning of the Sacrificial Prayers, and on the Origin, Performance, and Sense of the Rites of the Vedic Religion. Edited, Translated, and Explained by Martin Haug, Ph. D., Superintendent of Sanskrit Studies in the Poona College, etc., etc. In 2 Vols. Crown 8vo. Vol. I. Contents, Sanskrit Text, with Preface, Introductory Essay, and a Map of the Sacrificial Compound at the Soma Sacrifice, pp. 312. Vol. II. Translation with Notes, pp. 544. 1863. £2 2s.

HAUG.—A LECTURE ON AN ORIGINAL SPEECH OF ZOROASTER (Yasna 45), with remarks on his age. By Martin Haug, Ph. D. 8vo. pp. 28, sewed. 1865. 2s.

HAUG.—AN OLD ZAND-PAHLAVI GLOSSARY. Edited in the Original Characters, with a Transliteration in Roman Letters, an English Translation, and an Alphabetical Index. By Destur Hoshengji Jamaspji, High-priest of the Parsis in Malwa, India. Revised with Notes and Introduction by Martin Haug, Ph. D., late Superintendent of Sanskrit Studies in the Poona College, Foreign Member of the Royal Bavarian Academy. Published by order of the Government of Bombay. 8vo. sewed, pp. lvi. and 132. 1867. 15s.

HAUG.—THE RELIGION OF THE ZOROASTRIANS, as contained in their Sacred Writings. With a History of the Zend and Pehlevi Literature, and a Grammar of the Zend and Pehlevi Languages. By Martin Haug, Ph. D., late Superintendent of Sanskrit Studies in the Poona College. 2 vols. 8vo. [In preparation.]

**Haupt.**—**MILITARY BRIDGES**: with Suggestions of New Expedients and Constructions for Crossing Streams and Chasms. Including also Designs for Trestle and Truss Bridges for Military Railroads. Adapted especially to the wants of the Service in the United States. By Hermann Haupt, A.M., Civil Engineer. Illustrated by 69 Lithographic engravings. 8vo. cloth, pp. xix. and 310. 1864. 25s.

**Haupt.**—**GENERAL THEORY OF BRIDGE CONSTRUCTION**: containing Demonstrations of the Principles of the Art and their Application to Practice; furnishing the means of calculating the Strains upon the Chords, Ties, Braces, Counter-braces, and other parts of a Bridge or Frame of any Description. With practical Illustrations. By Hermann Haupt, A.M., Civil Engineer. New Edition. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. 268. Plates. 1867. 46s.

**Hazard.**—**ESSAY ON LANGUAGE AND OTHER PAPERS**. By Rowland G. Hazard. Edited by E. P. Peabody. 8vo. cloth, pp. 348. 1857. 7s. 6d.

**Hazard.**—**FREEDOM OF MIND IN WILLING; OR, EVERY BEING THAT WILLS A CREATIVE FIRST CAUSE**. By Rowland G. Hazard. 8vo. cloth, pp. xviii. and 456. 1865. 7s. 6d.

**Hazard.**—**OUR RESOURCES**. A Series of Articles on the Financial and Political Condition of the United States. By Rowland G. Hazard. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1864. 1s.

**Hearts in Mortmain, and Cornelia**. Two Novels. Post 8vo. Fancy boards. Pp. 206 and 252. 1863. Each 1s. 6d.

**Heatherington.**—**A PRACTICAL GUIDE FOR TOURISTS, MINERS, AND INVESTORS**, and all Persons interested in the Development of the Gold Fields of Nova Scotia. By A. Heatherington, Author of Cosmopolite's Statistical Chart and Petraglot Reviews, adopted by the Department of Mines, and the Paris Exhibition Committee, etc., etc. 12mo. cloth, pp. 180. 1868. 2s.

**Heaviside.**—**AMERICAN ANTIQUITIES; OR, THE NEW WORLD THE OLD, AND THE OLD WORLD THE NEW**. By John T. C. Heaviside. 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1s. 6d.

**Hecker.**—**THE EPIDEMICS OF THE MIDDLE AGES**. Translated by G. B. Babington, M.D., F.R.S. Third Edition, completed by the Author's Treatise on Child-Pilgrimages. By J. F. C. Hecker. 8vo. cloth, pp. 384. 1859. 9s. 6d.

Contents:—The Black Death—The Dancing Mania—The Sweating Sickness—Child Pilgrimages.

**Heine.**—**SELECTIONS FROM THE POETRY OF HENRICH HEINE**. Translated by John Ackerlos. 12mo. pp. viii. and 66, stiff cover. 1854. 1s.

**Heine.**—**PICTURES OF TRAVEL**. Translated from the German of Henry Heine. By Charles G. Leland. Fifth revised edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 472. 1866. 10s. 6d.

**Heine.**—**HEINE'S BOOK OF SONGS**. By Heinrich Heine. Translated by Charles G. Leland, author of "Meister Karl's Sketch-book, and Sunshine in Thought." Cloth, fcap. 8vo. pp. xiv. and 240. 1868. 7s.

**Hennell.**—**AN ESSAY ON THE SCEPTICAL TENDENCY OF BUTLER'S "ANALOGY"**. By Sara S. Hennell. 12mo. sewed, pp. 66. 1859. 1s.

**Hennell.**—**THOUGHTS IN AID OF FAITH**. Gathered chiefly from recent works in Theology and Philosophy. By Sara S. Hennell. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 428. 1866. 10s. 6d.

**Hennell.**—PRIZE ESSAY. Christianity and Infidelity, an Exposition of Arguments on both sides. By Sara S. Hennell. 8vo. cloth, pp. 173. 1857. 3s. 6d.

**Hennell.**—THE EARLY CHRISTIAN ANTICIPATION OF AN APPROACHING END OF THE WORLD, and its bearing upon the Character of Christianity as a Divine Revelation. Including an investigation into the primitive meaning of the Antichrist and Man of Sin; and an examination of the argument of the Fifteenth Chapter of Gibbon. By Sara S. Hennell. 12mo. cloth, pp. 136. 1860. 2s. 6d.

**Hennell.**—PRESENT RELIGION, as a Faith owning Fellowship with Thought. Part I. By Sara S. Hennell, Author of "Thoughts in Aid of Faith." Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 570. 1865. 7s. 6d.

**Hepburn.**—A JAPANESE, AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY. With an English and Japanese Index. By J. C. Hepburn, A.M., M.D. Imperial 8vo. cloth, pp. xii., 560 and 132. 1867. £5 5s.

**Herbert.**—THE SANITARY CONDITION OF THE ARMY. By the Right Honourable Sidney Herbert, M.P. 8vo. sewed, pp. 48. 1859. 1s. 6d.

**Hernisz.**—A GUIDE TO CONVERSATION in the English and Chinese Languages, for the Use of Americans and Chinese, in California and elsewhere. By Stanislas Hernisz. Square 8vo. sewed, pp. 274. 1855. 10s. 6d.

The Chinese characters contained in this work are from the collections of Chinese groups, engraved on steel, and cast into moveable types, by Mr. Marcellin Legrand, Engraver of the Imperial Printing Office at Paris; they are used by most of the Missions to China.

**Hervey.**—THE POEMS OF THOMAS KIBBLE HERVEY. Edited by Mrs. Hervey. With a Memoir. 16mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 437. 1866. 6s.

**Herzen.**—DU DEVELOPPEMENT DES IDÉES REVOLUTIONNAIRES EN RUSSIE. Par Alexander Herzen. 12mo. sewed, pp. xxiii. and 144. 1853. 2s. 6d.

**Herzen.**—LA FRANCE OU L'ANGLETERRE? Variations Russes sur le thème de l'attentat du 14 Janvier 1858. Par Isaac Herzner. 1858. 1s.

**Herzen.**—FRANCE OR ENGLAND? 8vo. 1858. 6d.

**Herzen.**—NOUVELLE PHASE DE LA LITTÉRATURE RUSSE. Par A. Herzen. 8vo. sewed, pp. 81. 1864. 2s. 6d.

**Hester and Elinor; OR, THE DISCIPLINE OF SUFFERING.**—A Tale. Crown 8vo., fancy boards, pp. 473. 1863. 2s.

**Hickok.**—A SYSTEM OF MORAL SCIENCE. By Lawrens P. Hickok, D.D., Author of "Rational Psychology." Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 432. 1853. 12s.

**Higginson.**—WOMAN AND HER WISHES. An Essay. By Thomas Wentworth Higginson. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 23. 1854. 1s.

**Hincks.**—SPECIMEN CHAPTERS, OF AN ASSYRIAN GRAMMAR. By the Rev. E. Hincks, D.D., Honorary Member Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland. 8vo. sewed, pp. 40. 1866. 1s.

**Histoire DU GRAND ORIENT DE FRANCE.** 8vo sewed, pp. 528. 1865. 6s.

- Historical SKETCHES OF THE OLD PAINTERS.** By the Author of "Three Experiments of Living," etc. Crown 8vo. sewed, pp. 181. 1858. 2s.
- Hitchcock.**—**RELIGIOUS LECTURES ON PECULIAR PHENOMENA OF THE FOUR SEASONS.** Delivered to the Students in Amhurst College, in 1845-47-48-49. By Edward Hitchcock. 12mo. sewed, pp. 72. 1852. 1s.
- Hittell.**—**THE RESOURCES OF CALIFORNIA.** Third edition, by John S. Hittell. Cloth, pp. xvi. and 461. 10s.
- Hoffmann.**—**SHOPPING DIALOGUES in Japanese, Dutch, and English.** By J. Hoffmann. Oblong 8vo., sewed, pp. xiii. and 44. 1861. 3s.
- Hole.**—**LECTURES ON SOCIAL SCIENCE AND THE ORGANIZATION OF LABOUR.** By James Hole. 8vo. sewed, pp. xi. and 182. 1851. 2s. 6d.
- Holley.**—**ORDNANCE AND ARMOUR: embracing a Description of Standard European and American Ordnance, Rifling, and Projectiles; and their Materials, Fabrications, and Test, and the Results of Practice; also a Detailed Account of Experiments against Armour.** By Alex. L. Holley, B.P. With 480 Engravings and 150 Tables of Results. One vol. 8vo., pp. 950. Half morocco. 1865. £2 5s.
- Hollister.**—**THE MINES OF THE COLORADO.** By Ovando J. Hollister. With map, pp. vii. and 450. 1867. 10s.
- Holly.**—**THE CARPENTER'S AND JOINER'S HAND-BOOK, containing a Complete Treatise on Framing Hip and Valley Roofs. Together with much valuable instruction for all Mechanics and Amateurs, useful rules, tables, etc., never before published.** By H. W. Holly, Practical Architect and Builder. Illustrated by 37 Engravings. 12mo. cloth, pp. 50. 1868. 2s. 6d.
- Holly.**—**THE ART OF SAW-FILING, SCIENTIFICALLY TREATED AND EXPLAINED ON PHILOSOPHICAL PRINCIPLES.** With full and explicit Directions for putting in Order all kinds of Saws, from a Jeweller's Saw to a Steam Saw-mill. Illustrated by forty-four engravings. By H. W. Holly, Author of "The Carpenter's and Joiner's Hand-book." 12mo. cloth, pp. 56. 1864. 2s. 6d.
- Holmes.**—**THE POEMS OF OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES.** Blue and Gold Series. 12mo. cloth, pp. xi. and 410. 1866. 6s.
- Home.**—**PLAIN THOUGHTS, by a Plain Man, on the State of the Church of England.** By Jeremiah Home, Esq. 8vo. sewed, pp. 8. 1868. 2d.
- Horrocks.**—**ZENO. A Tale of the Italian War, and other Poems.** To which are added Translations from Modern German Poetry. By James D. Horrocks. 12mo., pp. vii. and 286, cloth. 1854. 5s.
- Houghton.**—**AN ESSAY ON THE CANTICLES, OR THE SONG OF SONGS.** With a Translation of the Poem and short Explanatory Notes. By the Rev. W. Houghton, M.A., F.L.S., Rector of Preston on the Wild Moors, Shropshire. 8vo. cloth, pp. 67. 1865. 2s. 6d.
- Howells.**—**VENETIAN LIFE.** By William D. Howells, formerly United States Consul at Venice. Crown 8vo. cloth. Second Edition. Pp. 401. 1867. 7s. 6d.
- Howitt.**—**THE DÜSSELDORF ARTISTS' ALBUM.** Twenty-seven superb Litho-tint Illustrations, from Drawings by Achenbach, Hubner, Jordan, Lessing, Leutze, Schadow, Tidemand, etc. With Contributions, original and translated, by Mary Howitt, Anne Mary Howitt, Francis Bennoch, etc. Edited by Mary Howitt. 4to, elegantly bound in cloth, 18s.; or, in fancy leather binding, £1 1s 1862.

Howse.—A GRAMMAR OF THE CREE LANGUAGE. With which is combined an analysis of the Chippeway Dialect. By Joseph Howse, Esq., F.R.G.S. 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 324. 1865. 7s. 6d.

Hugh Bryan: THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF AN IRISH REBEL. 8vo. cloth, pp. 478. 1866. 10s. 6d.

Humboldt.—LETTERS OF WILLIAM VON HUMBOLDT TO A FEMALE FRIEND. A complete Edition. Translated from the Second German Edition by Catherine M. A. Couper, with a Biographical Notice of the Writer. Two vols. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xxviii. and 592. 1867. 10s.

Humboldt.—THE SPHERE AND DUTIES OF GOVERNMENT. Translated from the German of Baron Wilhelm Von Humboldt, by Joseph Coulthard, Jun. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 203. 1854. 5s.

Humboldt (ALEX. VON).—LETTERS TO VARNHAGEN VON ENSE. Authorised English Translation, with Explanatory Notes, and a full Index of Names. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxvi. and 334. 1860. 12s.

Hunt.—ON THE CHEMISTRY OF THE GLOBE. A Manual of Chemical Geology. By Dr. T. Sterry Hunt, F.R.S. 2 vols. 8vo. [In preparation.]

Hunt.—POPULAR LECTURES ON CHEMICAL AND PHYSICAL GEOLOGY. Delivered before the Lowell Institute, by Dr. T. Sterry Hunt, F.R.S. 1 vol. 8vo. [In preparation.]

Hunt.—THE RELIGION OF THE HEART. A Manual of Faith and Duty. By Leigh Hunt. Fcap. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxiv. and 259. 1853. 6s.

Hunt.—INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS ON THE STUDY OF ANTHROPOLOGY, delivered before the Anthropological Society of London, February 24th, 1863. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., President. 8vo. sewed, pp. 20. 1863. 6d.

Hunt.—ANNIVERSARY ADDRESS delivered before the Anthropological Society of London, January 5th, 1864. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., F.A.S.L., etc., etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1864. 6d.

Hunt.—ANNIVERSARY ADDRESS delivered before the Anthropological Society of London, January 3rd, 1865. Dedicated to the British Association for the Advancement of Science. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., F.A.S.L., etc., etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. viii. and 32. 1865. 6d.

Hunt.—A LETTER addressed to the Members of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, on the desirability of appointing a Special Section for Anthropology. By James Hunt, Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., F.A.S.L. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 8. Printed for Private Circulation. 6d.

Hunt.—ON THE NEGRO'S PLACE IN NATURE. By James Hunt, Esq., Ph. D., F.S.A., F.R.S.L., President of the Anthropological Society of London. 8vo., sewed, pp. 60. 1853. 1s.

Hurst.—HISTORY OF RATIONALISM: embracing a Survey of the Present State of Protestant Theology. By the Rev. John F. Hurst, A.M. With Appendix of Literature. Revised and enlarged from the Third American Edition. Small 8vo., cloth, pp. xvii. and 525. 1867. 10s. 6d.

**Hutton.**—MODERN WARFARE; its Positive Theory and True Policy.

With an application to the Russian War, and an Answer to the Question "What shall we do?" By Henry Dix Hutton, Barrister. 8vo. sewed, pp. 70. 1855. 1s.

**Ibis (THE).**—A MAGAZINE OF GENERAL ORNITHOLOGY. Edited by Philip Lutley Selater, M.A. Vol. i. 1859. 8vo. cloth. Coloured Plates.

Vol. ii., 1860.

Vol. iii., 1861. £1 6s.

Vol. iv., 1862. £1 6s.

Vol. v., 1863. £1 6s.

Vol. vi., 1864. £1 6s.

**Ihne.**—A LATIN GRAMMAR FOR BEGINNERS. By W. H. Ihne, late Principal of Carlton Terrace School, Liverpool. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 184. 1864. 3s.

**India.**—BREACH OF FAITH IN; or, Sir John Lawrence's Policy in Oudh. 8vo. sewed, pp. 40. 1s. 6d.

**Indian Annexations.**—BRITISH TREATMENT OF NATIVE PRINCES. Reprinted from the *Westminster Review*. New Series, No. xlv. January, 1863. Revised and corrected. 8vo. sewed, pp. 48. 1863. 1s.

**Indian INVESTMENTS, A GUIDE TO,** interesting to Shareholders or or intending Shareholders in the following Joint Stock Companies;—East Indian Railway, Great Indian Peninsular Railway, Madras Railway, Scinde Railway, Indus Flotilla, Punjab Railway, Bombay and Baroda Railway, Eastern of Bengal Railway, Calcutta and South Eastern Railway, Madras Irrigation Company, Oriental Inland Steam Company, Peninsular and Oriental Steam Company. By a Manchester Man. Second edition. With an introduction exposing the hollowness of Indian guarantees. 8vo. sewed, pp. viii. and 40. 1861. 1s.

**Inman.**—ANCIENT FAITHS EMBODIED IN ANCIENT NAMES. By Thomas Inman, M.D. Vol. 1, 8vo., containing pp. viii. and 790, and illustrated with 5 Plates and numerous Woodcuts. 30s.

**Inspiration.**—By J. B. 24mo. sewed, pp. 51. 1865. 1s.

**Inspiration; How is it RELATED TO REVELATION AND THE REASON?**

With a few remarks suggested by recent criticisms on Mansel's Bampton Lectures. 8vo. limp cloth, pp. 64. 1859. 2s.

**International Exhibition of 1862.**—OFFICIAL CATALOGUE OF THE MINING AND METALLURGICAL PRODUCTS; Class 1, in the Zollverein Department of the International Exhibition, 1862. Compiled under the immediate direction of Mr. Von Dechen. By Dr. Hermann Wedding. Royal 8vo. sewed, pp. 106. 1862. 1s.

**International Exhibition of 1862.**—AUSTRIA AT THE INTERNATIONAL EXHIBITION OF 1862. Upon Orders from the J. R. Ministry for Commerce and National Economy. By Professor Dr. Jos. Arenstein, Vienna, 1862. Royal 8vo., paper covers, pp. 125. 1862. 1s.

**International Exhibition of 1862.**—SPECIAL CATALOGUE OF THE ZOLLVEREIN DEPARTMENT. Edited by authority of the Commissioners of the Zollverein-Governments, together with Advertisements, Recommendations, and Illustrations. Royal 8vo., sewed, pp. 180 and lxxix. 1862. 1s.

Ditto ditto, in German, pp. 196 and cxv. 1s.

**Jackson's GYMNASTIC EXERCISES FOR THE FINGERS AND WRIST.** With numerous Illustrations. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. x. and 90. 1865. 3s. 6d.

Jackson.—ECHOES FROM MY YOUTH, AND OTHER POEMS. By J. W. Jackson. 12mo., cloth, pp. 126. 1864. 2s. 6d.

Jackson. — ETHNOLOGY AND PHRENOLOGY AS AN AID TO THE HISTORIAN. By J. W. Jackson. Crown 8vo., cloth, pp. 224. 1863. 4s.

Jacobus.—REFLECTIONS ON THE PSALMS OF DAVID AS INSPIRED COMPOSITIONS; and as indicating "the Philosophy of Jewish Faith." By Jacobus. 8vo. sewed, pp. iv. and 32. 1863. 1s.

Jaeschke.—A SHORT PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF THE TIBETAN LANGUAGE, with Special Reference to the Spoken Dialects. By H. A. Jaeschke, Moravian Missionary. 8vo., pp. 60. 1865. 2s. 6d.

Jamison.—THE LIFE AND TIMES OF BERTRAND DU GUESCLIN. A History of the Fourteenth Century. By D. F. Jamison, of South Carolina. Portrait. Two vols. 8vo., elegantly printed, extra cloth, pp. xvi. 287, and viii. 314. 1864. £1 1s.

Jay.—THE AMERICAN REBELLION; its History, its Aims, and the Reasons why it must be Suppressed. An Address. By John Jay. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 50. 1861. 1s.

Jay.—THE GREAT CONSPIRACY. An Address. By John Jay. 8vo. sewed, pp. 50. 1861. 1s.

Jenkins's VEST-POCKET LEXICON. A Dictionary of all except the common Words which everybody knows. By omitting these it contains the less familiar Words, and the principal Scientific and Technical Terms, Foreign Moneys, Weights and Measures; also the common Latin and French Phrases of two and three Words, Law Terms, etc.

"A little book, entitled, 'Jenkins's Vest-pocket Lexicon,' has just been published by Messrs. Triibner and Co., of Paternoster-row, which has a somewhat novel but very useful design. The object of the work is to compress within the smallest practicable compass a full lexicon of all the words used in writing or speaking English, except—and in the exception lies the essence of the undertaking—those which may fairly be considered familiar to every one. Thus every word which any reader but the most ignorant, and any reader but the most amazingly learned, could need to look for in a dictionary, is to be found in the columns of this little book. We have put it to several tests, by looking out for peculiar scientific words, terms used in art, legal phrases, names of foreign coins, titles of foreign officials, etc., and, so far as our examination went, have not found it to fail in any instance. We can, therefore, cordially recommend it to writers as well as to readers. It really does fit in the waistcoat pocket, and may literally be made a constant companion.—*Morning Star*, July 17.

6mo. limp morocco, pp. 560. 1861. 2s. 6d.

Jewish (A) REPLY TO DR. COLENSO'S CRITICISM ON THE PENTATEUCH. Issued by the Jewish Association for the Diffusion of Religious Knowledge. 8vo. cloth, pp. ix. and 147. 1865. 3s.

Ἰωάννης.—Φιλολογικὰ παρέργα ὑπὸ Φιλίππου Ἰωάννου Καθηγητοῦ τῆς φιλοσοφίας παρὰ τῷ πανεπιστημίῳ Ἀθηνῶν. (Literary Miscellanies. By Philippe Joannes, Professor of Philosophy at the University of Athens.) 8vo. cloth, pp. 488. 10s. 6d.

John Groves.—A TALE OF THE WAR. By S. E. de M—. 12mo. sewed, pp. 16. 1856. 2d.

Jolowicz.—THE FIRST EPISTLE OF BARUGH. Translated from the Syraic, with an Introduction. By the Rev. Dr. J. Jolowicz, ordinary Member of the German Oriental Society. Read at the meeting of the Syro-Egyptian Society, December 12, 1854. John Lee, Esq., LL.D., F.R.S., in the Chair. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1855. 1s.

- Jomini.**—THE ART OF WAR. By Baron de Jomini, General and Aide-de-Camp to the Emperor of Russia. A New Edition, with Appendicés and Maps. Translated from the French. By Capt. G. H. Mendell, and Capt. W. O. Craighill. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 410. 1864. 9s.
- Jomini.**—TREATISE ON GRAND MILITARY OPERATIONS, OR a Critical and Military History of the Wars of Frederick the Great, as contrasted with the modern system. Together with a few of the most important principles of the Art of War. By Baron Jomini, Commander-in-Chief, and Aide-de-Camp to the Emperor of Russia. Translated from the French by Col. S. B. Holabird, U.S.A. Illustrated with Maps and Plans. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. 418, 496; and an Atlas, containing 39 maps and plans of battles, 1711-1762. 1865. £3.
- Jomini.**—THE MILITARY AND POLITICAL LIFE OF THE EMPEROR NAPOLEON. By Baron Jomini, General-in-Chief, and Aide-de-Camp to the Emperor of Russia. Translated from the French, with Notes, by H. W. Hälleck, LL.D., Major-General U.S. Army. 4 vols., royal 8vo. cloth, pp. 295, 451, 414, 453, with an Atlas of 60 Maps and Plans. 1864. £4 4s.
- Jomini.**—THE POLITICAL AND MILITARY HISTORY OF THE CAMPAIGN OF WATERLOO. Translated from the French of General Baron de Jomini, by Captain S. V. Benét, United States Ordnance. Third Edition. 12mo. cloth pp. 6s.  
This is a separate reprint of the twenty-second chapter of "Jomini's Life of Napoleon," and forms a capital summary of the campaign.
- Jones.**—WARNING; OR, THE BEGINNING OF THE END. An Address to the Jews. By C. Jones. 8vo. sewed, pp. 58. 1866. 2s.
- Justi.**—HANDBUCH DER ZENDSPRACHE, VON FERDINAND JUSTI. Altbaetrisches Woerterbuch. Grammatik Chrestomathie. Four parts, 4to. sewed, pp. xxii. and 424. Leipzig, 1864. 24s.
- Kafir Essays, AND OTHER PIECES; with an English Translation.** Edited by the Right Rev. the Bishop of Grahamstown. 32mo. sewed, pp. 84. 1861. 2s. 6d.
- Karcher.**—LES ECRIVAINS MILITAIRES DE LA FRANCE. Par Theodore Karcher, Professeur à l'Académie Royale Militaire de Woolwich, etc. 8vo. cloth, with numerous Illustrations. Pp. viii. and 348. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Karcher.**—QUESTIONNAIRE FRANÇAIS. Questions on French Grammar, Idiomatic Difficulties, and Military Expressions. By Theodore Karcher, LL.B. 12mo. cloth, pp. 111. 1865. 2s. 6d.  
Interleaved with writing paper. 3s.
- Kaulbach.**—ALBUM-TIERFABELN, GESCHICHTEN UND MÄRCHEN IN BILDERN. Nach Original-Federzeichnungen von Wilhelm von Kaulbach, In Holz-schitten von J. G. Flegel. Text von Dr. Julius Grosse. 12 plates. oblong folio. 10s. 6d.
- Kendrick.**—GREEK OLLENDORFF. A Progressive Exhibition of the Principles of the Greek Grammar. By Asahel C. Kendrick. 8vo. cloth, pp. 371. 1857. 6s.
- Keyne.**—SPELLS AND VOICES. By Ada Keyne. 12mo. cloth, pp. 124. 1865. 2s. 6d.
- Khira'd-Afroz** (The Illuminator of the Understanding). By Maulavi Hafizu'd-din. A New Edition of the Hindústáni Text, carefully Revised, with Notes, Critical and Explanatory. By Edward B. Eastwick, F.R.S., F.S.A., M.R.A.S., Professor of Hindústáni at the late East India Company's College at Haileybury. 8vo. cloth, pp. xiv. and 321. 1868. 18s.



- Kidd.**—CATALOGUE OF THE CHINESE LIBRARY OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY. By the Rev. S. Kidd. 8vo. sewed, pp. 58. 1s.
- Kidder.**—A TREATISE ON HOMILETICS; designed to Illustrate the True Theory and Practice of Preaching the Gospel. By Daniel P. Kidder, D.D., Professor in the Garrett Biblical Institute. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 495. 1864, 5s. 6s.
- King.**—THE PATRIOT. A Poem. By J. W. King. 12mo. sewed, pp. 56. 1853. 1s.
- King.**—LESSONS AND PRACTICAL NOTES ON STEAM, THE STEAM ENGINE, PROPELLERS, etc., etc., for young Engineers, Students, and others. By the late W. H. King, U.S.N. Revised by Chief-Engineer J. W. King, U.S.N. Ninth Edition. Enlarged. 8vo. cloth, pp. 229. 1865. 9s.
- Kingsford.**—AN ESSAY ON THE ADMISSION OF WOMEN TO THE PARLIAMENTARY FRANCHISE. By Ninon Kingsford. 8vo. sewed, pp. 40. 1868. 1s.
- Knight.**—THE INDIAN EMPIRE AND OUR FINANCIAL RELATIONS THEREWITH. A Paper read before the London Indian Society, May 25, 1866. By Robert Knight ("Times of India"). 8vo. sewed, pp. 42. 1866. 1s.
- Knight.**—LETTER TO THE RIGHT HON. SIR STAFFORD NORTHCOTE, Baronet, Her Majesty's Secretary of State for India, upon the present condition of Bombay, with suggestions for its relief. By Robert Knight, "Times of India." 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1867. 1s.
- Kohl.**—TRAVELS IN CANADA AND THROUGH THE STATES OF NEW PENNSYLVANIA. Revised by the Author. Translated by Mrs. Percy Sinnett. Two vols., post 8vo. cloth, pp. xiv. and 794. 1831. 21s.
- Kortum.**—THE JOBSIAD; a grotesco-comico-heroic Poem. From the German of Dr. Carl Arnold Kortum. By Charles T. Brooks, Translator of "Faust," "Titan," etc., etc. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xviii. and 182. 1863. 5s.
- Kossuth.**—SPEECHES OF LOUIS KOSSUTH IN AMERICA. Edited, with his sanction, by F. W. Newman. Post 8vo. cloth. pp. 388. 1853. 5s.
- Kossuth.**—SHEFFIELD AND NOTTINGHAM EVENING SPEECHES. Edited by himself. 1854. 2d.
- Kossuth.**—GLASGOW SPEECHES. Edited by himself. 2d.
- Krapf.**—TRAVELS, RESEARCHES, AND MISSIONARY LABOURS, during an Eighteen Years' Residence on the Eastern Coast of Africa. By the Rev. Dr. J. Lewis Krapf, late Missionary in the service of the Church Missionary Society in Eastern and Equatorial Africa; to which is prefixed a concise Account of Geographical Discovery in Eastern Africa, up to the present time, by J. E. Ravenstein, F.R.G.S. In demy 8vo., with a Portrait, two Maps, and twelve Plates. Cloth, pp. li. and 566. 1866. £1 1s.
- Kühner.**—AN ELEMENTARY GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE. By Raphael Kühner. Translated by Samuel H. Taylor. One vol. Twentieth Edition. 8vo. half-bound, pp. xii. and 355. 1865. 6s.
- Kühner.**—GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE for the use of High Schools and Colleges. Translated from the German by B. B. Edwards and S. H. Taylor. By Raphael Kühner. Fourth Edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 620. 1862. 10s. 6d.

- Küstel.**—NEVADA AND CALIFORNIA PROCESSES OF SILVER AND GOLD EXTRACTION FOR GENERAL USE, and especially for the Mining Public of California and Nevada, with full explanations and directions for all Metallurgical Operations connected with Silver and Gold, from a preliminary examination of the ore to the final casting of the ingot. Also a description of the General Metallurgy of Silver Ores. By Guido Küstel, Mining Engineer and Metallurgist. Illustrated by accurate engravings. 8vo. cloth, pp. 328. 1868. 14s.
- Lady Nurses FOR THE SICK POOR IN OUR LONDON WORKHOUSES.** Report of Proceedings at the Strand Union Board of Guardians, September '4, 1866. From the Short-Hand Notes of Mr. John White. With an Appendix. 8vo. sewed, pp. 15. 1866. 6d.
- Laghu Kaumudi.**—A SANSKRIT GRAMMAR. By Varadarāja. With an English Version, Commentary and References. By James R. Ballantyne, LL.D., Principal of the Sanskrit College, Benares. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxxvi. and 424. 1867. £1 11s. 6d.
- Lange.**—THE UPPER RHINE, Illustrating its finest Cities, Castles, Ruins, and Landscapes. From Drawings by Messrs. Rohbock, Louis and Julius Lange. Engraved by the most distinguished Artists. With a History and Topographical Text. Edited by Dr. Gaspey. 8vo., pp. 494. 134 Plates. 1859. £2 2s.
- Langford.**—ENGLISH DEMOCRACY; its History and Principles. By John Alfred Langford. Fcap. 8vo., stiff cover. Pp. 88. 1855. 1s. 6d.
- Langford.**—RELIGION AND EDUCATION IN RELATION TO THE PEOPLE. By John Alfred Langford. 12mo. cloth, pp. iv. and 132. 1852. 2s.
- Langford.**—RELIGIOUS SCEPTICISM AND INFIDELITY; their History, Cause, Cure, and Mission. By John Alfred Langford. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 246. 1850. 2s. 6d.
- Lathe (THE) AND ITS USES; or, Instruction in the Art of Turning Wood and Metal.** Including a description of the most modern appliances for the ornamentation of plane and curved surfaces. With an Appendix, in which is described an entirely novel form of lathe for eccentric and rose engine turning; a lathe and planing machine combined; and other valuable matter relating to the art. Copiously illustrated. 8vo. cloth, pp. 290. 1868. 15s.
- Lawrence, SIR JOHN, G.C.B., AND THE TALOODDARS OF OUDH.** A series of articles contributed to "The Press," showing how the Viceroy of India proposes to undermine and destroy the proprietary rights of the landowners of that province. 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1865. 6d.
- Layman's Faith (A).**—DOCTRINES AND LITURGY. By a Layman. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 150. 1866. 2s. 6d.
- Lea.**—AN HISTORICAL SKETCH OF SACERDOTAL CELIBACY IN THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH. By Henry Carey Lea. 8vo. cloth, pp. 601. 1867. 15s.
- Lea.**—SUPERSTITION AND FORCE. Essays on the Wager of Law—the Wager of Battle—the Ordeal—Torture. By Henry C. Lea. 8vo. cloth, pp. 408. 1866. 10s. 6d.
- Le-Brun.**—MATERIALS FOR TRANSLATING FROM ENGLISH INTO FRENCH; being a short Essay on Translation, followed by a Graded Selection in Prose and Verse. By Le-Brun. Second Edition. Revised and corrected by Henri Van Laun. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 203. 1865. 4s.

**Lees.** AN INQUIRY INTO THE REASONS AND RESULTS OF THE PRESCRIPTION OF INTOXICATING LIQUORS IN THE PRACTICE OF MEDICINE.—By Dr. F. R. Lees, F.S.A. 12mo. cloth, pp. iv. and 144. 1866. 1s. 4d.

**Leeser.**—THE TWENTY-FOUR BOOKS OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES: carefully Translated according to the Massoretic Text, after the best Jewish Authorities. By Isaac Leeser. 18mo. bound, pp. xii. and 1243. 1865. 7s. 6d.

**Legge.**—THE LIFE AND TEACHINGS OF CONFUCIUS. With explanatory Notes. By James Legge, D.D. Reproduced for General Readers from the Author's work, containing the Original Text. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 338. 1867. 10s. 6d.

**Legge.**—THE CHINESE CLASSICS. With a Translation, Critical and Exegetical, Notes, Prolegomena, and copious Indexes. By James Legge, D.D., of the London Missionary Society. In seven Vols.

Vol. 1, containing Confucian analects, the great learning, and the doctrine of the mean. 8vo. cloth, pp. 526. 1861. 42s.

Vol. 2, containing the works of Mencius. 8vo. cloth, pp. 634. 1861. 42s.

Vol. 3, part 1, containing the first parts of the Shoo-King, or the Books of Tang, the Books of Yu; the Books of Hea; the Books of Shang, and the Prolegomena. 8vo. cloth, pp. 291. 1865. 42s.

Vol. 3, part 2, containing the fifth part of the Shoo-King, or the Books of Chow, and the indexes. 8vo. cloth, pp. 453. 1865. 42s.

**Legge.**—THE CHINESE CLASSICS: translated into English. With Preliminary Essays and Explanatory Notes. Popular Edition. Reproduced for General Readers from the Author's work, containing the Original Text. By James Legge, D.D. Vol. 1—The Life and Teachings of Confucius. 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 338. 1867. 10s. 6d.

**Leitner.**—THE RACES AND LANGUAGES OF DARDISTAN. By G. W. Leitner, M.A., Ph. D., Honorary Fellow of King's College, London, etc. late on Special Duty in Kashmir. 4 vols. 4to. 1868. [*In the press.*]

**Lesley.**—MAN'S ORIGIN AND DESTINY, Sketched from the Platform of the Sciences, in a Course of Lectures delivered before the Lowell Institute, in Boston, in the Winter of 1865-6. By J. P. Lesley, Member of the National Academy of the United States, Secretary of the American Philosophical Society. Numerous Woodcuts. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 392. 1868. 10s. 6d.

CONTENTS.—Lecture 1. On the Classification of the Sciences; 2. On the Genius of the Physical Sciences, Ancient and Modern; 3. The Geological Antiquity of Man; 4. On the Dignity of Mankind; 5. On the Unity of Mankind; 6. On the Early Social Life of Man; 7. On Language as a Test of Race; 8. The Origin of Architecture; 9. The Growth of the Alphabet; 10. The Four Types of Religious Worship; 11. On Arkitic Symbolism. Appendix.

**Lessing.**—NATHAN THE WISE. A Dramatic Poem. By Gotthold Ephraim Lessing. Translated from the German. With an introduction on Lessing and the "Nathan;" its antecedents, character, and influence. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xxviii. and 214. 1868. 6s.

**Lessing.**—LETTERS ON BIBLIOLATRY. By Gotthold Ephraim Lessing. Translated from the German by the late H. H. Bernard, Ph. Dr. 8vo. cloth, pp. 184. 1862. 5s.

*Three Generations of British Reviewers on LESSING.*

"The work before us is as genuine sour-kraut as ever perfumed a feast in Westphalia."—*Edinburgh Review*, April, 1806.

"As a poet, as a critic, a philosopher, or controversialist, his style will be found precisely such as we of England are accustomed to admire most. Brief, nervous, vivid; yet quiet, without glitter or antithesis; idiomatic, pure, without purism; transparent, yet full of character and reflex hues of meaning."—*Edinburgh Review*, October, 1827.

"The first foreigner who had the glory of proclaiming Shakespeare to be the greatest dramatist the world had ever seen, was Gotthold Ephraim Lessing."—*Edinburgh Review*, July, 1849.

LESSING.—THE LIFE AND WORKS OF G. E. LESSING. From the German of Adolph Stahr. By E. P. Evans, Ph. D. 2 vols., crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 383, iv. and 442. 1867. 25s.

Letter TO LORD PALMERSTON, CONCERNING THE QUESTION OF SCHLESWIG-HOLSTEIN. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1850. 1s.

Letters FROM THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, THE BISHOP OF CAPETOWN, AND THE BISHOP OF NATAL. With some Observations on the Archbishop of Canterbury's reply to the Bishop of Natal. 8vo. pp. 30. 1866. 1s.

Letter TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE EARL OF DERBY ON POLITICAL REFORM. By one of the People. 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1867. 1s.

Leveson.—THE REFORMER'S REFORM BILL. Being a Proposed New and complete Code of Electoral Law for the United Kingdom. By Montague R. Leveson. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 36. 1866. 1s.

Levy (M.).—THE HISTORY OF SHORTHAND WRITING. By Matthias Levy. To which is appended the System used by the Author. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 194. 1862. 5s.

Lima.—SKETCHES OF THE CAPITAL OF PERU, HISTORICAL, STATISTICAL, ADMINISTRATIVE, COMMERCIAL, AND MORAL. By Manuel A. Fuentes, Advocate. With numerous Illustrations. 8vo. half bound, pp. ix. and 224. 1867. 21s.

Little French Reader (THE).—Extracted from "The Modern French Reader." Crown 8vo. cloth. 1868. 2s. (See p. 63.)

Liturgy.—*Ἡ θεία λειτουργία τοῦ ἐν ἁγίοις πατρὸς ἡμῶν Ἰωάννου τοῦ Χρυσοστόμου. Παραφρασεῖσα κατὰ τὸ κείμενον τὸ ἐκδοθὲν ἐγκρίσει τῆς ἱεράς Συνόδου τοῦ βασιλείου τῆς Ἑλλάδος.* (The divine Liturgy of our holy father St. Chrysostome, paraphrased according to the text published with the sanction of the Holy Synod of the kingdom of Greece.) 12mo. cloth, gilt edges, pp. 76. 2s. 6d.

Lobscheid.—ENGLISH AND CHINESE DICTIONARY, with the Punti and Mandarin Pronunciation. By the Rev. W. Lobscheid, Knight of Francis Joseph, C.M.I.R.G.S.A., N.Z.B.S.V., etc. Parts I. and II., folio, pp. iv. and 1 to 980. (Will be completed in Four Parts). 1867. Price, each part, £1 16s.

Log Cabin (THE); OR, THE WORLD BEFORE YOU. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 120. 1844. 2s. 6d.

Longfellow.—FLOWER DE LUCE. By Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. With Illustrations. Small 4to., extra cloth, gilt edges, pp. 72. 1867. 10s. 6d.

Longfellow.—EVANGELINE. A Tale of Acadie. By Henry W. Longfellow. With Illustrations by F. O. C. Darley. Small 4to. extra cloth, gilt edges, pp. 157. 1867. 12s.

Longfellow.—THE POETICAL WORKS OF HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW. Revised Edition. 4 vols., crown 8vo. cloth, gilt top, pp. 313, v. 283, v. 351, 372. 1866. 40s.

Longfellow.—THE PROSE WORKS OF HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW. Revised Edition. 3 vols. crown 8vo., gilt top, pp. 364, 391, 365. 1866. 30s.

**Loomis.**—AN INTRODUCTION TO PRACTICAL ASTRONOMY, with a Collection of Astronomical Tables. By Elias Loomis, LL.D. Seventh Edition. 8vo. sheep, pp. xi. and 499. 1866. 10s. 6d.

**Loomis.**—A TREATISE ON ASTRONOMY. By Elias Loomis, Professor of Natural Philosophy and Astronomy in Yale College, Author of "An Introduction to Practical Astronomy," and of a series of Mathematics for Schools and Colleges. 8vo. sheep, pp. 338. With eight Plates. 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Lorgion.**—THE PASTOR OF VLIETHUIZEN, OR CONVERSATIONS about the Groningen School, the Doctrine of the Church, the Science of Theology, and the Bible. By E. J. Diest Lorgion, D.D. Translated from the Dutch. Post 4to., pp. iv. and 128. 1861. 7s. 6d.

**Lowe.**—SPEECH OF THE RIGHT HON. ROBERT LOWE, M.P., on the Irish Tenant Right Bill, and a Letter of Lord Oranmore's to the *Times*. 8vo. sewed, pp. 22. 1866. 6d.

**Lowell.**—THE VISION OF SIR LAUNFAL. By James Russell Lowell. With Illustrations by S. Eytzinger, jun. Small 4to. 28 leaves, printed on one side only. 1867. 10s. 6d.

**Lowell.**—THE POETICAL WORKS OF JAMES R. LOWELL. Complete in two volumes. Blue and Gold Series. 24mo. cloth, pp. ix. 315, 322. With Portrait. 1863. 10s.

**Ludewig.**—THE LITERATURE OF AMERICAN ABORIGINAL LANGUAGES, with Additions and Corrections by Professor Wm. W. Turner. Edited by Nicolas Trübner. 8vo. fly and general Title, 2 leaves; Dr. Ludewig's Preface, pp. v.—viii.; Editor's Preface, pp. ix.—xii.; Biographical Memoir of Dr. Ludewig, pp. xiii., xiv.; and Introductory Bibliographical Notices, pp. xv.—xxiv., followed by List of Contents. Then follow Dr. Ludewig's *Bibliotheca Glottica*, alphabetically arranged, with Additions by the Editor, pp. 1—209; Professor Turner's Additions, with those of the Editor to the same, also alphabetically arranged, pp. 210—246; Index, pp. 247—256; and list of Errata, pp. 257, 258. By Hermann E. Ludewig. 8vo. cloth. London. 1858. 10s. 6d.

This work is intended to supply a great want, now that the study of Ethnology has proved that exotic languages are not mere curiosities, but essential and interesting parts of the natural history of man, forming one of the most curious links in the great chain of national affinities, defining as they do the reciprocity existing between man and the soil he lives upon. No one can venture to write the history of America without a knowledge of her aboriginal languages; and unimportant as such researches may seem to men engaged in the mere bustling occupations of life, they will at least acknowledge that these records of the past, like the stern lights of a departing ship, are the last glimmers of savage life, as it becomes absorbed or recedes before the tide of civilization. Dr. Ludewig and Prof. Taylor have made most diligent use of the public and private collections in America, access to all of which was most liberally granted to them. This has placed at their disposal the labours of the American Missionaries, so little known on this side of the Atlantic that they may be looked upon almost in the light of untrodden ground. But English and Continental libraries have also been ransacked; and Dr. Ludewig kept up a constant and active correspondence with scholars of "the Fatherland," as well as with men of similar tastes and pursuits in France, Spain, and Holland, determined to leave no stone unturned to render his labours as complete as possible. The volume, perfect in itself, is the first of an enlarged edition of Vater's "*Linguarum totius orbis Index*." The work has been noticed by the press of both Continents, and we may be permitted to refer particularly to the following.

#### OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

"This work, mainly the production of the late Herr Ludewig, a German, naturalized in America, is devoted to an account of the literature of the aboriginal languages of that country. It gives an alphabetical list of the various tribes of whose languages any record remains, and refers to the works, papers, or manuscripts, in which such information may be found. The work has evidently been a labour of love; and as no pains seem to have been spared by the editors, Prof. Turner and Mr. Trübner, in rendering the work as accurate and complete as possible, those who are most interested in its contents will be best able to judge of the labours and assiduity bestowed upon it by author, editors, and publisher."—*Athenæum*, 5th April. 1858.

"This is the first instalment of a work which will be of the greatest value to philologists; and is a compendium of the aboriginal languages of the American continents, and a digest of all the known literature bearing upon these languages. Mr. Trübner's hand has been engaged *passim*, and in his preface he lays claim to about one-sixth of the whole; and we have no doubt that the encouragement with which this portion of the work will be received by scholars, will be such as to inspire Mr. Trübner with sufficient confidence to persevere in his arduous and most honorable task."—*The Critic*, 15th Dec., 1857.

"Few would believe that a good octavo volume would be necessary to exhaust the subject; yet so it is, and this handsome, useful, and curious volume, carefully compiled by Mr. Ludewig, assisted by Prof. Turner, and edited by the careful hand of Mr. Trübner, the well-known publisher, will be sure to find a place in many libraries."—*Bent's Advertiser*, 6th Nov., 1857.

"The lovers of American linguistics will find in the work of Mr. Trübner scarcely any point omitted calculated to aid the comparative philologist in tracing the various languages of the great Western Continent."—*Gales's Mercury*, 30th Jan., 1858.

"Only those deeply versed in philological studies can appreciate this book at its full value. It shows that there are upwards of seven hundred and fifty aboriginal American languages."—*Gentleman's Magazine*, Feb., 1858.

"The work contains an account of no fewer than seven hundred different aboriginal dialects of America, with an introductory chapter of bibliographical information; and under each dialect is an account of any grammars or other works illustrative of it."—*The Bookseller*, Jan., 1858.

"We have here the list of monuments still existing, of an almost innumerable series of languages and dialects of the American Continent. The greater part of Indian grammars and vocabularies exist only in MS., and were compiled chiefly by Missionaries of the Christian Church; and to Dr. Ludewig and Mr. Trübner, we are, therefore, the more indebted for the great care with which they have pointed out where such are to be found, as well as for enumerating those which have been printed, either in a separate shape, in collections, or in voyages and travels, and elsewhere."—*Leader*, 11th Sept., 1858.

"I have not time, nor is it my purpose, to go into a review of this admirable work, or to attempt to indicate the extent and value of its contents. It is, perhaps, enough to say, that apart from a concise but clear enumeration and notice of the various general philological works which treat with greater or less fulness of American languages, or which incidentally touch upon their bibliography, it contains not less than 256 closely-printed octavo pages of bibliographical notices of grammars, vocabularies, etc., of the aboriginal languages of America. It is a peculiar and valuable feature of the work that not only the titles of printed or published grammars or vocabularies are given, but also that unpublished or MS. works of these kinds are noticed, in all cases where they are known to exist, but which have disappeared among the debris of the suppressed convents and religious establishments of Spanish America."—*E. G. Squier*, in a paper read before the American Ethnological Society, 12th Jan., 1858.

"In consequence of the death of the author before he had finished the revision of the work it has been carefully examined by competent scholars, who have also made many valuable additions."—*American Publishers' Circular*, 30th Jan., 1858.

"It contains 256 closely-printed pages of titles, or printed books and manuscripts, and notices of American aboriginal languages, and embraces references to nearly all that has been written or published respecting them, whether in special works or incidentally in books of travel, periodicals, or proceedings of learned societies."—*New York Herald*, 26th Jan., 1858.

"The manner in which this contribution to the bibliography of American languages has been executed, both by the author, Mr. Ludewig, and the able writers who have edited the work since his death, is spoken of in the highest terms by gentlemen most conversant with the subject."—*American Historical Magazine*, Vol. II., No 5, May, 1858.

"Je terminerai en annonçant le premier volume d'une publication appelée à rendre de grands services à la philologie comparée et à la linguistique générale. Je veux parler de la *Bibliotheca Glottica*, ouvrage devant renfermer la liste de tous les dictionnaires et de toutes les grammaires des langues connues, tant imprimées que manuscrites. L'écrivain de cette précieuse bibliographie est M. Nicolas Trübner, dont le nom est honorablement connu dans le monde oriental. Le premier volume est consacré aux idiomes Américains; le second doit traiter des langues de l'Inde. Le travail est fait avec le soin le plus consciencieux, et fera honneur à M. Nicolas Trübner, surtout s'il poursuit son œuvre avec la même ardeur qu'il a mise à la commencer."—*L. Léon de Rosny*, *Revue de l'Orient*, Février, 1858.

"Mr. Trübner's most important work on the bibliography of the aboriginal languages of America is deserving of all praise, as eminently useful to those who study that branch of literature. The value, too, of the book, and of the pains which its compilation must have cost, will not be lessened by the consideration that it is first in this field of linguistic literature."—*Petermann's Geographische Mittheilungen*, p. 79, Feb., 1858.

"Undoubtedly this volume of Trübner's *Bibliotheca Glottica* ranks amongst the most valuable additions which of late years have enriched our bibliographical literature. To us Germans it is most gratifying, that the initiative has been taken by a German bookseller, himself one of the most intelligent and active of our countrymen abroad, to produce a work which has higher aims than mere pecuniary profit, and that he, too, has laboured at its production with his own hands; because daily it is becoming a circumstance of rarer occurrence that, as in this case, it is a bookseller's primary object to serve the cause of literature rather than to enrich himself."—*P. Tromel*, *Börsenblatt*, 4th Jan., 1858.

"In the compilation of the work the editors have availed themselves not only of the labours of Vater, Barton, Duponceau, Gallatin, De Souza, and others, but also of the MS. sources left by the missionaries, and of many books of which even the library of the British Museum is deficient, and furnish the fullest account of the literature of no less than 525 languages. The value of the work, so necessary to the study of ethnology, is greatly enhanced by the addition of a good Index."—*Berliner National-Zeitung*, 22nd Nov., 1857.

"The name of the author, to all those who are acquainted with his former works, and who know the thoroughness and profound character of his investigations, is a sufficient guarantee that this work will be one of standard authority, and one that will fully answer the demands of the present time."—*Petzholdt's Anzeiger*, Jan., 1858.

"The chief merit of the editor, and publisher is to have terminated the work carefully and lucidly in contents and form, and thus to have established a new and largely augmented edition of 'Vater's *Linguarum totius orbis Index*,' after Professor Jülz's revision of 1847. In order to continue and complete this work the editor requires the assistance of all those who are acquainted with this new branch of science, and we sincerely hope it may be accorded to him."—*Magazin für die Literatur des Auslandes*, No. 38, 1858.

"As the general title of the book indicates, it will be extended to the languages of the other continents, in case it meets with a favourable reception, which we most cordially wish it."—*A. F. Pott, Preussische Nachrichten*, Vol. II., part 1.

"Cette compilation savante est, sans contredit, le travail bibliographique le plus important que notre époque ait vu surgir sur les nations indigènes de l'Amérique."—*Nouvelles Annales des Voyages*, Avril, 1859.

"La Bibliotheca Glottica, dont M. Nicolas Trübner a commencé la publication, est un des livres les plus utiles qui aient jamais été rédigés pour faciliter l'étude de la philologie comparée. Le premier tome de cette grande bibliographie linguistique comprend la liste textuelle de toutes les grammaires, de tous les dictionnaires et des vocabulaires même les moins étendus qui ont été imprimés dans les différents dialectes des deux Amériques; en outre, il fait connaître les ouvrages manuscrits de la même nature renfermés dans les principales bibliothèques publiques et particulières. Ce travail a du nécessairement de longues et patientes recherches; aussi méritait-il d'attirer tout particulièrement l'attention des philologues. Puissent les autres volumes de cette bibliothèque être rédigés avec le même soin et se trouver bientôt entre les mains de tous les savants auxquels ils peuvent rendre des services inappréciables."—*Revue Américaine et Orientale*, No. 1, Oct., 1858.

"To every fresh addition to the bibliography of language, of which we have a most admirable specimen in this work, the thoughtful linguist will ever, as the great problem of the unity of human speech approaches towards its full solution, turn with increasing satisfaction and hope.

"But Mr. Nicolas Trübner, however, has, perhaps, on the whole, done the highest service of all to the philologist, by the publication of 'the Literature of American Aboriginal Languages.' He has, with the aid of Professor Turuer, greatly enlarged, and at the same time most skilfully edited, the valuable materials acquired by his deceased friend, M. Ludwig. We do not, indeed, at this moment, know any similar work deserving of full comparison with it. In its ample enumeration of important works of reference, and careful record of the most recent facts in the literature of its subject, it, as might have been expected, greatly surpasses Jülz's 'Vater,' a valuable and trustworthy though that learned German's work undoubtedly is."—*North British Review*, No. 59, Feb., 1859.

The Editor has also received most kind and encouraging letters respecting the work from Sir George Grey, the Chevalier Bunsen, Dr. Th. Goldstücker, Mr. Watts (of the Museum), Professor A. F. Pott (of Halle), Dr. Julius Petzholdt (of Dresden), Hofrath Dr. Grasse (of Dresden), M. F. F. de la Figanière (of Lisbon), E. Edwards (of Manchester), Dr. Max Müller (of Oxford), Dr. Buschmann (of Berlin), Dr. Jülz (of Cracow), and other linguistic scholars.

**LUVINI.**—TABLES OF LOGARITHMS with Seven Places of Decimals.  
By John Luvini. Crown 8vo, cloth, pp. viii. and 368. 1866. 5s.

**LYMAN.**—COTTON CULTURE. By Joseph B. Lyman, late of Louisiana.  
With an additional chapter on Cotton Seed, and its Uses. By J. R. Sypher.  
Cloth, pp. VII. and 190. 6s.

**LYSONS.**—OUR VULGAR TONGUE. A Lecture on Language in general, with a few words on Gloucestershire in particular. Delivered before the Literary and Scientific Association at Gloucester, January 17th, 1868, with Appendix containing tables of the world-wide affinity of Languages. By the Rev. Samuel Lysons, M.A., F.S.A., Hon. Canon of Gloucester Cathedral, and Rector of Rodmarton, Author of "Our British Ancestors," "The Model Merchant of the Middle Ages," etc., etc. 8vo, stiff cover, pp. 51 and 62. 1868. 2s. 6d.

- Maccall, W.—NATIONAL MISSIONS. A Series of Lectures. 8vo. pp. viii. and 382. 1855. 10s. 6d.
- Maccall.—SACRAMENTAL SERVICES. 12mo. sewed, pp. 20. 1847. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE AGENTS OF CIVILIZATION. A Series of Lectures. 12mo. cloth, pp. 126. 1843. 1s. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE DOCTRINE OF INDIVIDUALITY. A Discourse delivered at Crediton, on the 28th of May, 1843. 12mo. sewed, pp. 22. 1843. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE EDUCATION OF TASTE. A Series of Lectures. 12mo. sewed, pp. 104. 1846. 1s.
- Maccall.—THE ELEMENTS OF INDIVIDUALISM. A Series of Lectures. 8vo. cloth, pp. 358. 1847. 7s. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE INDIVIDUALITY OF THE INDIVIDUAL. A Lecture delivered at Exeter on the 29th March, 1844, before the Literary Society. 12mo. sewed, pp. 40. 1844. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE LESSONS OF THE PESTILENCE. A Discourse delivered at Royston, on the 23rd September, 1849. 12mo. sewed, pp. 22. 1849. 6d.
- Maccall.—THE UNCHRISTIAN NATURE OF COMMERCIAL RESTRICTIONS. A Discourse delivered at Bolton, on Sunday, the 27th September, 1840. 12mo. sewed, pp. 14. 1840. 3d.
- Macfarlane.—A LETTER TO OUR GRANDCHILDREN. By William Macfarlane, Esq., Brighton, Author of "A Letter to the Bishop of Natal." 8vo. sewed, pp. 15. 1862. 2d.
- Macfarlane.—A LETTER TO THE RIGHT REVEREND DR. COLENSO, Bishop of Natal, remonstrating against his leaving the Church of England. By William Macfarlane, Esq., Brighton. 8vo. sewed, pp. 8. 1862. 1d.
- Macfarlane.—A PRACTICAL LETTER to the Citizens of the World on the Civil Wars among the Bishops and Clergy. By William Macfarlane, Esq., Brighton, Author of "A Letter to our Grandchildren," and "A Letter to the Bishop of Natal." 8vo. sewed, pp. 18. 1863. 3d.
- Mackellar.—THE AMERICAN PRINTER. A Manual of Typography, containing complete instructions for beginners, as well as practical directions for managing all departments of a Printing Office. With several useful tables, schemes for imposing forms in every variety, hints to Authors and Publishers, etc., etc. By Thomas Mackellar. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 336. 1867. 9s.
- Mackenzie.—CONDENSED TEMPERANCE FACTS FOR CHRISTIANS. With remarks on ancient and modern wines and malt liquors. By J. Mackenzie, M.D., Justice of the Peace, Provost of Inverness. 12mo. sewed, pp. 40. 1868. 3d.
- Madeira.—A BRIEF LETTER OF ADVICE TO AN INVALID, in reply to a request for information about Madeira as a winter residence. By an ex-invalid. 8vo. sewed, pp. 8. 1859. 6d.
- M'Caul.—JERUSALEM: its Bishop, its Missionaries, and its Converts; being a Series of Letters addressed to the Editor of the "Daily News" in the Year 1858, by the late Rev. Alexander M'Caul, D.D., with other Letters, etc., illustrative thereof. Collected and Edited by his Son, Samuel M'Caul, B.C.L., of St. John's College, Oxford, etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 80. 1866. 1s. 6d.



**McCulloch.**—A TREATISE on the Circumstances which determine the Rate of Wages and the Condition of the Labouring Classes. By J. R. McCulloch, Esq. 2mo. cloth, pp. x. and 144. 1868. 1s.

**McPherson.**—THE POLITICAL HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA during the Great Rebellion, from November 6, 1860, to July 4, 1864; with Summary of the Legislation thereon, and the Executive, Judicial, and Politico-Military Facts; together with an Account of the Rebel Administration. By Edward McPherson, of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, Clerk of the House of Representatives. Royal 8vo., bound. 1864. 18s.

**Mahan.**—AN ELEMENTARY COURSE OF MILITARY ENGINEERING. Part I. Comprising Field Fortifications, Military Mining and Siege Operations. By D. H. Mahan, LL.D., Professor of Military and Civil Engineering in the U. S. Military Academy, 8vo. cloth, pp. xxx. and 284. 1865. 16s.

"The best treatise on its subject we know—acid, accurate, full, and yet concise. It is the book by which most can be learned about the art of war."—*United States Service Magazine*.

**Mahan.**—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON MILITARY ENGINEERING Part II. Permanent Fortifications. By D. H. Mahan, LL.D. With Plates. 8vo. cloth, pp. 176. 25s.

**Mahan.**—SUMMARY OF THE COURSE OF PERMANENT FORTIFICATIONS, and of the Attack and Defence of Permanent Works. For the Use of the Cadets of the United States Military Academy. By D. H. Mahan, Professor of Military Engineering, at the United States Military Academy. 2 vols. 4to. with folio Plates. Lithographed at the United States Military Academy Press. 25s.

**Mahan.**—AN ELEMENTARY COURSE OF CIVIL ENGINEERING for the use of Cadets of the United States Military Academy. By D. H. Mahan, M.A. New Edition, with large Addenda, and many new Cuts. 8vo. cloth, pp. 410. 18s.

**Maharajahs.**—HISTORY OF THE SECT OF MAHARAJAHS; or, Vallabhacharyas in Western India. With a Steel Plate. 1 vol. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 183. 1865. 12s.

**Malleson.**—ESSAYS AND LECTURES ON INDIAN HISTORICAL SUBJECTS. I. A Native State and its Rulers.—II. Lord Lake of Laswarrie.—III. Count Lally.—IV. Havelock.—V. Hyder Ali's Last War.—VI. Sir Hugh Rose. By Major G. B. Malleson, Bengal Staff Corps. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 360. 1868. 6s.

**Manava-Kalpa-Sutra.**—Being a portion of this ancient Work on Vaidik Rites, together with the Commentary of Kumarila-Swamin. A Facsimile of the MS. No. 17, in the Library of Her Majesty's Home Government for India. With a Preface by Theodor Goldstücker. Oblong folio, pp. 268 of letter-press, and 121 leaves of facsimiles. Cloth. 1863. £4 4s.

**Manipulus Vocabulorum.**—A RHYMING DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. By Peter Levins (1570) Edited, with an Alphabetical Index, by Henry B. Wheatley. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 370. 1867. 14s.

**Mann.**—A FEW THOUGHTS FOR A YOUNG MAN. A Lecture delivered before the Boston Mercantile Library Association, on its 29th anniversary. By Horace Mann. Second Edition. 12mo. sewed., 56 pp. 1854. 6d.

- Mannheimer.**—THE STUDY OF GERMAN SIMPLIFIED in a New Systematic and Practical Grammar, according to the Systems of Ollendorff and Dr. Ahn. By H. Mannheimer. Third Edition, carefully revised, greatly enlarged, and improved. Post 8vo., stiff covers, pp. 270. 1864. 4s. 6d.
- Ditto. Ditto. Key to. 1s.
- Manning.**—INQUIRY INTO THE CHARACTER AND ORIGIN OF THE POSSESSIVE, AUGMENT, IN ENGLISH AND COGNATE DIALECTS. By James Manning, Q.A.S., Recorder of Oxford. Reprinted from the "Transactions of the Philological Society," with an Appendix and Index. 1 vol. crown 8vo., sewed, Pp. ii. and 90. 1864. 2s.
- Manning.**—THOUGHTS UPON SUBJECTS CONNECTED WITH PARLIAMENTARY REFORM. By James Manning, Her Majesty's Ancient Serjeant-at-Law. 8vo., sewed. Pp. 20. 1866. 1s.
- Manual of PUNCTUATION (A),** for Self-teaching and for Schools. By a Practical Printer. 12mo. pp. 40, limp cloth. 1859. 1s.
- Maritime CAPTURE.**—Shall England uphold the Capture of Private Property at Sea? By a Lawyer. Post 8vo. sewed, Pp. 40. 1866. 1s.
- Markham.**—QUICHUA GRAMMAR AND DICTIONARY. Contributions towards a Grammar and Dictionary of Quichua, the Language of the Yncas of Peru; collected by Clements R. Markham, F.S.A., Corr. Mem. of the University of Chili, Author of "Cuzco and Lima," and "Travels in Peru and India." In one vol., crown 8vo., pp. 150, cloth. 1864. 10s. 6d.
- Marmontel.**—BÉLISAIRE. Par Marmontel. Nouvelle édition, revue et corrigée par Ernest Brette, Chas. Cassal, Theod. Karker. 12mo. cloth, pp. xii. 123. 1867. 2s. 6d.
- Martin.**—THE AGE OF LOUIS XIV. By Henri Martin. Translated from the Fourth Paris Edition, with the author's sanction and co-operation. By Mary L. Boeth. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxii. and 563; viii. and 543. 1865. £1 16s.
- Martineau.**—LETTERS FROM IRELAND. By Harriet Martineau. Reprinted from the "Daily News." Post 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 220. 1852. 6s. 6d.
- Martineau.**—A HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN COMPROMISES. Reprinted (with additions) from the "Daily News." By Harriet Martineau. 8vo. pp. 35. 1856. 1s.
- Martineau.**—ESSAYS, PHILOSOPHICAL AND THEOLOGICAL. By James Martineau. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 424. 1866. 10s. 6d.
- MARX.**—THE SERF AND THE COSSACK. A Sketch of the Condition of the Russian People. By Francis Marx. Second Edition, enlarged. 12mo. sewed, pp. 60. 1865. 1s.
- Mason.**—BURMAH: ITS PEOPLE AND NATURAL PRODUCTIONS; or, Notes on the Nations, Fauna, Flora, and Minerals of Tenasserim, Pegu, and Burmah; with systematic Catalogues of the known Mammals, Birds, Fish, Reptiles, Insects, Molluscs, Crustaceans, Annalids, Radiates, Plants, and Minerals, with Vernacular Names. By Rev. F. Mason, D.D., M.R.A.S., Corresponding Member of the American Oriental Society, etc., etc. Second Edition, 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 913. 1860. 30s.

Massey, Gerald.—HAVELOCK'S MARCH } and other Poems. 12mo.  
cloth, pp. vii. and 269. 1861. 5s.

Mathura.—A TRILINGUAL DICTIONARY, being a comprehensive Lexicon in English, Urdú, and Hindí, exhibiting the Syllabication, Pronunciation, and Etymology of English Words, with their Explanation in English, and in Urdú and Hindí in the Roman Character. By Mathurá Prasáda Misra, Second Master, Queen's College, Benares. 8vo. cloth, pp. xiv. and 1330. 1865. £2 2s.

Matthay.—DEUTSCHE LITERATUR UND LESE-BUCH. German Literature and Reader. By T. Matthay, M.R.C.P., Professor of the Wimbledon College, Clapham Grammar School, and other Military and Ladies' Colleges, etc. Post 8vo., cloth, pp. viii. and 575. 1866. 7s. 6d.

Matthew.—SCHLESWIG-HOLSTEIN. By Patrick Matthew. 8vo. sewed, pp. 62. 1864. 1s.

Mayer PAPYRI, and the Palimpsest Manuscripts of Uranius belonging to M. Simonides, Report of the Council of the Royal Society of Literature, with letters from Messrs. Pertz, Ehrenberg, and Dindorf. 8vo. sewed, pp. 30. 1863. 1s.

Mayne.—THE LOST FRIEND. A Crimean Memory. And other Poems. By Colbourn Mayne, Esq. 12mo., cloth, pp. viii. and 134. 1857. 3s. 6d.

Mazzini.—AN ADDRESS TO POPE PIUS IX., on his Encyclical Letter. By Joseph Mazzini. 8vo., sewed, pp. 24. 4th Edition. 1865. 6d.

Medhurst.—CHINESE DIALOGUES, QUESTIONS, AND FAMILIAR SENTENCES, literally rendered into English, with a view to promote commercial intercourse, and assist beginners in the Language. By the late W. H. Medhurst, D.D. A new and enlarged edition. 8vo. sewed, pp. 225. 1863. 18s.

Meditations ON LIFE AND ITS RELIGIOUS DUTIES. Translated from the German by Frederica Rowan. Dedicated to H.R.H. Princess Louis of Hesse. Published by Her Majesty's gracious permission. Being the Companion Volume to "Meditations on Death and Eternity." 8vo. cloth, pp. 1863. 10s. 6d.

Ditto. Smaller Edition, crown 8vo., printed on toned paper, pp. 338. 1863. 6s.

Meditations ON DEATH AND ETERNITY. Translated from the German by Frederica Rowan. Published by Her Majesty's gracious permission. 8vo. cloth, pp. 386. 1862. 10s. 6d.

Ditto. Smaller Edition, crown 8vo. cloth, printed on toned paper, pp. 352. 1863. 6s.

Mellet.—SUNDAY AND THE SABBATH. Translated from the French of Louis Victor Mellet, Pastor of Yvorne. 12mo., sewed, pp. viii. 106. 1856. 1s.

Menke, Dr. T.—ORBIS ANTIQUI DESCRIPTIO: an Atlas illustrating Ancient History and Geography, for the Use of Schools; containing 18 Maps engraved on Steel and Coloured, with Descriptive Letter-press. 4th edition. Folio, half-bound morocco. 1866. 5s.

Mercer.—MOUNT CARMEL: A Poem. By Edward Smith Mercer. 12mo. sewed, pp. 80. 1867. 1s.

Mérimée.—COLOMBA. Par Prosper Mérimée, de l'Académie Française. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 210. 1867. 3s. 6d.

- Mertens.**—**HUIT JOURS À LONDRES**, Guide du touriste et du voyageur. Par Constant Merten. Small 4to. sewed, pp. 82. 1867. 3s.
- Michael.**—**THE SOCIAL GOSPEL**. By R. J. Michael. First English Edition. To be continued by "The Social Code" Crown 8vo. sewed, pp. 294. 1867. 2s. 6d.
- Michælis.**—**A NEW SYSTEM OF STENOGRAPHY OR SHORT-HAND**, on the Principles of W. Stolze. By Dr. Gustav Michælis. With 32 lithographic plates. 12mo. stiff covers, pp. viii. and 135. 1864. 3s.
- Michælis.**—**THE LITTLE TIRO.**—A Practical Compendium of English Shorthand. By Gustav Michælis. With Sixteen Lithographic Plates. 12mo. stiff covers, pp. 28. 1864. 1s.
- Michel.**—**LES ÉCOSSAIS EN FRANCE, LES FRANÇAIS EN ÉCOSSE**. Par Francisque Michel, Correspondant de l'Institut de France, etc. Handsomely bound in two Volumes, 8vo., in rich blue cloth, with emblematical design. Pp. vii. 547 and 551, with upwards of 100 Coats of Arms, and other Illustrations. Price £1 12s.—Also a Large Paper Edition (limited to 100 Copies), printed on Thick Paper. Two Volumes, 4to., half morocco, with three additional Steel Engravings. 1862. £3 3s.
- Michelena y Rojas.**—**EXPLORACION OFICIAL** por la primera vez desde el Norte de la América del Sur siempre por Rios, entrando por las Bocas del Orinóco, de los Valles de este mismo y del meta, casiquiare, Rio-Negro ó Guaynia y Amazónas, hasta nauta en el alto Marañon ó Amazónas, arriba de las Bocas del Ucayali bajada del Amazónas Hasta el Atlántico. Comprendiendo en ese inmenso espacio los Estados de Venezuela, Guayana Inglesa, Nueva-Granada, Brásil, Ecuador, Péru y Bolivia. Viaje a Rio de Janeiro desde belen en el Gran Pará, por el Atlántico, tocando en las Capitales de las principales provincias del Imperio en los años, de 1855 hasta 1859. Por F. Michelena y Rójas, Viajero al Rededor del Mundo, Miembro de la Real Sociedad Economica Matritense y de la Real Academia de Arqueologia y de Geografia de la Misma. Publicado bajo los Auspicios del Gobierno de los Estados Unidos de Venezuela. Royal 8vo. With Map. Sewed, pp. 684. 1867. 18s.
- Miles.**—**THE SOCIAL, POLITICAL AND COMMERCIAL ADVANTAGES** of Direct Steam Communication and Rapid Postal Intercourse between Europe and America, viâ Galway, Ireland. By Pliny Miles. Illustrated by a Map. 8vo. sewed, pp. 122. 1859. 1s.
- Mill.**—**THE ENFRANCHISEMENT OF WOMEN**. By Mrs. Stuart Mill. (Reprinted from the "Westminster Review.") 8vo. sewed, pp. 16. 1868. 1d.
- Mill.**—**AUGUSTE COMTE AND POSITIVISM**. By John Stuart Mill, Esq., M.P. 8vo. cloth, pp. 200. 1866. 6s.
- Mill.**—**SPEECH** of John Stuart Mill, Esq., M.P., on the Admission of Women to the Electoral Franchise, spoken in the House of Commons, May 20th, 1867. 8vo. sewed, pp. 18. 1867. 6d.
- Millhouse.**—**NEW ENGLISH AND ITALIAN PRONOUNCING AND EXPLANATORY DICTIONARY**. By John Millhouse. Vol. I. English-Italian. Vol. II. Italian-English. Two vols. square 8vo. cloth. 3rd edition, with Numerous Additions and Improvements. Pp. 608 and 740. 1867. 12s.
- Millhouse, John.**—**MANUAL OF ITALIAN CONVERSATION**. For the Use of Schools. 13mo. cloth, pp. 126., 1866. 2s.

**Miscegenation: THE THEORY OF THE BLENDING OF THE RACES,** applied to the American White Man and Negro. 12mo. cloth, pp. 92. 1864. 2s. 6d.

**Modern FRENCH READER (The).** Edited by the Rev. P. H. Ernest Brette, B.D., of Christ's Hospital, London; Professor Ch. Cassal, LL.D., of University College, London, and Theodor Karcher, LL.B., of the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich, former and present Examiner in the University of London, and for the Civil Service of India. Crown 8vo. cloth. 1868. 2s. 6d.

**Moffat.**—THE "STANDARD-ALPHABET" PROBLEM; or, the Preliminary Subject of a General Phonic System considered, on the basis of some important Facts in the Sechwana Language of South Africa, and in Reference to the Views of Professors Lepsius, Max Müller, and others. A Contribution to Phonic Philology, by Robert Moffat, jun., Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxviii. and 174. 1864. 7s. 6d.

**Molesworth.**—A DICTIONARY, MARATHI AND ENGLISH. Compiled by J. T. Molesworth, assisted by George and Thomas Candy. Second Edition, revised and enlarged, by J. T. Molesworth. Royal 4to. pp. xxx. and 922, boards. 1857. £3 3s.

**MOOR.**—THE HINDU PANTHEON. By Edward Moor, F.R.S. A New Edition, with additional Plates, Condensed and Annotated, by the Rev. W. O. Simpson. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 402. With a Frontispiece and 59 Plates. 1864. £2 8s.

**Morell.**—RUSSIA AND ENGLAND; their Strength and their Weakness. By John Reynell Morell, Author of "Russia as it is," etc. 12mo. sewed, pp. 104. 1852. 1s.

**Morgan.**—A DICTIONARY OF TERMS USED IN PRINTING. By H. Morgan, Government Printing Establishment. 8vo. cloth, pp. 136. 1863. 7s. 6d.

**Morgan.**—THE DUKE'S DAUGHTER. A Classic Tragedy, Acting Edition. Pp. 78, roan. 5s.

**Morley.**—A DESCRIPTIVE CATALOGUE of the Historical Manuscripts in the Arabic and Persian Languages preserved in the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland. By William H. Morley, M.R.A.S. 8vo., pp. viii. and 160, sewed. 1854. 2s. 6d.

**Morley.**—SUNRISE IN ITALY, etc. Reveries. By Henry Morley. 4to. cloth, pp. 164. 1848. 7s. 6d.

**Morrison.**—A DICTIONARY OF THE CHINESE LANGUAGE. By the Rev. R. Morrison, D.D. New Edition. 2 vols. small 4to. cloth. Vol. 1, pp. ix. and 762. Vol. 2, pp. 827. 1865. £4 4s.

**Motley.**—CAUSES OF THE CIVIL WAR IN AMERICA. By John Lothrop Motley, LL.D. Reprinted from the "Times." 8vo. sewed, pp. 30. 1861. 1s.

**Muhammed.**—THE LIFE OF MUHAMMED. Based on Muhammed Ibn Ishak. By Ajal El Malik Ibn Ishaq. Edited by Dr. Ferdinand Wüstenfeld. One volume containing the Arabic Text. 8vo. sewed, pp. 1026. 21s. Another Volume, containing Introduction, Notes, and Index in German. 8vo. sewed, pp. lxxii. and 266. 7s. 6d. Each part sold separately.

The text based on the Manuscripts of the Berlin, Leipzig, Gotha, and Leyden Libraries, has been carefully revised by the learned editor, and printed with the utmost exactness.

- Muir.**—ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS, on the Origin and History of the People of India, their Religion and Institutions. Collected, Translated, and Illustrated by J. Muir, Esq., D.C.L., LL.D. Volume First: Mythical and Legendary Accounts of the Origin of Caste, with an inquiry into its existence in the Vedic age. Second Edition. Re-written and greatly enlarged. 8vo. pp. xx. and 532, cloth. 1868. 21s.
- Muir.**—ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS, on the Origin and History of the People of India, their Religion and Institutions. Collected, Translated, and Illustrated by J. Muir, Esq., D.C.L., LL.D. Volume Third. The Vedas: Opinions of their Authors, and of later Indian Writers, on their Origin, Inspiration, and Authority. Second Edition, Enlarged. [In the press.]
- Muir.**—ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS, on the Origin and History of the People of India, their Religion and Institutions. Collected, Translated into English, and Illustrated by Remarks, by J. Muir, D.C.L., LL.D. Vol. Fourth. Comparison of the Vedic with the later representation of the principal Indian Deities. 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 440. 1863. 15s.
- Mullhall.**—COTTON FIELDS OF PARAGUAY AND CORRIENTES; being an Account of a Tour through these Countries, preceded by Annals of Cotton Planting in the River Plate Territories, from 1862 to 1864. By Michael G. Mullhall. Square 8vo. sewed, pp. 120. 1866. 5s.
- Müller.**—PARALLÈLE ENTRE JULES CÉSAR, par Shakspeare, et La Mort de César, par Monsieur de Voltaire. Faite par Robert Müller, Philos. Doctor. 12mo. sewed, pp. 20. 1864. 1s.
- Müller.**—THE SACRED HYMNS OF THE BRAHMINS, as Preserved to us in the Oldest Collections of Religious Poetry, "The Rig Veda-Sanhita." Translated and Explained. By Max Müller, M.A., Taylorian Professor of Modern European Languages in the University of Oxford, Fellow of All Souls College. In 8 vols. [Vol. I. in the press.]
- Müller.**—OUTLINE DICTIONARY for the Use of Missionaries, Explorers and Students of Language. With an Introduction on the proper Use of the Ordinary English Alphabet in transcribing Foreign Languages. By Max Müller, M.A., Taylorian Professor in the University of Oxford. The Vocabulary compiled by John Bellows. 12mo. morocco, pp. 368. 1867. 7s. 6d.
- Munch.**—WILLIAM AND RACHAEL RUSSELL; A Tragedy, in Five Acts. By Andreas Munch. Translated from the Norwegian, and Published under the Special Sanction of the Poet. By John Heyliger Burt. 12mo. pp. 126. 1862. 3s. 6d.
- Münchhausen, Baron.**—THE TRAVELS AND SURPRISING ADVENTURES OF. With Thirty original Illustrations (Ten full-page coloured plates and twenty woodcuts), by Alfred Crowquill. Crown 8vo. ornamental cover, richly gilt front and back, pp. xii. and 194. 1859. 7s. 6d.
- Munroe.**—THE PHYSIOLOGICAL ACTION OF ALCOHOL. A Lecture delivered at the Royal Institution, Hull. By Henry Munroe, M.D., F.J.S. 8vo. sewed, pp. 35. 1865. 6d.
- Nahl.**—INSTRUCTIONS IN GYMNASTICS. By Arthur and Charles Nahl. Illustrated with 53 plates. Containing several hundred figures, Designed and Engraved by the Authors; representing the various exercises on the ground, the Vaulting Horse, Parallel Bars, Horizontal Bars, Rings, etc., including construction of Pyramids, Plan of Apparatus, etc. 4to. cloth, pp. 67. 1865. £1 1s.

**Nayler.**—AN APPEAL from the Prejudices to the Judgments of the Thinking Inhabitants of Pembrokeshire on the Sabbath Question. By B. S. Nayler. Small 4to. sewed, pp. 64. 1859. 1s.

**Neale.**—MY COMRADE AND MY COLOURS; or, Men who know not when they are Beaten. By Rev. E. Neale. 12mo. sewed, pp. 135. 1854. 1s.

**Neutrals AND BELLIGERENTS.**—The Rights of Neutrals and Belligerents, from a Modern Point of View. By a Civilian. 8vo. sewed, pp. 41. 1862. 1s.

**NEW UNIVERSAL DICTIONARY** of the English, French, Italian, and German Languages, arranged after a new system. Small 8vo. cloth, pp. 1200. 1865. 7s. 6d.

**Newman**—THE DIFFICULTIES OF ELEMENTARY GEOMETRY, especially those which concern the straight line, the plane, and the theory of parallels. By Francis William Newman, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. 8vo. boards, pp. viii. and 144. 1841. 5s.

**Newman.**—ON THE RELATIONS OF FREE KNOWLEDGE TO MORAL SENTIMENT. A Lecture delivered in University College, London, on the 13th of October, 1847, as introductory to the Session of 1847-1848. By Francis W. Newman, Professor of Latin, and formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1847. 1s.

**Newman.**—LECTURES ON POLITICAL ECONOMY. By Francis William Newman. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 342. 1851. 5s.

"The most able and instructive book, which exhibits, we think, no less moral than economical wisdom."—*Prospective Review*.

**Newman.**—A REPLY TO THE ECLIPSE OF FAITH; being Chapter IX. of the Second Edition of the Phases of Faith. By F. W. Newman. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 28. 1853. 6d.

**Newman.**—THE ODES OF HORACE. Translated into Unrhymed Metres, with Introduction and Notes. By F. W. Newman, Professor of Latin, University College, London. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xxi. and 247. 1853. 5s.

**Newman.**—THE CRIMES OF THE HOUSE OF HAPSBURG AGAINST ITS OWN LIEGE SUBJECTS. By F. W. Newman. 8vo. sewed, pp. 60. 1853. 1s.

**Newman.**—THE ILLIAD OF HOMER, faithfully translated into Unrhymed Metre. By F. W. Newman, Professor of Latin in University College, London. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xxii. and 436. 1856. 6s. 6d.

**Newman.**—THEISM, DOCTRINAL AND PRACTICAL; or, Didactic Religious Utterances. By Francis W. Newman. 4to. cloth, pp. 184. 1858. 8s. 6d.

**Newman.**—THE RELATIONS OF PROFESSIONAL TO LIBERAL KNOWLEDGE. A Lecture delivered in University College, London, October 12, 1859. Introductory to the Session of the Faculty of Arts and Laws, 1859-1860. By Francis W. Newman, Professor of Latin, and formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. 8vo. sewed, pp. 30. 1859. 1s.

**Newman.**—HOMERIC TRANSLATION IN THEORY AND PRACTICE. A Reply to Matthew Arnold, Esq., Professor of Poetry, Oxford. By Francis W. Newman, a Translator of the Iliad. Crown, 8vo. stiff covers, pp. 104. 1861. 2s. 6d.

- Newman.—**HIAWATHA**: Rendered into Latin. With Abridgment. By Francis William Newman, Professor of Latin in University College, London. 12mo. sewed, pp. vii. and 110. 1862. 2s. 6d.
- Newman.—**THE SOUL**: Her Sorrows and her Aspirations. An Essay towards the Natural History of the Soul, as the Basis of Theology. By Francis William Newman, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. New ed., post 8vo. cloth, pp. xi. and 162. 1868. 3s. 6d.
- Newman.—**A DISCOURSE AGAINST HERO-MAKING IN RELIGION**, delivered in South Place, Finsbury. By Francis W. Newman. Printed by request, with enlargements. 8vo. sewed, pp. 30. 1864. 1s.
- Newman.—**CATHOLIC UNION**: Essays towards a Church of the future, as the organization of Philanthropy. By F. W. Newman. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 113. 1864. 3s. 6d.
- Newman.—**A HISTORY OF THE HEWREW MONARCHY** from the Administration of Samuel to the Babylonish Captivity. By Francis William Newman, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford, and Author of "The Soul; its Sorrows and Aspirations," etc. Third edition, crown 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 354. 1865. 8s. 6d.
- Newman.—**PHASES OF FAITH**; or, Passages from the History of my Creed. New Edition; with Reply to Professor Henry Rogers, Author of the "Eclipse of Faith." Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 212. 1865. 3s. 6d.
- Newman.—**ENGLISH INSTITUTIONS AND THEIR MOST NECESSARY REFORMS**. A Contribution of Thought. By Francis W. Newman. 8vo. pp. 32. 1865. 6d.
- Newman.—**THE PERMISSIVE BILL MORE URGENT THAN ANY EXTENSION OF THE FRANCHISE**. An Address at Ramsgate, February 17th, 1865. By F. W. Newman. 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1865. 1d.
- Newman.—**A HANDBOOK OF MODERN ARABIC**: consisting of a Practical Grammar, with numerous examples, etc. By F. W. Newman. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xxx. and 190. 1866. 6s.
- Newman.—**ON THE PHILOSOPHICAL CLASSIFICATION OF NATIONAL INSTITUTIONS**. A Lecture delivered at the Bristol Institution for the Advancement of Science, Literature, and the Arts, March 4th, 1867. By F. W. Newman. Published by Request. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1867. 6d.
- Newman.—**THE TEXT OF THE IGUVINE INSCRIPTIONS**. With Inter-linear Latin Translation and Notes. By Francis W. Newman. 8vo. sewed, pp. 56. 1868. 2s.
- Newman.—**TRANSLATIONS OF ENGLISH POETRY INTO LATIN VERSE**. Designed as Part of a New Method of Instructing in Latin. By Francis W. Newman, Emeritus Professor of University College, London, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. In 1 crown 8vo. vol. cloth, pp. xiv. and 202. 1868. 6s.
- Newton.—**THE OPERATION OF THE PATENT LAWS**, with Suggestions for their better Administration. By A. V. Newton. 8vo. sewed, pp. 31. 1864. 6d.
- Nicholson.—**E PUR SI MUOQUE**. By N. A. Nicholson, M.A., Trinity College, Oxford. 8vo. cloth, pp. 115. 1866. 2s. 6d.



**Nicholson.**—ONE RESERVE OR MANY? Thoughts Suggested by the Crisis of 1866. By N. A. Nicholson, M.A., Trinity College, Oxford. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 21, 1867. 1s.

**Nicholson.**—THE CONTROVERSY ON FREE BANKING, being a few observations on an Article in "Fraser's Magazine," January, 1868. By N. A. Nicholson, M.A., Trinity College, Oxford. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1868. 1s.

**Nicholson.**—OBSERVATIONS ON COINAGE, SEIGNORAGE, - etc., etc. By N. A. Nicholson, M.A., Trinity College, Oxford. 8vo. sewed, pp. 22. 1868. 1s.

**Norton.**—A TREATISE ON ASTRONOMY, SPHERICAL AND PHYSICAL; with Astronomical Problems, and Solar, Lunar, and other Astronomical Tables, for the use of Colleges, and Scientific Schools. By William A. Norton, M.A., Professor of Civil Engineering in Yale College. Fourth Edition. Revised, remodelled, and enlarged. 8vo. cloth, pp. 574. With numerous plates. 1867. 15s.

**Notes and Queries ON CHINA AND JAPAN.** Edited by N. B. Dennys. Vol. 1. January to December, 1867. Royal 8vo., double columns, pp. 186, sewed. £1 1s.

**Nott.**—LECTURES ON BIBLICAL TEMPERANCE. By Eliphalet Nott, D.D. With an Introduction. By Taylor Lewis, LL.D. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 268. 1863. 6s.

Ditto. Ditto. sewed. 1863. 1s.

**Nott and Gliddon.**—TYPES OF MANKIND; or, Ethnological Researches based upon the Ancient Monuments, Paintings, Sculptures, and Crania of Races, and upon their Natural, Geographical, Philological, and Biblical History. By J. C. Nott, M.D., Mobile, Alabama; and Geo. R. Gliddon, formerly U.S. Consul at Cairo. Plates. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. 738. 1854. £1 5s.

**Nott and Gliddon.**—THE SAME, in 4to. £1 16s.

**Nott and Gliddon.**—INDIGENOUS RACES OF THE EARTH: or, New Chapters of Ethnological Inquiry: including Monographs on Special Departments of Philology, Iconography, Craniology, Palæontology, Pathology, Archæology, Comparative Geography, and Natural History, contributed by Alfred Maury, Francis Pulszky, and J. Aitken Meigs, M.D.; presenting Fresh Investigations, Documents, and Materials, by J. C. Nott, M.D., and Geo. R. Gliddon. Plates and Maps. 4to. pp. 656, sewed. 1857. £1 16s.

**Nott and Gliddon.**—THE SAME, royal 8vo. £1 5s.

**Nouvelles PLAISANTES RECHERCHES d'un Homme Grave sur quelques Farceurs.** 8vo. pp. 58. 1863. 10s. 6d.

**Novalis.**—CHRISTIANITY OF EUROPE. By Novalis (Frederick Von Hardenberg). Translated from the German by the Rev. John Dalton. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 34. 1844. 1s.

**Nugent's IMPROVED FRENCH AND ENGLISH AND ENGLISH AND FRENCH POCKET DICTIONARY.** Par Smith. 2mo. cloth, pp. 489 and 320. 1867. 3s.

**Nyström.**—POCKET BOOK OF MECHANICS AND ENGINEERING, containing a Memorandum of Facts and Connections of Practice and Theory. By John W. Nyström, C.E. 10th Edition, pp. 326. Revised with additional matter. 12mo. roan with tuck. 1867. 7s. 6d.

- Oehlschlager's GERMAN-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-GERMAN Pocket Pronouncing Dictionary. New edition, 24mo. strongly bound in cloth. 4s.
- Ogareff.—ESSAI SUR LA SITUATION RUSSE. Lettres à un Anglais. Par N. Ogareff. 12mo. sewed, pp. 150. 1862. 3s.
- Oliver.<sup>4s</sup>—A TRANSLATION OF THE SYRIAC PESHITO VERSION OF THE PSALMS OF DAVID, with notes, critical and explanatory. By the Rev. Andrew Oliver, M.A. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xiv. and 332. 1861. 7s. 6d.
- Ollendorff.—MÉTODO PARA APRENDU A LEER, describir y hablar el Inglés segun el sistema de Ollendorff. Por Ramon Palenzuela y Juan de la Carreño. 8vo. cloth, pp. xlvii. and 460. 1867. 7s. 6d.
- Key to ditto. 12mo. cloth, pp. 111. 1863. 5s.
- Omnibus, The.—A SATIRE. Crown 8vo. limp cloth, pp. 44. 1865. 2s. 6d.
- O'Neill.—THE FINE ARTS AND CIVILIZATION OF ANCIENT IRELAND, illustrated with chromo and other lithographs, and several woodcuts. By Henry O'Neill, author of the work on "The most interesting of the Sculptured Crosses of Ancient Ireland." 4to. pp. vi. and 118, cloth. 1863. 15s.
- Oriental Text Society Publications.**
1. THEOPHANIA, or Divine Manifestations of our Lord and Saviour. By Eusebius, Bishop of Caesarea, Syriac. Edited by Professor S. Lee. 8vo. 1842. 15s.
  2. ATHANASIUS' FESTAL LETTERS, discovered in an ancient Syriac version. Edited by the Rev. W. Cureton. 8vo. 1848. 15s.
  3. SHAHRASTANI: Book of Religious and Philosophical Sects, in Arabic. Two parts. 8vo. 1842. 30s.
  4. UMDAT AKIDAT ahl al Sunnat wa al Tamaat; Pillar of the Creed of the Sunnites. Edited in Arabic by the Rev. W. Cureton. 8vo. 1843. 5s.
  5. HISTORY OF THE ALMOHADES. Edited in Arabic by Dr. R. P. A. Dozy. 8vo. 1847. 10s. 6d.
  6. SAMA VEDA. Edited in Sanskrit by the Rev. G. Stevenson. 8vo. 1843. 12s.
  7. DASA KUMARA CHARITA. Edited in Sanskrit by Professor H. H. Wilson. 8vo. 1846. 15s.
  8. MAHA VIRA CHARITA, or a History of Rama. A Sanskrit Play. Edited by F. H. Trithen. 8vo. 1848. 15s.
  9. MAKHZAN UL ASRAR; the Treasury of Secrets. By Nizami. Edited in Persian by N. Bland. 4to. 1844. 10s. 6d.
  10. SALAMAN-U-UBSAL; a Romance of Jami (Dshami). Edited in Persian by F. Falconer. 4to. 1843. 10s.
  11. MIRKHAND'S HISTORY OF THE ATABEKS. Edited in Persian by W. H. Morley. 8vo. 1850. 12s.
  12. TUHFAT-UL-AHRAR; the Gift of the Noble. A Poem by Jami (Dshami). Edited in Persian by F. Falconer. 4to. 1843. 10s.
- Oswald.—AUSTRIA IN 1868. By Eugene Oswald. Reprinted from the "English Leader." 8vo. sewed, pp. 40. 1868. 1s.
- Orthodox Catholic Review (THE). Edited by Professor J. J. Overbeck. Vol. 1. 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 290. 1868. 7s. 6d.

**Osburn.**—THE MONUMENTAL HISTORY OF EGYPT, as recorded on the Ruins of her Temples, Palaces, and Tombs. By William Osburn, F.S.L. Illustrated with Maps, Plates, etc. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 461; vii. and 643. 1854. £2 2s.

Vol. I. From the Colonization of the Valley to the Visit of the Patriarch Abram.  
Vol. II. From the Visit of Abram to the Exodus.

**Ott.**—THE ART OF MANUFACTURING SOAP AND CANDLES, including the most recent discoveries, embracing all kinds of ordinary Hard, Soft, and Toilet Soaps, especially those made by the Cold Process, the modes of detecting frauds, and the making of Tallow and Composite Candles. By Adolph Ott, Ph. D., Practical and Analytical Chemist. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxi. and 193. 1867. 10s. 6d.

**Our North-West Frontier.** With Map. 8vo. sewed, pp. 20. 1856. 1s.

**Our Resources.** A Series of Articles on the Financial and Political Condition of the United States. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1864. 1s.

**Overbeck.**—CATHOLIC ORTHODOXY AND ANGLICO-CATHOLICISM. A Word about the Intercommunion between the English and Orthodox Churches. By J. J. Overbeck, D.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 209. 1866. 5s.

**Overman.**—MECHANICS FOR THE MILLWRIGHT, MACHINIST, ENGINEER, CIVIL ENGINEER, ARCHITECT, AND STUDENT; containing a clear elementary exposition of the Principles and Practice of Building Machines. By Frederick Overman, Author of "The Manufacture of Iron," and other scientific treatises. Illustrated by 154 fine Wood Engravings by William Gihon. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 420. 1864. 7s.

**Overman.**—PRACTICAL MINERALOGY, ASSAYING AND MINING, with a Description of the useful Minerals, and instructions for Assaying and Mining according to the simplest methods. By Frederick Overman, mining engineer, Author of "Manufacture of Iron," and other works of applied sciences. Fifth Edition. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 230. 1862. 4s. 6d.

**Overman.**—THE MANUFACTURE OF STEEL; containing the Practice and Principles of working and making Steel. A hand-book for blacksmiths and workers in steel and iron, wagon-makers, die-sinbers, cutlers, and manufacturers of files and hardware, of steel and iron, and for men of science and art. By Frederick Overman, Mining Engineer; Author of the "Manufacture of Iron," etc. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 226. 1860. 4s. 6d.

**Overman.**—THE MOULDER'S AND FOUNDER'S POCKET GUIDE. A Treatise on moulding and founding in green-sand, dry-sand, loam, and cement; the moulding of machine frames, mill-gear, hollow ware, ornaments, trinkets, bells, and statues; description of moulds for iron, bronze, brass, and other metals; plaster of Paris, sulphur, wax, and other articles commonly used in casting; the construction of melting furnaces, the melting and foundering of metals; the composition of alloys and their nature. With an Appendix, containing receipts for alloys, bronze, varnishes and colours for castings, also tables on the strength and other qualities of cast metals. By Frederick Overman, Mining Engineer; Author of "The Manufacture of Iron," "a Treatise on Steel," etc., etc. With 42 Wood Engravings, Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 252. 1866. 4s. 6d.

**Owen.**—FOOTFALLS ON THE BOUNDARY OF ANOTHER WORLD. An enlarged English Copyright Edition. Ten editions of this work have been sold within a very short time in America. In the present edition, the author has introduced a considerable quantity of new matter. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 392. 1861. 7s. 6d.

**Owlglass (MASTER TYLL).—THE MARVELLOUS ADVENTURES AND RARE CONCEITS OF.** Edited, with an Introduction, and a Critical and Bibliographical Appendix. By Kenneth R. H. Mackenzie, F.S.A., with six coloured full-page Illustrations, and twenty-six Woodcuts, from original designs by Alfred Crowquill. Cloth gilt, pp. xix. and 255. 1860. 10s. 6d.

**Oyster (THE): WHERE, HOW, AND WHEN TO FIND, BREED, COOK, AND EAT IT.** Second Edition, with a new chapter, 'The Oyster-Seeker in London.' 12mo. boards, pp. viii. and 106. 1863. 1s.

**Page.—LA PLATA, THE ARGENTINE CONFEDERATION AND PARAGUAY.** Being a Narrative of the Exploration of the Tributaries of the River La Plata and adjacent countries during the years 1852, 1854, 1855, and 1856, under the orders of the United States Government. By Thomas J. Page, U. S. N. Commander of the Expedition. With Map and numerous Engravings. New Edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. 632. £1 1s.

**Palmer.—EGYPTIAN CHRONICLES,** with a Harmony of Sacred and Egyptian Chronology, and an Appendix on Babylonian and Assyrian Antiquities. By William Palmer, M.A., and late Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. lxxiv. 423, viii. and 636. 1861. 12s.

**Palmerston.—LORD PALMERSTON.** By R. H. Reprinted from the *Westminster Review* for January, 1866. 8vo. sewed, pp. 36. 1866. 1s.

**Pandit (THE).—A MONTHLY JOURNAL OF BENARES COLLEGE,** devoted to Sanskrit Literature. Vol. 1. Nos. 1 to 24, November, 1866, to May, 1868. Folio sewed, pp. 184. £2 8s.

The object of the *Pandit* is to publish rare Sanskrit works which appear worthy of careful editing hereafter; to offer a field for the discussion of controverted points in Old Indian Philosophy, Philology, History, and Literature; to communicate ideas between the Aryan scholars of the East and of the West; between the Pandits of Benares and Calcutta and the Sanskritists of the Universities of Europe.

The Journal, which will be enlarged as soon as the subscriptions cover the actual expenses of publication, will contain also Original Articles in Sanskrit and English, Critical Notices of new Sanskrit Books, and Translations from and into Sanskrit.

Annual subscription, 24s. Intending subscribers are requested to address the European Publishers.

**Papers ON PICTURE FLAYING AT THE NATIONAL GALLERY.** Reprinted from the *Weekly Despatch*. By an Artist. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 44. 1867. 1s.

**Parker.—THE PUBLIC FUNCTION OF WOMAN.** A Sermon preached at the Music Hall, March 27, 1853. By Theodore Parker. Post 8vo. sewed. 1855. 1s.

**Parker.—THE COLLECTED WORKS OF THEODORE PARKER,** Minister of the Twenty-Eighth Congregational Society at Boston, U.S. Containing his Theological, Polemical, and Critical Writings; Sermons, Speeches, and Addresses; and Literary Miscellanies. Edited by Frances Power Cobbe. In 12 vols. 8vo., 1863 to 1865.

Vol. I. Containing Discourses on Matters pertaining to Religion; with Preface by the Editor, and a Portrait of Parker, from a medallion by Saulini. Cloth, pp. 380. 6s.

Vol. II. Containing Ten Sermons and Prayers. Cloth, pp. 360. 6s.

Vol. III. Containing Discourses of Religion. Cloth, pp. 318. 6s.

Vol. IV. Containing Discourses on Politics. Cloth, pp. 312. 6s.

Vol. V. Containing Discourses of Slavery, Vol. I. Cloth, pp. 336. 6s.

Vol. VI. Containing Discourses of Slavery, Vol. II. Cloth, pp. 323. 6s.

Vol. VII. Containing Discourses of Social Science. Cloth, pp. 296. 6s.

Vol. VIII. Contains Miscellaneous Discourses. Cloth, pp. 230. 6s.

Vol. IX. Containing Critical Writings, Vol. I. Cloth, pp. 292. 6s.

Vol. X. Containing Critical Writings, Vol. II. Cloth, pp. 308. 6s.

Vol. XI. Containing Sermons of Theism, Atheism, and Popular Theology. Cloth, pp. 257. 6s.

Vol. XII. Autobiographical and Miscellaneous pieces. Cloth, pp. 356. 6s.

- Parker.—LESSONS FROM THE WORLD OF MATTER AND THE WORLD OF MAN; being Selections from the unpublished Sermons of Theodore Parker. By Rufus Leighton, and Edited by Frances Power Cobbe. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xix. and 332. 1865. 7s. 6d.
- Parker.—THE CRITICAL WRITINGS OF THEODORE PARKER. Edited by Frances Power Cobbe. 2 vols. 8vo., cloth, pp. 600. 1864-5. 12s.
- Parrish.—A TREATISE ON PHARMACY; designed as a Text Book for the Student, and as a Guide to the Physician and Pharmaceutist. Containing the official and many unofficial formulas, and many examples of extemporaneous prescriptions. By Edward Parrish, Professor of Materia Medica in the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy. Third Edition, revised with important additions. 238 illustrations. 8vo. cloth, pp. 850. £1 4s.
- Partnership, WITH LIMITED LIABILITY. Reprinted, with additions, from the *Westminster Review*. New Series, No. 8, October, 1853. Post 8vo., sewed, pp. 63. 1854. 1s.
- Partridge.—THE MAKING OF THE AMERICAN NATION; or, the Rise and Decline of Oligarchy in the West. Showing how the American Nation and Democracy have been made, and what they are, with considerations on their tendency and destiny. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxxvii. and 523. 1866. 16s.
- Partridge.—ON DEMOCRACY. By J. Arthur Partridge. 8vo. cloth, pp. 418. 1866. 10s.
- Parvula; OR A FEW LITTLE RHYMES ABOUT A FEW LITTLE FLOWERS, A FEW LITTLE BIRDS, AND A FEW LITTLE GIRLS; to which are added a Few Little Songs, and a Few other Little Things, by Minimus. 18mo. cloth, pp. 192. 1864. 5s.
- Patell. — COWASJEE PATEL'S CHRONOLOGY, containing corresponding dates of the different eras used by Christians, Jews, Greeks, Hindus, Mohamedans, Parsees, Chinese, Japanese, etc. By Cowasjee Sorabjee Patell, 4to. cloth, pp. viii. and 183. 1866. £2 10s.
- Paterson.—TREATISE ON MILITARY DRAWING. With a Course of 25 Progressive Plates. By Captain W. Paterson, Professor of Military Drawing at the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. Oblong 4to. cloth, pp. xii. and 31. 1862. £1 1s.
- Paton.—RESEARCHES ON THE DANUBE AND THE ADRIATIC; or, Contributions to the Modern History of Hungary and Transylvania, Dalmatia, and Croatia, Servia and Bulgaria. By A. A. Paton, F.R.G.S. In 2 vols. 12mo., cloth, pp. 830. 1861. 12s.
- Paton.—A HISTORY OF THE EGYPTIAN REVOLUTION, from the Period of the Mamelukes to the Death of Mohammed Ali; from Arab and European Memoirs, Oral Tradition, and Local Research. By A. A. Paton, F.R.G.S., Author of "Researches on the Danube and the Adriatic." 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. xii., 395, and viii. 352. 1863. £1 4s.
- Paton.—SKETCHES OF THE UGLY SIDE OF HUMAN NATURE. By A. A. Paton. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 302. 1868. 7s. 6d.

- Percy. — BISHOP PERCY'S *RAPLO* MANUSCRIPT — BALLADS AND ROMANCES. Edited by John W. Hales, M.A., Fellow and late Assistant Tutor of Christ's College, Cambridge; and Frederick J. Furnivall, M.A., of Trinity Hall, Cambridge; assisted by Professor Child, of Harvard University, U.S.A., W. Chappell, Esq., &c. In 3 vols. Vol. 1, pp. 610. Vol. 2, pp. 681. Vol. 3, pp. 640. Demy 8vo., half-bound, £2 2s. Extra demy 8vo., half-bound, on Whatman's ribbed paper, £3 15s. Extra royal 8vo., paper covers, on Whatman's best ribbed paper, £5 5s. Large 4to., paper covers, on Whatman's best ribbed paper, £10 10s.
- Perrin. — AN ENGLISH-ZULU DICTIONARY. By J. Perrin. New Edition, revised by J. A. Brickhiel, Interpreter to the Supreme Court of Natal. 16mo. cloth, pp. 226. Pietermaritzburg. 1865. 5s.
- Petőfi. — POEMS, Selected from the Works of the Great Hungarian Bard, Alexander Petőfi. Translated from the Magyar, with a Biographical and Critical Introduction by Sir John Bowring, K.C.B., LL.D., &c., &c. Fcap. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 239. 1866. 5s.
- Petrucelli. — PRELIMINAIRES DE LA QUESTION ROMAINE DE M. Ed. About. Par F. Petrucelli de la Gattina. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 364. 1860. 7s. 6d.
- Petzholdt. — BIBLIOTHECA BIBLIOGRAPHICA. Kritisches Verzeichniss der das Gesamtgebiet der Bibliographie betreffenden Litteratur des In- und Auslandes. In Systematischer Ordnung bearbeitet von Dr. Julius Petzholdt. Mit Alphabetischem Namen- und Sachregister. Royal 8vo., paper covers, pp. 939. 1866. 12s.
- Philological Society. — PROPOSALS FOR THE PUBLICATION OF A NEW ENGLISH DICTIONARY. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1859. 6d.
- Pick. — A NEW METHOD OF STUDYING FOREIGN LANGUAGES. By Dr. Edward Pick. The French Language, Part 1, the Genders and Irregular Verbs. Part 2, New Method of Studying the Language. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 212. 1863. 3s. 6d.
- Pick. — ON MEMORY AND THE RATIONAL MEANS OF IMPROVING IT. By Dr. Edward Pick. Fourth Edition, with new Applications to the Study of the French and German Languages. Royal 18mo. cloth, pp. vi. and 20. 1866. 3s. 6d.
- Pick. — ON MEMORY. By Dr. Edward Pick. A Condensed Edition. Royal 18mo. limp, pp. 140. 1866. 1s. 6d.
- Pickering. — THE GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION OF ANIMALS AND PLANTS. By Charles Pickering, M.D. 4to. cloth, pp. 214. 1864. 15s.
- Picture Flaying (PAPERS ON) AT THE NATIONAL GALLERY. Reprinted from the *Weekly Dispatch*. By an Artist. 8vo. sewed, pp. 44. 1867. 1s.
- Piggot. — CHEMISTRY AND METALLURGY, as applied to the study and practice of Dental Surgery. By A. Snowden Piggot, M.D., late Professor of Anatomy and Physiology in the Washington University of Baltimore. With numerous Illustrations. 8vo. cloth, pp. 516. 1854. 18s.
- Piggot. — THE CHEMISTRY AND METALLURGY OF COPPER, including a description of the principal Copper Mines of the United States and other countries, the art of mining and preparing ores for market, and the various processes of Copper Smelting, &c. By A. Snowden Piggot, M.D., Analytical and Consulting Chemist. With Illustrations. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 388. 1858. 7s. 6d.

- ‘Pilgrims of Fashion.—A NOVEL. By R. C. 8vo. pp. xvi. and 338. Cloth. 1862. 16s.
- ‘Pim.—THE NEGRO AND JAMAICA. By Commander Bedford Pim, R.N. Read before the Anthropological Society of London, February 1st, 1866, at St. James’s Hall. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. vii. and 32. 1866. 1s.
- ‘Pirazzi.—L’ANGLETERRE ET L’ALLEMAGNE À PROPOS DU SCHZESWIG-HOLSTEIN. Par Emile Pirazzi. Mémoire envoyé à plusieurs membres du parlement Anglais et suivi d’un article à l’adresse du *Times*. 8vo. sewed, pp. 180. 1865. 2s. 6d.
- Plain Papers.—By Pikestaff. Vol. I. 12mo. cloth, pp. vii. and 144. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Plumb-Line (THE); OR THE TRUE SYSTEM OF THE INTERPRETATION OF SCRIPTURE. Also Queries on the Foregoing Subjects. 8vo. sewed, pp. iv. and 63. 1861. 1s.
- Poe.—THE WORKS OF EDGAR ALLAN POE. In 4 vols., crown 8vo. cloth. Vol. 1, pp. lv. and 433. Vol. 2, pp. xxvi. and 495. Vol. 3, pp. 607. Vol. 4, pp. 447. 1866. £1 12s.
- Policy OF THE DANISH GOVERNMENT AND THE “MISUNDERSTANDINGS.” A Key to the Budget Dispute. 8vo. sewed, pp. 74. 1861. 1s.
- Political (THE).—PROBLEM OF THE DAY. MR. GLADSTONE THE MAN TO SOLVE IT. 8vo. sewed, pp. 21. 1865. 1s.
- Ponsard.—CHAPLOTTE CORDAY. A Tragedy. By F. Ponsard. Edited with English Notes and Notice on Ponsard, by Professor C. Cassal, LL.D., of University College, London. 12mo. cloth, pp. xi. and 133. 1867. 2s. 6d.
- Popes’ RIGHTS AND WRONGS. An Historical Sketch. 12mo. cloth, pp. xiv. and 97. 1860. 2s. 6d.
- Popes (THE).—THEIR TEMPORAL DOMINION AND INFALLIBILITY. An Argument between a Lady and an Italian. 12mo. sewed, pp. 8. 2d.
- Porcari.—THE SENATE OF ROME AND THE POPE. S. P. Q. R. By Stephano Porcari. 8vo. sewed, pp. 30. 1867.
- Powell.—A WORKING MAN’S VIEW OF TENNYSON’S “ENOCH ARDEN.” By J. H. Powell. 12mo. sewed, pp. 29. 1866. 6d.
- Powell.—LIFE INCIDENTS AND POETIC PICTURES. By J. H. Powell. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 264. 1865. 5s.
- Preaching SUITED TO THE TIMES. A Charge from Utopia. 16mo. sewed, pp. 39. 1865. 1s.
- Preciosa; A TALE. Fcap. 8vo. cloth, pp. 326. 1852. 7s. 6d.
- Prescott.—LIFE OF WILLIAM HICKLING PRESCOTT. By George Ticknor. 4to., pp. x. and 492. Printed on Tened Paper. With Portrait and Illustrations. Ornamental Binding, uncut. Gilt top. 1864. £1 16s.
- Prescott.—SIR ROHAN’S GHOST? A Romance. By Miss Prescott. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 352. 1860. 5s.
- Prescott.—HISTORY, THEORY, AND PRACTICE OF THE ELECTRIC TELEGRAPH. By George B. Prescott, Superintendent of Electric Telegraph Lines. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 468. 1860. 10s. 6d.

- Priaulx.**—**QUESTIONES MOSAICÆ**, or the First Part of the Book of Genesis, compared with the Remains of Ancient Religions. By Osmond de Beauvoir Priaulx. Second Edition, corrected and enlarged. 8vo. cloth, pp. vii. and 548. 1854. 12s.
- Pritchard.**—**ADMIRALTY DIGEST.** A Digest of the Law and Practice of the High Court of Admiralty of England, with Notes from Text- Writers, and the Scotch, Irish, and American Reports. By William Tarn Pritchard, Proctor in Doctors Commons. Second edition, omitting Prize and Slave Cases. By Robert A. Pritchard, D.C.L., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law, and William Tarn Pritchard. With Notes of Cases from French Maritime Law. By Algenon Jones, Avocat à la Cour Impériale de Paris, in 2 vols. roy. 8vo. 1865. £3.
- Probyn.**—**ESSAYS ON ITALY, IRELAND, AND THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.** By John W. Probyn, Esq. 1 vol., crown 8vo. *[In the press.]*
- Pulszky.**—**THREE CHRISTMAS PLAYS FOR CHILDREN.** The Sleeper awakened. The Wonderful Bird. Crinolina. By Theresa Pulszky. With Music by Professor L. Jansa, and Illustrations by Charles Armytage. Square 12mo. pp. 130, cloth. 1859. 3s. 6d.
- Quentin.**—**AN ACCOUNT OF PARAGUAY.** Its History, its People, and its Government. From the French of M. Ch. Quentin. 8vo. sewed, pp. 90. 1865. 1s.
- Quinet.**—**ULTRAMONTISM; or, The Roman Church and Modern Society.** By E. Quinet, of the College of France. Translated from the French (Third edition), with the Author's approbation. By C. Cocks, B.L. Post 8vo. pp. ix. and 184, cloth. 1845. 5s.
- Raja-Niti.**—**A COLLECTION OF HINDU APOLOGUES, IN THE BRAJ BHA'SHA' LANGUAGE.** Revised Edition. With a Preface, Notes, and supplementary glossary. By Fitzedward Hall, Esq. 8vo. cloth, pp. 204. 1854. £1 1s.
- Ram Raz.**—**ESSAY ON THE ARCHITECTURE OF THE HINDUS.** By Ram Raz, Native Judge and Magistrate of Bangalore, Corresponding Member of the R.A.S. of Great Britain and Ireland. With 48 Plates. 4to., pp. xiv. and 64, sewed. 1834. Original selling price, £1 11s. 6d., reduced (for a short time only) to 12s.
- Randall.**—**FINE WOOL SHEEP HUSBANDRY.** By Henry S. Randall, LL.D. Read before the New York State Agricultural Society, February 12, 1862. With an Appendix, containing valuable statistics in reference to wool culture, imports, prices of fine wool from 1840 to August 1, 1863, etc. Small 8vo. cloth, pp. 190. 5s.
- Randall.**—**THE PRACTICAL SHEPHERD.** A Complete Treatise on the Breeding, Management, and Diseases of Sheep. By Henry S. Randall, LL.D. With Illustrations. 8vo. cloth, pp. ix. and 454. 1864. 10s. 6d.
- Rask.**—**GRAMMAR OF THE ANGLO-SAXON TONGUE,** from the Danish of Erasmus Rask. By Benjamin Thorpe. Second edition, corrected and improved, with Plate. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 191. 1865. 5s. 6d.
- Rask.**—**A SHORT TRACTATE on the Longevity** ascribed to the Patriarchs in the Book of Genesis, and its relation to the Hebrew Chronology; the Flood, the Exodus of the Israelites, the Site of Eden, etc. From the Danish of the late Professor Rask; with his manuscript corrections, and large additions from his autograph, now for the first time printed. With a Map of Paradise and the circumjacent Islands. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 154. 1863. 2s. 6d.



- Ravenstein.—THE RUSSIANS ON THE AMUR; its Discovery, Conquest, and Colonization, with a Description of the Country, its Inhabitants, Productions, and Commercial Capabilities, and Personal Accounts of Russian Travellers. By E. G. Ravenstein, F.R.G.S., Correspondent F.G.S. Frankfurt, with an Appendix on the Navigation of the Gulf of the Amur. By Captain Prutz. In one volume, 8vo., 500 pp. of Letter Press, 4 tinted Lithographs, and 3 Maps, cloth. 1861. 15s.
- Ravenstein and Hulley.—THE GYMNASIUM AND ITS FITTINGS. By E. G. Ravenstein and John Hulley. With 14 Plates of Illustrations. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1867. 2s. 6d.
- Ravenstein and Hulley.—A HAND-BOOK OF GYMNASTICS AND ATHLETICS. By E. G. Ravenstein, F.R.G.S., etc., President of the German Gymnastic Society, London, and John Hulley, Gymnasiarch of Liverpool. With numerous Woodcut Illustrations from original designs. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 408. 1867. 8s. 6d.
- Rawlinson.—A COMMENTARY ON THE CUNEIFORM INSCRIPTIONS OF BABYLONIA AND ASSYRIA, including Readings of the Inscription on the Nimrud Obelisk; and a brief Notice of the ancient Kings of Nineveh and Babylon. Read before the Royal Asiatic Society, by Major H. C. Rawlinson. 8vo. pp. 84, sewed. London, 1850. 2s. 6d.
- Rawlinson.—OUTLINES OF ASSYRIAN HISTORY, from the Inscriptions of Nineveh, By Lieut.-Colonel Rawlinson, C.B., followed by some Remarks, by A. H. Layard, Esq., D.C.L. 8vo. pp. xlv., sewed. 1852. 1s.
- Read.—POEMS. By Thomas Buchanan Read. Illustrated by Kenny Meadows. 12mo. cloth, pp. vii. and 275. 1852. 6s.
- Reade—WHITE LIES; a Story. By Charles Reade. In 3 volumes, 8vo., Vol. I., pp. 300; Vol. II., pp. 238; Vol. III., pp. 232. 1857. £1 1s.
- Reade.—CREAM. Contains "Jack of all Trades;" "A Matter-of-Fact Romance," and "The Autobiography of a Thief." By Charles Reade. 8vo. pp. 270. 1858. 10s. 6d.
- Reade.—LOVE ME LITTLE, LOVE ME LONG. By Charles Reade. In 2 vols. post 8vo. Vol. I. pp. 390; Vol. II., pp. 35. 8vo. cloth. 1859. 21s.
- Reade.—THE EIGHTH COMMANDMENT. By Charles Reade. 8vo., pp. 380. 1860. 14s.
- Reade.—THE CLOISTER AND THE HEARTH; a Tale of the Middle Ages. By Charles Reade. In four volumes. Third edition. Vol. I., pp. 360; Vol. II., pp. 376; Vol. III., pp. 323; Vol. IV., pp. 435. 1861. £1 11s. 6d.
- The Same. Fourth edition. In 3 vols. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 328, 391, 338. 1862. 15s.
- Reform.—LETTER to the Right Honourable the Earl of Derby, on Political Reform. By One of the People. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 46. 1867. 1s.

Reiff.—ENGLISH-RUSSIAN GRAMMAR; or, Principles of the Russian Language for the Use of the English. With Synoptical Tables for the Declensions and Conjugations, Graduated Themes or Exercises for the Application of the Grammatical Rules, the Correct Construction of these Exercises, and the Accentuation of all the Russian Words. By Charles Philip Reiff. Third edition, carefully revised. 8vo. sewed, pp. viii. and 191. 1862. 6s.

Reiff.—LITTLE MANUAL OF THE RUSSIAN LANGUAGE. By Ch. Ph. Reiff. 12mo. sewed, pp. 80. 1863. 2s. 6d.

Renan.—AN ESSAY ON the Age and Antiquity of the Book of Nabathæan Agriculture To which is added, an Inaugural Lecture on the Position of the Shemitic Nations in the History of Civilization. By M. Ernest Renan, Membre de l'Institut. In 1 Vol., crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 148. 1862. 3s. 6d.

Renan.—THE LIFE OF JESUS. By Ernest Renan. Authorised English Translation. 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 311. 1864. 10s. 6d.

Ditto. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 311. 1865. 2s. 6d.

Ditto. Crown 8vo. paper, pp. xii. and 311. New edition, 1867. 1s. 6d.

Report OF THE COMMITTEE APPOINTED, BY THE CONFERENCE OF MEMBERS OF THE REFORM LEAGUE AND OTHERS, ON Mr. Hare's Scheme of Representation, held at their Rooms, on 28th February, and 7th and 21st March, 1868. 8vo. 1s.

Report OF THE SUB-COMMITTEE of the Newcastle-on-Tyne Association for watching the war limitation of the supply of grain by the past action of British Diplomacy. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1855. 1s.

Revised ARMY REGULATIONS.—Vol. I. Royal Warrant for the Pay and Promotion, Non-Effective, Pay and Allowances of Majesty's British Forces serving elsewhere than in India. To which are added Instructions to Commanding and Financial Officers. Part I. Pay dated February 3rd, 1866. 8vo. sewed, pp. 182. 1866. 1s.

Revolt (THE) OF REASON AGAINST THE REVEALED. In One Volume, 8vo. (Shortly).

Reynard THE FOX; after the German Version of Göthe. By Thomas J. Arnold, Esq.

“Fair jester's humour and ready wit  
Never offend, though smartly they hit.”

With Seventy Illustrations, after the designs of Wilhelm Von Kaulbach. Royal 8vo. pp. vi. 226. Printed by Clay, on toned paper, and elegantly bound in embossed cloth, with appropriate design after Kaulbach; richly tooled front and back. Price 16s. Best full morocco, same pattern. Price 24s.; or, neatly half-bound morocco, gilt top, uncut edges, Roxburgh style. 1860. Price 18s.

Richard Cobden, ROI DES BELGES. Par un Ex-Colonel de la Garde Civique. Dédié aux blessés de Septembre. Deuxième édition. Crown 8vo. sewed, pp. 64. 1863. 2s. 6d.

Richter.—TITAN; A Romance. From the German of Jean Paul Friedrich Richter. Translated by Charles T. Brooks. 2 vols. 12mo. cloth pp. xv., 522, and v., 521. 1863. 18s.

- Richter.**—FLOWER, FRUIT, AND THOR'S PIECES; or, the Married Life, Death, and Wedding of the Advocate of the Poor, Firmian Stanislaus Siebenkäs. By Jean Paul Friedrich Richter. Translated from the German, by Edward Henry Noel. With a Memoir of the Author. By Thomas Carlyle. In two volumes. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. 361, and v. 345. 1863. 21s.
- Richter.**—LEVANA; or, the Doctrine of Education. Translated from the German of Jean Paul Friedrich Richter. 12mo. cloth, pp. xvii and 400. 1864. 10s.
- Richter.**—LIFE OF JEAN PAUL FRIEDRICH RICHTER, compiled from various sources. Preceded by his Autobiography. By Eliza Buckminster Lee. 12mo. cloth, pp. xxi. and 530. 1864. 7s. 6d.
- Richter.**—HESPERUS; or, Forty-Five Dog-Post Days. A Biography, from the German of Jean Paul Friedrich Richter. Translated by Charles T. Brooks. 2 vols. 12mo. cloth, pp. xxviii. 498, and y. 478. 1865. 21s.
- Riddell.**—THE CARPENTER AND JOINER, AND ELEMENTS OF HAND-RAILING. By Robert Riddell. With 32 Plates. Folio cloth, pp. 26. 1868. £1 1s.
- Rights (THE) OF NEUTRALS AND BELLIGERENTS.** From a modern point of view. By a Civilian. 8vo. sewed, pp. 42. 1862. 1s.
- Rig-Veda-Sanhita (THE).** THE SACRED HYMNS OF THE BRAHMINS, as preserved to us in the oldest collection of Religious Poetry. The Rig-Veda-Sanhita, translated and explained. By Max Müller, M.A., Taylorian Professor of Modern European Languages in the University of Oxford, Fellow of All Soul's College. In 3 vols., 8vo. [Vol. I. in the press.]
- Rig-Veda Sanhita.**—A COLLECTION OF ANCIENT HINDÚ HYMNS, constituting the first Ashtáka, or Book, of the Rig-Veda, the oldest authority for the religious and social institutions of the Hindús. Translated from the original Sanskrit. By the late H. H. Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., etc., late Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. With a postscript, by Dr. Fitzedward Hall. Vol. I., 8vo. cloth, pp. lii. and 348. 1868. £1 1s.
- Rig-Veda Sanhita.**—A COLLECTION OF ANCIENT HINDÚ HYMNS, constituting the second Ashtáka, or Book, of the Rig-Veda; the oldest authority for the religious and social institutions of the Hindús. Translated from the original Sanskrit. By the late H. H. Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., late Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. Vol. II. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxx. and 346. 1854. 21s.
- Rig-Veda Sanhita.**—A COLLECTION OF ANCIENT HINDÚ HYMNS, constituting the third and fourth Ashtákas, or Books, of the Rig-Veda; the oldest authority for the religious and social institutions of the Hindús. Translated from the original Sanskrit. By the late H. H. Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., late Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. Vol. III. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxiv. and 525. 1857. 21s.
- Rig-Veda Sanhita.**—A COLLECTION OF ANCIENT HINDÚ HYMNS, constituting the first Ashtáka, or Book, of the Rig-Veda; the oldest authority for the religious and social institutions of the Hindús. Translated from the original Sanskrit by the late H. H. Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., etc., late Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. Edited by E. B. Cowell, M.A., late Principal of the Sanskrit College, Calcutta, and now Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Cambridge. Vol. IV. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 314. 1866. 14s.

- Riley.—MEDIEVAL CHRONICLES OF THE CITY OF LONDON.—Chronicles of the Mayors and Sheriffs of London, and the Events which happened in their Days, from the Year A.D. 1188 to A.D. 1274. Translated from the original Latin of the "Liber de Antiquis Legibus" (published by the Camden Society), in the possession of the Corporation of the City of London; attributed to Arnold Fitz-Thedmar, Alderman of London in the Reign of Henry III.—Chronicles of London, and of the Marvels therein, between the Years 44 Henry III., A.D. 1260, and 17 Edward III., A.D. 1343. Translated from the original Anglo-Norman of the "Croniques de London," preserved in the Cottonian Collection (Cleopatra A. iv.) in the British Museum. Translated, with copious Notes and Appendices, by Henry Thomas Riley, M.A., Clare Hall, Cambridge; of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law. The Two Parts bound in one handsome Volume. 4to. cloth, pp. xii. and 319. 1863. 12s.
- Ditto. Morocco, gilt edges, pp. xii. and 319. 1863. £1 1s.
- Ditto. Vellum, red edges, pp. xii. and 319. 1863. £1 1s.
- Ripley.—SACRED RHETORIC; or, Composition and Delivery of Sermons. By Henry I. Ripley, Professor of Sacred Rhetoric and Pastoral Duties in Newton Theological Institute. To which are added, Hints on Extemporaneous Preaching. By Henry Ware, Jun., D.D. 12mo. cloth, pp. 234. 1858. 2s. 6d.
- River Plate (THE). (South America), as a Field for Emigration; its Geography, Climate, Agricultural Capabilities, and the Facilities afforded for permanent Settlement. With Maps, Third edition. Revised by the Legation of the Argentine Republic. 8vo. pp. 60, sewed. 1867. 1s.
- Robertson.—PRIESTCRAFT. By F. Robertson, F.R.S., Astron. Soc., late of Royal Engineers. Part I. 8vo. cloth. Second edition, pp. 181. 1867. 4s.
- Robertson.—AN EXPOSITION OF THE BOOK OF GENESIS. By F. Robertson, F.R.A.S., late Royal Engineers, author of "Priestcraft," etc. 8vo. boards, pp. viii. and 262. 1868. 5s.
- Robinet.—NOTICE SUR les Travaux et la Vie D'Auguste Comte. Par le Dr. Robinet. 8s.
- Roche.—HISTOIRE DE FRANCE; Depuis les Temps les Plus Reculés. par Antonin Roche. Troisième édition. Two volumes, 12mo. sewed, pp. vii. 504 and 519. 1867. 7s.
- Roche.—ENGLISH PROSE AND POETRY. Materials for Translation from English into French. By Antonin Roche. 12mo. cloth, pp. xi. 368. 1867. 4s. 6d.
- Roche.—ABRÉGÉ DE LA GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE. Par Antonin Roche, ouvrage dont l'introduction dans les Ecoles publiques a été autorisée par arrêté du Ministre de l'Instruction publique. 12mo., pp. vi. and 132. 1861. 1s.
- Roche.—CORRIGÉ DE LA SYNTAXE DES EXERCICES SUR LA GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE. Par Antonin Roche, Directeur de l'Éducationnelle Institute de Londres, Chevalier de la Légion d'honneur. 3rd éd. 12mo., pp. 140. 1s.
- Roche.—EXERCICES SUR L'ABRÉGÉ DE LA GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE. Par Antonin Roche, Chevalier de la Légion d'honneur. 2nd éd. 12mo., pp. vi. and 140. 1s.
- Roche.—EXERCICES SUR LA GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE. Par Antonin Roche. 12mo., pp. iv. and 244. 1s. 6d.

Roche.—GRAMMAIRE FRANÇAISE, Ouvrage adopté pour les Ecoles publiques par arrêté du Ministre de l'Instruction publique en date du 22 Août, 1859. Par Antonin Roche, Directeur de l'Éducational Institute de Londres, Chevalier de la Légion d'honneur. 5th éd. 12mo., pp. 208. 1s 6d.

Roche.—HISTOIRE DES PRINCIPAUX ECRIVAINS FRANÇAIS, depuis l'origine de la Littérature jusqu'à nos jours, par Antonin Roche, Directeur de l'Éducational Institute de Londres. 2 vols. 12mo. pp. 700. 1863. 6s.

Roche.—LES POÈTES FRANÇAIS, Recueil de morceaux, choisis dans les meilleurs poètes depuis l'origine de la littérature française jusqu'à nos jours, avec une notice biographique sur chaque auteur, par Antonin Roche, Directeur de l'Éducational Institute de Londres, Chevalier de la Légion d'honneur 7th éd. augmentée. 12mo. pp. 532. 3s. 6d.

Roche.—LES PROSETEURS FRANÇAIS, Recueil de morceaux choisis dans les meilleurs prosateurs depuis l'origine de la littérature française jusqu'à nos jours avec une notice biographique sur chaque auteur par Antonin Roche. Directeur de l'Éducational Institute de Londres, Chevalier de la Légion d'honneur. 8th éd. augmentée. 12mo. pp. 544. 1867. 4s.

Ronge.—THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY AND JUSTIFICATION OF JOHANNES RONGE (the German reformer), translated from the fifth German edition, by John Lord, A.M. 12mo. sewed, pp. x. and 84. 1856. 1s. 6d.

Rowley.—A PAPER upon the Egg of *Æpyornis Maximus*, the Colossal Bird of Madagascar. By George Dawson Rowley, M.A. 8vo. sewed, pp. 15. 1864. 1s.

Rowley.—THE REMAINS of Man and Extinct Mammalian Fauna, found in Eynesbury, near St. Neots, Huntingdonshire. By George Dawson Rowley, M.A., F.Z.S. 8vo. sewed, pp. 15. 1866. 1s.

RUSSIA, CENTRAL ASIA, AND BRITISH INDIA. By a British Subject. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 48. 1865. 1s.

Saint Petersburg, Sights of, Book First; Fact, Feeling, and Fröhlichkeit. Wahrheit und Dichtung. 8vo. pp. 76, sewed. 1860. 2s. 6d.

SARNTON.—THE ELEMENTS OF ART CRITICISM, comprising a Treatise on the Principles of Man's Nature as addressed by Art; together with a Historic Survey of the Methods of Art-Execution in the departments of Drawing, Sculpture, Architecture, Painting, Landscape Gardening, and the Decorative Arts. Designed as a Text-book for Schools and Colleges, and as a Handbook for Amateurs and Artists. By G. W. Samson, D.D., President of Columbia College, Washington D.C. 8vo. cloth, pp. 340. 1867. 16s.

SAND.—MOLIÈRE. A Drama in prose. By George Sand. Edited, with English Notes and Notice on George Sand, by Theodore Karcher, LL.B., of the Royal Military Academy and the University of London. 12mo. pp. xx. and 170, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

SANITARY CONDITION OF NEW YORK. Report of the Council of Hygiene and Public Health of the Citizens' Association of New York, upon the Sanitary Condition of the City. Published, with an Introductory Statement, by Order of the Council of the Citizen's Association. 8vo. cloth, pp. cxliii. and 360. Maps, Plates. 1865. 25s.

SANITARY "REFORM." "A Model Deputation!" By A Member of the Sanitary Reform Association. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 8. 1866. 3d.

- Santorin, THE KAIMEN ISLANDS.** From Observations by K. von Fritsch, W. Reiss, and A. Stübel. Translated from the German. With 4 Photographic Maps. Folio, sewed, pp. 8. 1867. 16s.
- Sartorius.—MEXICO.** Landscapes and Popular Sketches. By G. Sartorius. Edited by Dr. Gaspey, with Engravings by distinguished Artists. from original Sketches, by Moritz Rugendas. 4to. cloth gilt, pp. vi. and 202. 1859. 18s.
- Saxe.—THE MASQUERADE and other Poems.** By John Godfrey Saxe. 12mo. cloth, pp. vii. and 237. 1866. 5s.
- Saxe.—THE POEMS OF JOHN GODFREY SAXE.** Complete in one volume. Crown 8vo. cloth, gilt top, pp. xii. and 466. With a portrait of the author. 1868. 10s. 6d.
- Scandinavia AND GREAT BRITAIN, Comparative List of the Birds of.** Small Folio, pp. 18, sewed. 1859. 1s.
- Scanzoni.—A PRACTICAL TREATISE on the Diseases of the Sexual Organs of Women.** By Professor F. W. Von Scanzoni. Translated by A. K. Gardner. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxi. and 669. 1861. 25s.
- Sceptic.—AN EXPOSITION OF SPIRITUALISM; comprising two Series of Letters, and a Review of the "Spiritual Magazine," No. 20.** As published in the "Star and Dial." With Introduction, Notes, and Appendix. By Sceptic. 8vo. cloth, pp. 330. 1862. 6s.
- Schefer.—THE BISHOP'S WIFE.** A Tale of the Papacy. Translated from the German of Leopold Schefer. By Mrs. J. R. Stodart. 12mo. cloth, pp. 200. 1851. 2s. 6d.
- Schefer.—THE ARTIST'S MARRIED LIFE: being that of Albert Dürer.** For devout Disciples of the Arts, Prudent Maidens, as well as for the Profit and Instruction of all Christendom, given to the light. Translated from the German of Leopold Schefer, by Mrs. J. R. Stodart. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 98. 1853. 1s.
- Schefer.—THE LAYMAN'S BREVIARY; or, Meditations for Every-day in the Year.** From the German of Leopold Schefer. By C. T. Brookes. Square, cloth, gilt, pp. iv. and 452. With a portrait of the author. 1867. 10s. 6d.
- Schoelcher.—DANGERS TO ENGLAND OF THE ALLIANCE WITH THE MEN OF THE COUP-D'ETAT.** By Victor Schoelcher, Representative of the People. 12mo., sewed, pp. 190. 1854. 2s. 6d.
- Schimmelfennig.—THE WAR BETWEEN TURKEY AND RUSSIA. A Military Sketch.** By A. Schimmelfennig. 8vo. sewed, pp. 68. 1854. 1s. 6d.
- Schlagintweit.—BUDDHISM IN TIBET: Illustrated by Literary Documents and Objects of Religious Worship.** With an Account of the Buddhist Systems preceding it in India. By Emil Schlagintweit, LL.D. With a folio Atlas of 20 Plates, and 20 Tables of Native print in the Text. Royal 8vo., pp. xxiv. and 404. 1863. £2 2s.
- Schlagintweit.—GLOSSARY OF GEOGRAPHICAL TERMS from India and Tibet,** with Native Transcription and Transliteration. By Hermann de Schlagintweit. Forming, with a "Route Book" of the Western Himalaya, Tibet, and Turkistan, the Third Volume of H., A., and R. de Schlagintweit's "Results of a Scientific Mission to India and High Asia." With an Atlas, in imperial folio, of Maps, Panoramas, and Views. Royal 4to., pp. xxiv. and 295. 1863. £4.

**Schlagintweit.**—RESULTS OF A SCIENTIFIC MISSION TO INDIA AND HIGH ASIA. By Hermann, Adolphe, and Robert de Schlagintweit; undertaken between the years 1854 and 1858, by Order of the Court of Directors of the Honourable East India Company.

The Work will consist of Nine Volumes of Scientific Text, and of an Atlas, in Three Volumes Folio, containing Views and Maps, with explanatory Letterpress.

Her Majesty Queen Victoria has been most graciously pleased to accept the Dedication of the Atlas.

Vols. I. to IV. now ready (Text in 4to., Atlas in folio). 1861—1866. £4 4s. each.

Intending Subscribers may obtain Prospectuses, and every information required, of the Publishers.

**Schwarz.**—THE FAILURE OF GEOLOGICAL ATTEMPTS MADE BY THE GREEKS from the Earliest Ages down to the Epoch of Alexander. By Julius Schwarz, F.G.S. Revised and enlarged edition. 4to. pp. xx., and 154, cloth. 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Sclater.**—CATALOGUE OF A COLLECTION OF AMERICAN BIRDS belonging to Mr. Philip Linsley, Sclater, M.A., Th. Doc. F.R.S., Fellow of Corpus Christi College, Oxford; Secretary to the Zoological Society of London; Editor of "The Ibis." 8vo. pp. 354, and 20 coloured Plates of Birds, cloth. 1862. £1 10s.

**Scott.**—MEMOIRS OF LIEUT.-GENERAL WINFIELD SCOTT, LL.D., late Commander-in-Chief of the United States Forces. Written by Himself. With two Portraits. 2 vols. crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xxii. 230 and 653. 1864. 16s.

**Scully.**—BRAZIL; its Provinces and Chief Cities; the Manners and Customs of the People; Agricultural, Commercial, and other Statistics, taken from the latest Official Documents; with a variety of useful and entertaining knowledge, both for the Merchant and Emigrant. By William Scully, editor of the "Anglo-Brazilian Times." Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 398. 7s. 6d.

**Seabridge.**—CONNECTED POEMS. By Charles Seabridge. 18mo. cloth, pp. 138. 1866. 3s. 6d.

**Serf (THE) AND THE COSSACK;** or, Internal State of Russia. Second edition, revised and enlarged. 12mo., sewed, pp. 48. 1854. 6d.

**Seyd.**—CALIFORNIA AND ITS RESOURCES. A Work for the Merchant, the Capitalist, and the Emigrant. By Ernest Seyd. 8vo. cloth, plates, pp. 168. 1858. 8s. 6d.

**Shapurji Edalji.**—A DICTIONARY, GUJARÁTÍ AND ENGLISH. By Shapurji Edalji. Second edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. xxiv. and 874. 1868. £1 1s.

**Shapurji Edalji.**—A GRAMMAR OF THE GUJARÁTÍ LANGUAGE. By Shapurji Edalji. 12mo. cloth, pp. 128. 10s. 6d.

**Shaw.**—ODONTALGIA, commonly called Tooth-Ache; its Causes, Prevention and Cure. By S. Parsons Shaw. 12mo. pp. xi. and 258, cloth. 1868. 4s. 6d.

**Sherring.**—THE SACRED CITY OF THE HINDUS: an Account of Benares in Ancient and Modern Times. By the Rev. M. A. Sherring, A.M., LL.B., and prefaced with an Introduction by Fitz-Edward Hall, Esq., D.C.L. Shortly. In a handsome 8vo. Volume of about 300 pages, with 10 Full-page Woodcut Illustrations from Photographs. Pp. xxxvi. and 388, cloth. 1868. 21s.

Simon.—THE MINISTRY OF ORIGINAL WORDS IN ASSERTING AND DEFENDING THE TRUTH. By B. A. Simon. 8vo. cloth pp. 123. 1865. 4s.

Simonides.—*Διόκλεους δαμόρου τοῦ καρυστιθοῦ ἡ περὶ ὑγιεινῶν ἐπιστολῆ, καὶ Τροφίλου πραξιᾶδου ἑλλαρίμιως ἐπιγράμα.* (Diokles' Letter on Hygiene and Trophilus Recipes. Edited by Dr. Const. Simonides). Square 12mo. pp. 24, sewed. 1865. 1s.

Simonides.—*Ἐπιστολίμαια περὶ ἱερογλυφικῶν γραμματῶν διατριβῆ.* (A brief Dissertation on Hieroglyphic Letters. By Constantine Simonides, Ph. D.) 8vo. pp. 58, sewed. 1863. 2s. 6d.

Simonides.—*Ὁρθοδοξῶν ἑλληνῶν θεολογικαὶ γράφαὶ τεσσάρης.* (A. Nikolaos, Bishop of Mothone; B. Genniadios, Archbishop of Constantinople; C. Gregorios, Archbishop of Thessalonich; D. Georgios Kressios). Edited by Constantine Simonides, Ph. D. 8vo. pp. 240, cloth (with portrait of Nicóiaos). 1865. 10s.

Simonides.—CONCERNING HORUS OF NILŌPOLIS, the Hierogrammatist of his native place, son of Amonthis and Thessaïs. With notices of his works. By Constantine Simonides, Ph. D. 4to. pp. 16, sewed. 1863. 2s. 6d.

Simonides.—FAC-SIMILES of Certain Portions of the Gospel of St. Matthew, and of the Epistles of St. James and Jude. Written on Papyrus in the first century, and preserved in the Egyptian Museum of Joseph Mayer, Esq., Liverpool. Edited and annotated, etc., etc., by Constantine Simonides, Ph. D. Folio, pp. 80, with numerous fac-similes, sewed. 1862. £1 11s. 6d.

Simonides.—REPORT OF THE COUNCIL OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE on some of the Mayer Papyri and the Palimpsest MS. of Uranius belonging to M. Simonides. With Letters from MM. Pertz, Ehrenberg, and Dindorf. 8vo. pp. 27, sewed. 1863. 1s.

Simonides.—THE PERIPLUS OF HANNON, King of the Karchedonians. Concerning the Lybian part of the Earth beyond the Pillars of Heracles, which is dedicated to Kronos, the greatest God, and to all the Gods dwelling with him. 4to. pp. 82, and two fac-similes, sewed. 1864. 10s.

Simpson.—AN INTRODUCTION TO THE PHILOSOPHY OF SHAKESPEARE'S SONNETS. By Richard Simpson. Crown 8vo. pp. 8vo, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

Smart.—AN ADDRESS to Soldiers on Leaving England for Foreign Service. By Newton Smart, M.A. Sixth edition. 12mo. pp. 30. 1866. 3d.

Smith.—REVIEWS AND ESSAYS FOR THE MILLION, from Genesis to Revelations. By Brooke Smith, Esq., Stoke Bishop, Gloucestershire. Feap. 8vo. pp. 160, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

Smith.—LOCAL SELF-GOVERNMENT AND CENTRALIZATION. The Characteristics of each; and its Practical Tendencies as affecting Social, Moral, and Political Welfare and Progress. Including Comprehensive Outlines of the English Constitution. With copious Index. By J. Toulmin Smith, Esq., Barrister-at-Law. Pest 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 409. 1851. 5s.

Smith.—SOCIAL ASPECTS. By John Stores Smith, author of "Mirabeau," a Life History. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 258. 1850. 2s. 6d.



Smith.—THE COMMON NATURE OF EPIDEMICS; also Remarks on Contagion and Quarantine. By Southwood Smith, M.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 130. 1866. 3s. 6d.

Smith.—THE DIVINE GOVERNMENT. By Southwood Smith, M.D. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 276. 1866. 6s.

Solling.—DIUTISKA: a Historical and Critical Survey of the Literature of Germany, from the Earliest Period to the death of Göthe. By Gustav Solling. 8vo. pp. xviii. and 368. 1863. 10s. 6d.

Solling.—SELECT PASSAGES FROM THE WORKS OF SHAKESPEARE. Translated, and Collected. German and English. By Gustav Solling. 12mo. cloth, pp. 155. 1866. 3s. 6d.

Somerset.—UNE CERTAINE D'INVENTIONS, OUVRAGE ÉCRIT EN 1655, par Edouard Somerset, Marquis de Worcester, traduit en Français pour la première fois, sur la texte de la première édition (Londres, 1663), et édité par Henry Dircks, C.E., LL.D., F.R.S.E. M.K.S.L., etc., auteur de "The Life of the Marquis of Worcester," "Worcesteriana," etc., etc. 12mo. pp. 62, sewed, 1868. 1s.

Somerville.—EROS. A Series of Connected Poems. By Lorenzo Somerville. 18mo. cloth, pp. 142. 1866. 3s. 6d.

Sophocles.—A GLOSSARY OF LATER AND BYZANTINE GREEK. By E. A. Sophocles. 4to., pp. iv. and 624. 1860. £2 8s.

Sophocles.—POMAIIC, OR MODERN GREEK GRAMMAR. By E. A. Sophocles. 8vo., half-bound, pp. xxviii. and 196. 1866. 7s. 6d.

Spaggiari.—A LATIN, ENGLISH, ITALIAN, AND POLYGLOT ANTHOLOGY, with a variety of Translations and Illustrations. To be published once a year; designed to contribute to the cause of classical learning, as well as to forward the cultivation of the English language and literature in Italy, and that of the Italian in Great Britain, America, and Australia. Edited by John Spaggiari. Oct. 1861. No. 1, oblong 4to, sewed, pp. 10. 1831. 2s. 6d.

Spear.—ON THE POSITION OF WOMEN. By Mrs. J. H. Spear. 12mo. limp, pp. 37. 1866. 1s.

Spellen.—THE INNER LIFE OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS. By J. N. Spellen. 12mo. sewed. 1854. 6d.

Spinoza's TRACTATUS THEOLOGICO-POLITICUS: A Critical Inquiry into the History, Purpose, and Authenticity of the Hebrew Scriptures; with the Right to Free Thought and Free Discussion asserted, and shown to be not only consistent, but necessarily bound up with True Piety and Good Government. By Benedict de Spinoza. From the Latin. With an Introduction and Notes by the Editor. 8vo. cloth, pp. 386. 1862. 10s. 6d.

Spinoza.—TRACTATUS THEOLOGICO-POLITICUS. A Theological and Political Treatise in a Series of Essays, showing that freedom of thought and of discussion may not only be granted with safety to religion and the peace of the state, but that both the public peace and piety are endangered when such freedom is denied. By Benedict de Spinoza. From the Latin, with an introduction and note by the Editor. Second edition, revised and corrected. 8vo. pp. 360. (In the press).

- Spruner.**—DR. KARL VON SPRUNER'S HISTORICO-GEOGRAPHICAL HAND-ATLAS, containing 26 Coloured Maps engraved on copper, 22 of which are devoted to the General History of Europe, and 4 are specially illustrative of the History of the British Isles. Oblong, cloth-lettered, 15s., or half-bound morocco. 1861. £11s.
- Stevens.**—SEASONING FOR A SEASONER; or, the New Gradus ad Parnassum; a Satire. By Brook B. Stevens. 8vo. cloth, pp. 48. 1861. 3s.
- Stewart.**—SORGHUM AND ITS PRODUCTS. An account of recent investigations concerning the value of sorghum in sugar production, together with a description of a new method of making sugar and refined syrup from this plant. Adapted to common use, by F. L. Stewart. Part 8vo. pp. xiv. and 240, cloth. 1867. 6s.
- Stille.**—THERAPEUTICS AND MATERIA MEDICA: a Systematic Treatise on the Action and Uses of Medicinal Agents. By Alfred Stille, M.D. Second Edition, revised, 2 vols. 8vo., cloth, pp. xv. 776, and viii. 819. 1864. £2 8s.
- Stoddard.**—GRAMMAR OF THE MODERN SYRIAC LANGUAGE as spoken in Oroomah, Persia, and in Koordistan. By Rev. D. T. Stoddard. 8vo. boards, pp. 180. 1865. 7s. 6d.
- Storer.**—FIRST OUTLINES OF A DICTIONARY OF SOLUBILITIES OF CHEMICAL SUBSTANCES. By Frank H. Storer. Indispensable to the practical chemist. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. xi. and 713. 1864. £1 11s. 6d.
- Story.**—COMMENTARIES on the Law of Promissory Notes, and Guaranties of Notes, and Cheques on Banks and Bankers. With occasional illustrations from the commercial law of the nations of continental Europe. By Joseph Story, LL.D., one of the Justices of the Supreme Court of the United States, and Dane Professor of Law in Harvard University. 8vo. pp. xlv. and 740. 1868. £1 11s. 6d.
- Story.**—LIFE AND LETTERS OF JOSEPH STORY, Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, and Dane Professor of Law at Harvard University. Edited by his Son William W. Story. 2 vols., royal 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 1,250. 1851. £1.
- Story.**—THE AMERICAN QUESTION. By William W. Story. 8vo. sewed pp. 68. 1862. 1s.
- Stourton.**—POSTAGE STAMP FORGERIES; or, the Collector's *Vade Mecum*. Containing accurate descriptions of nearly 700 Forgeries, exclusive of Essays and chymically changed Stamps. By J. M. Stourton. 12mo, sewed, pp. viii. and 66. 1865. 1s.
- Stratmann.**—A DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE, compiled from the writings of the 13th, 14th, and 15th Centuries, by Francis Henry Stratmann. 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 694. 1867. 25s.
- Stratmann.**—AN OLD ENGLISH POEM OF THE OWL AND THE NIGHTINGALE. Edited by Francis Henry Stratmann. 8vo. cloth, pp. 60. 1868. 3s.
- Strauss.**—THE OPINIONS OF PROFESSOR DAVID F. STRAUSS, as embodied in his Letter to the Burgomaster Hinzl, Professor Orelli, and Professor Hitzig at Zürich. With an Address to the People of Zürich. By Professor Orelli. Translated from the Second Edition of the original. 8vo. sewed. pp. 31. 1844. 1s.

**Sue.**—THE RIVAL RACES; or the Sons of Joel. A Legendary Romance. By Eugène Sue. 3 vols., post 8vo. cloth. 1863. £1 11s 6d.

**Sullivant.**—ICONES MUSCORUM, or Figures and Descriptions of most of those Mosses peculiar to Eastern North America, which have not been heretofore figured. By William S. Sullivant, LL.D. With 129 copper-plates. 8vo. pp. 216, cloth. 1864. £4 4s.

**Sullivant.**—UNITED STATES EXPLORING' EXPEDITION, during the years 1828, 1839, 1840, 1841, 1842, under the command of Charles Wilkes, United States Navy. Botany. Musci. By William S. Sullivant. Folio, pp. 32. With 26 folio plates, half morocco. 1859. £10 10s.

**Surya SIDDHĀNTA**, (Translation of the); a Text-Book of Hindu Astronomy; with Notes, and an Appendix, containing additional notes and tables, calculations of eclipses, a stellar map, and indexes. By Rev. Ebenezer Burgess, formerly missionary of the A.B.C.F.M. in India; assisted by the committee of publication of the American Oriental Society. 8vo. pp. iii. and 356, Boards. 1860. 15s.

**Swaab.**—FIBROUS SUBSTANCES—INDIGENOUS AND EXOTIC: their Nature, Varieties, and Treatment, considered with a view to render them further useful for Textile and other purposes. By S. L. Swaab. 8vo, sewed, pp. 56. 1864. 2s.

**Swanwick.**—SELECTIONS FROM THE DRAMAS OF GOETHE AND SCHILLER. Translated with Introductory Remarks, by Anna Swanwick. 8vo. cloth, pp. xvi. and 290. 1846. 6s.

**Taft.**—A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON OPERATIVE DENTISTRY. By J. Taft, Professor of Operative Dentistry in the Ohio College of Dental Surgery. 8vo. pp. 384. With 80 illustrations. Cloth. 1859. 15s.

**Taney.**—HABEAS CORPUS. The Proceedings in the Case of John Merryman, of Baltimore County, Maryland, before the Honourable Roger Brooke Taney, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States. 8vo. sewed, pp. 24. 1861. 1s.

**Taylor.**—A RETROSPECT OF THE RELIGIOUS LIFE OF ENGLAND or, the Church, Puritanism, and Free Inquiry. By J. J. Taylor, B.A. New Revised Edition. Large post 8vo., cloth, pp. xii. and 330. 1853. 7s. 6d.

**Taylor.**—TAYLOR'S SYSTEM OF SHORTHAND WRITING. Edited by Matthias Levy, author of "The History of Shorthand Writing." 8vo. pp. iv. and 16, limp cloth. 1862. 1s. 6d.

**Taylor.**—THE CLAIM OF ENGLISHWOMEN TO THE SUFFRAGE CONSTITUTIONALLY CONSIDERED. By Helen Taylor. Reprinted from the "Westminster Review." 8vo. pp. 16, sewed. 1867. 1d.

**Taylor.**—THE PICTURE OF ST. JOHN., By Bayard Taylor. 12mo cloth, pp. vii. and 220. 1866. 7s. 6d.

**Taylor.**—THE POEMS OF BAYARD TAYLOR. Portrait. Blue and Gold Series. Third Series. 24mo. cloth, gilt edges, pp. viii. and 419. 1865. 5s.

**Technological DICTIONARY: French—German—English;** containing the Technical Terms used in Arts and Trades, Civil, Military, and Naval Architecture, Bridges and Roads, Railways, Mechanics, construction of Machines, Artillery, Navigation, Mines and Smelting Works, Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry, Mineralogy, etc., etc. Edited by C. Rumpf and O. Mothes; preceded by a Preface by Charles Karmarsch, Chief Director of the Polytechnic School of Hanover. In one vol. 8vo. pp. vi. and 590, cloth. 1868. 10s. 6d.

**Terrien and Saxton.—LIBERIEN HAG AVIELEK;** or, the Catholic Epistles and Gospels for the day up to Ascension. Translated for the first time into the Brehonec of Brittany. Also, in three parallel columns, a new version of the same Breizouzer (commonly called Breton and Armorican); a version into Welsh, mostly new and closely resembling the Breton; and a version Gaelic, or Manx, or Cernaweg, with illustrative articles, by Christoll Terrien and Charles Waring Saxton, D.D., Christ Church, Oxford. The penitential psalms are also added. Oblong Folio, pp. 156, sewed. 1868. 5s.

**Tetraglot.—NEW UNIVERSAL DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH, FRENCH, ITALIAN, AND GERMAN LANGUAGES** arranged after a new system. Small 8vo. cloth. 7s. 6d.

**TEXAS ALMANAC (THE) FOR 1868,** with Federal and State Statistics; historical, descriptive, and biographical sketches, &c., relating to Texas. 8vo. pp. 314, sewed. 1868. 3s.

**Théâtre FRANÇAIS MODERNE.** A Selection of Modern French Plays; Edited by the Rev. P. H. Ernest Brette, B.D., Head Master of the French School in Christ's Hospital; Charles Cassal, LL.D., Professor in University College, London; and Theodore Karcher, LL.B., of the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich; former and present examiners in the University of London, and for the Civil Service of India. First Series, in one vol. crown 8vo. cloth. 6s. Containing:—

**CHARLOTTE CORDAY,** a Tragedy. By F. Ponsard. Edited with English Notes and Notice on Ponsard, by Professor C. Cassal, LL.D. of University College, London. Pp. xii. and 134.

**DIANE,** a Drama in verse. By Emile Augier. Edited with English Notes and Notice on Augier, by Théodore Karcher, LL.B., of the Royal Military Academy and the University of London. Pp. xiv. and 145.

**LE VOYAGE À DIEPPE,** a Comedy in prose. By Wafflard and Fulgence. Edited, with English Notes, by the Rev. P. H. Ernest Brette, B.D., of Christ's Hospital and the University of London. Pp. 104.

**The Boke OF NURTURE.** By John Russell, about 1460—1470 Anno Domini. The Boke of Kernynge. By Wynkyn de Worde, Anno Domini 1513. The Boke of Nurture. By Hugh Rhodes, Anno Domini 1577. Edited from the Originals in the British Museum Library, by Frederick J. Furnivall, M.A., Trinity Hall, Cambridge, Member of Council of the Philological and Early English Text Societies. 4to. half-morocco, gilt top, pp. xix. and 146, 28, xxviii. and 56. 1867. £1 11s. 6d.

**The Derbyites AND THE COALITION.** Parliamentary Sketches. Being a second edition of the "History of the Session 1852—1853." 12mo. pp. 222, cloth. 1854. 2s. 6d.

**THE TRUE INTERPRETATION OF THE AMERICAN CIVIL WAR,** and of England's Cotton Difficulty or Slavery, from a different Point of View, showing the relative Responsibilities of America and Great Britain. By Onesimus Secundus. 8vo. sewed, pp. iv. and 47. 1863. 1s.

- The Vision of WILLIAM CONCERNING PIERS PLOWMAN, together with Vita de Dowel, Dobet et Dobest, secundum wit et resoun. By William Langland (about 1362, 1380 anno domini). Edited from numerous Manuscripts, with Prefaces, Notes, and a Glossary. By the Rev. Walter W. Skeat, M.A. Pp. xliv. and 158, cloth. 1867, Vernon Text; Text A. 7s. 3d.
- Θεία (ἡ) Λειτουργία τοῦ ἐν ἀγίοις πατέρος ἡμῶν Ἰωάννου τοῦ Χρυσόστομου. Παραφραθεῖσα κατὰ τὸ κείμενον τὸ ἐκδοθεν ἐγκρίσει τῆς ἱερᾶς συνόδου τοῦ βασιλείου τῆς Ἑλλάδος. 8vo. pp. 76, cloth. 1865. 3s. 6d.
- Thom.—ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES TO THE CORINTHIANS. An attempt to convey their Spirit and Significance. By the Rev. John Hamilton Thom. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xji. and 408. 1851. 7s.
- Thomas.—A COLLECTION OF SOME OF THE MISCELLANEOUS ESSAYS ON ORIENTAL SUBJECTS. (Published on various occasions.) By Edward Thomas, Esq., late of the East India Company's Bengal Civil Service. Contents—On Ancient Indian Weights; The Earliest Indian Coinage; Bactrian Coins; On the Identity of Xandrames and Kṛānanda; Note on Indian Numerals; On the Coins of the Gupta, Dynast; Early Armenian Coins; Observations Introductory to the Explanation of the Oriental Legends to be found on certain Imperial and Partho-Persian Coins; Sassanian Gems and early Armenian Coins; Notes on Certain unpublished Coins of the Sassanidæ; An Account of Eight Kufic Coins; Supplementary Contributions to the Series of the Coins of the Kings of Ghazni; Supplementary Contributions to the Series of the Coins of the Patan Sultans of Hindustan; The Initial Coinage of Bengal, introduced by the Muhammadans, on the conquest of the country, A.H. 600-800, A.D. 1203-1397. In one vol. 8vo. half-bound, gilt edges. 1868.
- Thomas.—EARLY SASSANIAN INSCRIPTIONS, SEALS AND COINS. By Edward Thomas, Esq., late of the East India Company's Bengal Service. 8vo. pp. viii. and 138. With numerous woodcuts, a photograph of the Hājīábād inscription, and a copper-plate of the Sassanian coins. Cloth, 1868. 7s. 6d.
- Thomson.—INSTITUTES OF THE LAWS OF CEYLON. By Henry Byerley Thomson, Second Puisne Judge of the Supreme Court of Ceylon. In 2 vols., 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. 647, and pp. xx. 713. With Appendices, pp. 71. 1866. £2 2s.
- Thomson.—THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF AN ARTIZAN. By Christopher Thomson. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 408. 1847. 6s.
- Thoreau.—A WEEK ON THE CONCORD AND MERRIMACK RIVERS. By Henry D. Thoreau. 12mo. cloth, pp. 413. 1862. 7s. 6d.
- Thoreau.—THE MAINE WOODS. By Henry D. Thoreau. 12mo. cloth, pp. vi. and 328. 1864. 7s. 6d.
- Thoreau.—EXCURSIONS. 12mo. cloth, pp. 319. 1864. 7s. 6d.
- Thoreau.—A YANKEE IN CANADA; with Anti-Slavery and Reform Papers. By Henry D. Thoreau. 12mo. cloth, pp. 286. 1866. 7s. 6d.
- Thoreau.—LETTERS TO VARIOUS PERSONS. By Henry D. Thoreau. Edited by Ralph Waldo Emerson. 16mo. cloth, Pp. 229. 1865. 7s. 6d.
- A series of interesting letters selected by Mr. Emerson, with an appendix containing nine charming poems.
- Thoreau.—WALDEN. By Henry D. Thoreau. 12mo. cloth. pp. 357. 1864. 7s. 6d.

Thoughts OF A LIFETIME; or, Iny Mind—its contents. An epitome of the leading questions of the day. By the author of "Utopia at Home." Crown 8vo. pp. ix. and 220, cloth. 1868. 3s. 6d.

Thoughts ON RELIGION AND THE BIBLE. By a Layman, an M.A. of Trinity College, Dublin. Second edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. pp. x. and 42, sewed. 1865. 1s.

Thoughts ON THE ATHANASIAN CREED, ETC. By a Layman. 16mo. cloth, pp. vi. and 75. 1866. 2s.

Three EXPERIMENTS OF LIVING. Within the Means. Up to the Means. Beyond the Means. Fcap. 8vo., ornamental cover and gilt edges, pp. 86. 1848. 1s.

Ticknor.—A HISTORY OF SPANISH LITERATURE. Entirely re-written. By George Ticknor. 3 vols. crown 8vo. pp. xxiv. 486, xiii. 506, xiv. 524, cloth. 1863. £1 4s.

Tolhausen.—A SYNOPSIS OF THE PATENT LAWS OF VARIOUS COUNTRIES. Comprising the following heads:—1. Law, Date, and where recorded; 2. Kinds of Patents; 3. Previous Examination; 4. Duration; 5. Government Fees; 6. Documents Required, and where to be left; 7. Working and Extension; 8. Assignments; 9. Specifications, Inspection, and Copies of; 10. List of Patents delivered; 11. Specifications Published; 12. Originals of Specifications (Models). By Alexander Tolhausen, Ph. D., Sworn Translator at the Imperial Court of Paris, Author of a Technological Dictionary in the English, French, and German Languages, etc. 8vo. sewed, pp. 31. 1857. 1s.

Torrens.—LANCASHIRE'S LESSON: or, the Need of a Settled Policy in Times of Exceptional Distress. By W. T. M. Torrens, Author of "The Industrial History of Free Nations," "The Life of Sir James Graham," etc. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 191. 1864. 3s. 6d.

Toscani.—ITALIAN CONVERSATIONAL COURSE. A new Method of Teaching the Italian Language, both Theoretically and Practically. By Giovanni Toscani, Professor of the Italian Language and Literature in the City of London College, Royal Polytechnic Institution, etc. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 249. 1867. 5s.

Tosswill.—THE BRITISH AND AMERICAN READY-RECKONER: consisting of Tables showing the equivalent values in Currency and Sterling at any rate for Exchange, of the following articles:—PRODUCE, comprising butter, cheese, bacon, hams, lard, tallow, grease, hops, seeds, tobacco, sugar, beeswax, or any article whereof the Standard is the pound in America and the cwt. (of 112 lbs.) in the British Isles, with a list of net freights. Also cotton per lb.—FLOUR, BEEF AND PORK, or any article sold in both countries by the same Standard.—WHEAT transferred from the bushel of 60 lbs. to quarter of 480 lbs.; likewise the equivalent value of the quarter and cental.—INDIAN CORN transferred from the bushel of 56 lbs. to the quarter of 480 lbs. Also freights of wheat and corn.—OIL CAKE AND DYE WOODS, allowing, where necessary, for the difference between the 2,000 lbs. and the gross ton.—REFINED PETROLEUM transferred from the small or wine into the imperial gallon.—CRUDE PETROLEUM transferred from the small gallon into the tun of 252 imperial or 303 small gallons. Also, Sterling Commission or Brokerage, showing the expense of placing any of the above merchandise "free on board." Computed by Edward B. Tosswill, Author of "Produce Tables from par to 400 premium." Imperial 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 133. 1865. £1 1s.

**Towler.**—**THE SILVER SUNBEAM:** a Practical and Theoretical Text-book on Sun-Drawing and Photographic Printing, comprehending all the Wet and Dry Processes at present known. By J. Towler, M.D., Prendergast Professor of Natural Philosophy. Third Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 443. 1866. 10s. 6d.

**Towler.**—**DRY PLATE PHOTOGRAPHY;** or, the Tannin Process made Simple and Practical for Operators and Amateurs. By J. Towler, M.D. 12mo. sewed, pp. 97. 1865. 4s.

**Towler.**—**THE MAGIC PHOTOGRAPH;** with full Instructions How to Make it. By J. Towler, M.D. 12mo. sewed, pp. 22. 1866. 1s.

**Triglot.**—**A COMPLETE DICTIONARY, ENGLISH, GERMAN, AND FRENCH,** on an entirely new plan, for the use of the Three Nations. In Three Divisions. 1 vol. small 4to, cloth, red edges. 10s. 6d.

**Trimén.**—**RHOPALOPERA AFRICA AUSTRALIS;** a Catalogue of South African Butterflies; comprising Descriptions of all the known Species, with Notices of their Larvæ, Pupæ, Localities, Habits, Seasons of Appearance, and Geographical Distribution. By Roland Trimén, Member of the Entomological Society of London. With Illustrations, by G. H. Ford. 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 353. 1862-66. 18s.  
Ditto Coloured, 25s.

**Trübner's AMERICAN AND ORIENTAL LITERARY RECORD.** A Monthly Register of the most important Works published in North and South America, in India, China, and the British Colonies. With Occasional Notes on German, Dutch, Danish, French, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese and Russian Books. The object of the Publishers in issuing this monthly publication is to give a full and particular account of every publication of importance issued in America and the East. Vols. 1 to 3 (36 numbers) from March, 1865, to July, 1868, small quarto, 6d. per number. Subscription 5s. per annum. Continued monthly.

The object of the Publishers in issuing this monthly publication is to give a full and particular account of every publication of importance issued in America and in the East.

**Trübner's SERIES OF GERMAN PLAYS,** for Students of the German Language. With Grammatical and Explanatory Notes. By F. Weinmann, German Master to the Royal Institution School, Liverpool, and G. Zimmermann, Teacher of Modern Languages. No. I. Der Vetter. Comedy in three Acts, by Roderick Benedix. 12mo. cloth, pp. 125. 1863. 2s. 6d.

**Trübner's GOLD AND SILVER COINS** (See under Current Gold and Silver Coins).

**Trübner.**—**TRÜBNER'S BIBLIOGRAPHICAL GUIDE TO AMERICAN LITERATURE:** a Classed List of Books published in the United States of America, from 1817 to 1857. With Bibliographical Introduction, Notes, and Alphabetical Index. Compiled and Edited by Nicolas Trübner. In 1 vol. 8vo., half-bound, pp. 750. 1859. 18s.

This work, it is believed, is the first attempt to marshal the Literature of the United States of America during the last forty years, according to the generally received bibliographical canons. The Librarian will welcome it, no doubt, as a companion volume to Brunet, Lowndes, and Ebert; whilst, to the bookseller, it will be a faithful guide to the American branch of English Literature—a branch which, on account of its rapid increase and rising importance, begins to force itself daily more and more upon his attention. Nor will the work be of less interest to the man of letters inasmuch as it comprises complete Tables of Contents to all the more prominent Collections of the Americans, to the Journals, Memoirs, Proceedings, and Transactions of their learned Societies—and thus furnishes an intelligible key to a department of American scientific activity hitherto but imperfectly known and understood in Europe.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

"It has been reserved for a foreigner to have compiled, for the benefit of European readers, a really trustworthy guide to Anglo-American literature. This honourable distinction has been fairly one by Mr. Nicolas Trübner, the intelligent and well-known publisher in Paternoster-row. That gentleman has succeeded in making a very valuable addition to bibliographical knowledge, in a quarter where it was much wanted."—*Universal Review*, Jan., 1859.

"Trübner's Bibliographical Guide to American Literature' deserves praise for the great care with which it is prepared, and the wonderful amount of information contained in its pages. It is compiled and edited by Mr. Nicolas Trübner, the publisher, of Paternoster-row. It comprises a classified list of books published in the United States during the last forty years, with Bibliographical Introduction, Notes, and Alphabetical Index. The introduction is very elaborate and full of facts, and must be the work of a gentleman who has spared no pains in making himself master of all that is important in connection with American literature. It certainly supplies much information not generally known in Europe."—*Morning Star*, Jan. 31st, 1859.

"Mr. Trübner deserves much credit for being the first to arrange bibliography according to the received rules of the art. He began the labour in 1855, and the first volume was published in that year; constituting, in fact, the earliest attempt, on this side of the Atlantic, to catalogue American books. The present volume, of course, is enlarged, and is more perfect in every respect. The method of classification is exceedingly clear and useful.

"In short, it presents the actual state of literature, as well as the course of its development from the beginning. Into the subject-matter of this section, we shall have to look hereafter; we are now simply explaining the composition of Mr. Trübner's most valuable and useful book."—*Spectator*, Feb. 5, 1859.

"Mr. Trübner's book is by far the most complete American bibliography that has yet appeared, and displays an amount of patience and research that does him infinite credit. We have tested the accuracy of the work upon several points demanding much care and inquiry, and the result has always been satisfactory. Our American brethren cannot fail to feel complimented by the production of this volume, which in quantity almost equals our own London catalogue."—*The Bookseller*, Feb. 24th, 1859.

"To say of this volume that it entirely fulfils the promise of its title-page, is possibly the highest and most truthful commendation that can be awarded to it. Mr. Trübner deserves however, something beyond general praise for the patient and intelligent labour with which he has elaborated the earlier forms of the work into that which it now bears. What was once but a scanty volume, has now become magnified, under his care, to one of considerable size; and what was once little better than a dry catalogue, may now take rank as a biographical work of first-rate importance. His position as an American literary agent has, doubtless, been very favourable to Mr. Trübner, by throwing matter in its way; and he confesses, in his preface, that it is to this source that he is mainly indebted for the materials which have enabled him to construct the work before us. Mr. Trübner's object in compiling this book is, he states, two-fold: 'On the one hand, to suggest the necessity of a more perfect work of its kind by an American, surrounded, as he necessarily would be, with the useful appliances; and, on the other, to supply to Europeans a guide to Anglo-American literature—a branch which, by its rapid rise and increasing importance, begins to force itself more and more on our attention. It is very modest in Mr. Trübner thus to treat his work as a mere suggestion for others. It is much more than this: it is an example which those who attempt to do anything more complete cannot do better than to follow a model, which they will do well to copy, if they would combine fulness of material with that admirable order and arrangement which so facilitates reference, and without which a work of this sort is all but useless.

"All honour, then, to the literature of Young America—for young she still is, and let her thank her stars for it—and all honour also, to Mr. Trübner, for taking so much pains to make us acquainted with it."—*The Critic*, March 19, 1859.

"This is not only a very useful, because well executed, bibliographical work—it is also a work of much interest to all who are connected with literature. The bulk of it consists of a classified list, with date of publication, size, and price, of all the works, original or translated, which have appeared in the United States during the last forty years; and an alphabetical index facilitates reference to any particular work or author. On the merits of this portion of the work we cannot, of course, expect to form a judgment. It would require something of the special erudition of Mr. Trübner himself, to say how far he has succeeded or fallen short of his undertaking—how few, or how many, have been his omissions. There is one indication, however, of his careful minuteness, which suggests the amount of labour that must have been bestowed on the work—namely, the full enumeration of all the contents of the various Transaction and Scientific Journals. Thus, 'the Transactions of the American Philosophical Society,' from the year 1769 to 1857—no index to which has yet appeared in America—are in this work made easy of reference, every paper of every volume being mentioned seriatim. The naturalist, who wishes to know what papers have appeared in the *Boston Journal of Natural History* during the last twenty years, that is, from its commencement, has only to glance over the five closely-printed pages of this guide to satisfy himself at once."—*The Saturday Review*, April 2, 1859.

"We have never seen a work on the national literature of a people more carefully compiled than the present, and the bibliographical prolegomena deserves attentive perusal by all who would study either the political or the literary history of the greatest Republic of the West."—*The Leader*, March 26th, 1859.

"The subject of my letter to-day may seem to be of a purely literary character, but I feel justified to claim a more general interest for it. That subject is connected with the good reputation of the United States abroad. It is likewise connected with the general topic of my two former letters. I have spoken of the friends and the antagonists of the United States among European nations, and among the different classes of European society. I have stated that the antagonists are chiefly to be found among the aristocracy, not only of birth, but of



mind—as it has been called—likewise; not only among the privileged classes, and those connected with the Government interests, but among those who live in the sphere of literature and art, and look down with contempt upon a society in which utilitarian motives are believed to be paramount. And I have asserted that, these differences in the opinions of certain classes left aside, the Germans, as a whole take a more lively and a deeper interest in American affairs than in any other nation. Now I am going to speak of a book just ready to leave the press of a London publisher, which, while it is a remarkable instance of the truth of my assertion in reference to the Germans, must be considered as serving the interests of the United States, by promoting the good reputation of American life in an uncommon degree.

“The London book trade has a firm, Trübner and Co., of whose business transactions American literature, as well as literature on America, form a principal branch. It is the firm who have lately published the bibliography of American languages. Mr. Nicolas Trübner is a German, who has never inhabited the United States, and yet he risks his time, labour, and money, in literary publication, for which even vain endeavours would have been made to find an American publisher.

“The new publication of Mr. Trübner, to which I have referred, is a large 8vo volume of 800 pages, under the title of ‘Bibliographical Guide to American Literature, A Classified List of Books published in the United States of America, from 1817 to 1857. With Bibliographical Introduction, Notes, and Alphabetical Index, Compiled and edited by Nicolas Trübner.’

“This last remark has but too much truth in it. The United States, in the opinion of the great mass of even the well-educated people of Europe, is a country inhabited by a nation lost in the pursuit of material interest, a country in which the technically applicable branches of some sciences may be cultivated to a certain degree, but a country essentially without literature and art, a country not without newspapers—so much the worse for it—but almost without books. Now, here, Mr. Trübner, a German, comes out with a list of American books, filling a thick volume, though containing American publications only, upward from the year 1817, from which time he dates the period of a more decided literary independence of the United States.

“Since no native-born, and even no adopted, American, has taken the trouble of compiling, arranging, digesting, editing, and publishing such a work, who else but a German could undertake it? who else among the European nations would have thought American literature worth the labour, the time, and the money? and, let me add, that a smaller work of a similar character, ‘The Literature of American Local History,’ by the late Dr. Hermann Ludewig, was the work of a German, likewise. May be that the majority of the American public will ascribe but an inferior degree of interest to works of this kind. The majority of the public of other nations will do the same, as it cannot be everybody’s business to understand the usefulness of bibliography, and of books containing nothing but the enumeration and description of books. One thing, however, must be apparent: the deep interest taken by some foreigners in some of the more ideal spheres of American life; and if it is true, that the clear historical insight into its own development, ideal as well as material, is one of the most valuable acquisitions of a nation, future American generations will acknowledge the good services of those foreigners, who, by their literary application, contributed to avert the national calamity of the origin of the literary independence of America becoming veiled in darkness.”  
*New York Daily Tribune*, Dec., 1858.

“It is remarkable and noteworthy that the most valuable manual of American literature should appear in London and be published by an English house. Trübner’s Bibliographical Guide to American Literature is a work of extraordinary skill and perseverance, giving an index to all the publications of the American press for the last forty years.”—*Harper’s Weekly*, March 28th, 1859.

“Mr. Trübner deserves all praise for having produced a work every way satisfactory. No one who takes an interest in the subject of which it treats can dispense it with it; and we have no doubt that booksellers in this country will learn to consider it necessary to them as a shop manual, and only second in importance, for the purposes of their trade, to the London Catalogue itself. That a foreigner, and a London bookseller, should have accomplished what Americans themselves have failed to do, is most creditable to the compiler. The volume contains 149 pages of introductory matter, containing by far the best record of American literary history yet published; and 521 pages of classed list of books, to which an alphabetical index of 33 pages is added. This alphabetical index alone may claim to be one of the most valuable aids for enabling the student of literary history to form a just and perfect estimate of the great and rising importance of Anglo-American literature, the youngest and most untrammelled of all which illustrate the gradual development of the human mind.”—*The Press*, Philadelphia, Oct. 11, 1858.

“We do not so much express the wish by this notice, that Mr. Trübner may not find a public ungrateful for his labours, as congratulate, especially American Bibliophiles, upon the advantages within their reach, by the acquisition and use of what Mr. Trübner has so opportunely supplied.”—*Washington National Intelligencer*, March 22nd, 1859.

“This volume contains a well-classified list of books published in the United States of America during the last forty years, preceded by a tolerably full survey of American literary enterprise during the first half of the nineteenth century. The value of such a guide, in itself tolerably evident, becomes more so upon glancing over the five hundred and forty pages of close print which display the literary activity pervading the country of Prescott and Motley,

of Irving and Hawthorne, of Poe and Longfellow, of Story and Wheaton, of Moses Stuart and Channing. This volume will be useful to the scholar, but to the librarian it is indispensable."—*Daily News*, March 24th, 1859.

"There are hundreds of men of moderate scholarship who would gladly stand on some higher and more assured point. They feel that they have acquired much information, but they also feel the need of that subtle discipline, literary education, without which all mere learning is the *rudis indigesta moles*, as much of a stumbling-block as an aid. To those in such a condition, works on bibliography are invaluable. For direction in classifying all reading, whether English or American, Allibone's Dictionary is admirable; but, for particular information as to the American side of the house, the recently published *Bibliographical Guide to American Literature*, by Nicholas Trübner, of London, may be conscientiously commended. A careful perusal of this truly remarkable work cannot fail to give any intelligent person a clear and complete idea of the whole state of American book-making, not only in its literary aspect, but in its historical, and, added to this, in its most mechanical details."—*Philadelphia Evening Bulletin*, March 5th, 1859.

"But the best work on American bibliography yet published has come to us from London, where it has been compiled by the well-known bibliophile, Trübner. The work is remarkable for condensation and accuracy, though we have noted a few errors and omissions, upon which we should like to comment, had we now space to do so."—*New York Times*, March 26th, 1859.

"Some of our readers, whose attention has been particularly called to scientific and literary matters, may remember meeting, some years since, in this country, a most intelligent foreigner, who visited the United States for the purpose of extending his business connections, and making a personal investigation into the condition of literature in the New World. Mr. Nicholas Trübner—the gentleman to whom we have made reference—although by birth a German, and by education and profession a London bookseller, could hardly be called a 'stranger in America,' for he had sent before him a most valuable letter of introduction, in the shape of a carefully compiled register of American books and authors, entitled '*Bibliographical Guide to American Literature*,' etc., pp. xxxii, 408. This manual was the germ of the important publication, the title of which the reader will find at the commencement of this article. Now, in consequence of Mr. Trübner's admirable classification and minute index, the inquirer after knowledge has nothing to do but copy from the *Bibliographical Guide* the titles of the American books which he wishes to consult, despatch them to his library by a messenger, and in a few minutes he has before him the coveted volumes, through whose means he hopes to enlarge his acquisitions. Undoubtedly it would be a cause of well-founded reproach, of deep mortification to every intelligent American, if the arduous labours of the learned editor and compiler of this volume (whom we almost hesitate to call a foreigner), should fail to be appreciated in a country to which he has, by the preparation of this valuable work, proved himself so eminent a benefactor."—*Pennsylvania Enquirer*, March 26th, 1859.

"The editor of this volume has acquired a knowledge of the productions of the American press which is rarely exhibited on the other side of the Atlantic, and which must command the admiration of the best informed students of the subject in this country. His former work on American bibliography, though making no pretensions to completeness, was a valuable index to various branches of learning that had been successfully cultivated by our scholars but, neither in comprehensiveness of plan nor thoroughness of execution, can it be compared to the elaborate and minute record of American literature contained in this volume. The duty of the editor required extensive research, vigilant discrimination, and untiring diligence; and in the performance of his task we are no less struck with the accuracy of detail than with the extent of his information. The period to which the volume is devoted, comprises only the last forty years; but within that time the literature of this country has received its most efficient impulses, and been widely unfolded in the various departments of intellectual activity. If we were permitted to speak in behalf of American scholars, we should not fail to congratulate Mr. Trübner on the eminent success with which he has accomplished his plan, and the ample and impartial justice with which he has registered the productions of our native authorship. After a careful examination of his volume, we are bound to express our high appreciation of the intelligence, fairness, and industry which are conspicuous in its pages; for exactness and precision it is no less remarkable, than for extent of research; few, if any, important publications are omitted on its catalogue, and although, as is inevitable in a work of this nature, an erroneous letter has sometimes crept into a name, or an erroneous figure into a date, no one can consult it habitually without learning to rely on its trustworthiness, as well as its completeness."—*Harper's Magazine*, April, 1859.

"Nor is the book a dry catalogue only of the names and contents of the publications of America. Prefixed to it are valuable bibliographical prolegomena, instructive to the antiquary, as well as useful to the philologist. In this portion of the work, Mr. Trübner had the assistance of the late Dr. Ludewig, whose early death was a great loss to philological science. Mr. Moran, the assistant-secretary to the American Legation, has added to the volume a historical summary of the literature of America; and Mr. Edward Edwards is responsible for an interesting account of the public libraries of the United States. To Mr. Trübner's own careful superintendence and hard work, however, the student must ever remain indebted for one of the most useful and well-arranged books on bibliographical lore ever published. In addition to this, it is right to congratulate Mr. Trübner on the fact, that his present work confirms the opinion passed on his '*Bibliotheca Philologica*,' that among the booksellers themselves honourable literary eminence may exist, without clashing with business arrangements. The booksellers of old were authors, and Mr. Trübner emulates their example."—*Morning Chronicle*, March 22nd, 1859.

"Mr. Trübner, who is not only a bibliophile but a bibliophile, has, in this work, materially increased the claim which he had already upon the respect of all book-lovers everywhere, but especially in the United States, to whose literature he has now made so important and useful a contribution. So much larger than a former book, under a similar title, which he published in 1855, and so much more ample in every respect, the present constitutes a new implement for our libraries, as well as the most valuable existing aid for those students who, without libraries, have an interest in knowing their contents."—*Baltimore American*, 2nd April, 1859.

"Lastly, published only the other day, is Trübner's Bibliographical Guide to American Literature, which gives a classed list of books published in the United States during the last forty years, with bibliographical introduction, notes, and Alphabetical index. This octavo volume has been compiled and edited by Mr. Nicolas Trübner, the well-known head of one of the great foreign publishing and importing houses of London, who is also editor of Ludewig and Turner's Literature of American Aboriginal Languages. Besides containing a classed list of books, with an alphabetical index, Mr. Trübner's book has an introduction, in which, at considerable length, he treats of the history of American literature, including newspapers, periodicals, and public libraries. It is fair to state that Mr. Trübner's Bibliographical Guide was published subsequent to Allibone's Dictionary, but printed off about the same time."—*Philadelphia Press*, Apr. 4th, 1859.

"This is a valuable work for book buyers. For its compilation we are indebted to a foreign bibliomaniac, but one who has made himself familiar with American literature, and has possessed himself of the most ample sources of information. The volume contains:—I. Bibliographical Prolegomena; II. Contributions towards a History of American Literature; III. Notices of Public Libraries of the United States. These three heads form the introduction, and occupy one hundred and fifty pages. IV. Classed list of books; V. Alphabetical list of authors. This plan is somewhat a ter that adopted in Watts' celebrated 'Bibliotheca Britannica,' a work of immense value, whose compilation occupied some forty years. The classified portion of the present work enables the reader to find readily the names of all books on any one subject. The alphabetical index of authors enables the reader to ascertain instantly the names of all authors and of all their works, including the numerous periodical publications of the last forty years. Mr. Trübner deserves the thanks of the literary world for his plan, and its able execution."—*New York Courier and Enquirer*, April 11th, 1859.

"L'auteur, dans une préface de dix pages, expose les idées qui lui ont fait entreprendre son livre, et le plan qu'il a cru devoir adopter. Dans une savante introduction, il fait une revue critique des différents ouvrages relatifs à l'Amérique; il signale ceux qui ont le plus contribué à l'établissement d'une littérature spéciale Américaine, et il en fait l'histoire, cette partie de son travail est destinée à lui faire honneur, elle est méthodiquement divisée en période coloniale et en période Américaine et renferme, sur les progrès de l'imprimerie en Amérique, sur le salaire des auteurs, sur le commerce de la librairie, les publications périodiques, des renseignements très intéressants, que l'on est heureux de trouver réunis pour la première fois. Cette introduction, qui n'a pas moins de 150 pages, se termine par une table statique de toutes les bibliothèques publiques des différents Etats de l'Union.

"Le catalogue méthodique et raisonné des ouvrages n'occupe pas moins de 521 pages, il forme 32 sections consacrées chacune à l'une des branches des sciences humaines; celle qui donne la liste des ouvrages qui intéressent la géographie et les voyages (section xvi.) comprend près de 600 articles, et parmi eux on trouve l'indication de plusieurs ouvrages dont nous ne soupçonnions même pas l'existence en Europe. Un index général alphabétique par noms d'auteurs qui termine ce livre, permet d'abrégé des recherches souvent bien pénibles. Le guide bibliographique de M. Trübner est un monument élevé à l'activité scientifique et littéraire Américaine et comme tel, il est digne de prendre place à côté des ouvrages du même genre publiés en Europe par les Brunet, les Lowndes, et les Ebert. (V. A. Maite-Brun)."—*Nouvelles Annales des Voyages*, April, 1859.

Tuder.—MY OWN PHILOLOGY. By A. Tuder. In Two Parts. 8vo. pp. iv. and 40, 60, sewed. 1866. 1s. each.

Twenty-five YEARS' CONFLICT IN THE CHURCH, AND ITS REMEDY. 12mo. sewed, pp. viii. and 70. 1855. 1s. 6d.

Uhlemann's SYRIAC GRAMMAR. Translated from the German by Enoch Hutchinson. 8vo. cloth, pp. 368. 1855. 18s.

Ullmann.—THE WORSHIP OF GENIUS, AND THE DISTINCTIVE CHARACTER OR ESSENCE OF CHRISTIANITY. By Professor C. Ullmann. Translated by Lucy Sandford. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 116. 1840. 3s. 6d.

United States CONSULAR REGULATIONS. A Practical Guide for Consular Officers, and also for merchants, shipowners, and masters of American vessels, in all their consular transactions. Third edition, revised and enlarged 8vo. pp. 684, cloth. 1867. 21s.

**United States PATENT LAW (The).** Instructions how to obtain Letters Patent for new inventions; including a variety of useful information concerning the rules and practice of the Patent Office; how to sell patents; how to secure foreign patents; forms for assignments and licenses, together with engravings and descriptions of the condensing steam-engine, and the principal mechanical movements, valuable tables, calculations, problems, etc., etc. By Munn and Co., Solicitors of Patents, No. 37, Park Row, New York. Third edition, 12mo., pp. 108, cloth. 1867. 1s. 6d.

**Unity, DUALITY, AND TRINITY OF THE GODHEAD** (A Discussion among upwards of 250 theological enquirers, clergymen, dissenting ministers and laymen, on the). With digressions on the Creation, fall, incarnation, atonement, resurrection, and infallibility of the Scriptures, inspiration, miracles, future punishments, revision of the Bible, etc. The press corrected by Ranley, the Reporter of the discussion. 8vo. pp. 200, cloth. 1864. 6s.

**Unity (THE) OF TRUTH.** A Devotional Diary, compiled from the Scripture and other sources. By the Author of "Visiting my Relations." 18mo. cloth, pp. iv. 138. 1867. 2s.

**Universal CORRESPONDENCE IN SIX LANGUAGES.** English, German, French, Dutch, Italian, and Spanish. 2 vols. 8vo. cloth, pp. 664 and 660. 1865. 20s.

**Universal CHURCH (THE); its Faith, Doctrine, and Constitution.** Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 398. 1866. 6s.

**Upper RHINE (THE).** Illustrating its finest Cities, Castles, Ruins, and Landscapes. From drawings by Messrs. Rohbock, Louis and Julius Lange, engraved by the most distinguished artists. With a historical and topographical text. Edited by Dr. Gaspey. 8vo. pp. 496. With 134 steel-plate illustrations, cloth. 1859. £2 2s.

**Uricocchea.** — **MAPOTECA COLOMBIANA:** Catalogo de Todos los Mapas, Planos, Vistas, etc., relativos a la América-Española, Brasil, e Islas adyacentes. Arreglada cronologicamente i precedida de una introduccion sobre la historia cartografica de América. Por el Doctor Ezequiel Uricocchea, de Bogotá, Nueva Granada. One vol. 8vo. cloth, pp. 232. 1860. 6s.

**Uriel, AND OTHER POEMS.** 12mo. cloth. 2s. 6d.

**Uriel.—POEMS.** By the Author of Uriel. Second Edition. 12mo. cloth, pp. 169. 1857. 2s.

**Urquhart.—PROGRESS OF RUSSIA in the West, North, and South, by Opening the Sources of Opinion, and appropriating the Channels of Wealth and Power.** By David Urquhart. Fifth edition, pp. 490, with Map, 12mo. stiff cover. 1852. 1s. 6d.

**Urquhart.—RECENT EVENTS IN THE EAST.** Letters, Essays, etc. By David Urquhart. 12mo. pp. 312, 1853. 1s. 6d.

**Urquhart.—THE WAR OF IGNORANCE; its Progress and Results: a Prognostication and a Testimony.** By David Urquhart. 8vo. 1854. 1s.

**Urquhart.—THE OCCUPANTS OF THE CRIMEA.** An Appeal from To-day and To-morrow. By David Urquhart. 8vo. sewed. 1854. 6d.

**Urquhart.—THE HOME FACE OF THE "FOUR POINTS."** By David Urquhart. 8vo. pp. 42. 1854. 1s.

Valetta.—*Ομήρου βίος καὶ ποιήματά. Πραγματεία ἱστορικὴ καὶ κριτικὴ ὑπὸ Ἰωάννου Ν. Βαλέττα.* (The Life and Poems of Homer. A Historical and Critical Essay. By John N. Valetta.) 1 vol. 4to. pp. xii. and 403, with an illustration, sewed, 1866. 21s.

Valetta.—*Φωτιοῦ τοῦ σοφωτάτου καὶ ἀγιοτάτου Πατριάρχου Κωνσταντινουπόλεως Ἐπιστολαί. Ἄς δύο τοῦ αὐτοῦ παρήρηται ποιήματα. Α. Ἐρωτήματα δέκα σὺν ἴσαις ταῖς ἀποκρίσεσιν, ἧτοι συναγωγαὶ καὶ λιποδείξεις ἀκριβεῖς, συνειλεγμέναι ἐκ τῶν συνωδικῶν καὶ ἱστορικῶν γραφῶν περὶ Ἐπισκοπῶν καὶ Μητροπολιτῶν, καὶ λοιπῶν ἐτέρων ἀνγκαίων ζητημάτων. Β. Κρίσεις καὶ ἐπιλόγαι πέντε κεφαλαίων, τῷ Θεοφιλεστάτῳ, ὁστωτάτῳ Λέοντι Ἀρχιεπισκόπῳ Καλαβρίας. Μετὰ προλεγόμενων περὶ τοῦ βίου καὶ τῶν συγγραμμάτων Φωτιοῦ κ.τ.λ. ὑπὸ Ἰωάννου Ν. Βαλέττα.* (The Epistles of Photius, the wisest and holiest Patriarch of Constantinople. To which are attached two works of the same authr. 1. Ten Questions with their answers, viz., collections and accurate descriptions gathered from the synodical and historical writings on the Bishops and Metropolitans. 2. Sentences and Interpretations, in five chapters, addressed to Leon, the Archbishop of Calabria. With an Introduction on the Life and Writings of Photius. By John N. Valetta.) 1 vol. 4to. pp. 581 sewed. 1864. £1 10s.

Van der Tuuk.—*OUTLINES OF A GRAMMAR OF THE MALAGASY LANGUAGE.* By H. N. Van der Tuuk. 8vo. sewed, pp. 28. 1866. 1s.

Van der Tuuk.—*SHORT ACCOUNT OF THE MALAY MANUSCRIPTS* belonging to the Royal Asiatic Society. By H. N. Van Der Tuuk. 8vo. sewed, pp. 51. 1866. 1s.

Van de Weyer.—*CHOIX D'OPUSCULES PHILOSOPHIQUES, HISTORIQUES, POLITIQUES ET LITTÉRAIRES* de Sylvain Van de Weyer. Précédés d'Avant-propos de l'Editeur. Première Série.

Table de Matières.

1. Le Roi Cobden.

2. Lettres sur les Anglais qui ont écrit en Français.

3. Discours sur l'Histoire de la Philosophie.

4. Moyen facile et économique d'être bienfaisant, proposé aux jeunes Gens, et suivi de Pensées diverses.

5. Lettre à M. Ernst Münch.

Crown 8vo. pp. 374. Roxburghe style. 1863. 10s. 6d.

Ditto. Ditto. Seconde Série. (In the Press.)

Van Laun (HENRI).—*GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.*

Parts I. and II. Accidence and Syntax. In one vol. crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 151 and 117. 5th edition. 1867. 4s.

Part III. Exerciscs. 4th Ed. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 285. 1866. 3s. 6d.

Van Laun.—*LEÇONS GRADUÉES DE TRADUCTION ET DE LECTURE; or, Graduated Lessons in Translation and Reading, with Biographical Sketches, Annotations on History, Geography, Synonyms and Style, and a Dictionary of Words and Idioms.* By Henri Van Laun. 12mo. cloth, pp. vi. and 476. 1863. 5s.

Varnhagen.—*AMÉRIGO VESPUCCI.* Son caractère, ses écrits (même les moins authentiques), sa vie et ses navigations, avec une carte indiquant les routes. Par F. A. de Varnhagen, Ministre du Brésil au Pérou, Chili et Ecuador, etc. Small Folio, pp. 120, boards. 1865. 14s.

Varnhagen.—*LA VERDADERA GUANAHANI DE COLON.* Memoria comunicada a la facultad de humanidades. Por Don Francisco Ad. de Varnhagen, e impresa en el tomo xxvi. de los anales de Chile (Encop. de 1864). 8vo. pp. xiv., with a map of the Bahaman and Antillan Archipelago, sewed, 1864. 2s. 6d.

Velasquez and Simonne's *NEW METHOD TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK THE SPANISH LANGUAGE.* Adapted to Ollendorff's System. Post 8vo. pp. 558, cloth. 1866. 6s.

Key. Post 8vo. pp. 174., cloth. 7s.

- Velasquez.—A DICTIONARY OF THE SPANISH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES. For the Use of Young Learners and Travellers. By M. Velasquez de la Cadena. In Two Parts. I. Spanish-English. II. English-Spanish. 12mo. pp. 680, cloth. 1864. 12s.
- Velasquez.—A PRONOUNCING DICTIONARY OF THE SPANISH AND ENGLISH LANGUAGES. Composed from the Dictionaries of the Spanish Academy, Terreas, and Salvá, and Webster, Worcester, and Walker. Two Parts in one thick volume. By M. Velasquez de la Cadena. Royal 8vo. pp. 1,280, cloth. 1866. 25s.
- Velasquez.—AN EASY INTRODUCTION TO SPANISH CONVERSATION, containing all that is necessary to make a rapid progress in it. Particularly designed for persons who have little time to study, or are their own instructors. By M. Velasquez de la Cadena. New edition, revised and enlarged. 12mo. pp. 150, cloth. 1863. 2s. 6d.
- Velasquez.—NEW SPANISH READER: Passages from the most approved authors, in Prose and Verse. Arranged in progressive order. With Vocabulary. Post 8vo. pp. 352, cloth. 1866. 6s. 6d.
- Vera.—PROBLÈME DE LA CERTITUDE. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 220. 1845. 3s.
- Vera.—PLATONIS ARISTOTELIS ET HEGELII DE MEDIO TERMINO DOCTRINA. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 45. 1845. 1s. 6d.
- Vera.—INQUIRY INTO SPECULATIVE AND EXPERIMENTAL SCIENCE. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 68. 1856. 3s. 6d.
- Vera.—LOGIQUE DE HÉGEL, traduite pour la première fois et accompagnée d'une introduction et d'un commentaire perpétuel. 2 volumes. 8vo. pp. 750. By Professor A. Vera. 1859. 12s.
- Vera.—L'HÉGÉLIANISME ET LA PHILOSOPHIE. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 226. 1861. 3s. 6d.
- Vera.—MÉLANGES PHILOSOPHIQUES (containing Papers in Italian and French. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 304. 1862. 5s.
- Vera.—PROLUSIONI ALLA STORIA DELLA FILOSOFIA E DALLA FILOSOFIA DELLA STORIA. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 87. 1863. 2s.
- Vera.—INTRODUCTION À LA PHILOSOPHIE DE HÉGEL. Deuxième édition, revue et augmentée de Notes et d'une Préface. By Professor A. Vera. 8vo. pp. 418. (The first edition appeared in 1854). 1864. 6s.
- Vera.—ESSAIS DE PHILOSOPHIE HÉGÉLIENNE, contenant la Peine de Mort, Amour et Philosophie, et Introduction à la Philosophie. By Professor A. Vera. 12mo. pp. 203. 1864. 2s. 6d.
- Vera.—PHILOSOPHIE DE LA NATURE DE HÉGEL, traduite pour la première fois et accompagnée d'une introduction et d'un commentaire perpétuel. By Professor A. Vera. 3 volumes. 8vo. pp. 1637. 1863, 1864, and 1865. 24s.
- Vera.—PHILOSOPHIE DE L'ESPRIT DE HÉGEL, Traduite pour la première fois et accompagnée de deux Introductions et d'un Commentaire Perpétuel. Par A. Vera. Tome premier. 8vo. sewed, pp. cxii. and 471. 1867. 12s.
- Verkrüzen.—A TREATISE ON MUSLIN EMBROIDERY in its Various Branches, including Directions for the different Styles of this Work, with eight beautiful Illustrations, a Receipt to get up Embroidery, etc. By T. A. Verkrüzen, author of a Treatise on Berlin Wool and Colours. Oblong, sewed, pp. 26. 1861. 1s.
- Verkrüzen.—A TREATISE ON BERLIN WOOL AND COLOURS; Needlework, Muslin, Embroidery, Potichomanie, Diaphanie, and Japanerie, for the use of Dealers and Amateurs in Fancy Work. By T. A. Verkrüzen. 4to. pp. 32. 1857. 1s.

- Versmann and Oppenheim.**—ON THE COMPARATIVE VALUE OF CERTAIN SALTS FOR RENDERING FABRICS NON-INFLAMMABLE; being the substance of a paper read before the British Association, at the meeting in Aberdeen, September 15th, 1859. By Fred. Versmann, F.C.S., and Alphons Oppenheim, Ph. D., A.C.S. 8vo. pp. 32, sewed. 1859. 1s.
- Vickers.**—IMAGINISM AND RATIONALISM. An Explanation of the Origin and Progress of Christianity. By John Vickers. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 432. 1867. 7s. 6d.
- Villars (DE).**—MÉMOIRES DE LA COUR D'ESPAGNE SOUS LE RÈGNE DE CHARLES II. 1678—1682. Par le Marquis de Villars. Small 4to. pp. xl. and 382, cloth. 1861. 30s.
- Vishnu Purana.**—A SYSTEM OF HINDU MYTHOLOGY AND TRADITION. Translated from the Original Sanskrit, and illustrated by Notes derived chiefly from other Puranas. By the late Horace Hayman Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., thoroughly revised and edited, with Notes, by Dr. Fitzedward Hall. In 5 vols. 8vo. Vol. I. pp. 340. Vol. II. pp. 348. Vol. III. pp. 348. 10s. 6d. each. (Vols. IV. and V. in the press).
- Voice FROM MAYFAIR (A).** 8vo. pp. 58, sewed. 1868. 4d.
- Volpe.**—AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR. By Girolamo Volpe, Italian Master at Eton College. For the Use of Eton. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 242. 1863. 4s. 6d.
- Volpe.**—A KEY to the Exercises of Volpe's Italian Grammar. 12mo. sewed, pp. 18. 1863. 1s.
- Von Cotta.**—GEOLOGY AND HISTORY: a Popular Exposition of all that is known of the Earth and its Inhabitants in Pre-historic Times. By Bernhard Von Cotta, Professor of Geology at Freiburg. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 84. 1865. 2s.
- Voysey.**—DOGMA VERSUS MORALITY. A Reply to Church Congress. By Charles Voysey, B.A. Post 8vo. sewed, pp. 12. 1866. 3d.
- Voysey.**—THE SLING AND THE STONE. By Charles Voysey, B.A., St. Edmund Hall, Oxford, Incumbent of Healaugh. Volume I. (12 numbers for 1866). Crown 8vo. cloth. 1866. 6s.
- Voysey.**—THE SLING AND THE STONE. By Charles Voysey, B.A. Volume II. (12 numbers for 1867). 8vo. cloth, pp. 176. 1867. 7s. 6d.
- Voysey.**—HUMANITY *versus* BARBARISM IN OUR THANKSGIVING. By Charles Voysey, B.A., St. Edmund Hall, Oxford, Incumbent of Healaugh, Tadcaster. 8vo., pp. 12. 1868. 3d.
- Wade.**—WÉN-CHIEN TZŪ-ERH CHI. A Series of Papers selected as specimens of documentary Chinese, designed to assist Students of the language, as written by the officials of China. Vol. I. and Part I. of the Key. By Thomas Francis Wade, C.B., Secretary to Her Britannic Majesty's Legation at Peking. 4to., half-cloth, pp. xii. and 455; and iv., 72 and 52. 1867. £1 16s.
- Wade.**—YU-YEN TZŪ-ERH CHI. A progressive course, designed to assist the Student of Colloquial Chinese, as spoken in the Capital and the Metropolitan Department. In Eight Parts, with Key, Syllabary, and Writing Exercises. By Thomas Francis Wade, C.B., Secretary to Her Britannic Majesty's Legation, Peking. 3 vols. 4to., Progressive Course, pp. xx. 296 and 16; Syllabary, pp. 126 and 36; Writing Exercises, pp. 48; Key, pp. 174 and 140, sewed. 1867. £4.

- Wafflard and Fulgence.—*LE VOYAGE À DIEPPE*. A Comedy in Prose. By Wafflard and Fulgence. Edited, with English Notes, by the Rev. P. H. Ernest Brette, B.D., of Christ's Hospital; and the University of London, Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 104. 1867. 2s. 6d.
- Wake.—*CHAPTERS ON MAN*. With the Outlines of a Science of comparative Psychology. By C. Staniland Wake, Fellow of the Anthropological Society of London. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 344. 1868. 7s. 6d.
- Wanklyn and Chapman.—*WATER ANALYSIS*. A Practical Treatise on the examination of potable water. By J. Alfred Wanklyn, M.R.C.S., Professor of Chemistry in London Institution, and Ernest Theophron Chapman. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. x. and 104. 1868. 5s.
- Ware.—*SKETCHES OF EUROPEAN CAPITALS*. By William Ware, Author of "Zerobia; or, Letters from Palmyra," "Aurelian," etc. 8vo. pp. 124. 1851. 1s.
- Warning; OR, *THE BEGINNING OF THE END*. By the Author of "Who am I?" 1 vol., 8vo. cloth. 2s.
- Watson.—*INDEX TO THE NATIVE AND SCIENTIFIC NAMES OF INDIAN AND OTHER EASTERN ECONOMIC PLANTS AND PRODUCTS*, originally prepared under the authority of the Secretary of State for India in Council. By John Forbes Watson, M.A., M.D., F.L.S., F.R.A.S., etc., Reporter on the Products of India. Imperial 8vo. cloth, pp. 650. 1868. £1 1s. 6d.
- Watson.—*THEORETICAL ASTRONOMY*, relating to the motions of the heavenly bodies revolving around the sun in accordance with the law of universal gravitation, embracing a systematic derivation of the formulæ for the calculation of the geocentric and heliocentric places, for the determination of the orbits of Planets and Comets, for the correction of approximate elements, and for the computation of special perturbation; together with the theory of the combination of observations, and the method of least squares. With numerical examples and auxiliary tables. By James C. Watson, Director of the Observatory at Ann Arbor, and Professor of Astronomy in the University of Michigan. 8vo. cloth, pp. 662. 1868. £1 18s.
- Watts.—*ESSAYS ON LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE*. By Thomas Watts, of the British Museum. Reprinted, with Alterations and Additions, from the "Transactions of the Philological Society," and elsewhere. 1 vol. 8vo. (In preparation).
- Watts and Doddridge.—*HYMNS FOR CHILDREN*. Revised and altered, so as to render them of general use. By Dr. Watts. To which are added Hymns and other Religious Poetry for Children. By Dr. Doddridge. Ninth edition. 12mo. pp. 48, stiff covers. 1837. 2d.
- Way (THE) TO HAVE PEACE. By S. E. De M. 12mo sewed, pp. 16. 1856. 2d.
- Way (THE) OF TRUTH; OR, a Mother's Teachings from the Bible. 12mo. cloth, pp. iv. and 202. 1867. 2s.
- Wedgwood.—*The Principles of Geometrical Demonstration*, reduced from the Original Conception of Space and Form. By H. Wedgwood, M.A. 12mo. cloth, pp. 48. 1844. 2s.
- Wedgwood.—*ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE UNDERSTANDING*. By Hensleigh Wedgwood, A.M. 12mo. cloth, pp. 133. 1848. 3s.



Wedgwood.—THE GEOMETRY OF THE THREE FIRST BOOKS OF EUCLID. By Direct Proof from Definitions Alone. With an Introduction on the Principles of the Science. By Hensleigh Wedgwood, M.A. 12mo. cloth, pp. 104. 1856. 3s.

Wedgwood.—ON THE ORIGIN OF LANGUAGE. By Hensleigh Wedgwood, M.A., late Fellow of Christ College, Cambridge. 12mo. cloth, pp. 165. 1866. 3s. 6d.

Wedgwood.—A DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. By Hensleigh Wedgwood, M.A., late Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge. Vol. I. (A to D) 8vo. cloth, pp. xxv. 508, 14s.; Vol. II. (E to P) 8vo. cloth, pp. 578, 14s.; Vol. III., Part I. (Q. to Sy), 8vo. pp. 366, 10s. 6d.; Vol. III., Part II. (T to W) 8vo., pp. 200, 5s. 6d. complete the Work. 1859 to 1865. Price of the complete work, 44s.

"Dictionaries are a class of books not usually esteemed light reading; but no intelligent man were to be pitied who should find himself snat up on a rainy day in a lonely house in the dreariest part of Salisbury Plain, with no other means of recreation than that which Mr. Wedgwood's Dictionary of Etymology could afford him. He would read it through from cover to cover sitting, and only regret that he had not the second volume to begin upon forthwith. It is a very able book, of great research, full of delightful surprises, a repertory of the fairy tales of linguistic science."—*Spectator*.

Wékey.—A GRAMMAR OF THE HUNGARIAN LANGUAGE, with appropriate exercises, a copious vocabulary, and specimens of Hungarian poetry. By Sigismund Wékey, late Aide-de-Camp to Kossuth. 12mo. sewed, pp. viii. and 150. 1852. 4s. 6d.

Weller.—AN IMPROVED DICTIONARY; English and French, and French and English, drawn from the best Sources extant in both Languages; in which are now first introduced many Technical, Scientific, Legal, Commercial, Naval, and Military Terms; and to which are added, Separate\_vocabularies of Engineering and Railway Terms; of those descriptive of Steam Power and Steam Navigation; of Geographical Names, and those of Ancient Mythology, and of Persons of Classical Antiquity; and of Christian Names in present use; together with an English Pronouncing Dictionary for the use of Foreigners. By Edward Weller, late Professor of the Athenæum and Episcopal College of Bruges. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. 384 and 340. 1864. 7s. 6d.

What is Truth? Post 8vo. pp. 124, cloth. 1854. 3s.

Wheeler.—THE HISTORY OF INDIA. By J. Talboys Wheeler, Assistant Secretary to the Government of India in the Foreign Department, Secretary to the Indian Record Commission, Author of "The Geography of Herodotus," etc. Vol. I. containing the Vedic Period and the Mahá Bhárata. With a Map of Ancient India to illustrate the Mahá Bhárata. 8vo. cloth, pp. lxxv. and 576. 1867. 18s.

The Second Volume containing the Rámáyana in the Press.

Wheeler.—HISTORICAL SKETCHES OF NORTH CAROLINA, from 1584 to 1851. Compiled from original records, official documents, and traditional statements. With biographical sketches of her distinguished statesmen, jurists, lawyers, soldiers, divines, etc. By John H. Wheeler. Illustrated with engravings. Vol. I., 8vo. cloth, pp. xxii. and 480. 1851. 15s.

Whildin.—MEMORANDA OF THE STRENGTH OF MATERIALS USED IN ENGINEERING CONSTRUCTION. Compiled and edited by J. K. Whildin, Civil Engineer. Second Edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. 62. 1867. 8s.

Whipple.—LITERATURE AND LIFE. Lectures by E. P. Whipple, Author of "Essays and Reviews." 8vo. sewed, pp. 114. 1851. 1s.

Whipple.—CHARACTER AND CHARACTERISTIC MEN. By Edwin P. Whipple. 12mo. cloth, pp. 324. 1866. 9s.

Whitney.—LANGUAGE AND THE STUDY OF LANGUAGE. A Course of Lectures on the Principles of Linguistic Science. By William Dwight Whitney, Professor of Sanskrit in Yale College, New Haven, U.S.A. Crown 8vo. cloth, pp. 500. 1868. 10s. 6d.

Whittier.—SNOW BOUND. A Winter Idyl. By John Greenleaf Whittier. 12mo. cloth, pp. 52. 1866. 6s.

Whittier.—THE POETICAL WORKS OF JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER, Complete in 2 vols. With a Portrait. Blue and Gold Series. 24mo. cloth-gilt edges, pp. viii., 395; vi. 420. 1865. 40s.

Whittier.—MAUD MÜLLER. By John G. Whittier. With Illustrations, by W. J. Hennessy. Small 4to. extra cloth, with gilt edges; 16 leaves, printed on one side only. 1866. 12s.

Whittier.—THE TENT ON THE BEACH, AND OTHER POEMS. By John Greenleaf Whittier. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. vi. and 172. 1867. 6s.

Whittier.—THE PROSE WORKS OF JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER. 2 vols., crown 8vo. cloth, pp. viii., 473; viii., 395. 1866. £1 1s.

Whitty.—THE GOVERNING CLASSES OF GREAT BRITAIN. Political Portraits. By Edward M. Whitty. 12mo. boards, pp. vi. and 238. With Lord Stanley's Portrait. 1859. 3s. 6d.

Who am I? By the Author of "Warning." 1 vol., 8vo. cloth. 4s.

Wikoff.—A NEW YORKER IN THE FOREIGN OFFICE, AND HIS ADVENTURES IN PARIS. By Henry Wikoff. 12mo. cloth, pp. 299. 1858. 6s.

Williams.—FIRST LESSONS IN THE MAORI LANGUAGE, WITH A SHORT VOCABULARY. By W. L. Williams, B.A. Square 8vo. cloth, pp. 80. 1862. 3s. 6d.

Williams.—A DICTIONARY, ENGLISH AND SANSKRIT. By Monier Williams, M.A. Published under the patronage of the Honourable East India Company. 4to. cloth, pp. xii. and 862. 1855. £3 3s.

Williams.—LEXICON CORNU-BRITANNICUM. A Dictionary of the Ancient Celtic Language of Cornwall, in which the words are elucidated by copious examples from the Cornish works now remaining, with translations in English. The synonyms are also given in the cognate dialects of Welsh, Armoric, Irish, Gaelic, and Manx, showing at one view the connection between them. By the Rev. Robert Williams, M.A., Christ Church, Oxford, Parish Curate of Llangadwaladr and Rhydycoesan, Denbighshire. Sewed. 3 parts. pp. 400. 1865. £2 5s.

Williams.—THE MIDDLE KINGDOM. A Survey of the Geography, Government, Education, Social Life, Arts, Religion, etc., of the Chinese Empire and its inhabitants. With a new Map of the Empire. By S. Wells Williams, Author of "Easy Lessons in Chinese," "English and Chinese Vocabulary," "Tonic Dictionary of the Chinese Language." With Portraits, Wood-cuts, and Maps. 2 vols. 8vo., pp. viii. 614, xxii. and 590. 1861. £1 1s.

Willis.—ON THE SPECIAL FUNCTION OF THE SUDORIPAROUS AND LYMPHATIC SYSTEMS, THEIR VITAL IMPORT, AND THEIR BEARING ON HEALTH AND DISEASE. By Robert Willis, M.D. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 72. 1867. 4s. 6d.

WILSON.—A BRIEF EXAMINATION OF PREVALENT OPINIONS ON THE INSPIRATION OF THE SCRIPTURES OF THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENTS. By a Lay Member of the Church of England. With an introduction, by Henry Bristow Wilson, B.D., Vicar of Great Staughton, Hants. 8vo. cloth, pp. lxi. and 254. 1861. 8s. 6d.

WILSON.—THE HOLY BIBLE. By the Rev. Thomas Wilson. (See under Bible.)

WILSON.—SELECT SPECIMENS OF THE THEATRE OF THE HINDUS. Translated from the Original Sanskrit. By Horace Hayman Wilson, M.A., F.R.S. Second Edition. 2 vols., 8vo. cloth, pp. lxx. and 384, 415. 15s.

CONTENTS.—Vol. I.—Preface—Treatise on the Dramatic System of the Hindus—Dramas translated from the Original Sanskrit—The Mricchakati, or the Toy Cart—Vikrama and Urvashi, or the Hero and the Nymph—Uttara Ramā Cheritra, or continuation of the History of Ramā. Vol. II.—Dramas translated from the Original Sanskrit—Malatī and Mādhava, or the Stolen Marriage—Mudrā Rakshasa, or the Signet of the Minister—Retnāvalī, or the Necklace—Appendix, containing short accounts of different Dramas.

WILSON.—THE PRESENT STATE OF THE CULTIVATION OF ORIENTAL LITERATURE. A Lecture delivered at the Meeting of the Royal Asiatic Society. By the Director, Professor H. H. Wilson. 8vo. sewed, pp. 26. 1852. 6d.

WILSON.—WORKS OF THE LATE HORACE HAYMAN WILSON, M.A., F.R.S., Member of the Royal Asiatic Societies of Calcutta and Paris, and of the Oriental Society of Germany, etc., and Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. Vols. I. and II. Also, under this title, "Essays and Lectures" chiefly on the Religion of the Hindus, by the late H. H. Wilson, M.A., F.R.S., etc. Collected and edited by Dr. Reinhold Rost. 2 vols., 8vo. cloth, pp. xiii. 399, vi. and 416. 1861-62. £1 1s.

WILSON.—WORKS OF THE LATE HORACE HAYMAN WILSON, M.A., F.R.S., Member of the Royal Asiatic Societies of Calcutta and Paris, and of the Oriental Society of Germany, etc., and Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford. Vols. III., IV. and V. Also, under the title of "Essays Analytical, Critical, and Philological," on subjects connected with Sanskrit Literature. Collected and edited by Reinhold Rost. 3 vols., 8vo. cloth, pp. 408, 406, and 390. 1864-65. £1 16s.

WILSON.—WORKS OF THE LATE HORACE HAYMAN WILSON. Vols. VI. VII. and VIII. Also, under the title of the Vishnu Purāna, a system of Hindu mythology and tradition. Translated from the original Sanskrit, and illustrated by Notes derived chiefly from other Purānās. By the late H. H. Wilson, Boden Professor of Sanskrit in the University of Oxford, etc., etc. Edited by Fitzedward Hall, M.A., D.C.L., Oxon. Vols. I. to III. 8vo. cloth, pp. cxl. and 200, 344, and 344. 1864-66. £1 11s. 6d. [Vols. IV. and V. in the press.]

WILSON.—CATHOLICITY SPIRITUAL AND INTELLECTUAL. An attempt at vindicating the Harmony of Faith and Knowledge. A series of Discourses. By Thomas Wilson, M.A., late Minister of St. Peter's Mancroft, Norwich, Author of "Travels in Egypt," etc. 8vo. cloth, pp. 232. 1850. 5s.

WILSON.—THE VILLAGE PEARL. A Domestic Poem. With Miscellaneous Pieces. By John Crauford Wilson. 12mo. cloth, pp. viii. and 140. 1852. 3s. 6d.

WILSON.—THE WATER-CURE, ITS PRINCIPLES AND PRACTICE. A Guide in the Preservation of Health and Cure of Chronic Disease. With illustrative cases. By James Wilson, M.D. Fifth Edition. 8vo. sewed, pp. 725. 1859. 3s. 6d.

- Wilson.—PHRASIS: a Treatise on the History and Structure of the different Languages of the World, with a comparative view of the Forms of their Words and the Style of their Expressions. By J. Wilson, A.M. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 384. 1864. 16s.
- Winckelmann.—THE HISTORY OF ANCIENT ART AMONG THE GREEKS. By John Winckelmann. From the German, by G. H. Lodge. Beautifully Illustrated. 8vo. cloth, pp. viii. and 254. 1850. 12s.
- Winer.—GRAMMAR OF THE CHALDEE LANGUAGE, as contained in the Bible and Targums. By Dr. G. B. Winer. Translated by H. B. Hackett. 8vo. boards, pp. 152. 1845. 3s. 6d.
- Winslow.—A COMPREHENSIVE TAMIL AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY OF HIGH AND LOW TAMIL. By the Rev. Miron Winslow, D.D., American Missionary, Madras, assisted by competent Native Scholars: in part from Manuscript materials of the late Rev. Joseph Knight and others. 4to. boards, pp. xiv. and 976. 1862. £3 13s. 6d.
- Winthrop.—LIFE AND LETTERS OF JOHN WINTHROP, Governor of the Massachusetts' Bay Company at their emigration to New England, 1630. By Robert C. Winthrop. Two Portraits; Plate of Groton Church, Suffolk; and facsimile Autographs. 8vo. cloth, pp. xii. and 452. 1864. 14s.
- Winthrop.—LIFE AND LETTERS OF JOHN WINTHROP. Vol. II. from his Embarkation for New England, in 1630, with the Charter and Company of Massachusetts' Bay to his Death, in 1649. By Robert C. Winthrop. Portrait. 8vo. cloth, pp. xv. and 433. 1867. 14s.
- Winter JOURNEY FROM GLOUCESTER TO NORWAY. 18mo. sewed, pp. 100. With a Map. 1867. 1s. 6d.
- Wise.—CAPTAIN BRAND, of the "Centipede;" a Pirate of Eminence in the West Indies: his Loves and Exploits, together with some Account of the Singular Manner in which he departed this Life. By Lieut. H. A. Wise, U.S.N. 12mo. fancy cover, pp. 304. 1860. 2s. 6d.
- Wise.—COMMENTARY ON THE HINDU SYSTEM OF MEDICINE. By T. A. Wise, M.D., Bengal Medical Service. 8vo. cloth, pp. xx. and 432. 1845. 7s. 6d.
- Witt.—AN EFFECTUAL AND SIMPLE REMEDY FOR SCARLET FEVER AND MEASLES. With an Appendix of Cases. By Charles Witt. Fourth Edition. 8vo. sewed, pp. 32. 1865. 1s.
- Wolfram.—THE GERMAN ECHO. A Faithful Mirror of German Every-day Conversation. By Ludwig Wolfram. With a Vocabulary, by Henry Skelton. Third Edition. 12mo. cloth, pp. 69. 1864. 3s.
- Worcester.—A PRONOUNCING, EXPLANATORY, AND SYNONYMOUS DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. By Joseph E. Worcester, LL.D. New Edition. 8vo. cloth, pp. 565. 1864. 7s. 6d.
- Worthen.—A CYCLOPEDIA OF DRAWING, designed as a Text-Book for the Mechanic, Architect, Engineer, and Surveyor, comprising Geometrical Projection, Mechanical, Architectural, and Topographical Drawing, Perspective, and Isometry. Edited by W. E. Worthen. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. 410. 1864. £1 5s.
- Wylie.—NOTES ON CHINESE LITERATURE; with introductory Remarks on the Progressive Advancement of the Art; and a list of translations from the Chinese into various European Languages. By A. Wylie, Agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society in China. 4to. cloth, pp. 296. 1863. £1 10s.

XENOS.—EAST AND WEST; a Diplomatic History of the Annexation of the Ionian Islands to the Kingdom of Greece. Accompanied by a Translation of the Despatches exchanged between the Greek Government and its Plenipotentiary at London, and a Collection of the Principal Treaties, Conventions, and Protocols concerning the Ionian Islands and Greece, concluded between 1797 and 1864. By Stefanos Xenos. Royal 8vo. cloth, pp. iv. and 304. 1865. 12s.

Yates.—A BENGALÍ GRAMMAR. By the late Rev. W. Yates, D.D., Reprinted, with improvements, from his Introduction to the Bengálí Language. Edited by I. Wenger. Fcap. 8vo., boards, pp. iv. and 150. 1864. 3s. 6d.

Yates.—THE ELEMENTS OF THE SCIENCE OF GRAMMAR, put forward and explained in a totally different manner from what they have ever before been, and based on rigid definitions, incontrovertible axioms, and general principles, illustrated by a comparison of the structure of the English and Turkish languages, so as to be at once an introduction to the science of grammar, for all who wish to learn that science, and a complete Turkish grammar for the student of that language. By Edward Yates, B.A., Barrister-at-Law. Most kindly and valuably assisted by Captains Mahmood and Hussein, of the Imperial Guard of the Sultan, and by Hüry Bey. 12mo. cloth, pp. ii. and 226. 1857. 5s.

Yates.—DESCRIPTIVE CATALOGUE OF A COLLECTION OF CURRENT COINS OF ALL COUNTRIES, in the International Exhibition. Class 13, North Gallery. By James Yates, M.A., F.R.S. 12mo. sewed, pp. 69. 1862. 6d.

Zeller.—STRAUSS AND RENAN. An Essay by E. Zeller. Translated from the German, with Introductory Remarks by the Translator. Post 8vo. cloth, pp. 110. 1866. 2s. 6d.

---

### MAGAZINES.

Anthropological REVIEW (THE). Published Quarterly, at 4s. each number.

Chess WORLD (THE). Published monthly, at 1s. each number.

Englishwoman's REVIEW (THE). Published quarterly, at 1s. each number.

Geological MAGAZINE (THE). Published monthly, at 1s. 6d. each number.

JOURNAL OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND (THE). Published twice a year.

Orthodox CATHOLIC REVIEW (THE). Published monthly, at 6d. each number.

Trübner's AMERICAN AND ORIENTAL LITERARY RECORD. Published monthly, at 6d. each number.

Westminster REVIEW (THE). Published quarterly, at 6s. each number.

---

A LIST of the PUBLICATIONS of TRÜBNER & CO., in the RUSSIAN LANGUAGE, may be had on Application.

LONDON:  
PRINTED BY WERTHEIMER, LEA AND CO.  
FINSBURY CIRCUS.









UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS-URBANA

294.1M8901868

C001 V003

ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXTS ON THE ORIGIN AN



3 0112 014311671